

THE  
SUPERNATURAL IN NATURE

A VERIFICATION  
BY FREE USE OF SCIENCE

BY  
JOSEPH WILLIAM REYNOLDS, M.A.

PRESIDENT OF SION COLLEGE,  
VICAR OF ST. STEPHEN'S, SPITALFIELDS

VERBUM DOMINI MANET IN AETERNUM

SECOND EDITION

LONDON  
C. KEGAN PAUL & CO., 1, PATERNOSTER SQUARE  
1880

“ Now, if the natural and revealed dispensation of things are both from God, if they coincide with each other, and together make up one scheme of Providence, our being incompetent judges of one, must render it credible that we may be incompetent judges also of the other. Since, upon experience, the acknowledged constitution and course of nature is found to be greatly different from what, before experience, would have been expected ; and such as, men fancy, there lie great objections against ; this renders it beforehand highly credible, that they may find the revealed dispensation likewise, if they judge of it as they do of the constitution of nature, very different from expectations formed beforehand, and liable, in appearance, to great objections—objections against the scheme itself, and against the degrees and manners of the miraculous interpositions by which it was attested and carried on.”—BUTLER'S “ Analogy of Religion,” Part II. Revealed Religion, Chap. iii.

12-6-38

TO  
THE RIGHT HONOURABLE AND RIGHT REVEREND  
JOHN JACKSON, D.D.,  
LORD BISHOP OF LONDON,  
THIS WORK  
IS RESPECTFULLY DEDICATED AS A SMALL TOKEN OF ESTEEM AND LOVE  
FOR THAT GENTLE HOLINESS AND PURITY WHICH,  
UNITED WITH WISE FIRMNESS,  
RENDER HIM BELOVED AND HONOURED IN THE HIGH STATION  
WHICH HE HAS BEEN CALLED IN THE PROVIDENCE OF GOD  
TO OCCUPY.

“THOUGH one were to allow any confused undetermined sense, which people might please to put upon the word natural, it would be a shortness of thought scarce credible to imagine, that no system or course of things can be so, but only what we see at present; . . . . the only distinct meaning of that word is *stated, fixed, or settled*; since what is natural as much requires and presupposes an intelligent agent to render it so, *i.e.*, to effect it continually, or at stated times, as what is supernatural or miraculous does to effect it at once.”—BUTLER’S “Analogy of Religion,” Part I. Natural Religion, Chap. i.

## SCIENTIFIC THOUGHT.

“NON PROFICERE EST DEFICERE.”

“Not noted,  
But of the finer natures, by some severals,  
Of head-piece extraordinary : lower messes,  
Perchance, are to this business purblind.”

*Winter's Tale.*

*To the Visitor of Sion College.*

MY LORD,

This book went forth with its parentage unacknowledged, lest scientists, who boast that they have fought and won the intellectual battle against Christianity, should refuse to hear an argument drawn from their own line of things by a clerical pen. Now that it has received and endured not a little fearless criticism ; now that every line of its statement appears to the author to remain unturned, and is allowed by the thoughtful to be capable of further production into new regions of thought ; it would be cowardice, not humility, to shrink from the responsibility of authorship. Honoured by your request so to do, I affix my name ; and being President of Sion College this year, I have the honour to use that title at the express wish of the Court of Governors.

I respectfully offer to you, the Visitor of that College, a second edition of the work, as a mark of my sense of the great forbearance, cordial sympathy, wise counsel, and effective help, with which, to the utmost of your strength, you encourage even the lowliest in the sacred ministry of our Church.

This College, your Lordship well knows, is not only used for devotional, intellectual, and social meetings of the clergy ; but is the place where those who conceive that the possession of advanced science is incompatible with the childlike faith

demanding by Holy Scripture, are encouraged to state the extent and meaning of their discoveries.

A clear thinker, listening to the eloquence, acknowledging the skill, and honouring the zeal of those who exhibit their stores, is sadly conscious that—though, after all, science is simply common sense applied to somewhat recondite matters—scientific eyesight is not always scientific insight. Men of scientific research often neglect scientific thought: a neglect more sure to bring heartache than blossom to bring fruit.

The champions of materialism and agnosticism are most defective in the method of scientific thought. They seem incapable of rightly applying past experiences to new circumstances. Not looking sufficiently at things in general, they allow the enlargement of their partial and secular province to diminish, and sometimes to destroy—in their own minds—the vaster outlying regions. A kind of steeplechase philosophy is in vogue. Specialism assumes the functions and honours of universalism. Materialists, by strangest solecism, use mind to subject Nature; and then, mental control being established, destroy mind, and give to matter the supreme capacity of that which has been destroyed. Science makes the meaning of things wider and more real, but they narrow all that is sacred. Mr. Ruskin says of them—"The use of the word 'scientia' as if it differed from 'knowledge' is a modern barbarism, enhanced usually by the assumption that the knowledge of the difference between acids and alkalis is a more respectable than that of the difference between vice and virtue." Not possessing inner vision, they govern hard from the outside instead of working up from within. They advocate degradation; for the changes which they further involve transition, not from the lower to higher, but from the higher to lower, degree of perfection.

This manifold error is a fault, partly due to the evil habit of regarding the outer world of matter, and the inner world of intelligence and emotion, as nothing more than the concave and convex of the same substance: error gross and grievous as—that pounds and pence make rich, and not heart and mind which bless or curse for ever. They do not adequately consider the whole of life, nor that advan-

tageous and permanent moral changes—whether in nations or individuals—are wrought not solely by direct action of outer circumstances, but by spontaneous effort of nations and individuals; and that this constitutes the great distinction between the living and the dead.

Further, though scientists admit more or less of spontaneous action in Nature, strange to say, some assume universality of rigid action in physical laws—which action is not known to be true of any law at all, and, absurdly enough, they apply it to religion and morals. They forget or wilfully ignore the verity that mutual sympathy unites us one to another, low to high, young to old, and puts into one life the power of a thousand.

They put forth materialism, apart from Divine action, as an explanation of the universe; but have no buttresses with which to replace the mainstays they are bent on withdrawing from society. Materialism cannot admit the smallest spontaneity, uniformity must be absolute and universal; whereas, every day that a man lives has a speciality which comes no more, and wisdom tries to find because it prepares for the morrow's gain. We know that advanced morality is never found to continue apart from faith and worship; and that all the old civilisations, because they degenerated in moral tissue, lost intellectual vigour and were smitten with decay. We are aware that exact uniformity cannot be found anywhere, at any time, or in anything; and that materialism is unable to explain any order of events, or any one thing in any order of events. Our sense of sight cannot assure us that there is no one in the dark; our sense of hearing cannot be certain that nothing inaudible is going on. The simplest facts known are possibly, indeed probably, not ultimate, but made up of simpler or more complex. Materialists, slighting these great truths, mar the beauty of all their attainment. They have not insight to discern that Christianity, even in its present sadly imperfect development, as a matter of fact, is at the head of science, the head of literature, the head of morals, the head of civilisation, the head of the world.

Scientific thinking will enable our opponents to correct their error, and to do every little well that the whole may be

a pleasure. Then we, too, shall amend many faulty interpretations as to Divine Existence, Creation, Providence, Natural Law, and Overstepping of Rules. The truly intelligent do not fear accuracy of thought and thoroughness of investigation. It is not intelligence, but unintelligence, that disposes to impiety; a sort of savagery and brutality that leads to low life, to uncleanness of body and mind, to turbulence of spirit and conduct.

It is time that we be men; time to raise on a scientific assured basis the great superstructure of sacred emotion, of pure morality, of right thinking, of wise conduct, and attain all that is attainable by our present faculties. Whatever may be said about the world's age, it is new and strange to every one. No man, living or dead, has or can have had, exactly the same experience. The poet is inspired, the soldier thrills with the hope of glory, the statesman prepares conditions of society, the theologian is instinct with Divine truth, and every one, in use of his mental chemistry and moral power, can tell something special of human experience. We walk about here with a consciousness of the now, aware of the past, and prepare for the future. We save that we may give, and give that we may truly save; use of the riddle makes every user rich. Let none who have hope as princes wander about as beggars. Let none choose for himself the sad task of gathering the flotsam and jetsam of a life wrecked by disappointment, or be without part or lot in the coming truth and glory. Not only the leaders of men, but rustics even, owe a duty to society and to God, that the sacred faculty of faith—the faculty which prompts our will to holy decision, be enriched, enlarged, confirmed, in conception and enjoyment of Him who is greater than ourselves, and whom the godly praise—

"O Thou! the Resurrection and Redemption,  
The Godhead, and the Manhood, and the Life."

I respectfully thank those critics who—recognising the almost insuperable difficulties which encumber any comprehensive endeavour to verify revealed sacred facts and doctrines by the subtle processes of modern science—welcomed the

truth that separation of science and faith is to the weakening of both ; while their union strengthens each, and gives birth to sons and daughters strong and fair. There are critics whose praise would be dispraise—"malis displicere magna laus est ;" and there are carpers, not critics, to whom one must say—"Quid cæco cum speculo ?"

The utmost care has been taken to render this edition accurate. The arguments are carried to the outermost line of verified science, but their validity rests on those grand facts which remain immovable from aye to aye. For various emendations I am indebted to the Reverend William Kay, D.D., Rector of Great Leghs, and Honorary Canon of St. Alban's, to the Reverend Professor T. G. Bonney, F.R.S., and to Mr. John Henry Gurney, Northrepps Hall, Norwich. My friend Mr. William Kitchen Parker, F.R.S., enabled me to make several valuable improvements. To Dr. P. Martin Duncan, F.R.S., who ably revised the whole work, thanks are due for help which rendered some statements more accurate. My friend Mr. Charles Lavers Smith, with loving labour, care, and skill, prepared the excellent index. To you, my Lord, belongs that high praise—"Sanctus sancte sancta tractat."

"He loved to serve—whose service saveth me,  
In serving Him—I shall your servant be."

JOSEPH WILLIAM REYNOLDS.

PRESIDENT'S HOUSE, SION COLLEGE,  
LONDON WALL.

“ LA vérité est toute pour tous.”—PAUL-LOUIS COURIER.

“ DE tous les miracles consignés dans les livres de l'Ancien Testament, le plus étonnant nous paraît toujours le premier mot de la Genèse—' Au commencement, Dieu créa le ciel et la terre.' Le monde de l'esprit est ainsi conquis dès le début, et la redoutable fascination du dualisme est vaincue. . . . Il a bien fallu que Dieu dévoilât sa face pour que l'homme . . . pût reproduire ses traits augustes comme il l'a fait dans l'Ancien Testament.”—“ Histoire des Trois Premiers Siècles de l'Église Chrétienne,” EDMOND DE PRESSENSÉ.

# CONTENTS.

## STATE OF THE CASE.

	PAGE		PAGE
Growth of Modern Science . . . . .	1	Revelation and Science . . . . .	4
Devotion to Science . . . . .	1	Mistake and Misfortune of Materialists . . . . .	4
Error of some Scientific Teachers . . . . .	1	Character of Present Scientific Discoveries . . . . .	5
Error of some Religious Teachers . . . . .	2	Forms of Matter Accidental . . . . .	5
Unwise Separation of Science from Religion . . . . .	2	Process of Verification . . . . .	6
Lovers of Study . . . . .	2	Omnia Cunctanti . . . . .	7
For Whom the Book is Written . . . . .	3		
The Loss of Faith a great Loss . . . . .	3		

## STUDY I.

### IS INTELLECT DIVORCED FROM PIETY?

The Divorce Improbable . . . . .	8	Errors of Materialists . . . . .	16
The Religious Sense the Highest . . . . .	8	The Coming Man will unite Religious Feeling with the Knowledge of the Time . . . . .	17
Incapacity of Irreligious Men . . . . .	9	Two Principles of Government . . . . .	18
The Great Reality underlying all Things . . . . .	9	Example of Providential Interference . . . . .	18
Effort to Know the Unknown . . . . .	9	Confirmation by Three Opposing Schools of Thought . . . . .	19
The Principle of Noble Conduct . . . . .	9	Revelation a Special Message to Intelligence . . . . .	19
Need of an Ethical Ideal . . . . .	10	Erroneous View of Doubt . . . . .	20
Human Progress not always towards Happiness . . . . .	10	Use of Authority in Science and Faith . . . . .	20
Inconsistency of Argument against the Supernatural in Religion . . . . .	11	Doubt, the Halting Step of Prudence . . . . .	21
Common Sense Believes . . . . .	12	Duty tries to be rid of Doubt . . . . .	21
Morality based on Divinity . . . . .	13	Faith Implies Knowledge . . . . .	22
Moral Element in Man . . . . .	14	The Single-eyed . . . . .	22
An Unwise Statement . . . . .	14	Wilful Doubt a mark of Weakness or of Insincerity . . . . .	23
The Greatest Men are Believers . . . . .	15		
This allowed by Opponents . . . . .	15		
Professors of Science ought to satisfy Sacred Emotion . . . . .	16		
Union of Intellect and Piety . . . . .	16		

	PAGE		PAGE
Prolonged Doubt Wastes Life and Hinders Progress . . . . .	23	Where No Vision is the People Perish . . . . .	28
Personal Verification of Religion . . . . .	24	Christ's Morality the Highest . . . . .	29
The Higher Verification . . . . .	25	Opponents of Holy Scripture . . . . .	29
Heights not yet Attained . . . . .	25	Infidels not Whole or Comprehensive Men . . . . .	30
The Light of Nature not a Sufficient Guide . . . . .	26	Errors of Materialists . . . . .	30
The Arts Fail . . . . .	27	The Secular School . . . . .	31
The High and Dry Light of Intellect did not lead to Purity . . . . .	27	Recapitulation . . . . .	32
Ethics, Art, Science, Fail if put in place of Religion . . . . .	28	The Best Thinkers give up the Despairing Creed . . . . .	32
		Piety the Crown of Intellect . . . . .	33

## STUDY II.

## THE SUPERNATURAL.

Rash Denial of . . . . .	34	Verified Theology . . . . .	46
Universal Belief in the Supernatural . . . . .	34	Verification by Scripture . . . . .	46
The First Cause . . . . .	34	Genius of Unbelief . . . . .	47
Atheism Incapable of Proof . . . . .	34	The Wording of Scripture . . . . .	47
Denial of the Supreme is based on Ignorance . . . . .	35	Against the Science of the Day . . . . .	47
Must assume Existence of the First Cause . . . . .	35	Growth of Power in the Words . . . . .	48
The Inscrutable Power a Reality . . . . .	35	Inner Life of Meaning . . . . .	48
Manifestation of It . . . . .	35	Continual Revelatory Character . . . . .	48
Personality . . . . .	36	Misconceptions of Opponents . . . . .	49
Arguments against Personality . . . . .	37	Bible not Screened from Criticism . . . . .	49
A Possible Existence Higher than Personality . . . . .	38	Figurative Expressions . . . . .	49
Delusive Argument . . . . .	38	Bible states Facts . . . . .	50
Personality, our Highest Mode of Conception . . . . .	39	Scientific Account of Creative Process . . . . .	50
Revelation of the Godhead . . . . .	40	Truthfulness of Scripture . . . . .	51
1. Nature and our Consciousness God's Autobiography . . . . .	40	Unlike all other Cosmogonies . . . . .	51
2. Ground of our Moral Sense . . . . .	40	Exceeded the Knowledge of the Time . . . . .	51
3. Foundation of our Religious Ideas . . . . .	41	Narrowness and Idolatry of Materialists . . . . .	52
4. Their Universality . . . . .	41	Two Reasons why they ought to accept the Doctrine of Divine Personality . . . . .	53
5. Miraculous or Higher Modes of Divine Action . . . . .	42	Our Knowledge of God . . . . .	53
Three Hypotheses as to Origin of Things . . . . .	44	Mathematical and Spiritual Truth . . . . .	54
Atheistic . . . . .	44	All Religions claim Divinity of Origin . . . . .	54
Pantheistic . . . . .	44	Summary . . . . .	55
Theistic . . . . .	45	Priests of the Physical Universe . . . . .	55
		Quotation, S. T. Coleridge . . . . .	56

STUDY III.

THE THRESHOLD OF CREATION.

	PAGE		PAGE
The Universe too Vast for our Com- prehension . . . . .	57	Matter Known only by Mind . . . . .	63
Wrong Conceptions as to its Origin	57	Matter Brought out of the Invisible	64
The Scriptural Account Misunder- stood . . . . .	58	Creation of Matter . . . . .	65
Infinity and Eternity seen in Crea- tion . . . . .	58	The Creation of Matter proximately "thinkable" . . . . .	65
Creation Relatively Infinite and Eternal . . . . .	58	The Visible World Permeated by the Invisible . . . . .	66
Elements of Space . . . . .	59	Experiments . . . . .	67
The Statement, "Science has no room for Miracles," convicted of Inadequacy . . . . .	60	We are only Beginning to Know . . . . .	68
Union of Mind and Matter . . . . .	60	Science Throws Light on Scripture Beginning . . . . .	70
An Unascertained Something . . . . .	61	Eternity and Infinity . . . . .	71
Mechanical View of Nature . . . . .	61	No Time without Creation . . . . .	71
Is Everything in Nature Natural ?	62	The World Infinitely Vast and In- finitely Small . . . . .	71
		Bird's-eye View of the Argument . . . . .	72
		Translation from Jean Paul Richter	73

STUDY IV.

RUDIMENTS OF THE WORLD.

Quotation from "Principia" . . . . .	75	Mechanism of Worlds . . . . .	86
Hypotheses concerning Primal Matter . . . . .	75	Generation of Movement . . . . .	86
Structure of Matter . . . . .	76	Curvature of the Straight Line . . . . .	87
Only Few Elements Largely Used . . . . .	79	The Earth . . . . .	87
Life-Throb of the Universe . . . . .	80	The Planetary System . . . . .	88
Change must have come from Without . . . . .	80	The Connected Mass . . . . .	89
Vastness of Continual Change . . . . .	81	Heat, Light, and Motion of the Universe . . . . .	89
Not more to be Got out of the Atom than has been put in . . . . .	82	Measurements of Time . . . . .	90
Type of Nature's Book . . . . .	82	Glacial Epochs . . . . .	91
Printing of the Book . . . . .	83	Obliquity of the Ecliptic . . . . .	92
Clustering into Molecules . . . . .	83	Warm and Cold Periods . . . . .	92
Similarity of Molecules . . . . .	84	Scientists not Agreed . . . . .	93
Molecular Energy . . . . .	84	Ceaseless Change . . . . .	94
The Molecule as a Solar System	85	Creation Represents God's Majesty	94
Examples of Molecular Energy . . . . .	86	View of Worlds . . . . .	95
		Memories Carried into the Future . . . . .	97
		Happiness, N. P. Willis . . . . .	97

## STUDY IX.

## DAY II.—"GOD MADE THE FIRMAMENT."

	PAGE		PAGE
The Second Day's Work not Blessed . . . . .	168	Light of the Firmament . . . . .	175
Firmament not a Transparent Floor . . . . .	168	Artificial Skies . . . . .	176
Ancient Poetic Phrases . . . . .	169	Colours of the Firmament . . . . .	177
Knowledge of Ancient Sages . . . . .	169	Action of the Firmament . . . . .	178
Genius of Ancient Worthies . . . . .	170	Perfumes, Vapour, Æther-waves . . . . .	178
Primeval Waters and Atmosphere . . . . .	171	The Firmament a Co-operation of Phenomena . . . . .	179
Dew Point . . . . .	172	Argumentum ad Hominem . . . . .	180
Establishment of a Firmament . . . . .	173	Memorials of the Supreme . . . . .	180
Scientific Theory . . . . .	173	We ought to advance with our Science . . . . .	181
Division of the Waters . . . . .	174		

## STUDY X.

## DAY III.—THE HABITATION OF LIFE.

Sacred Geology . . . . .	182	Life-Times of the Earth . . . . .	189
Conception of the Creative Process . . . . .	182	Eozoic—Dawn of Life . . . . .	189
Symbol of Stretching out and Fashioning . . . . .	183	Palæozoic—Old Life . . . . .	189
Scientific Geology . . . . .	184	Mesozoic—Middle Life . . . . .	190
Early Chemical Condition of the Earth . . . . .	185	Neozoic—New Life . . . . .	191
Nearer Portion of the Pathway . . . . .	185	Divine Interferences . . . . .	191
Cosmogenetic Era . . . . .	186	A Mechanical Conception not the Highest . . . . .	192
The Molten Sphere and Atmosphere . . . . .	186	Invisible World . . . . .	193
Cooling . . . . .	187	Changes are Subject to Law . . . . .	193
Crust of the Earth . . . . .	187	"The Undevout Astronomer is Mad" . . . . .	194
Action by Organic Life . . . . .	188	We worship Godhead . . . . .	194
Organic Rocks . . . . .	188	Life in Other Worlds . . . . .	195
		Life seems to be Nature's Great Purpose . . . . .	196
		Life a Progress . . . . .	197

## STUDY XI.

## DAY III.—CREATION OF PLANTS.

Growth of Plants . . . . .	198	Separateness of Animal and Vegetable Life . . . . .	200
Food of Plants . . . . .	199	System of Vegetation . . . . .	202
Substance of Plants . . . . .	199	Comprehensiveness of the Sacred Account . . . . .	202
Functions of Plants . . . . .	199		
Passing into Life . . . . .	200		

Contents.

xix

	PAGE		PAGE
Classification Mutable . . . . .	203	Plants and Animals Necessary to	
Order of Introduction . . . . .	204	one another . . . . .	208
Succession of Vegetable Life . . . . .	205	Essentially Distinct . . . . .	209
Plants without Sunlight ? . . . . .	206	Were Plants of Divine Origination ?	209
Plants grow in the Dark . . . . .	207	Natural Agency . . . . .	210
Nature of the Earliest Vegetation . . . . .	207	Children of the Sun . . . . .	211
Moses had a Moral Purpose in		Scientific Hypothesis . . . . .	211
View . . . . .	208	Richter's Lesson . . . . .	211
Did Plants precede Animals ? . . . . .	208	Glimpse of the Transcendental . . . . .	212
Earliest Forms found Side by		The World a Study for Spirits . . . . .	212
Side . . . . .	208	Enlargement of Knowledge . . . . .	214

STUDY XII.

DAY IV.—THE SUN.

Two Dangers to be Guarded Against	215	Sun's Surface . . . . .	225
Difficulties Confirm Divine Verities	215	" Eruptions . . . . .	226
Moses' Account Wonderful . . . . .	216	Sun's Prominences . . . . .	226
A Divine Product . . . . .	217	" Metals . . . . .	226
Conceptions of Creation . . . . .	217	" Envelopes . . . . .	226
Progress not in a Straight Line . . . . .	218	Counterpart in Planet Saturn . . . . .	227
The Sun's Origin . . . . .	219	No Theory Adopted . . . . .	227
Impact and Accretion . . . . .	219	The Sun's Rule . . . . .	228
Condensation and Contraction . . . . .	219	Matter from other Systems . . . . .	228
Rotation of Nebulous Rings . . . . .	220	Variations Produce Permanence . . . . .	228
The Sun's Age . . . . .	221	Ruler of the Earth . . . . .	229
Not made on Fourth Day . . . . .	221	Lord of Earthly Life . . . . .	229
Assertion that it was made on		Obscuration of Light . . . . .	229
Fourth Day . . . . .	221	The Sun's Path through Space . . . . .	230
Measurement of the Heat . . . . .	222	Whence and Whither . . . . .	230
Future Extinction . . . . .	223	Advance of Planetary Orbits . . . . .	231
The Divine Account . . . . .	223	Wider Circle than the Physical . . . . .	232
The Sun's Physical Constitution . . . . .	223	God's Riches are not our Poverty . . . . .	232
Body of the Sun . . . . .	224	Littleness and Greatness . . . . .	233
Opinions of the two Herschels . . . . .	224	Our Greatness . . . . .	234

STUDY XIII.

DAY V.—FISHES, REPTILES, BIRDS.

The Earth, Portion of a Grand		Plato, Darwin, Owen, as to Life . . . . .	238
Scheme . . . . .	236	Specific Nature of Life . . . . .	239
The Beginning was not by Agency		Six Characteristics of Living Things . . . . .	240
of present existing Laws . . . . .	237	Six Types of Animal Structure . . . . .	241
An Organism a Wonderful Mecha-		Simply arranged in the Divine Nar-	
nism . . . . .	237	rative . . . . .	242

	PAGE		PAGE
Kinship of all Things . . . . .	242	Amphibians, Reptiles, Lizards . . . . .	248
In Unity Diversity . . . . .	243	Affinities of Fish to Higher Life . . . . .	249
The Process of Life a Series of Metamorphoses . . . . .	243	Transition to Birds . . . . .	250
Every Process a Prophecy . . . . .	244	Classification of Birds . . . . .	251
Reproduction . . . . .	244	The Bible Narrative . . . . .	252
Reproductive Elements . . . . .	245	Narrative by Plato . . . . .	252
Primitive Life . . . . .	246	Incapacity of Ancient Science . . . . .	254
Advance in Life . . . . .	246	Revelation and Science . . . . .	254
Fish Life . . . . .	247	False Kingdom of Man . . . . .	255
		True Kingdom of Man . . . . .	255

## STUDY XIV.

## DAY VI.—CREEPING THINGS, BEAST, CATTLE.

Unreasonable Requirements . . . . .	257	Advance from the Sea . . . . .	266
As to not seeing a Creation . . . . .	257	Limitation of Structural Changes . . . . .	267
All Phenomena are Manifestations of the Great Unknown . . . . .	258	Marsupials . . . . .	267
Unwise Inquiry . . . . .	259	Mammals . . . . .	268
Creation a Divine Work . . . . .	259	Heredity and Adaptation . . . . .	268
A Work wrought by Mind . . . . .	260	Life ascends in many Paths . . . . .	269
I. Unity of Power . . . . .	261	Differences in Structure . . . . .	270
Rhythm of Motion . . . . .	261	Natural Origin of Species . . . . .	270
II. Unity of Form . . . . .	261	Variations from Primitive Type . . . . .	271
Blood-Corpuscles . . . . .	261	Atrophy and Development . . . . .	272
Deviation and Return . . . . .	262	Distinct Provinces of Life . . . . .	273
Repetition and Differentiation . . . . .	263	Persistence of Type . . . . .	274
III. Unity of Substance . . . . .	263	Embryonic Development . . . . .	275
All Protoplasm the Same . . . . .	263	Like Parts but Separate Paths . . . . .	275
Vitality is the Cause of Change . . . . .	264	Progress and Variety of Life . . . . .	276
Process of Variety . . . . .	264	Rudimentary Organs . . . . .	277
Insects . . . . .	264	Their Cause Unknown . . . . .	277
Snails . . . . .	265	Nature cannot surpass Itself . . . . .	278
Process of Adaptation . . . . .	265	Natural and Supernatural are one splendid Unity . . . . .	279

## STUDY XV.

## COMPARISON OF THE TWO DIVINE ACCOUNTS.

Two Modes of Existence . . . . .	281	Change of Divine Name . . . . .	284
Double-sidedness of Nature . . . . .	281	No Rain—Not a Denial of Previous Rain . . . . .	285
Knowledge—a Revelation from In- telligence to Intelligence . . . . .	282	Going up of Mist . . . . .	285
One Account Creative, the other Re- demptive . . . . .	282	Mystical Character of the Second Narrative . . . . .	286
Both Accounts by same Writer . . . . .	283	A Spiritual Reality . . . . .	286
Variety of Statement . . . . .	283	Separateness of the Two Accounts . . . . .	287
Meaning of Generations . . . . .	284	1. Facts left out . . . . .	287
Trees of Life and Knowledge . . . . .	284	2. Varied Arrangement . . . . .	287

	PAGE		PAGE
Man a Living Soul . . . . .	288	Age of the Chaldean Tablets . . . . .	293
Separateness of Man from Animals and Angels . . . . .	288	Translation of the Fifth Tablet . . . . .	293
Living Souls of Lower Animals . . . . .	289	Corresponding Portion of Genesis . . . . .	294
The Temptation . . . . .	289	Primeval Tradition . . . . .	295
Adam—Earthly and Heavenly . . . . .	289	Reasons for Retaining the Ancient Narrative . . . . .	295
Threefold Nature of Man . . . . .	290	The Twofold Account confirmed by other Scripture . . . . .	296
The Narrative Simple yet Grand . . . . .	290	Growth of Divine Truth . . . . .	297
Chaldean Account of Genesis . . . . .	291		

STUDY XVI.

THE PRE-ADAMITE WORLD.

The Account of Creation, if True, is Divinely Inspired . . . . .	299	Work of High Art . . . . .	309
A Revelation of Things not Known	299	Essential Differences proceed from Original Unity . . . . .	309
The Heavens more Ancient than the Earth . . . . .	300	Was Adam the First Man? . . . . .	309
Fall of Angels and of Man . . . . .	300	Cainites . . . . .	310
Not Poetical and Figurative . . . . .	301	Adamites and Men are not Two Races . . . . .	311
Pre-Adamite Men . . . . .	302	Supposed Prior Psychological Man . . . . .	311
No Relics of the asserted Brute Con- dition . . . . .	303	Adam the First Man . . . . .	311
Savagery not Proof of Brutal Origin	304	Sin . . . . .	312
Our Rude Ancestors . . . . .	304	Death Prior to Adam . . . . .	312
Savages cannot Civilise Themselves	305	Freedom of the Creature rendered Sin possible . . . . .	313
The Civilised become Savage . . . . .	305	A Free World the Best World . . . . .	314
Assertion as to Ancient Civilisation	307	Cure of Evil . . . . .	315
Evolution of Man a Divine Process	307	Man not the Helpless Victim of Evil	315
Definite Progress . . . . .	308	Bringing Back of the Banished . . . . .	316
The Mystery of Advance . . . . .	308		

STUDY XVII.

MAN :—ORIGIN, NATURE, LANGUAGE, CIVILISATION.

Old and New Superstition . . . . .	318	The Bestial Theory . . . . .	322
Fashioning of Man . . . . .	318	The Course of Transformation . . . . .	323
Divine Breath in Man . . . . .	318	Human Reason . . . . .	324
Spirit in Man . . . . .	319	Free-Will . . . . .	324
Separation of Man from Brute	319	Ancestral Ape . . . . .	324
Plenary Memory . . . . .	320	I. Man considered as a Brute . . . . .	325
Higher Mental Processes . . . . .	320	The Life Plan of Vast Compre- hension . . . . .	325
Man more than a Material Or- ganism . . . . .	321	Special Process of Life . . . . .	326
Compared with his Meaner Brethren	321	Evolution or Order of Progress . . . . .	326
The Human Soul . . . . .	321	Man did not grow out of Brute . . . . .	327
Assertion that the Soul is Mortal, Unscientific . . . . .	322	Infinite Series and Incalculable Time not required . . . . .	327

	PAGE		PAGE
Mental Phenomena . . . . .	328	Language Product of Organism and Thought . . . . .	337
Mosaic Statement Misunderstood	329	Theories as to Origin of Speech .	338
True Science fights False Science	329	Divinity of Speech-Faculties .	338
Withering Branches of Humanity	330	Man Began and Continues as a Learner . . . . .	338
Degradation Likely . . . . .	330	Roots of Words . . . . .	339
Elevation of Low Forms Unlikely	331	Base of all Languages the Same .	340
New View of Old Sin . . . . .	332	The Frame and Spirit of Man give Power to Speak . . . . .	340
The Chinaman . . . . .	332	Ancient Languages . . . . .	341
The Brutal Origin of Man con- trary to History and Experience	333	Language not Commensurate with Mind . . . . .	341
II. Development of Language from Animal Cries . . . . .	333	III. Human Development by Civil- isation . . . . .	342
Man's Voice representative of all Sounds . . . . .	333	The Benefits are mixed with Evil	342
Man is Man by Speech . . . . .	334	Old Athens . . . . .	343
Co-ordination necessary for Speech	334	Ancient Cities . . . . .	343
No Record of the Invention of Language . . . . .	334	State of Masses in our Cities .	343
The Path and Progress of Lan- guage . . . . .	334	How Civilisation is to be made Beneficial and Lasting . . . . .	344
Veddahs in Ceylon . . . . .	335	Three Elect Nations . . . . .	344
Dwarf Negrito Race . . . . .	335	Artificial Selection . . . . .	344
Other Low Orders . . . . .	335	Tendencies and Dangers of Modern Civilisation . . . . .	345
Language an unpassable deep be- tween Man and Beast . . . . .	336	Christianity the Ground of our Hope . . . . .	345
Language rather Organic than an Organism . . . . .	336		

## STUDY XVIII.

## HUMAN LIFE :—PERSONALITY, INDIVIDUALITY, SPECIALITY.

The Nobler Parts of our Nature are to be specially regarded . . . . .	347	Individuality . . . . .	353
Life and Mind . . . . .	348	The Simpler Forms . . . . .	353
Ancestral Heritage . . . . .	348	The True Life of Personality .	354
Organic Life . . . . .	348	Soul of the Beast . . . . .	354
Definitions of Life: Herbert Spencer, G. H. Lewes, Descartes . . . . .	349	Divine Personality and Indi- viduality . . . . .	355
Life a Self-propagating Endowment	350	Natural and Experimental View	355
Physics and Chemistry do but par- tially Explain . . . . .	350	The Physician's View . . . . .	355
Personal Principle . . . . .	351	Idiosyncrasies . . . . .	355
Mechanical Self-adjustment or Automatism . . . . .	351	Morbid Tendencies . . . . .	356
Process and Totality of Personal Existence . . . . .	352	Mistaken Notions . . . . .	356
Our Personality is Real . . . . .	352	Histologist and Schoolboy . . . . .	357
		Individuality of our Life a Fact .	357
		Inner Pavilions of our Being .	358
		Individuality of Power and Renovation . . . . .	358

	PAGE		PAGE
Speciality of Human Life . . . . .	358	Degenerate Race . . . . .	364
Present Stage Rudimentary . . . . .	358	Connection between Moral and	
Brain Power . . . . .	359	Material Condition . . . . .	365
Mechanical and Chemical View . . . . .	360	Seeking Attainable Good . . . . .	365
Not applicable to the Mind . . . . .	360	Human Freedom . . . . .	365
Molecular Motion of the Brain . . . . .	360	Human Motives . . . . .	365
The Physician's View . . . . .	361	Difference between Bad and Good	
Speciality of Ailments . . . . .	361	Men . . . . .	366
Speciality of Organisations . . . . .	362	Deterrent Motives . . . . .	366
Disturbances of the Higher		Volition . . . . .	366
Faculties . . . . .	362	Reverse of the Old Parable . . . . .	367
The Moral Element . . . . .	362	Knowledge not Sufficient . . . . .	367
Transmission of Taint . . . . .	363	Expansion . . . . .	368
Accumulated Evil . . . . .	363		

STUDY XIX.

THE INVISIBLE.

The Studies have Confirmed our		Some Dreams Possess an Occult	
Faith . . . . .	369	Power . . . . .	381
Thought Reading Thought . . . . .	369	Vivid Power of Dreams . . . . .	382
Special Information . . . . .	370	Not a Mere Play of the Fancy . . . . .	382
The Visible a Realisation of the		Seeing from Within . . . . .	383
Invisible . . . . .	371	Lord Brougham's Vision . . . . .	383
A Procession from the Unseen . . . . .	371	Gradational Transition . . . . .	384
Three Hypotheses as to the Visible . . . . .	372	Somnambulism . . . . .	385
Three Mysteries . . . . .	373	Clairvoyant Somnambulism . . . . .	385
Sophistries . . . . .	373	Magnetic Sleep . . . . .	385
Truisms . . . . .	374	Higher States . . . . .	386
The Supernatural not Unnatural . . . . .	375	Discerning the Future . . . . .	386
Scientific Recognition of Interven-		Mechanical Action of Thought and	
tion . . . . .	376	Memory . . . . .	387
Two Classes of Miracles . . . . .	376	Many and Complex Factors in-	
Testimony, as to Miracles, Credible . . . . .	377	volved in Prevision . . . . .	387
Three Conditions . . . . .	377	The Energies and Laws Unknown . . . . .	388
Miracles are Sometimes Prophetic . . . . .	377	The Operation Capricious and	
God in the Universe, but not the		Erring . . . . .	389
Universe . . . . .	378	Occult Sciences yield no Explana-	
Spectral Illusions . . . . .	378	tion . . . . .	389
Power of the Imagination . . . . .	379	Demons . . . . .	390
The Visible and the Invisible are		Spiritualism Modern and Ancient . . . . .	390
Connected . . . . .	380	Revival of Diabolical Arts . . . . .	391
Prevision . . . . .	380	Why the Invisible World is Re-	
Dreams . . . . .	381	vealed . . . . .	393

## STUDY XX.

## VARIETY IN NATURE.

	PAGE		PAGE
Invariability of Law . . . . .	394	Embryos are Different . . . . .	409
Uniformity is not Fate . . . . .	394	Variety Illustrated by Light and Sound . . . . .	409
A Platform for Variety . . . . .	395	Eccentricities . . . . .	409
Law, Platform for Miracle . . . . .	395	Apparent Irregularities . . . . .	410
Attempted Reconciliation—Law and Will . . . . .	396	Consciousness . . . . .	411
The Natural World but a small portion of the Divine Dominions . . . . .	397	Varieties in Reproduction . . . . .	412
Limitation of Uniformity . . . . .	380	Entozoa . . . . .	413
The Government of Free Creatures necessitates Intervention . . . . .	397	Peculiarities amongst Fish Males and Females . . . . .	413
Matter as Example of Variety . . . . .	397	Bees . . . . .	414
Matter in Radiant State . . . . .	398	Ants . . . . .	414
Infinite Variety wrought by means of a Few Elements . . . . .	398	Red Ants . . . . .	415
Calculating Machine . . . . .	399	Aphidæ . . . . .	415
Continual Intervention . . . . .	400	Transformations of Insects . . . . .	416
Molecular Theory of Gases . . . . .	400	Caterpillars . . . . .	417
Variety and Structure Exist where none can be Detected . . . . .	401	Hymenoptera . . . . .	417
Commonest Things Display Im- measurable Variety . . . . .	402	Silent Members . . . . .	418
Farina of Flowers, Leaf Arrange- ment . . . . .	402	Agency of Use and Disuse . . . . .	419
Sun not Source but Sustainer of Organisms . . . . .	403	Life as a Strategic Movement . . . . .	419
Work of Light in Plant Life . . . . .	403	Changes of Inorganic Matter . . . . .	420
Peculiarities of Plants . . . . .	404	Chemical Surprises . . . . .	420
Life a Series of Surprises . . . . .	405	Diffusion . . . . .	420
Parents and Offspring—Like and Unlike . . . . .	405	Temperature . . . . .	421
Heredity . . . . .	406	Potassium, Sodium, Ice, Water . . . . .	422
Structureless Germs marvellously Complex . . . . .	406	Transformation of Sunbeams into Flesh . . . . .	422
Evolution of an Individual . . . . .	407	Transformation of Sunbeams into Mental Power . . . . .	423
Circulation of the Blood . . . . .	407	Astronomical Varieties . . . . .	423
Variety seems aimed at as a Beauty- Coral . . . . .	407	Coloured Suns . . . . .	424
Birds of Passage . . . . .	408	Changes in the Light and Heat of Suns . . . . .	425
Fishes . . . . .	408	Different Simultaneous Phases . . . . .	426
Synthetic Types . . . . .	408	The Solar System . . . . .	426
		Stages of Life's Variety . . . . .	427
		Future Catastrophes . . . . .	428
		Passing away of other Worlds . . . . .	429
		Unknown Energies at Work . . . . .	429
		Communion of Spirit . . . . .	430

STUDY XXI.

FOLLIES OF THE WISE.

	PAGE		PAGE
Purpose of the Study . . . . .	431	The Best Men are Enfranchised	
A Puzzling Truth . . . . .	431	from Narrowness . . . . .	453
Ancient Opponents . . . . .	432	Trial of the Professors by an Egg .	454
Science not Taught by Scripture .	432	By a Camel . . . . .	454
Bible as Viewed in Different Ages .	433	By a Lion and Tiger . . . . .	454
Irreverent Opponents . . . . .	434	By an Ape . . . . .	454
Faults of Great Men . . . . .	434	Presumption of Subordinate Science	455
Charge against the Pentateuch .	435	Assertion as to Matter . . . . .	455
"    Sacred Cosmogony .	436	Examined and Discarded . . . . .	455
"    all Revelation . . . . .	436	Scientific Conception of Matter .	456
Two Errors attributed to Moses .	437	The Mechanical Theory does not	
Moses Vindicated . . . . .	438	Explain the Origin of the	
Fault-making Charges . . . . .	438	World . . . . .	457
Fixity of the Earth . . . . .	438	Vortex-Rings . . . . .	457
Movement of Sun and Stars . . .	439	Theory of a Perfect Fluid . . . . .	457
Sun Miracles for Joshua and Heze-		Matter apart from its Properties .	458
kiah . . . . .	440	Origin and Restoration of World	
Providential and Natural Arrange-		not accounted for by the Me-	
ments . . . . .	440	chanical Theory . . . . .	458
Calculation as to Power expended		No Intervention of the Deity? . . .	458
in a Miracle . . . . .	440	Ascertaining the Existence of the	
Miracles Associated with the Greatest		Unknown . . . . .	459
of Men . . . . .	441	Miracles are not <i>à priori</i> Improb-	
Universe of the Bible too Limited .	441	able . . . . .	459
The Common Chronology too		Consciousness leads us to an Untried	
Narrow . . . . .	442	Universe, . . . . .	459
Refusal of Scripture by Secularists .	443	Revelation shown to be Scientific	
Unbelieving and Rash Interpreta-		and Scriptural . . . . .	460
tions . . . . .	443	The Mechanical Theory tested by	
Irreverence of these Charges . . .	445	Human Progress . . . . .	461
Narrowness of Scientific Assailants		Disproof of the Theory . . . . .	461
of Holy Scripture . . . . .	446	Genius and Emotion not measured	
Narrowness as it affects Theology .	446	by Physics . . . . .	461
St. Paul charged with Error . . . .	447	Human Progress is Intermittent . .	462
Fault found with the Eye . . . . .	448	Truth Admits no Lie . . . . .	462
Defects of the Eye . . . . .	449	Work of the Clergy . . . . .	463
The Eye one of God's best Gifts . .	450	The Bible a Living Book . . . . .	464
A Lecture at Sion College . . . . .	451	Cannot be Mechanically Explained	464
Orthodoxy Abused . . . . .	452	A Cure for Folly . . . . .	465
Science and True Doctrine are never			
Contrary to One Another . . . .	453		

## STUDY XXII.

## THE KINGDOM OF GOD.

	PAGE		PAGE
Knowledge of God . . . . .	466	Power and Doctrine of Holy Scrip- ture . . . . .	484
Highest Life . . . . .	467	Predictive Power . . . . .	484
Nature a Splendid Miracle . . . . .	468	The Lowest Form . . . . .	485
Demonstration of Miracles . . . . .	469	High Power in Scripture . . . . .	485
Two Mysteries . . . . .	469	Human Consciousness . . . . .	485
How Did God Create the World? . . . . .	470	Latent Senses . . . . .	486
Personality of God . . . . .	470	Sir Humphry Davy . . . . .	486
Pantheistic Theory degrades God . . . . .	470	Definite Examination of Holy Scripture . . . . .	487
Spiritual Personality . . . . .	471	Unity of the Bible . . . . .	487
Summary of Various Studies . . . . .	471	Variety of the Bible . . . . .	487
The Kingdom of God . . . . .	472	Statement of Events . . . . .	487
Philosophy of History and Religion . . . . .	473	Dominant Idea . . . . .	488
Natural Philosophy of Religion . . . . .	473	Union of Morality with Religion . . . . .	488
Religion not an Evolution . . . . .	473	Moral Code Peculiar . . . . .	488
Secularism cannot account for Re- ligion . . . . .	474	The Old Testament and Human Nature . . . . .	488
Scientific Thought accepts the Supernatural . . . . .	474	Christianity not an Outgrowth of Human Nature . . . . .	489
Successive Stages of Doctrine . . . . .	474	Scripture not an Evolution . . . . .	490
Three Great Facts . . . . .	475	Peculiarities of Scripture . . . . .	491
Universal Conviction as to the Supernatural . . . . .	475	Characteristics of Scripture . . . . .	492
Christianity not an Evolution . . . . .	476	The Truths Objective and Sub- jective . . . . .	492
Moral Order . . . . .	477	The Writers of the Books . . . . .	493
Art and Science . . . . .	477	The Books . . . . .	494
Savages do not Advance . . . . .	478	Predictions and Doctrines . . . . .	494
The Holiest Life . . . . .	478	Prophecies concerning the Messiah . . . . .	494
Noble-minded Heathen . . . . .	478	Curiosa Felicitas of Bible . . . . .	495
Desire for Immortality not created by Culture . . . . .	479	The Bible Universal . . . . .	496
Ancient Poetic Fancy . . . . .	479	The Bible Unique . . . . .	496
„ Myths . . . . .	480	One Book, Product of many Men . . . . .	497
Gods of the Lower Races . . . . .	480	The Seers have Embalmed their History . . . . .	497
Ancient Truth—One God . . . . .	481	Work for Science and Literature . . . . .	497
Doctrine of Souls . . . . .	481	Work in the World . . . . .	498
Two Faiths . . . . .	481	Sustained by Miracles . . . . .	498
Ghost Souls . . . . .	482	Miracles Changed as to Sphere of Action . . . . .	499
Recognition of Spirits . . . . .	482	The Character of Christ . . . . .	496
Future Life—Zulu Theology . . . . .	482	His Claim of Universal Dominion . . . . .	500
Two forms of Doctrine . . . . .	483	The Claim Vindicated . . . . .	500
Four Regions of the Dead . . . . .	483	Continual Growth—Power of Truth . . . . .	501
Future Retribution . . . . .	483		
Heathen, Jewish, Christian Theories . . . . .	484		

# THE SUPERNATURAL IN NATURE.

---

## STATE OF THE CASE.

"Je voudrais faire quelque progrès nouveau dans la connaissance des choses divines."—EMILE SAISSET.

THE age in which we live reasonably boasts of great growth in knowledge and useful application of that knowledge. This breadth and accuracy, unless we exercise due care, will enrich the race at the expense of the individual. It is no longer possible for a single mind to occupy the whole domain of investigation. The student must limit his labours to one field of science; to one tree, branch, or even leaf of knowledge; if he will add any new thing to the intellectual store of mankind.

That is a noble devotion which abandons vast mines of research, and concentrates every energy to carry one single line of inquiry to the furthest limit. Such devotion, for the sake of accuracy and of discovery, involves great sacrifices: not the least of these, though often overlooked, is a narrowing of the student's own intellectual and emotional nature. The eye, turned continually upon objects near and small, loses the faculty of far-seeking and wide discernment. The mind wholly given to one study and its special methods loses power and discrimination as to outlying provinces of thought.

Nowhere is the evil effect so plainly seen as in those students of physical science the minuteness and mechanical nature of whose investigations render them like the carpenter who will have everything made of wood, or as the blacksmith

who recommends iron. Their leaders must be pained to find that having scorned the statements of Scripture as too human—rendering the work of creation too man-like—they are reduced to the absurdity of endeavouring to find a mechanical equivalent for the world, in which the ultimate atoms turn the key of every mystery, and possess, in some incomprehensible manner, the promise and potency of all terrestrial life.

Some of our religious teachers err by another kind of one-sidedness. Knowing but little of physics, they use exploded arguments, and seek to maintain untenable positions. No wonder that the Sacred Cause, which they endeavour to champion, is imperilled rather than vindicated.

Such an unnatural separation, on the one hand, of Science from Religion and holy sentiment, is a surrender, by the implicated physicists, of an honourable position; and reduces Science to an occupation of sheer curiosity and selfish utilitarianism. A separation, on the other hand, of Religion from Science, gives to our clergy the impossible task of explaining the universe without the aid of positive knowledge; and leads to a hard dogmatism, oppressive to the spirit of a true student in natural science. As a result, even the verities of Divine Revelation, true independently of belief or unbelief, are not handled with sufficient force to obtain the conviction of scientific intellect, nor so pleasingly set forth as to win the affections of a devout will. Partly owing to this, truths, which the greatest of mankind have thoroughly investigated and undoubtedly accepted, are now refused by the unspiritual; who, not being able to detect the soul by physical analysis, nor to find God by means of microscope and telescope, nor by any unbelieving efforts to obtain a view of the Eternal Spirit, assert—"The existence of the Soul, the Being of God, the Divine Revelation, have no other foundation than the devout aspirations of believers."

It is true that there are, specially in the medical profession, men with keen unconquerable love for scientific study; who, not possessing special religious convictions, not having any particular expectation of pecuniary advantage, devote themselves, "heart and soul," with intense unselfish devotion, to

the study of their own branch of science. These men save life and beautify it, their love of science is a sacred love, and it may be that with them "laborare est orare."

"The thought of their laborious years doth breed  
Perpetual benedictions : not indeed  
For that which is most worthy to be bless'd :

\* \* \* \* \*

Not for this we raise  
The song of thanks and praise ;  
But for those obstinate questionings  
Of sense and outward things,

\* \* \* \* \*

Which, be they what they may,  
Are yet the dawning light of better day."

*Slightly altered from Wm. Wordsworth.*

For the sake of these and other truth-loving men, in danger of being beguiled by the sophisms of an imperfect science, this book is written ; that, obtaining clearness of knowledge as to the ancient founts of inspiration, and gathering strength, they may say—

"Wherefore should we be silent, we who know  
The trance of adoration, and behold  
Upon our bended knees the Throne of Heaven,  
And Him who sits thereon?"

In a scientific work no apology is needed for the statement in detail of scientific facts. They are needful for instruction of the unlettered, and useful to all as exhibiting the bases of real argument ; but the highest reason for their introduction is that the true discoveries of science are themselves revelations of the Divine Presence and Work—a psalmody of Wisdom and Power.

We do not deal with the controversies amongst believers, nor with Scepticism in some of its rationalistic doubts ; but with those who deny supernaturalism, who refuse to believe in a personal God—our Creator, our Preserver, our Father. We undertake a conflict the momentous nature of which involves our highest interests : nothing less, on the one hand, than the loss of everything which can elevate man ; and, on the other, his degradation to a brute-nature. Those who trifle with unbelief should well understand this ultimate issue, and

draw back while there is time. It is well that the Materialist undeceive himself as to the imaginary benefits delusively hoped to result from his philosophy. Egyptian, Assyrian, Grecian, Roman experience, should enable him to see that to unfaith men takes from them everything which can preserve from evil and lead to good. It is well for him to be aware that without a sense of holiness, of devotion to a Higher Being, degradation ensues. "Deum nōsse, est vivere ; Deum nescire, mori."

While employing physical and metaphysical arguments against the Materialist, we contend for a Revelation in an Inspired Record as an essential bulwark against error, and the only infallible guide to religious truth ; as the corrective of scientific generalisations which would banish God from the world ; and as the teacher of spiritual laws co-ordinate with those physical laws which a scientific generalisation has revealed. Indeed, physical science is the sister and handmaid of Revelation ; no lasting antagonism can exist between them ; nor will man lastingly receive a religion that requires antagonism. Science has not yet advanced far enough to establish perfect accord with Revelation, but is tending thither ; and, when attained, the generalisations of science will no longer be doubtful but assured. Our aim is to promote that agreement by showing the correspondence between truly scientific conclusions and Holy Writ ; by exposing hasty generalisations which appear contrary to Revelation ; by making it plain that science is knowledge as exact as is possible to finite wisdom ; and that scientific truths, like spiritual, have for ever been descending from heaven to men.

Materialists forget all this. By mistake and misfortune, astonished by unprepared emergence from comparative ignorance of physics to wider information, they deny that there is any science or commanding intellect apart from their own ; not knowing that the sublimest achievements of our nature are by spiritual scientific insight. To be great, they must not only use the microscope of observation, but the far-sighted telescope of imagination, and verify the vision. Then they will be aware that former insurrections against Divine

Truth were sustained by men of brilliant parts, of dazzling wit, of refined culture, of fascinating manners; but, when the tumult had subsided, Sacred Verities were found more firmly established, having called forth in their defence the highest intellectual powers that human nature ever displays. The Greek, the Roman, the Celt, the Teuton, rebelled against the Revelation which God gave to one family of mankind; but the Divine Oracles, because they are Divine, prevailed all the more. We have now greater learning, and higher power of criticism, but the Sacred Documents will endure a far more searching test than any they have yet received. It will again be proved, that men are not happy until pure intelligence finds relief and solution for the perplexities of existence by those acts of beneficence and high morality which are only intelligible and possible through the conviction of direct relations between God and man; relations which bring into the horizon of earthly existence the lofty proportions of that celestial fane which God has built; wherein countless myriads of beings present glorious worship, and serve in splendid occupation:

“There's not the smallest orb, which thou behold'st,  
But, in his motion, like an angel sings;  
Still quiring to the young-eyed Cherubims.”

*Shakespeare.*

Observation confirms this. Those acquainted with scientific progress must be struck with the fact that, of late, the more brilliant achievements have been made in dealing with the unseen. The microscopist, the chemist, questioning the ultimate particles of matter; those who occupy themselves with the mysteries of molecular vibration; bear the victorious wreaths of successful discovery, and show that every atom teems with wonders not less incomprehensible than those of the vast and bright far-off suns.

This connection of all visible things with the invisible, and of life with germs that possibly are not organised in the sense of being eggs—possibly, in themselves, dead as the inanimate matter and putrefiable substances out of which they creep as living things,—is evidence, amounting to scientific proof, that there is a continual going forth from the

unseen to the seen ; evermore an awakening of life from the dead ; which, whether called evolution or creation, renders the universe a sort of enchanted valley ; and adds a strange unlooked-for confirmation to expectation that the forms which matter assumes are not its real substance—not essentials, but accidents. Whether any piece of matter shall take the shape of solid, of liquid, or gas, seems a question of temperature and pressure.<sup>1</sup> Who can tell the fixed and unvarying elemental form of matter ? Has it any such form ? Is it a mere condition of energy, or force *in loco* ? Ought we to regard it as endowed with the faculty of assuming every variety of shape according to the mere accidents of environment ? Truly, the world we live in is one of marvels ; and if we regard it as a manifestation of the Divine Being, the mysteries are analogous to those of the written Revelation : profound and, as to essence, inscrutable.

Verification of the whole argument, on any extended scale, being impracticable for one man, a portion of Holy Scripture has been selected for tentative positive criticism ; a portion which, as the first Divine word, and as intimately related to physical science, presents, in connection with peculiar difficulties, strange facilities for that accurate definite examination which can alone content our age. Indeed, if there is any evidence of a Divine Mind discernible in the structure of Holy Scripture, such evidence is the best possible proof that our faith has sufficient basis in reason to warrant every sensible man in accepting it as the instrument of his trial. Should the investigation give reasonable satisfaction, it will afford ground for belief that the same process may be successfully applied

<sup>1</sup> Raoul Pictet has shown that we may hope to bring the molecules of a gas into such close contact that they will form a liquid, by fulfilling certain conditions. The gas must be pure, enormous pressure must be available, and the means of producing intense cold, and of subtracting heat at very low temperatures. Under a pressure of 270 atmospheres, at a temperature of 20° F., oxygen is still a gas ; but under the influence of a sudden expansion which lowers the temperature to about 360° F., a liquid is produced, and this state of oxygen gas has a density identical with that of water. Nitrogen has been condensed, expanded, liquefied, in the same manner ; hydrogen also. This latter was solidified under influence of the extreme cold produced by expansion. Atmospheric air, when freed from carbonic acid gas and treated in the same way, becomes solid. See an admirable abstract of Pictet's work by Mr. Hartley of King's College.—*Popular Science.*

to other parts of the Sacred Volume. The present verification, carried along a hundred lines of research, will prove that there is meaning in the world's work and in our earthly discipline ; a supreme and attainable good to strive after ; and that life is worth living, because of Intelligence at the heart of things.

To our Father we say—

“ Illi sunt veri fideles Tui qui totam vitam suam ad emendationem disponunt.”  
*Imitatio Christi.*

To our readers we say—“ Omnia cunctanti,” everything to those who wait : for as splendour from galaxies of stars afar off, goes forth in different periods of time, and arrives at the earth in widely separated intervals ; there are beams of truth travelling from the Great Source which have not yet shone upon our mind, but will surely gladden us. When the grass has withered and the flower faded, when the Scripture Record has a new setting in the light beyond the veil, we shall find, some to our glory, some to our shame, that “ the Word of God abideth for ever.”

## STUDY I.

### IS INTELLECT DIVORCED FROM PIETY?

"Christianity did not appear in a barbarous age, nor win acceptance because nations were unintelligent. The Greeks were people of highest natural power in freshest vigour, with radiant intellect pervading the sense of youthful beauty. The Roman is a symbol of the bold and clever leader, with whom to dare is to do. Men of the early Church were of earnest, heavenly minded character—their saintly aspect was in itself a revelation."

It has been very confidently asserted "that we have not to reckon with religion, its day is gone by, the best minds of our age have forsaken theology, take no account of it, and this is preparatory to a general abandonment of belief in the Supernatural."

The statement is improbable. All that we know of faith and intelligence assures us that the sum total in the twentieth century will be the offspring of the nineteenth, as the nineteenth is of the eighteenth, and must be—unless special, that is miraculous, illumination be given. It may be taken as certain that whatever change takes place in the symbols by which religious faith is expressed, religion, in all essential respects, will remain unchanged. Summarily to throw away ancient beliefs and institutions, to discard the growth and universal experience of moral discipline, can in no case be the work of an individual intellect, or of one age. There ever has been in the past, and, judging from analogy, there ever will be in the future, a recognition of Deity by the highest and purest intelligences.

Lord Bacon says—"Are we disposed to survey the realm of sacred or inspired theology, we must quit this small vessel of human reason, and put ourselves on board the ship of the Church." It were better not to quit "the small vessel of human reason," but to use intelligence as a Divinely kindled lamp, and this intelligence will burn brighter if fed with the

oil of faith : for the religious sense, the highest which we can entertain, is based upon the aspiration and endeavour after complete fulness of life.

It is easy to understand that men of hard mechanical mind, "who," Scaliger roughly said, "lick the vessel but never touch the pottage," have little or no sense of religion ; but it is not easy to understand by what right, with least power to judge of the Supernatural, they assume authority to decide that the world is nothing but matter, containing only material organisms. Why, if our own material organism is governed by intelligence, shall not the universe be governed by Intelligence!

They say—"There is no actuality in the Supernatural, no reality in any knowledge we can obtain of it ;" but they are well aware that the appearance of things is not the essential reality, and that every phenomenon is the manifestation of an unknown energy, though incomprehensible in the abstract ; consequently, the phenomenon is a token of the Supernatural ; therefore, the Unknown is knowable so far as He is manifested, unknowable in His essence as the infinite and eternal. Every fact in history, even if it occupy but a moment in time, is rooted in an unsearchable past, and enters an endless future ; the first link hides in the past eternal, and the last vanishes in the future eternal ; all Nature, on one side, touches the seen, on the other, the unseen. It is an essential part of our nature to be conscious of the Power underlying all—the Great Reality.

In essence God is ever unknown, as everything else is essentially unknown. No term can be used in precisely the same sense of essence and of the phenomenon, of man and of God ; there is, none the less, an analogy. In human or limited fashion, we know the Unknown ; and the effort to know more, to co-ordinate emotional consciousness and intellectual cognition, is the highest, purest, most strengthening exercise of our reason.

We all admire and applaud the noble Roman, Regulus, who voluntarily returned to torture and death rather than violate duty to his country and faith plighted to an enemy. Who could interpret that man's life and mind by their material

conditions? or, interpreting, would, according to material conditions, have interpreted aright—making hardest task the best delight? We commend Andrew Fuller, who, willing to lose his life in order to serve his country, would not do a base thing to save it. Does not every good man say—"I would be virtuous for my own sake, though no man should know it; and clean for my own sake, though no one should see me"? The reality, the animating principle of such holy conduct, resting on universal emotional consciousness of God, is more active and powerful in life than that which is merely intellectual: "Sanctus sanctè sancta tractat."

The fact, moreover, "that no human being, and no society composed of human beings, ever did or ever will come to much, unless their conduct was governed and guided by some ethical ideal,"<sup>1</sup> renders our acceptance of that ideal not merely a requisition of common sense, but an indispensable condition to true and lasting welfare. We appeal to the good and the great, whether the highest and best ethical ideal is not found in the Bible? We ask those of high moral nature, whether recognition of Divine love and purity does not make them affectionate and reverential? Whether the things which have been surely believed among us are not the root of national and individual morality? Whether they do not take that place in the heart which, otherwise, superstition would usurp? Whether it is not right to urge the pure in spirit to maintain these things in integrity? If our race lose faith in the soul's immortality, in Providence; if, on the intellectual side, we lose the recognition of Deity; and, on the emotional side, a yearning for closer union with Deity; we can neither attain nor retain the virtues, happiness, and true civilisation of well-ordered communities.

There are, indeed, many reasons for supposing that human nature will expand its powers, and occupy a wider sphere of knowledge and action than the present; but that advancement, if made without the establishment of harmony between our knowledge and our aspirations, will rather bring more anxious cares and sharper pains than augment enjoyment, or secure and enlarge our peace. Appalling facts of the most

<sup>1</sup> "Critiques and Addresses:" Prof. Huxley.

grim and gloomy aspect prove, as Bishop Butler said, that "Mankind are for ever placing the stress of their religion anywhere than upon virtue;" and experience shows that sceptical men, denying Divinity, pave the way to sensualism and thence to superstition. It is equally certain that the habits, usages, and propensities of millions of our fellows are not leading them forward to goodness and happiness.

This being matter of fact, the manner of argument against the Supernatural is surprising. We are told—"The teaching of Jesus carried morality to the highest point attained or even attainable by humanity. The influence of the spiritual religion has been rendered doubly great by the unparalleled purity and elevation of His own character . . . so that the 'imitation of Christ' has become almost the final word in the preaching of His religion, and must continue to be one of the most powerful elements of its performance."<sup>1</sup> It "is the highest conceivable by humanity. . . . Its perfect realisation is . . . extinction of rebellious personal opposition to Divine order, and the attainment of perfect harmony with the will of God."<sup>2</sup> Now, would it be believed that, immediately preceding, we find these words—"The disciples, who had so often misunderstood the teaching of Jesus, during His life, piously distorted it after His death"?<sup>3</sup> We are to believe that disciples, capable of receiving, keeping, and handing down to future ages, the highest system of morality attainable by humanity—in the light of which they lived, and for the truth of which they died—"piously distorted" that system! This "spiritual religion" of "sublime simplicity and moral grandeur," putting all other systems to the blush, "uniformly noble and consistent," is really built on "mere human delusion!" Now, no folly is greater than this: to regard the Bible as morally true, yet full of wilful lies; pure, yet defiled by hypocritical assumption of supernatural power and authority; recording the highest attainable morality, yet disgraced by superstition and jugglery of wonders. As if a thing could be really of heaven and heavenly, yet animated by the devil with the breath of delusion and deceit; inspired with highest

<sup>1</sup> "Supernatural Religion," vol. ii. p. 487.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.* p. 488.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.* p. 486.

wisdom, yet everywhere penetrated and pierced with tales and marvels of the most puerile character, inserted by those who, in all other things, were gloriously wise and true. We are to believe, on the one hand, "no supernatural halo can brighten its spiritual beauty, no mysticism deepen its holiness, in its wisdom it is eternal;"<sup>1</sup> but to hold, on the other hand, "the falsity of all miraculous pretension;" that St. Paul worked no miracles; that the birth, marvellous death, resurrection, and ascension of Jesus, are "pious distortions;" that the Apostles' testimony is full of falsehoods; that "upon all grounds of reason and experience the supposed miraculous evidence, by which alone we could be justified in believing the Divine Revelation, must be pronounced mere human delusion."<sup>2</sup> What a comment on the inspired words—"I work a work in your days, a work which ye shall in no wise believe, though a man declare it unto you"! (Acts xiii. 41). It reminds one of a sarcastic speech—"I believe that the philosophers of every age are equally foolish, but that the common people gradually increase in wisdom."<sup>3</sup>

"We feel that common sense shows no difficulty in the way of belief in miracles; surely the Power who made all things may again, at any time, create or annihilate force or matter, and interfere with natural laws at His pleasure."<sup>4</sup> Common sense sees that the argument of unspiritual men must be pushed to the bitter end; and, if it be true doctrine, all providence, all government, all Divine interest in human affairs, must be banished from our thoughts. If these men are right, all men of piety are wrong. Kant should not have said—"Two things impress me with awe: the starry heavens without, and the moral law within." Those vastly our superiors in wisdom and virtue, whom we contemplate with involuntary admiration—admiration kindling emotions of love—are in nowise to be followed. We must take for guides men who say—"There was no Creation, and is no personal God. The Old and New Testaments are legends; incarnation, redemption, glorification, are fond delusions." Hume, un-

<sup>1</sup> "Supernatural Religion," vol. ii. p. 489.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.* p. 480.

<sup>3</sup> "Social Pressure," by the author of "Friends in Council."

<sup>4</sup> "Protoplasmic Theory of Life;" J. Drysdale, M.D.

## *Intelligent Adaptation in Nature.*

believer as he was, declared—"The whole frame of Nature bespeaks an intelligent author;" but now the words of Goethe—"Matter can never exist and be active without mind," are made to mean that matter is eternal, and that the combination of matter into diversified forms of beauty, and the wonders of organic life, are without design, and unguided by intelligence. The eye was not made to see, nor the ear to hear; the complex and compact apparatus of the human mouth was not arranged to breathe, to taste, to eat, to talk; nor legs and feet to walk and run; nor heart and lungs to circulate and purify the blood; verily, "*Nihil tam absurdum, quod non quidam philosophi dixerint.*"

The man of common sense, the man of real science too, John Hunter to wit, sees that the eye did not make itself, nor man make it, nor his parents, nor any other man; yet, that it was made by One who understood the transmission, reflection, and refraction of light; how to make lenses of different powers, adjust them for clear perception of near or distant objects; how to make and use most ingenious mechanical contrivances, in order to turn the eye in every direction, and increase or diminish light; how to place the eye so as to be of most service, protected from injury, moistened from time to time, and able to open or shut. Common sense is sure that Divine Intelligence made the eye; and, in duty bound, worships God.

If there is no Supernatural in Religion and Nature; then, of course, morality is without Divine sanction; there is no vindication of right, no retribution for the good. Mistakes there may be, but certainly not sins; and Herbert can be defended, who declared lust and passion to be no more blameworthy than hunger and thirst; and Hobbs, that right and wrong are but quibbles of the imagination; and Bolingbroke, who held that the chief end of life is to gratify our passions; and Hume, who deemed humility a vice rather than a virtue. We may tell those who are sensual as swine, fierce as wolves, knavish, petulant, wayward, that there is no Judgment to come. Monsters of cruelty are not monsters, nor blameworthy. Those who break the law, knowing that they shall escape the law, whom we account deserving of ten times more

punishment, are to be free from all punishment if they take care of their health.

Human nature is outraged by such doctrine. We feel that the moral element is the centre of our structure; "peccatum non est natura, sed vitium naturæ;" our consciousness of right and wrong says—"there will be, there must be, a future reckoning." Every temptation that we resist, every pure impulse discreetly yielded to, every noble thought that is encouraged, every sinful desire that is extinguished, every wrong word that is withheld, enriches our character and testifies of a higher life. Present before any audience the spectacle of a pious, loving, watchful mother, whose son requites her unselfish, unwearied efforts for his welfare by barbarous murder, that he may seize the little savings only hoarded by self-denial for his benefit. Will the spectators applaud that act? Will they not instantly, passionately, without doubt, stigmatise it as wrong, wicked, base, abominable turpitude? Then place before them the life of Christ, good and gentle, promising to His own hurt and changing not; denying Himself, helping the unfortunate and unhappy, dying amidst the taunts and scoffs of His murderers; and praying, while He dies, that God will forgive them. The whole audience will admire and approve. In every language the voice of the multitude will be, "That man is a good man, He is a man of God." While human nature remains the same, so long as common sense continues, virtue will have a sort of glorious pattern coming from God and returning to God.

Notwithstanding, we are unwisely urged to abandon the Divine Record of this God-Man and of Creation. Mr. Herbert Spencer writes thus against the Bible doctrine of Creation:—"Many who in all else have abandoned the aboriginal theory of things still hold this remnant." Then, speaking of a man who has not abandoned it, he says—"Catechise him, and he is forced to confess that it was put into his mind in childhood, as one portion of a story which, as a whole, he has long since rejected. Why this fragment is likely to be right while all the rest is wrong, he is unable to say. May we not then expect that the relinquishment of all other parts of this

story, will by-and-by be followed by the relinquishment of this remaining part of it?"<sup>1</sup>

If all other parts of the story had been disproved, then the narrative of Creation might be imperilled; but, as intelligence widens, piety deepens. Those difficulties in the Holy Word which appear contrarieties, accurate investigation so conciliates that faith is confirmed. They are like knots in the oak which strengthen it, as knots in the net which retain. So far from the aboriginal theory being all wrong, a really scientific investigation confirms the sacred truths, and makes our knowledge of them more accurate. Men of honourable name, world-heroes, historians, poets, the ablest students of Nature, are not atheists; nor are they secularists. The Newtons, Bacons, Boyles, Faradays, Harveys, Hunters, are Christians. If Materialists have lost the Spirit of Divinity, is there neither Spirit nor Divinity for other men? Take Socrates and Cicero, who lived and died before Christianity appeared; or Voltaire, who rejected it; or Napoleon, who regarded it with the genius of a statesman: all recognised Divine handiwork in the Creation. In every man, worthy of the name, there is a longing for higher fulness of life, a closer walk with God, which, whether formulated in the symbols of science or of Scripture, is the very essence of all religion. It is not well known, but it is true, that a singularly large proportion of the leading scientific men of the day are devout Christians; and we may safely hold that religion which, in time past, by definite expression in creeds and ceremonies, preserved reverence and holiness of thought and feeling, will be preserved, not destroyed, by science.

Opponents are in part aware of it: "If Nature have in store a man of the requisite completeness—equivalent, let us say, to Milton and Helmholtz rolled into one—such a man, freed by his own volition from 'society,' and fed for a time upon the wild honey of the wilderness, might be able to detach religious feeling from its accidents, and realise it to us in a form not out of keeping with the knowledge of the time."<sup>2</sup> Another writes—"The army of liberal thought is, at present, in very

<sup>1</sup> "Principles of Biology," vol. i. pp. 335, 336.

<sup>2</sup> "Fragments of Science," pref., 2nd ed. : Prof. Tyndall.

loose order, and many a spirited freethinker makes use of his freedom merely to vent nonsense. We should be the better for a vigorous and watchful enemy to hammer us into cohesion and discipline; and I, for one, lament that the Bench of Bishops cannot show a man of the calibre of Butler of the 'Analogy,' who, if he were alive, would make short work of the current *a priori* infidelity."<sup>1</sup>

Now, in reality, the scientific work is not so much for the priest as for the professor. Science, less than religion, can stand alone; but must freely combine with all right efforts for the betterment of our race. Men of science are priests of the material universe; why do they not, seeing that the feelings of awe, reverence, wonder, worship, are woven into the texture of their nature, give reasonable satisfaction to holy emotion? Theirs is the privilege of removing the apparent antagonism between Science and Religion—the abiding terror of timid or superficial minds; theirs the high aim to unite moral power with intellectual achievement; and all the more because out of their province, from men of their companionship, flows the poison-stream of unbelief which destroys the ignorant.

The man, whether priest or professor, for whom the wedding-bells have to be rung at the union of Intellect and Piety will come: "I hope and believe, that when the world is older, and when the mutual relations of all branches of knowledge are as well understood as are now, for instance, the relation of chemistry to the theory of electricity, the scientific progress which began by rejecting religion as the basis of science, will finally accept religion as not indeed the basis, but the summit and crown."<sup>2</sup> Meanwhile the theologian and the student of Nature must ask each other—"How readest thou?" For the book of Nature and the book of Scripture are the two books which were meant to be compared, and can never be antagonistic: "altera posse docens, altera velle Dei."

The opposition of Materialists to the Biblical manner of looking at things, is due to the fact that they prefer cosmic or physical symbols to those which are human; forgetting

<sup>1</sup> "Scientific Education:" Prof. Huxley.

<sup>2</sup> "Scientific Bases of Faith," *Introd.*: Joseph John Murphy.

that both are relatively inadequate, and both indeed equally anthropomorphic: due, also, to the error of counting psychical changes as nothing more than an undulatory displacement of molecules. Further, they make morality, even in the highest stages, nothing better than enlightened selfishness; and yet, again, to the ignoring of this other fact, that only those who apprehend in full subjective faith the mysteries of revealed religion, are capable of reasonable, sufficient, accurate knowledge as to the life of God in the soul, and as to the record of God in Creation and Redemption. Lord Bacon observed—"The subtilty of nature far transcends the subtilty of the human understanding;" but professors of naturalism, forgetting that moral and religious faculties have equal authority and reality with those purely mechanical, interpret only the material structure of things. Using their mind to destroy mind, even while professing to live in the light of intellect, they assert, Matter is king.

"He that hates truth shall be the dupe of lies;  
And he that *will* be cheated, to the last  
Delusions strong as Hell shall hold him fast.  
For men go wrong with an ingenious skill;  
Bend the straight rule to their own crooked will;  
And with a clear and shining lamp supplied,  
First put it out, then take it for a guide."

*Cowper.*

Not so the coming man, "the Milton and Helmholtz rolled into one:" realising religious feeling "in a form not out of keeping with the knowledge of the time," and aiming at the highest possible culture of individuals and of the race, he will think in essentials as did Abraham, as did the pious cloistered monk, as did the true puritan, as do now the holy in heart; but he will utter his thought in the language of a man—not in that of Nature's childhood, go beneath the symbolic superstratum, teach our faith to rest on the underlying spiritual principle; not explain Scripture as a book which fell from Heaven, but as written by holy men who were moved of God; one side all human, one side all Divine—*πάντα θεῖα καὶ ἀνθρώπινα πάντα.*

This coming man, "Milton and Helmholtz rolled into one,"

C

will not be an Antichrist to deny the Father and the Son ; nor that man of sin who, by subtlety and force, shall renew the old delusion that men can be happy without God ; but we may expect clear proof that there are only two principles on which the system of the universe can be explained. 1. A Personal Intelligence creating, sustaining, ruling—this is the Christian hypothesis, and will be preserved. 2. A supreme power, but no Supreme Being ; an invisible principle, not a personal God—this really atheistic, is called the Pantheistic notion, and will be destroyed.

It will be shown that only two principles of government are possible in the world—1. Providence. 2. Law. Providence, foreseeing, arranging, applying. Law, ordering, subordinating, invariable. Providence, without law, would be uncertain and capricious. Law, without providence, is an absurdity. The doctrine of providence requires interventions. The doctrine of law adjusts and limits varieties of motion and life. The two principles, when applied, merge into one process ; for as there is a world of mind, besides that of matter, and as our own mind subordinates matter by acting upon the intelligible order in it, we have proof of a twofold mental action : our own, in ascertaining and using the intelligible order ; another, as manifested in that order. Providence then is the soul of law, and law is providence in action ; in other words, God governs by law—“*Deo est Natura, quod fecerit.*” Consequently, intellect cannot be divorced from piety ; and no truly scientific man should say—“*There never has been, and never will be, any intervention in the operation of natural laws.*”<sup>1</sup>

It is certain, then, that the origin and maintenance of law are by an ordaining Intelligence. Take an illustration of highest order—the Divine Individuality of Christ Jesus. He lived 1800 years ago, and was confessedly the crown and perfection of humanity. He could not have been the product of an atheistic, or of a pantheistic system of the universe : for perfection, by either system, is only attainable as the ultimate outcome, as the indefinitely remote completion, of a well-nigh immeasurable period of evolution. The Perfect Man,

<sup>1</sup> “*Conflict between Religion and Science :*” Prof. Draper.

therefore, must be regarded—not only on Scriptural, but on scientific grounds—as a providential Manifestation of the Divine Personality. The early appearance of Perfect Humanity, and in an age, by itself, wholly incapable of producing such a type, was, in itself, a miracle. Such a break of continuity is conceivable and practicable only on the supposition of a Personal Ruler of the universe; of a Law-giver higher than His own laws, manifesting Himself equally in the orderly sequence of Nature, and in those extraordinary Revelations which, as varying and enlarging that orderly sequence, we call miraculous.

We obtain the same truth from three representatives of opposing schools of thought: "The Life of Christ," by Dr. Farrar; "Ecce Homo;" and "Vie de Jesus," by M. Renan. They agree on two great facts—1. That primitive Christianity is the true religion. 2. That Jesus, by whom it was given, is the One around whom universal history gathers. Hence it follows that the life of Christ was a real life. He undoubtedly lived and taught as the New Testament substantially represents. Christ was the highest and purest Intellect the world ever possessed; we have example and proof that purest faith is married to highest reason.

Revelation, the Divine warrant for piety, far from opposing Intelligence, is a special message to our intelligence; unites the reasoning power of the philosopher, the imagination of the poet, and the inspiration of the seer. This trinity of graces renders the power of the Bible—one book—greater than that possessed by the whole literature of Greece—many books. This one Book, from a nation despised by all in former, and by some in present time, holds the world in awe. It is read and preached in hundreds and thousands of churches. It is in the cottage of the lowly man, and abides with the honourable; it weaves the literature of the scholar, and sweetens the common talk of life. It enters the closet of the student, the king's chamber, the counsel-hall. In sickness and sadness, in perils and partings, in life and death, it tempers our grief to finer issues, and gladdens joy with yet brighter hopes. Our best prayers are in "its storied speech," which tells of earthly duties and heavenly rest, as if Plato's

wisdom, Newton's science, and Milton's art, had sought to make it beautiful and good. No other book, sacred or profane, can pretend to the suffrages of so many men of great genius, of so many intelligent and educated adherents from so many nations and races, or has formed, like it, "a succession of men heroically bent on making it universal." A Book—thus winning Reason's highest triumphs, the crown of poetry, and glorification by art, revealing wisdom from the depths, morality from the heights, and transforming the death-angel into a heavenly messenger—approves itself to the best and wisest of our race, unites intellect and piety in sacred bonds.

Professor Huxley, in his lecture on the "Advisableness of Improving Natural Knowledge," said—"The improver of natural knowledge absolutely refuses to acknowledge authority as such. For him scepticism is the highest of duties; blind faith the one unpardonable sin. And it cannot be otherwise, for every great advance in natural knowledge has involved the absolute rejection of authority, the cherishing of the keenest scepticism, the annihilation of the spirit of blind faith. . . . The man of science has learned to believe in justification, not by faith, but by verification."

This is only half true. Making holes and filling them up again is a waste of labour. A continual undermining of foundations renders even the firmest fabrics insecure. Authority is practically admitted into natural science. Of course, observers must maintain their independence; and science progresses not altogether authoritatively but experimentally; if, for example, we doubt whether there is on the floor of the deep ocean a thing called *Bathybius*, the doubt may arise from our knowledge of the analogy of Nature; but he who counts "scepticism the highest of duties" should even doubt concerning his doubt, and deny actuality or reality to knowledge. The truth is—"Theological habits of thought are relatively useful, while scepticism, if permanent, is intellectually and morally pernicious."<sup>1</sup> It is well to dig about trees, not to uproot them; and we all know, as to Scripture and science, theology and therapeutics, that the mass must wait outside and receive the result on authority. "To bring into

<sup>1</sup> "Cosmic Philosophy:" John Fiske.

doubt in any way (and it is of little moment in what way, or on what pretext), that which the common sense of mankind has always assumed to be certain, is, if not to shake the evidence of all truth, yet to paralyse the faculty by which evidence of any kind is seized and held."<sup>1</sup>

Even in natural knowledge the researches and discoveries of the most self-reliant investigators are worked out upon the foundation laid by previous authority, whether that authority be censured, or amended and confirmed; and must be matter of faith to most men, only to be justified by those who have power to verify. Would a learned professor call it intelligence or stupidity, for common men to deny everything that they do not know by their own actual verification? Is the professor's own authority to be absolutely rejected? Is he never to give dogmatic expression of belief? Must the botanist try every statement of the astronomer; and the patient demand proof, in the physician's prescription, that the drugs will heal? Or are godly men, with their prayerful, scholarly, critical, historical investigations, the only men whose authority we refuse?

Doubt, in itself, is not a mark of knowledge; at the best, it is the halting step of prudence in pursuit of knowledge, but a contemptible thing indeed when flaunted as an encouragement to godless unbelief. What saith another professor?—"We encounter our sceptical 'as if.' It is one of the parasites of science, ever at hand, and ready to plant itself, and sprout, if it can, on the weak points of our philosophy. But a strong constitution defies the parasite, and in our case, as we question the phenomena, probability grows like growing health, until in the end the malady of doubt is completely extirpated."<sup>2</sup>

As to the comfort of doubt, that is downright nonsense, there is no comfort in it; uncertainty and suspense are full of discomfort. Duty, far from delighting in it, does her best to get rid of it; and, obtaining confidence of conviction, reposes and rejoices in the truth: "*La Philosophie est une tentative incessante de l'esprit humain pour arriver au repos.*"

<sup>1</sup> "Physical Theory of Another Life:" Isaac Taylor.

<sup>2</sup> "Scientific Use of the Imagination:" Prof. Tyndall.

“ He that ever following her commands,  
 On with toil of heart and knees and hands,  
 Thro' the long gorge to the far light has won  
 His path upward, and prevail'd,  
 Shall find the toppling crags of Duty, scaled,  
 Are close upon the shining table-lands  
 To which our God Himself is moon and sun.

*Tennyson, Ode on the Death of the Duke of Wellington.*

The argument strengthens in the region of morality and religion. Irresistible mathematical evidence would confound all characters and dispositions; subvert rather than promote the purpose of the Divine Counsel, which is to produce obedience as the free-will offering of love. Do we then ignore reason in religion? Certainly not. Religion is intensely practical, and not less experimentally realised and verified in the soul of a devout man than is science in the mind of a physicist. Faith implies knowledge of some ground for reliance; and, as knowledge becomes definite, the faith, confessed in our creed, is understood in the explicit and implicit meaning; and is expressed in our symbols as definitely, clearly, precisely, as is any problem in science. The shallowness, sometimes imputed to devout men, belongs rather to the narrower mental sphere of objectors, who set a higher value on a little technical knowledge than on good sense, exercised and approved by greater general knowledge. Revelation is made to reason, not to unreason; and reason is that foundation on which Divine revelation erects a spiritual superstructure.

There is without doubt in the “single-eyed,” and in them alone, a sense of certainty in relation to Scripture, “which is neither the offspring of reason, nor the result of culture; but, like life itself, a direct inspiration of the Almighty.”<sup>1</sup> To such men the Bible carries its own evidence; and truth, like wisdom, is seen by its own light. “Sol facit ut solem videas; Deus facit ut videas Deum.” This spiritual discernment, the property of millions who never framed a syllogism, is the work of that faculty by which we recognise excellence. Hence, we conclude that the material frame of man is to human intelligence what human intelligence is to piety.

<sup>1</sup> “A Story of the Bible,” p. 29; Interpreter Series.

Faith shrinks not from inquiry which has truth for its aim. To take the excuse of the head out of the way of the heart is well, to clear the mind helps to purify and elevate emotion. Certainly we would not have doubt come in at the window because inquiry is denied at the door; but a great hurt and injustice are done when, to use Dr. Johnson's illustration, the Apostles are tried once a week for forgery. It is well for an age to be occupied in proving its creed; but reason, the basis of faith, must not become its substitute. Wilful continuance in doubt, so far from being an evidence of superior wisdom, indicates little love of truth, weakness of will, and insincerity of purpose. Anybody can doubt, and doubt more as concerning truth than error. Even the seeking of proof implies not only a want of belief, but a lack of knowledge as to the things to be proved; and the sooner a man, or an age, reasonably passes from the proving to the evolving, from the arguing to the appropriating, the earlier will the real height of the argument be attained.

Many a man allows the best part of life to be crippled by doubt, and the halting so hinders his soul's progress, that old age comes like an untimely winter. He is not a tree from which God gathers fruit, but a barren and leafless trunk in a landscape of desolation.

“ How many among us, at this very hour,  
Do forge a life-long trouble for themselves,  
By taking true for false, or false for true !”

*Tennyson, Geraint and Enid.*

Let past years of doubt suffice for us individually, past ages of unbelief suffice for us nationally. It is time that we reproduce the many glorious examples of Scriptural piety, those ancient spectacles of truth, faith, holiness; time to prove that Christianity, which confessedly gives purest morality to individuals, is able to sanctify whole nations; time to show that in Christianity we have not only the emotion which, with loving power, holds ten thousand hearts, but the wisdom which delights and satisfies profoundest minds.

Is this capable of verification? It is capable; and though no serious man considers a popular assembly the proper court for trial of deep truths; yet, as the verdict of public opinion

checks the tendency of closet speculation to become visionary, we appeal to the general conscience whether religious faith, in its devout dynamic nature, does not, by ruling the inner and outer man, raise the whole life to a higher stage? We are sure of affirmation. It is, indeed, because religion has ever furnished high sanction to morality, and touched us with the conviction of more life and fuller, that creed and conduct are always associated in our minds. There is not only an excellency, a mystic gleam of inward evidence, proving every part of Christian faith separately considered; but a relation and vigour in the several parts, taken as a whole, which win our love and reverence. We long for the realisation—that supreme epoch in which every man shall love the Lord with all his heart and his neighbour even as himself; when “the beast shall have been worked out,” and the ape and the tiger be dead within us. Nor is that all; Scripture, in making men holy, renders them more intellectual; giving stability and elevation of thought, with enlarged appreciation of the Divine. Observers of character are surprised at the remarkable betterment which is wrought in those who are called “regenerate.” So soon as a man sets himself to do the will of God, he seems to be taught of God as to the doctrine. “A vision and faculty Divine,” or at least a moral and religious interest, possesses him. He obtains the one great qualification for understanding Scripture, moral sympathy with God, which overcomes prejudices as well as passions, and makes the light of the Word to be the dawn of a happy day (John vii. 17). His nature becomes cleansed and renewed. His mind, now like a photographic plate, readily receives an impression from the light of truth; or—

“Like an Æolian harp, that wakes  
No certain air, but overtakes  
Far thought with music that it makes.”

*The Two Voices.*

His faith, based on the Word of God, grows into the realisation of Christ's work; and this produces a likeness to Christ's character. A man living in and by this faith brings forth good works: “non ex personis probamus fidem, sed ex fide personas;” as Luther said—“Gute fromme Werke machen

nimmermehr einen gutten frommen Mann, sondern ein guter frommer Mann macht gute Werke"—good works make not the man, the good man makes the works. He has not only a triumphant elevation of spirit in magnanimity and honour, but a placid feeling of serenity and blissful contentment in gentleness and humility. He enjoys a noble satisfaction in victories obtained by self-command over the propensities of animal nature, and independence of soul in the consciousness of having nothing to hide—nothing to be ashamed of. His religion possesses that reasonable verification which satisfies mind and conscience; a holy, useful life before God and man.

A yet higher verification must not be forgotten. There are Bacons, Newtons, Shakespeares, in science and literature; there are Isaiahs, Johns, Pauls, exceeding in enlightenment and privilege of revelation. Rome disciplined human will and Greece the mind to the subjection of law, Asia gave vividness to the spiritual imagination, but the Hebrews had the nobler task of enlightening our conscience. These Hebrews were of extraordinary toughness, and justify their being matched against evil—that deadly power which has so long baffled and hurt the human spirit. The secular philosopher can give reasons for the excellency of Romans, Greeks, Easterns, in their vocations; the Divine philosopher is able to explain the ground of faith in the Jewish mind. It was a vivid, abiding conviction of the existence and presence of God, elevated by the possession of Divine Inspiration in permanent power. "God was to Israel neither an assumption nor a metaphysical idea. He was a Power that can be verified, as much as the fire to burn or bread to nourish. . . . The greatness of Israel in religion, the reason why he is said to have had religion revealed to him, to have been entrusted with the oracles of God, is because he had in such extraordinary force and vividness the perception of this power."<sup>1</sup>

Men, nowadays, may be mighty as the former sages; and holy ones, in our own time, equal the ancient saints. Possessing like faith and character, they may attain to the enlightenments, possibly, to the revelations which adorned the old prophets. Men of due mental, emotional, spiritual calibre can

<sup>1</sup> "Literature and Dogma:" Matthew Arnold.

rise to the high knowledge, awful experience, abiding conviction, possessed by the holy Apostles. If so, then we, to whom God is not only a Power but a Person, not far off, but in human flesh by Jesus, and in human spirit by the Holy Ghost, may attain heights the ascent to which our holiest men have scarcely yet begun; for, indeed, the Holy Ghost is to those who receive Him an intellectual light affording illumination to every rational faculty. The present bubbles and ripples of true knowledge are but the surface-marks of a great spiritual stream. This stream, flowing forth from the throne of God, is as a river of paradise for the healing of nations, the renovation of souls, the beautifying of all lands.

There is, consequently, no ground for saying "Intelligence is divorced from Piety." The best minds cleave to religion. All history proves the need of an ethical ideal; and experience shows that, without the aid of supernatural authority, moral and spiritual restraints lack power to enforce obedience. Supernaturalism was affirmed and taught by Jesus, the highest mind in the world. It is the power which gives victory to the Bible, makes the Church mighty, the priests' orders valid, the sacraments efficacious, prayer to prevail. To doubt is not a mark of power, but a holding in contempt the common sense and morality of the best and greatest men the world has ever produced. To say, as some do, "that a religion divested of the supernatural, and based simply on human reason, could be more firmly established," is downright nonsense. Our faith, Divine in origin, is indeed capable of verification on every line of argument; but persuade men generally that it is not of Divine authority, a human invention, and the conviction will weaken, not strengthen public and private morality—that power which is alone capable of holding society together during perilous times. The message ought to be accredited, the ambassador requires authority. One from the invisible and intangible must give other and different proof of his office than one from the visible world. Divinity is that proof, and the only one. The assertion—"morality would be purer without Divine sanction, hope of resurrection, and expectation of future life; for freedom from consciousness of responsibility, and awe of future judgment,

would lead to more disinterested conduct"—sets at nought all experience, takes away encouragement from the good and restraint from the bad.

We have not exhausted the argument: we possess historical proof that virtue, or pure morality, has not been able to maintain itself in the earth, or to thrive by the light of Nature alone. Our duty may be seen by that light, and be proved by reason, but additional sanctions are required for the enforcement. The men of to-day are not the only ones who have talked of regenerating the world by means of the arts and intellectual lights; but from first to last, when apart from religious purity, the vaunted culture has ended in degeneration. History shows that men drag down Christianity; how, then, can the origin and continuance of it be accounted for without extra-mundane means? Genesis iv. 19-22 affords a striking illustration of the relative nothingness of Arts. In Lamech's family are represented three great grades of civilisation—agricultural, mercantile, sensual; and Lamech, a murderer, is the first recorded polygamist. Did that ancient civilisation emancipate the world, or enslave it? Did the strife maintained by those mechanical, sensual Cainites against the Sethites lead to a moral and spiritual victory? What was the result? The Cainites found themselves under the water with their organs, their implements, and their beauty; but the Ark, which they had ridiculed as an ungainly and retrograde structure, rode in peace over their heads.

There were centuries in which the Sophists ran their career; when Socrates, Plato, Aristotle, taught at Athens; when the school of Alexandria was founded and Euclid wrote his "Elements;" when Archimedes propounded theories and principles in mechanics and hydrostatics; when Pythagoras experimented on harmonic intervals, Hipparchus and Ptolemy studied the stars; and anatomy began to be investigated as the basis of scientific medicine: did they win the world from misery, regenerate one heart, or save one soul? When the science of ancient Greece had cleared the world of fantastic images of false divinities, the scientific method was well-nigh completed by the union of induction and experiment, was this science the salt of the earth? Did the scientific intellect

go on and possess the universal mind? The impact of atoms being accounted the all-sufficient cause of things, were men satisfied with the operation? The whole world answers—"No." From the minds of philosophers was dissipated "every thought of a deflection of the universe by the gods," but neither sage nor simple was content. Literature, arts, refinement, luxury, gave much outward fineness, softness, finish, to manners; the old poets, orators, sculptors, painters, philosophers, were a wonder; but Juvenal and Persius among the Latins, Lucian amongst the Greeks, and St. Paul of the Hebrews, testify that society was a sink of sensuality. Why? Because art and science were divorced from ethical and religious purity. *Philosophi sine Deo non sunt periti, sed perituri.*

The ethics of Plato, Aristotle, Zeno, Cicero, are in some respects admirable; but they had no authority from Divinity, and failed. The ablest people of whom history bears record is unquestionably the ancient Greek. "The average ability of the Athenian race is, on the lowest possible estimate, very nearly two grades higher than our own—that is, about as much as our race is above the African negro."<sup>1</sup> This race did not go on to possess the world. Though highest in products of the understanding, fairest of all men in form, cleverest in art, they speedily became servile and sensual, intolerant and fierce. Like the Romans, they fell into moral putrefaction which slew them. When godless Science has done the utmost, and irreligious Art has put her finest finish on work, only Frankenstein's monster is produced which slays them both. Art and Science are good, as the handmaids and adorners of morality, as lighteners of labour, as smoothers of Nature's asperity; but, when put instead of Religion and of God, they and their worshippers perish like children of Cain.

The gutter-child, by intellectual drill, may be converted into "the subtlest of all the beasts of the field;" but we know the original of that description. History, human experience, Scripture, alike testify—"Where there is no vision, the people perish" (Prov. xxix. 18). "It is impossible to show by what

<sup>1</sup> Galton's "Hereditary Genius."

practical measures religious feeling, which is the essential basis of conduct, can be kept up without use of the Bible ;" while experience proves that the purest morality and noblest life are formed by its precepts and examples. "The inability of laws to attain even the imperfect end at which they aim, is proved by the fact that in all ages and in every condition of society, an authority superior to their own has been called in to sanction and maintain them. Religion is that authority."<sup>1</sup>

Social and moral direction is a far more important object than scientific inquiry ; being that, indeed, which elevates and gives best use to inquiry. The most violent opponents allow that a life guided by the rule of Christ's morality, and governed by Christ's authority, is the noblest of which we are capable. Even the lowest ranks of society find that by Christ's rule they are enabled to perform the highest actions of virtue.

There are, nevertheless, among the opponents of Scripture, some high-minded, honest men. The laureate lauds them too much—

"There lives more faith in honest doubt,  
Believe me, than in half the creeds."

We only believe him so far as John Newton was wont to say—"Some men's doubts are better than other men's certainties."

The character of other doubters whose heart, not head, is at fault, has been quaintly sketched by an old writer—  
"Sinners perched on the dunghill of their vices, clapping their wings in self-applause, and fancying themselves much grander creatures than the Christian ; who all the while is soaring on high like the lark, and mounting on his way to heaven."

There are dishonest sceptics, professing to be wise, whom Tennyson well describes—

"'Law is God,' say some : 'No God at all,' says the fool ;  
'For all we have power to see is a straight staff bent in a pool.'"

To all such, these are our only words—

"Though the mills of God grind slowly, yet they grind exceeding small ;  
Though with patience He stands waiting, with exactness grinds He all."

*Longfellow.*

<sup>1</sup> "The Great Problem : can it be Solved ?" Rev. G. R. Gleig, *Edinburgh Magazine*, January, 1875.

Amongst the higher and more honest infidels, some of scientific power have little imagination and small spirituality, fail in reverent heed of Scripture, and consequently are not whole or comprehensive men. They amass, sometimes systematise facts, and unsparingly devote the best years of their life to one minute section of physical science. As a matter of course, their mechanical process fails when applied to ideas; and their partial apprehension of general truth, and the attempt to formulate Nature as wholly material and external, narrow their minds. Good in technicalities, but incapable of wide range, they are specially unfit for the elevated themes of theology, which are in the widest sense universal. From the habit of contemplating phenomena in which uniformity of antecedents and consequents obtains, they cannot refrain from the assumption that nothing was, is, or can be, at variance with their constant but limited experience. They explain the external structure of the world indeed, but according to the technic of man, taking no account of the spiritual and internal. The mechanism is all, the Maker is nothing in their theory; nevertheless, their own doctrine of continuity proves that the visible is the actualisation of the invisible, and the natural a passing of the supernatural into history. Schelling too pantheistically expresses it—"Nature is visible mind, and mind is invisible nature." Put it more correctly and scientifically—"the phenomenal universe is the manifestation of a Divine Power that cannot be identified with the vitality of phenomena."

Professor Tyndall infers that Aristotle, praised as a physicist, was wholly unphysical; and says of Goethe—"He could not formulate distinct mechanical conceptions; he could not see the force of mechanical reasoning; and in regions where such reasoning reigns supreme, he became a mere *ignis fatuus* to those who followed him."<sup>1</sup> It may be said with equal fairness, that scientific men, in pursuit of the merely mechanical, neglect their best and greatest work, the establishment of intelligent enduring alliance between Religion and Science; the showing that they wage battle for one and the same cause—the cause of truth, of goodness, of beauty, of God. Like

<sup>1</sup> "Address before the British Association at Belfast, 1874."

Lucretius of old, they affirm—"Nature is seen to do all things spontaneously of herself," when nothing of the kind is seen, for the energy that works cannot be identified with the phenomena. They pretend to find in the chance clash of atoms the secret of the world's plan from origination to completion; or, with greater absurdity, own God to be the cause of all things, but assert that He is the explanation of nothing: "Dieu est la cause de tout, mais il n'est l'explication de rien."<sup>1</sup> They profess that inorganic matter, unaided by God, contains the promise and potency of all life; yet of this life, concerning which is such positive affirmation, they know little or nothing—"it is the continuous equilibration of the organism with its environment," that is, the art or power of living! They so express the law of conservation of energy as to bind the world in chains of fate, leave no place for God, no liberty for man, no soul for eternity; and, strangely enough, count this conservation of energy in the things that are a sort of means by which those that are not begin to exist. They claim regard as clear-witted men, who live in "the high and dry light of intellect," yet wholly forget, for any pious purpose, that every meal we eat and every cup we drink, illustrate the mysterious control of mind over matter, and of higher law subordinating lower. They know that, even as to geometrical truths, more is required than axioms and definitions—there must be intuition of the figures, and knowledge besides that of experience; yet, not being able to see the Unknown by introspection of what they know, they would deprive others of all that knowledge which grows out of spiritual experience.

In the Secular School, human morality is identified with brute selfishness, and conscience is declared to be "a hoarded fund of traditionary pressure of utility." Shall we waste our time with these men, and try every possible way of going wrong? Life is too short. Religion satisfies a moral and spiritual yearning, which cannot be otherwise appeased. Intellect and Piety unite in worship of the Great Supreme, whom to know is eternal life. Brothers come with us, and escape the horrors of Richter's dream. He passed through unknown shadows, darkling around an empty altar. On the

<sup>1</sup> M. Scherer.

church dome was a dial-plate barren of figures, but a dark spectre pointed at it, and dead men sought to see and read. Be not like those men, vainly searching the figureless dial-plate of unrecovered centuries. Be not those blind, trying to read where nothing can be read; nor those deaf, listening where no voice can be heard.

Gathering the threads of argument into some pattern of certainty, we find that those who pretend to divorce intellect from piety are in grievous error. The Tree of Knowledge, apart from Religion, is not a Tree of Life. Those who feed on it only, neglecting the higher faculties of imagination and sacred emotion, often fall into that mental insanity which asserts—"Behold, we know not anything!" Far from having added anything to our real knowledge of God and of human nature, their light has gone out in darkness: whereas Moses and Job, Plato and Aristotle, live as princes among men. The religious temperament enables the intellect to see clearer and further. Only in the least thoughtful of men is it manifested in simple faith and unhesitating zeal that acts rather than reflects, ventures instead of calculating. The thoughtful it moulds into the character expressing intellect and morality—wide, deep, far-seeing; and is in union with sound, sober, well-balanced cerebral development. The highest class of minds, the eminently spiritual and thoroughly intellectual, familiarise themselves with those awfully grand subjects which are far beyond the ordinary strength of nerve and brain. This highest class is of the Christly type. In them partly, in Him fully, we find not merely spiritual, but philosophical pre-eminence beautifully arrayed in simplicity, purity, love.

In conclusion, we confidently assert—The best thinkers in every science give up the despairing creed, and decide for religion. The great facts and doctrines of Revealed Truth are more and more approved by accurate thought. The light of Revelation illumines the invisible world; we not only look into various apartments of the material universe, but behold within them many forms of spiritual grace and grandeur. While we look, our constitution and faculties enlarge in conscious existence, and we become almost other beings in impassioned emotion and intellectuality. The promise and

prophecy of higher and imperishable corporeity increase every present enjoyment. New melodies and harmonies continually break in upon the soul with delicious refreshments and assurances of heavenly help. The strength of our intellect delights in the words of inspired narrative and in glorious acts. Intelligence unites with Piety in proclaiming that God is the source of all and the disposer of all ; that the birth of a human being is not a less manifestation of Divine Power than is the exit of a human being in chariot of fire. The ordinary and extraordinary acts of Divine Government are known to be relatively, not essentially, different.

Having this knowledge of the Supreme, we rightly regard marvels and miracles as special messages and impressive signs. Without repugnance, we admit the Divine element in religion ; only weaklings refuse it. We hold that, beyond controversy, Divinity is the very life and soul of Nature. Those apologetic commentaries, or excusing expositions, formerly accepted, do not satisfy our nicer feelings ; nor will our surer confidence try to evade intelligent inquiry. We have a firm, rational hold of historic evidence, due knowledge of physics and philosophy, attesting the origin and continuance of Revelation. We disregard the petulant outcries of irreligious persons, who denounce all who know and believe more than themselves and dare to say they know. After due inquiry, it is not so much that we consent to retain our faith in Holy Scripture, as that Scripture retains us. The inquiry, renewed again and again in different ages of the world and periods of life, affords a consecutive accordance of innumerable affirmations. Book after book, chapter after chapter, verse after verse, word after word, have their own history, their own criticism, with pleadings for and against. There remains no softening to save our pride ; it is not we who hold the Bible, the Bible holds us, consecrates our affections, crowns our intellect. "The purer the light in the human heart, the more it will have an expression of itself in the mind of Christ. The greater the knowledge of the development of man, the truer insight as to the increasing purpose of Revelation." Intellect is not divorced from Piety, Piety is the crown of Intelligence.

## STUDY II.

### THE SUPERNATURAL.

" A Presence that disturbs me with the joy  
Of elevated thoughts ; a sense sublime  
Of something far more deeply interfused,  
Whose dwelling is the light of setting suns,  
And the round ocean, and the living air,  
And the blue sky, and in the mind of man :  
A motion, and a Spirit that impels  
All thinking things, all objects of all thought,  
And rolls through all things."

WORDSWORTH, *Tintern Abbey*.

WE are apt to forget, in listening to denials of the Supernatural, that they enter a region of thought where absolute demonstration, in a scientific sense, is impossible. When told by Renan that, not from one process of reasoning, but from the mass of all modern sciences, we have proof that there is no Supernatural,<sup>1</sup> the violence of the assertion carries us away, for a moment, from the fact that there neither is nor can be scientific proof of that which is so confidently affirmed.

All history and all experience prove that love and belief of the Divine flourish in heathen, Christian, and scientific minds ; that, indeed, the conviction of the existence and omnipresent operation of "the King eternal, immortal, invisible, the only wise," is the universal thought of humanity—adapting itself, by inward evidence as of something felt, to the history, the poetry, the speculation, the science of every age. We may advance to the proof step by step.

#### THE FIRST CAUSE.

If a man who had searched the universe in every part were to say—"There is no God," his statement would not

<sup>1</sup> "Ce n'est pas d'un raisonnement, mais de tout l'ensemble des sciences modernes que soit cet immense résultat—il n'y a pas de surnaturel."—Renan, "Etudes d'Histoire Religieuse," p. 206.

be worthy of credit; from such a search God might hide Himself. Atheism is, therefore, as to proof, impossible. The Absolute, indeed, cannot in any manner or degree be known or denied, in the strict sense of knowing. That is to say, the essence of God is inaccessible and incomprehensible. None but God can understand what God is in Himself, or the nature of the bond which binds the Divine attributes in mysterious unity; consequently, no rational being can properly deny the existence of that concerning which, essentially, he knows nothing. Denial of the Supreme, as founded on the fact of "not knowing," is irrational and unworthy of credit.

With like folly the assertions—"Matter alone is eternal and divine;" "There is no agency in the world other than physical agency;" "Nothing exists that is super-material, or supernatural," are sought to be justified by the unknowableness of the things denied. Strange to say, ignorance, which has nothing, gives nothing, concerning those things, presumes to deny their existence. We cannot accept the denial. Knowledge reveals that every phenomenon, as it is investigated, leads from the known to that which is utterly unknown; all natural facts are unaccountable in their essence, and unknowable in their ultimate genesis. The great master fact is the unknown. Absolute existence is the Reality which persists independently of matter, cannot be identified with matter, is the Supernatural.

Reverse the argument. The existence of matter or of energy from eternity is incomprehensible, even as is the existence of God from eternity. Knowledge of either is impossible; nevertheless, despite the impossibility, we cannot enter any inquiry concerning causation without eventually postulating some First Cause. We are forced to do this from sheer inability to follow out an infinite series of causes. This First Cause is infinite, for if not, we must think of a region beyond its limits and uncaused, which would be, virtually, to abandon causation. The First Cause must likewise be independent, have no necessary relation to any other being; for if the presence of anything else is necessary for completeness "quod Deo minus est, Deus non est," it is dependent and not

the First Cause; therefore the First Cause is infinite, is independent, is supernatural.

The position is unassailable and opponents beat a retreat. "The consciousness of an inscrutable Power manifested to us through all phenomena has been growing ever clearer, and must eventually be freed from its imperfections. The certainty that, on the one hand, such a Power exists, while, on the other hand, its nature transcends intuition, and is beyond imagination, is the certainty towards which intelligence has from the first been progressing. To this conclusion science inevitably arrives as it reaches its confines; while, to this conclusion, Religion is irresistibly driven by criticism. And, satisfying as it does the demands of the most rigorous logic at the same time that it gives the religious sentiment the widest possible sphere of action, is the conclusion we are bound to accept, without reserve or qualification."<sup>1</sup> If we apply to this, the Inscrutable Something, Anselm's definition of God—"That than which nothing greater can be thought"<sup>2</sup>—we have, in the latest result of science, an acknowledgment—not of that to which "Religion is irresistibly driven," but of the first great truth of Scripture, that God is the mighty inscrutable Power who transcends all our understanding.

This Power, of which every phenomenon is a manifestation, acts through all bodies, animate and inanimate. If a stone is thrown into the air, or falls on the ground, it is according to definite laws; if a crystal is formed in a solution of salt, if plants grow and flower, if animals are propagated, if there are perception and formation of thought in man, all these, though Omnipresence is "unthinkable," are the sensible manifestations of a Divine Power immanent in the Cosmos—proof of the omnipresence of mystery.

This inscrutable Power, the ultimate Cause of all things, can only be thought of as possessing specific attributes. The forms of our consciousness are such that the Absolute cannot in any manner or degree be brought within them. We are unable to form any idea of eternity, infinity, omnipotence, omnipresence; we must get notions by means of duration,

<sup>1</sup> "First Principles," p. 108: Herbert Spencer.

<sup>2</sup> "Proslogium," cap. 2, 3, 4.

expansion, acts of power, and of pervading presence like that of gravity. It is a matter of necessity to think of these things in this manner; so, for definiteness, we conceive of God as personal, infinite, all-wise, mighty, everywhere present; and unutterable is the consolation when by sacred influence, as of inward evidence, we know God as our Friend who makes our spirit pure and clear—

“ Whose blessing, like a line of light,  
Is on the waters day and night,  
By heavenly path to lead us home.”

*Tennyson, In Memoriam, xvii. (slightly altered).*

Against the doctrine of a personal God, it is asserted—the existence of evil proves that such personal God is not infinitely good; or, if infinitely good, He is lamentably deficient in power, or in intelligence; otherwise, evil would not be allowed. The assertion loses all weight from the fact that “God foresees all things, but forces nothing;” and that we cannot conceive of free beings existing without a possibility of evil; their freedom forbids the exercise of omnipotence to avert it, but not the drawing out of a greater good by its occurrence. We are also told—“that which we know of intelligence implies a circumscribed and limited kind of being, adapting its internal processes to other processes which are external.” Really, to talk in this way is to play fast and loose with things, for we can just as well think of Infinite Intelligence as we can of Infinite Power. We are assured—“A personal God is a limited Deity; personality and infinity are terms expressive of ideas naturally incompatible.” This again is mere play upon words. Can these men, who so talk about God, explain what they mean by infinite extension, as applied to the Supreme? Is infinite extension more correct, or more easily comprehended, than is infinite intelligence? We must take phenomenal conceptions such as can be framed; we know that they are inadequate to represent the Ineffable Reality; but, seeing that He is a reality, we consider that mental conceptions are of a higher order than physical. To call Personality, Goodness, Intelligence, anthropomorphic in their nature is, indeed, to give them their right title; but, to forsake these and adopt energy or motion, mechanical in

place of intellectual terms, is not less anthropomorphic, and forsakes the higher for the lower: Personality as much transcending impersonal mechanical conceptions as Humanity transcends the crystal or the seaweed.

It is possible that there may be a mode of being as greatly transcending Intelligence and Will as these exceed mechanical motion, but our minds are utterly incompetent to form even an approach to conception of such a Being, and we are not responsible to any Being, whoever and whatever he may be, of whom we cannot know anything. We are to think of God as transcending all thought, yet dwelling in our thought; as without parts and passions, yet as manifested in our every limb, and abiding in all our affections. We are to worship this God, not only with the silent, secret, mysterious homage of the inner man; but also with those external, decorous, reverential observances, which, giving outward and visible form to the acts of the spirit, constitute true worship. To plead as an excuse for failing in this due homage, by body and soul, that the Wonderful Being whom we all acknowledge, whom our knowledge lights us to, and our emotions lead us to, must not be thought of as a Person, but rather be reduced to a vacuity—a sort of aureity without the gold, thought without mind, principle without person, so that by means of this incomprehensible nothing we attain to something higher than Personality and Intelligence—may, indeed, assert a transcendental difference, but eliminates everything essential from worship, and takes even the possibility of reasonableness from piety.

Those who insist that God is eternally and infinitely so far above us that all intellectual and emotional exercise on the high theme is but an insult to Godhead, are in danger of losing that soundness of mind by which alone right judgment is formed; for it is impossible continually to seek that from which they are ever thrown back with a deepened conviction of the impossibility of either knowing or finding; and, ceasing to exercise themselves in these high efforts, they become incapable of making them. Nor is that all: a transcendental Being, infinitely above intelligence and emotion, is a pure negation, and all argument concerning Him is based on the

delusion that nothing can be more rationally realized than something ; but to regard the Unseen Reality as the absence of everything we can imagine as real, whether bad or good, is unnatural, irrational, unbecoming. Unnatural, because human instinct universally yearns after a future life and knowledge of God. Irrational, for we are able to understand well enough many things about God ; and that the Divine Being is eternal, unchangeable, immaterial, omnipresent, omniscient, almighty, is a far more reasonable belief than the gratuitous assumption that He is unlike everything that all the manifestations of Him would lead us to expect. Unbecoming, for it divests Deity of all that appeals either to intellect or emotion ; and degrades Him to an eternal energy, an inscrutable power, neither to be loved nor feared. To say—"The Ultimate Cause cannot in any respect be conceived by us, because He is in every respect greater than can be conceived ;" and then to tell us—"Matter, motion, force, are better symbols of the Unknown Reality than are our highest conceptions of supreme will, goodness, wisdom," is not to forsake personality for something higher, but to give a dreary beetle-view of God. Deity is something more than the universe. He cannot be identified with Nature, and yet He is no absentee God, sitting idle and outside His world, but dwells in it as His star-domed city ; without Him not a sparrow falls to the ground, while through every star and grass-blade, but mostly through man's soul, beams the glory of His presence.

Of course, it can be objected that, however sublime our idea of a Personal God and Creator, we can do no more than assign to Him exalted human attributes. If the objector means that by Person we understand an infinitely intelligent, thinking Being ; and that by Creator we mean that this Person is everywhere present, pervading the material universe indeed, but distinct from it and superior to it ; if he says that we look into nature for physical signals of an everliving will, and read the universe as an autobiography of an Infinite Spirit, repeating Himself in miniature within our spirit ; this represents our views with sufficient clearness. Personality is not used in any sense of limitation, but as the mysterious

aspect of the Dynamis, the omnipresent Energy, to whose eternal decrees we submit, and on whose constancy we implicitly rely. We decline to call Him Power, or Matter, or Motion. The Name of the great "I Am" has ever been in essence incomprehensible; but we say—"God is Spirit," and we are kept from assigning human or material attributes to Him by the unsolvable mystery being formulated as a Trinity in unity. When we think of matter, space, energy, time; that matter is solid, or fluid, or gaseous; that space is of three dimensions; that energy displays itself as force in attraction, in repulsion, in motion, and in another trinity as life, as intelligence, as emotion; that time is past, present, future; these shapings of thought, formulated in the doctrine of the Holy Trinity, which are for ever striving after higher and purer ideality, sufficiently guard us against imputing the feebleness of man to God.

#### REVELATION OF THE GODHEAD.

1. If we say that the universe is the autobiography of an infinite Spirit, then Nature is a revelation of that Supernatural, whom we adore as the eternal, life-giving Principle (Ps. xix. 1; Rom. i. 20): "a power to which no limit in time or space is conceivable, of which all phenomena, as presented in consciousness, are manifestations, but which we can only know through these manifestations."<sup>1</sup> Here is a formula legitimately obtained by the employment of scientific methods, the last result of a subjective analysis on the one hand, and of an objective analysis on the other hand.

We will put it to use—Unity of science being the reflection of the unity of the Reason and Intelligence pervading Nature, our own reason and intelligence, being part of Nature, are also a reflection. Mind is the thinker and investigator, a seer concerning the presence of the living God in the world, a twofold presence: external, in the phenomena of Nature; internal, by the consciousness which takes knowledge of phenomena.

2. These phenomena divide themselves into good and evil. There is a soul of goodness in things evil, and a heart of truth in things false; a taint of evil within the good, and a grain of

<sup>1</sup> "Cosmic Philosophy," vol. ii. p. 415: James Fiske.

falsity in our apprehension of apparent truth. Our consciousness and actual experience show that this good and this evil germinate out of something apart from ourselves. No man's luck, so to speak, is pulled by only one string ; nor do events happen simply because they are bad or good, "else all eggs would be added or none at all."

3. The fact, thus arrived at, as to good and evil, is the result not of one, but of all concrete experience ; is an induction from universal consciousness, and ranks in certainty with the postulates of exact science ; is the common foundation of those religious ideas concerning God, Good, Evil, Creation, which are almost, if not quite, universal : Ideas different, yet allied ; neither accidental nor factitious ; not superficial but deep-seated ; not evolved, nor slowly accumulated and organised, but, however degraded or distorted or magnified, striking deep roots into our nature. They affect men's interpretations of the simplest mechanical accidents, the most complicated events in the histories of nations, the diverse habits of thought, the different orders of minds, the good or ill tone of feeling, and the daily conduct of life. To suppose that they are groundless, so shakes the foundations of human intelligence that nothing can be relied on. That doctrines of good and evil are priestly inventions ; that in every society, past and present, savage and refined, certain members of the community combined to delude the rest in one and the same way ; is not tenable : nor does any artificial origin account for the natural facts. These facts are the ground of intelligent consciousness as to good and evil, the foundation of the moral sentiment which responds to them—not the creations of that sentiment, and that sentiment is as normal as is any other faculty.

4. View this more accurately :—

Religion, everywhere present, together with science organising facts into the mass of human experience, are the weft and the warp of history. Both have their near and visible side, the Natural ; the remote and eternal, the Supernatural. Each holds a truth, the needful complement of the other ; and when our mind is capable of realising due conceptions of both, discoveries will be on a grander scale. "As the history of

every age witnesses, there is an undeniable religious need that clings to human Nature, a need of recognising a something above Nature, and of fellowship with the same, which only asserts itself the more forcibly the longer it is repressed. The predominance of that worldly bent of mind which will acknowledge nothing above Nature, does but call forth in the end a stronger reaction of the longing after the supernatural; the prevalence of an all-denying unbelief invariably excites a more intense desire to be able to believe."<sup>1</sup> If this were discoverable only in an individual, or belonged only to one age or one race of men, it might be ascribed to imagination, or be the result of a peculiar mental tendency, but it is found in all. There is something in man that is not wholly satisfied with the objects of the senses; but recognises, or believes that it recognises, another world of spiritual beings with whom, for good or evil, he is related. This consciousness has been a source of wealth to all language and literature. "It cannot be explained by the hypothesis of a received tradition handed down from earlier races or imaginary superior beings, but is to be attributed to God's Spirit working in man."<sup>2</sup> When the vividness and intensity of the intellectual emotions, whether for good or evil, surpassed the ordinary and extraordinary limits, men believed that they pierced to the spiritual realities on which the original consciousness is itself based. Hence, our consciousness of the supernatural seems a fundamental verity; and the origin must be sought higher in the stream of time than the goings forth of the rivulets of mythology, sought in man's essential nature, in the original impulse to godlike and in the perversion to devil-like productions.

5. Now enter that branch of operation called miraculous. It is not essentially more marvellous than the growth of tree from seed, for "an inscrutable Power is manifested to us through all phenomena;"<sup>3</sup> therefore, everything natural is supernatural in origin; but we do well to consider an objection. "Miracles, or the intervention of the Deity in human affairs, are, to the scientific thinker, *à priori* so improbable, that no

<sup>1</sup> "Neander's Church History," vol. i. p. 15.

<sup>2</sup> "God in History," vol. iii. p. 306; Bunsen.

<sup>3</sup> "First Principles," p. 108; Herbert Spencer.

amount of testimony suffices to make him entertain the hypothesis for an instant." The assertion must be met with thorough denial: most scientific thinkers, and of the highest mental power, accept both the possibility and the actuality of miracles. Consider the meaning of such over-confident assertion. It is that a miracle seems an event without a natural cause; we say—the cause is Divine, or may even be a hidden natural cause. "A miracle is essentially incomprehensible, and so far as we can understand, an impossibility." We reply—It is the height of presumption to restrict Divine action to our own understood line of things, and then call our restriction "natural law." Indeed, it is utterly absurd to contend that the so-called natural is the only and universal order of things, that there is nothing beyond, nothing preternatural, which is able to enter the order of things with which we are acquainted. "Naturæ conditor nihil in miraculis contra naturam fecit, sed tantum contra illam consuetudinem quæ nobis innotuit."

The multiform revelations of an Omnipresent Power are not all identifiable with physical nature, nor limited to it; for scientific inquiry, working independently of theology, has led to the conclusion that the dynamic phenomena of Nature are a manifestation of an Omnipresent Power transcending Nature; therefore, every real advance in knowledge is certain to make us acquainted with new modes of Divine action. In fact, we know, so far as such things can be known, that the present order of things arose out of one wholly different, when energies such as now exist were not in operation.

Can a man think out the creation of matter, or the eternity of matter, or the annihilation of matter, or explain the *modus operandi* of spirit on matter, or of matter on spirit, or of the persistence of energy—that is, of energy without beginning or end? Even if he can, he is unable to subject the action of Absolute Being to his own analysis, limit it within his own line of things, or deny Divine interference.

If we know anything at all, it is that the vast synthesis of energies without us and within us are only known as they affect our consciousness. Who dreams that these are the only powers? The series of conceptions are the register of

our experience, and generate beliefs in the more startling experiences of other men, from which the component assenting consciousness of men generally cannot be torn apart; consequently, belief in miracles is fundamental. The belief is proof of an attempted internal correspondence of our circumscribed being with the Infinite; and this power of thinking, or conception, is the ground of all deep faith and solemn adoration.

Our process of study—1, The Divine autobiography, or image of Intelligence; 2, The existence of good and evil a real existence; 3, The world-wide consciousness of these as the ground of our moral sense; 4, Religion as the universal conviction and witness; 5, Miracles as possible and actual—leads through various passages to inner chambers of investigation:—i. Is the universe self-existent, without beginning, eternal? ii. Is it self-made? iii. Was it created?

The first is atheistic, and offers no solution of the mystery. It is wholly incapable of conception. To assert self-existence is the denial of causation, and when we deny causation we also deny commencement. We must add to the absolute impossibility of conceiving this the fact that we have to endow matter with all the powers of mind, and give to that which is dead all the properties of life; making matter, to all intents and purposes, God. Doing this we fall into the old heathen homage of Nature, and worship Power—the phenomenal God. “To worship Power only,” Dr. Arnold said, “is devil worship.” Another has said—“What can be more arrogant and unbecoming than for a man to think that he has a mind and understanding in him, but yet in the universe besides is no such thing; or that those things which, with the utmost stretch of his reason he can scarce comprehend, should be moved and managed without any reason at all.”<sup>1</sup>

The second is pantheistic, and cannot by any symbolism pass into real conception. The nearest approach is to conceive potential existence passing into actual existence, or existence long remaining in one form, then suddenly, and of its own accord, passing into another form; but that involves

<sup>1</sup> “Cicero De Leg.” lib. ii.

the idea of a change without a cause, which is impossible. Moreover, whence the potential existence? This requires accounting for, just as the actual existence, so the same difficulties meet us; and there is no escape except this—Nothing developed into something, or the world of phenomena is practically the Deity, who is finite, which is absurd.

The third hypothesis, theism, which involves creation by Divine agency, is adopted by the most, the best, the greatest of mankind. "There is, I believe, no system of philosophy whatever in which that notion of a higher power than our own, which we mean by God, is wholly absent. The name may not be there, and even the formal idea of a God may be specially denied, and yet the thing itself may remain, so inextricably is it bound up with all human experience."<sup>1</sup> The creative process is not to be represented as a product of manufacture, though the proceedings of a human artificer vaguely symbolise a method by which the universe might be shaped, but as the ever-changing multiform revelation of an Omnipresent Power, who is in no wise to be identified with the manifestations. The production of matter out of nothing is the real mystery; but as we are not only obliged to assume some cause, but also a first cause, or we cannot speak of causation, we say—"all things are of God"—"*nihil in hoc mundo fieri potest, nisi vel faciente vel permittente Deo*"—and in that cause the conclusion is reached—the Godhead.

In strict reasoning every one of the three suppositions, though verbally intelligible, is, through our limited capacity, incapable of actual cognition, and science cannot give any explanation. We search for one in Scripture and find it. Having found it, science educates heart and intellect to love, reverence, and partly understand it. John Locke says—"My right hand writes while my left is still; what causes rest in one and motion in the other? Nothing but my will, a thought of my mind; my thoughts only changing, the right hand rests and the left hand moves. This is matter of fact which cannot be denied; explain this and make it intelligible, and then the next step will be to understand creation."<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> "The Bible and its Critics," sect. v. p. 193: Rev. Edward Garbett.

<sup>2</sup> "Our Knowledge of the Existence of God."

Professor Huxley, "Critiques and Addresses," states—"If any one is able to make good the assertion that his theology rests upon valid evidence and sound reasoning, then it appears to me that such theology will take its place as a part of science." Verified theology is scientific: our theology is verifiable, therefore scientific. Proceed to further verification. No theory of phenomena, internal or external, can be framed without postulating an absolute existence. We speak of this absolute existence in the singular number, because the order of manifestation throughout all mental phenomena is the same as throughout all material phenomena—there is unity. If the order of these manifestations, say, for example, the complex and organised correspondence of the mind with its environment in arranging and combining various experiences received from without, and in adjusting new inner relations to new outer relations, is found to correlate with the moral facts of redemption and sanctification, and to produce the highest and purest morality, the verifying experimental process is scientific.

If the other, or material order of manifestations, is given in an ancient book, written by a primitive race at a time when men had little or no conception of that scientific generalisation which now arranges in correlated groups widely separated phenomena, and possessed little or no understanding of that natural adaptation of means to ends, of which the world is now known to be full; if, nevertheless, this book, claiming to have been dictated by the Spirit of the Almighty, gives such a formula of the origin and growth of things that science, however it steps in advance, does but more clearly explain the ancient conception and revelation; the process of verification is both theologic and scientific. The integration of all natural forces into a single agency, one grand entity, God, is the grandest conception of humanity, the profoundest of scientific truths.

"One God, one law, one element,  
And one far-off divine event,  
To which the whole creation moves."

*In Memoriam.*

Without revelation, taking science only for our guide, we

run out the whole sounding line of human knowledge into the depths of Nature and find no bottom; we soar and soar in heavenly heights, but only to discover that there is something beyond, which, nevertheless, comes to us, is in us, and in everything around us. Then, because physical knowledge fails to explain the mystery, we go and sit with the dim-eyed old man, the genius of unbelief, described by Coleridge, who, in his cold and dreary cave, "talked much and vehemently concerning an infinite series of causes and effects, which he explained to be a string of blind men, the last of whom caught hold of the skirt of the one before him, he of the next, and so on, till they were all out of sight; and that they walked infallibly straight, without making one false step, though all were equally blind."

Glad to escape from such dreary unbelief, we endeavour now to obtain some conception of revelation and the account of creation by studying—1, The manner or wording of the Divine narrative; 2, The truthfulness of the record.

1. The Manner or Wording of the Divine Narrative.

"The Bible has well-nigh for ever seemed against the science of the day;" there are reasons for this disagreement. Had the account of creation accorded with the science propounded in heathen times, or as asserted in Greece and Rome, or even with that of our fathers during the last century, it would now be contemptuously rejected as utterly false. "A revelation of only so much astronomy as was known to Copernicus, would have seemed imperfect after the discoveries of Newton; and a revelation of the science of Newton would have appeared defective to Laplace; a revelation of all the chemical knowledge of the eighteenth century would have been deficient in comparison with the information of the present day, as what is now known in this science will probably appear before the termination of another age."<sup>1</sup> If to this we add that, always and everywhere, despite the obvious disagreement, the ablest and most scientific of our race saw something in the narrative which convinced them of a real though hidden agreement with the truth—when the truth should be known; of a true science that would

<sup>1</sup> "Geology and Mineralogy," vol. i. p. 14: Francis T. Buckland.

ultimately be made plain ; and if now—when we take a pride in our scientific advance—we are prepared scientifically to show, in the book presented to the reader, that the old narrative, so long an enigma, is full of new science ; the verification of all this furnishes a real and unmistakable proof that the narrative is Divine.

The language remains, as at the first, unchanged amidst changing interpretations. Only the meaning of the words, when they struck on the ears or flashed into the minds of the first auditors, has to be recovered ; so that we may stand with Moses, with Isaiah, with the Apostles, to hear the words of God, and to fix our eyes on the Son of man—"God manifest in the flesh." We have to remember that God's words and thoughts are a light not for one age, but for all ages ; and that which seemed written for the old generation only, is for our admonition also ; not in the words and forms used by physical science—for all past time and nearly all men are unscientific ; and not in philosophical order—but in a form, like seed, that may lie in any crevice of the heart, with power of growth to fill the whole understanding.

Notwithstanding that the Hebrew contains no scientific terms, the creative symbol is so comprehensive that every hypothesis in every age has been forced into it ; and, as if to guard this comprehensiveness against the charge of vagueness, there are such accurate order and definiteness, that the men, most qualified to judge, find depths within depths, and laws within laws. Hence, we maintain that the Book is Divinely inspired ; contains, within the outer body, a soul or inner life, which, while agreeing with the imperfection of our nature, raises us above it ; and, in answer to the inarticulate cries of conscience, pours the wisdom of God into our heart and mind.

He who is susceptible of that wisdom, catches the spirit of it, finds lessons for childhood, strength for manhood, and the capabilities of heroes and prophets. Thousands know by actual experience that the Book grows with their growth ; and, as knowledge of it increases, deeper depths of wisdom are revealed. St. Paul utters their experience—"O the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and knowledge of

God!" (Rom. xi. 33). At present, none but religious men accept, as fact, the continual revelatory character of the Book to their souls; but every candid inquirer will ultimately acknowledge it.

The language and unscientific form of the account are greatly found fault with; and thus spoken of by the un-devout, "that superlative nonsense, known as the doctrine of special creation."<sup>1</sup> Again, "Obviously a theory which was framed in a barbarous age, when men were alike unfamiliar with the conceptions of physical causation and uniformity of law, and ignorant of the requirements of a valid scientific hypothesis, and which has survived until the present day, not because it has been universally verified by observation or deduction, but because it has been artificially protected from critical scrutiny by incorporation with a system of theological dogmas assumed to be infallible; obviously such a theory is at the outset discredited by its pedigree."<sup>2</sup>

The assertion, as to the account having been "protected from critical scrutiny," is not true; no other book or account has been assailed so ably, so critically, maliciously, constantly, as this; and it survives, not because of protection, but because opponents have been beaten along the whole line of argument. The Book verily did arise amongst men "alike unfamiliar with the conceptions of physical causation and uniformity of law, and ignorant of the requirements of a valid scientific hypothesis," but that is part of the marvel; and though, as Sir Thomas Brown saith—"Time sadly overcometh all things," this Book has conquered time; and, in proof of utter folly in those who revile it as containing "the superlative nonsense, known as the doctrine of special creation," is received as the Book of God by all nations eminent in arts and arms, in wealth, civilisation, refinement.

Revilers insist that the figurative expressions are to be taken literally: there is no symbol, no figure, no allegory. They tell us the Bible asserts—"untold millions of organic molecules, of which an adult mammal is composed, rushed together at some appointed instant from divers quarters of

<sup>1</sup> "Cosmic Philosophy," vol. ii. p. 321: John Fiske.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.* vol. i. p. 438.

the compass, and spontaneously grouped themselves into vegetable, fish, bird, beast, man." These asserters are of such scientific culture that they say—"He who can believe that St. Goar of Treves transformed a sunbeam into a hat-peg may believe such an account." These clever men thrust a meaning into Scripture which only the simplest and most unscientific ages accredited, and throw in the face of a world of Christian thinkers, versed in every science, their dictum that this meaning, their own superlative nonsense, must be received as a true exposition of our faith. They are not in the least conscious that to malign the most wonderful Book in the world, to charge our greatest scholars in theology and science with gross stupidity and credulity, proves their own folly.

The Book says, in pictorial words, that vegetable, fish, bird, beast, man, all came forth from the ground by a Divinely given power. Is it a fact or not? It is a fact: modern science proves that the grass on which the sheep feeds, and the sheep itself; the fish in water, and bird in air; with man the king of all; are traced back to microscopic germ-cells of nitrogenous and hydro-carbon compounds pre-existing in the atmosphere and soil. The Scripture account states that plants, fish, birds, animals, man, came in definable order; the lower forms preceding the higher, in a series of God Almighty's days: not the horse, nor ass, nor zebra, nor quagga, by millions of organic molecules rushing together at some appointed instant; but that the earth was their common father, by means of God-given power.

A modern scientific man might count it very much better to describe the creative process from a dynamical point of view. An organism became an organism by a complex aggregate of matter in which permanent, structural, and functional differentiation and integration were rendered possible by the fact that it continually received about as much motion as it expended. The life of such an organism is a perpetual balancing of external forces by internal forces. The career or advance of an organism, or of a group of organisms, consists of two kinds of equilibration, which we designate as external and internal. The adjustment of or-

ganisms to changing external circumstances is partly by adaptation and by partial destruction ; so that natural selection is indirect equilibration. The whole process, internal and external, may be summarised—

Equilibration	{	External	{	Direct	:	Adaptation	
		Indirect	:	Natural Selection			
	{	Internal	{	Direct	:	{	Heredity
		Indirect	:	{	Correlation of Growth	Use and Disuse. <sup>1</sup>	

The above is not a jest, it is scientific in the eyes of some who mistake hypothesis for true theory. Can the processes be proved? Certainly not. For this fancy we are to give up the first chapter of our Bible, and our faith in God!

2. From the Manner of the Record pass to the Truthfulness of the Record.

The Scriptural account differs as widely from other cosmogonies as truth from fiction. Those trace the origin of life from some primeval matter, or look upon the world as pantheistical, or derive gods and men from a world-egg, and are full of absurdities. The Bible reveals a Personal God who is near to every one of us ; and creation as the act of that God, not of unwilled fortuitous processes of Nature—not by unguided interaction of atoms and atomic energies, but by a process of production according to law—Law, not of self-origination, the Divine rule of procedure.

Creation in this manner, "according to law," could not have been scientifically known by any man of the era in which the record was written, not even by the inspired writer. If this latter statement appear too bold, let it be remembered that the plan of Scripture is so vast and wonderful, that even angels do not fully understand, but delight to investigate it ; that the prophets, who prophesied, received not prophecy for themselves—but for us ; and that inspired men saw not to the end of the things in which they ministered (1 Pet. i. 10-12). If the account, the facts, the order, are true, real, actual, such knowledge could come from God only. This conviction of divinity led that distinguished naturalist, Linnæus, to claim

<sup>1</sup> "Cosmic Philosophy," vol. ii. pp. 64, 65 ; John Fiske.

admission in natural science for the Mosaic account. Cuvier and Agassiz, the great majority of scientific men, and the most intelligent of the civilised world, have accepted it; and, if now the precision of latest investigation, as we shall endeavour to show, approves it; there will be presented exactly the evidence needed to convince accurate thinkers of our own time, that the narrative of creation is simple, comprehensive, wonderful! How could a Jew, whom some ignorantly call "semi-barbarous," and his cosmogony, "an incubus;" a Jew, without a shred of modern science (whatever shrewd guesses he may have acquired from "the wisdom of the Egyptians"), as to astronomy, or geometry, or geology, or physiology, or chemistry; a Jew, who, speaking out of his own thoughts, might say the earth was flat, centre of the system, sun and stars moving round; write a correct, or even an approximately correct, account of creation? How, indeed, unless God taught him?

The advocates of materialism reject the Divinity, and dispute the accuracy of Scripture; but materialists investigate a small portion of the world. Concerned only with matter, unbelieving as to spirit, they are modern Sadducees. Recognising physics, not metaphysics; knowing but the natural, nothing of the supernatural, not even acknowledging it; materialists are like the Greek sculptor. Moved by the high aspirations of his nature and nation, in one of his best moods, he pictured to himself ideal strength, beauty, grace. He embodied the thought in spotless marble, and gave the statue to his countrymen. Alas! he and they worshipped it as god. Do not materialists sculpture and arrange matter, find that it is subject to certain laws and assumes beautiful forms, then fall down before this matter? Their minds subdue it, explain its operations and government, make a show of it in experiments, metamorphose even its nature, yet they set it up, with Energy and Space, as god! as if it had the promise and potency of all life terrestrial and heavenly. Not the great minds, not the profound thinkers of our day, do this. Not those who are noblest in conception thus empty God of divinity, of emotion, of intellect, to put in place thereof physical properties; nor will we. No Fetish-worshipper

was ever brutish enough to imagine that a stone fell or a star shone, or fruit was sweet, because the god inside made it fall, shine, or be sweet; nor will we, at the bidding of materialists, worship the levers, the pulleys, the cranks, the cords of Nature, and forget the Holy One. We cannot detach Him from the world, no, not if we would; nor cut the wires of the great Operator, nor demagnetise His needle; matter may be as the iron, but mind is the magnetic energy coming into it; matter is set in motion, mind is the energy which sets it in motion—the mind of God. The more thoughtful a man is, the more firmly will he be established in the ancient faith—"he may even find in the evidence of the intimate relation between mental activity and physical changes in the brain the most satisfactory grounds which science can afford, for the belief that the phenomena of the material universe are the expressions of an Infinite Mind and Will, of which man's is the finite representative."<sup>1</sup>

There are two reasons, apart from a special creation, why materialists ought to accept the doctrine of a Personal God:—1, God, though essentially incomprehensible, can be, and is, known of; 2, We know of God, even as we know of mathematical truths.

1. Allowing that God, as to essence, is unsearchable; that we can only know the relative and finite, because the Infinite, the Eternal, the Almighty, can alone look into the Divine Nature, or understand how and why God is; nevertheless, we may know of God.

The finite, indeed, has no proportion in comparison with the Infinite, nor the imperfect with the Perfect; but those who, on account of this ignorance, would deprive God of Personality, and represent Him as Power, do not render Him more intelligible; they degrade Him, define Him to be Power without motive, Wisdom without purpose, Love without object. We cannot accept the definition. Looking at Nature we behold government by law, the lower existences serve with blind obedience; ascending, we find in plants an obscure vibration of life; amongst animals, consciousness; within man, a high principle of intelligence. This intelligence leads

<sup>1</sup> "Mental Physiology:" Dr. W. B. Carpenter.

to the conviction that wisdom is at the heart of things, and that the world is a manifestation of wisdom. Without intelligence man sinks into the brute, without consciousness the brute is as a plant, without vibration of life the plant becomes inorganic matter. Holding fast by intelligence as our guide, we find that in the measure an organism is enriched, so are moral and intellectual faculties, delicate sensations, memory, imagination, reason, will, possessed. This is a great reality. Further—knowing, by physical and mental analogy and process, that the lesser cannot contain the greater, nor the irrational be parent of reason, nor any finite thing exist of itself, we obtain conviction that there is a supreme Wisdom; and we rightly endue that Wisdom with the highest mode of being—Personality.

2. The things thus known of God form part of our knowledge in much the same way that mathematical truth is wrought in our mind. Our consciousness says—"We think; that which thinks exists." To this axiom or primitive truth, *ego*, is added the consciousness of other existence, *non ego*. Then we advance in thought—"We imperfect beings cannot be self-existent, but exist by will of the Perfect." If so, space, duration, the universe in its vast display of existence, are manifestations of the great Existence. By the duration of hour, day, year, we obtain a notion of time, if not of eternity; by the extent of an edifice, by motions in space, acquire an idea of space, if not of infinitude; by triangles, globes, squares, attain to knowledge of mathematics; still pursuing, we advance, rising from concrete to pure abstract truths, until we rest in Him who is the grand Entity—"I am that I am," in whom, by whom, and for whom, all things exist.

We add—all religions agree, in whatever else they differ, in affirming that their Faith came by more or less direct Revelation from on High. Far from saying—"In this they all lie," we acknowledge the universal testimony that apart from Revelation can be no reliable, no constraining verity concerning the Eternal. It is not the one false element common to them all, not falsification by lying prophet, not

fallacious *imprimatur* of indispensable priest ; but the outcome of all that highest human intelligence could discover, divine, or receive. In their highest moments the best and truest of our race have actually communed with the Sublime, and from Him consciously obtained the noble, the beneficent, the commanding fascinations, the pure wisdom, the glorious truths, which constitute the Faith that is on the earth. Other men marred this which came from God ; but we thankfully acknowledge, as Divine, whatever of purity and truth became the parent of noble character.

We sum our process of reasoning into a very brief statement. Denial of the Supernatural is incapable of scientific proof. Love of and belief in the Divine take their place in all history and experience. We proved that in all reasoning a First Cause is admitted, of whom all beings and existences are the manifestation. We found that the highest conception of God is Personality. As to Revelation of the Godhead, we perceived it in the world's phenomena. We saw that the universe is not eternal, not self-made, but created, and that our theology is scientific. Afterward, with due consideration for and against the Bible, we accepted its record of Creation as more intelligible than the atheistic account, and as more correct. We concluded the argument with two reasons for accepting the Personality of God as a truth.

Honour is due to those devout men whose science fits them to be priests of the physical universe, to unfold its mysteries and explain its powers. Tracing natural things to natural source and cause, they show that the provisions of Nature are not from the sun-god, but from the Lord God. Their understanding enables them to rejoice in the light, behold the enlargement, reverence the dignity of the Divine Word—the letter stationary, the meaning progressive. Entering within the curtains of the literal word, these men proceed in spirit to the most holy place of the sanctuary. Drawing near with the incense of devotion, kindled by the light of science in the well-prepared vessel of an experienced intellect, they worship before the mercy-seat of Jehovah. Then coming forth to exercise their office, they consecrate every school of thought,

every lecture room, as temples in which are expounded the will, the design, the work of Him in whom they live and move, and have their being.

“ Bless'd are they  
Who in this fleshy world, the elect of Heaven,  
Their strong eye darting thro' the deeds of men,  
Adore with steadfast unpresuming gaze  
Him, Nature's Essence, Mind, and Energy !  
And gazing, trembling, patiently ascend,  
Treading beneath their feet all visible things  
As steps that upward to their Father's throne  
Lead gradual.”

*S. T. Coleridge, Religious Musings.*

### STUDY III.

#### THE THRESHOLD OF CREATION.

"Thou from primeval nothingness didst call  
First chaos, then existence ;—Lord, on Thee  
Eternity had its foundations—all  
Spring forth from Thee ; of light, joy, harmony,  
Sole origin ;—all life, all beauty Thine."

SIR J. BOWRING.

SOME of us limit, and lightly toy with the Creator's attributes ; profess to scale the awful heights of infinity, and to build a godless world by means of mechanism devised by human intellect. It is in vain—we cannot so build, nor thus ascend ; the genesis of an atom is not less mysterious than the birth of a planet. No doubt a particle of matter is less complex than the universe, but that particle, all in all, is infinite. This particle and that universe are not known as they exist in themselves, but as our senses represent them ; consequently, it is impossible to know what matter is, or whether it really has any action of its own, or prove that "it is the origin of all that exists." It is simply preposterous to imagine that we shall ever scientifically trace the continuity of molecular processes into the phenomena of consciousness, and materially explain how our consciousness, by means of imagination, makes itself at home in other and far-distant worlds.

Other men, thinking thereby to honour the Almighty, speak of the universe as created by the breath, fashioned by the touch, and launched from the hand of God : likening Him to a mechanic, and His work to a machine. Whereas, the phenomena of the world, and the vast synthesis of energies within us in manifold contact with vaster energies without us, can never be known in objective existence, or as to the essential nature of their cause, but simply as affecting our consciousness ; therefore, to say that Divine energy produced

the world by methods analogous to human methods, that the laws and manifold harmonies of the universe arose from quasi-human volitions, is to err with materialists who pretend to measure and explain the whole of Nature's operation by their own physical conception.

It is quite true, Scripture so describes that portion of the Divine dominions with which we are connected, that for a long time most men thought that the world was brought suddenly into existence, and has remained substantially unaltered. This is not owing to any error in fact, but to the form of the narrative. Past, present, future, are continually spoken of as the now—the present. Things yet to come are often regarded as already existing. The slow operation of ages is not unfrequently represented as of immediate and quick performance. In prophecy, in poetry, in mystical passages, in parables, the same style prevails. It represents, we conceive, the aspect in which things appear to the Eternal; but we are informed that the Father worketh till now, of creative processes proceeding in many other planets, suns, and systems, and we lay aside our former childlike conceptions, acknowledge that the works of the Almighty are continuous, progressive, infinite.

Think of time hastening away, preceded and followed evermore and evermore by other time; which, however retraced as to the past, attains no beginning—or, extended into the future, finds no end. Represent space enveloping smaller space, itself enclosed by greater and ever greater; yet, wherever the boundary is set, infinity lies beyond, containing all, itself by none contained. Contemplate existences manifold in number, form, degree, vast movements of worlds innumerable. Adding billions of cycles to the past, we are still far off from that beginning when worlds had birth (John i. 1-3).

Chastened by these conceptions, enter the Threshold of Creation.

If the world had a beginning and, nevertheless, is infinite; we must suppose that from any instant, say the present, an infinite series of creations has gone forth. This is absurd; notwithstanding the common algebraic form that  $1 + 2 + 4 + 8$ , etc.,  $\text{ad inf.} = \infty$ ; for it is the property of a really infinite

series that neither first nor last can be found. An infinite world—that is, a world consisting of infinite parts, requires infinitude for their display, and eternity for their enumeration. Suppose that the world is not infinite in extent, nor eternal in duration, then we have a pre-existent eternal void in which could be no creation; for why at any one moment more than another? and beyond the world would be an infinite space, to which the world must have some necessary relation, which is also absurd; for what relation can the world have with nothing?

It may be said, and justly, this language is somewhat paradoxical and inexact, for eternity is not time; neither coming nor departing, it is and for ever. Time is measured by the world's changes, and all duration is comprised in two series—the past and the future. Add these together, and they form time—not eternity. As to space, we conceive of it as involving (we know not why) the essential element of three dimensions; but mathematicians are undecided as to whether it has precisely the same properties throughout the universe. An inhabitant in space of two dimensions only would be incapable of appreciating the third dimension, but would certainly feel a difference in passing from his space to other portions which were more curved. "So it is possible that in the rapid march of the solar system through space, we may be gradually passing to regions in which space has not precisely the same properties as we find here—where it may have something in three dimensions analogous to curvature in two dimensions—something, in fact, which will necessarily imply a fourth-dimension change of form in portions of matter, in order that they may adapt themselves to their new locality."<sup>1</sup> Now, with God, the universe is not dual nor fragmentary, but an infinite whole. As to space and time, they correspond relatively with the Infinity and Eternity of God: therefore, no idea of ours can approach the vastness of creation; and in vain we inflate our conceptions as to the extent of time. The children of imagination are nothing in comparison with the reality. "It is an infinite sphere of which the centre is everywhere, and the circumference no-

<sup>1</sup> "Recent Advances in Physical Science," p. 5: P. G. Tait, M.A.

where."<sup>1</sup> Hence, we conclude that God is for ever, and infinitely all that He is. Creator, He creates eternally. The world is not by caprice, by chance, by hazard, but of reason and purpose Divine.

All this is miraculous, but we are told—"Science has no room for miracles, for by miracles we understand an interference of supernatural forces in the natural course of development of matter."<sup>2</sup> Again—"As far as the eye of science has hitherto ranged through Nature, no intrusion of purely creative power into any series of phenomena has ever been observed."<sup>3</sup> Examining the facts on which such statements are founded, the whole philosophy stands self-convicted of inadequacy. It has no explanation of the origin of things. It does not and cannot formulate the whole series of changes passed through by matter in its passage from the imperceptible to the perceptible, nor from the perceptible to the imperceptible. It begins explanations with existences which already have concrete forms, and leaves off while they still retain those forms. Manifestly such existences had preceding, and will have succeeding histories. The assertion—"There is no interference of supernatural forces in the course of Nature"—is based on ignorance of the origin, the continuance, the end of things. It assumes that everything is known, when, in reality, not one thing in the world is fully known, but escapes from our every research into the unknown. It forgets that "information, however extensive it may become, can never satisfy inquiry; positive knowledge does not, and never can, fill the whole region of possible thought."<sup>4</sup> The protestors against miracles protest too much: indeed Nature, as a whole, is one splendid miracle; and presents, in all its parts, innumerable marvels. The whole and the parts, whether wrought by *coup de main* or process of gradual evolution, are essentially mysterious and marvellous.

The blending of mind and matter, influence and emotion, in the bodily structure of sentient and rational creatures is a

<sup>1</sup> Pascal: "Pensées."

<sup>2</sup> "The History of Creation," vol. i. p. 60: Prof. Haeckel.

<sup>3</sup> "Apology for the Belfast Address," p. 548.

<sup>4</sup> "First Principles:" Herbert Spencer.

mystery. Will any one state whether Body is the necessary means of bringing Mind into relationship with space and extension, or of giving it connection with place and time? whether Matter is essentially necessary for Emotion? Will not the explanation require an explanation? What is the link joining the stupendous machinery which traverses the fields of space wherein worlds are massed into spheres, revolving with double, treble, or manifold measurement of time in diurnal and annual rotation? Have we sufficient knowledge of the cycles of seasons, of the changing eccentricity of orbits, either to take them out of, or fit them in, the purposes of universal government? Can we say whether or not the vast horology of Nature is a register to spiritual creatures? Can the knowledge of Materialists occupy and monopolise all this sphere? Nay, yet the mind will continue to dwell upon these things, and project itself beyond them. At the very threshold of creation are occurrences which set at nought material philosophy.

In what relation do our emotions, often of the most violent kind, neither merely animal nor organic, not purely intellectual nor moral, mingle with other elements of our nature; so that we have sense of fitness, harmony, beauty, sublimity, terror, or their opposites? How do we explain that there is now, and must be throughout all future time, an unascertained Something—an Unknown on whom all phenomena and their relations rest? that at the uttermost reach of discovery there arises, and must ever arise, the question—"What lies beyond?" This, so far as we are concerned, is less explainable than would be a voice from the sky. To call it natural is to declare that Nature is a grand inexplicable entity.

Take the purely mechanical view: Physical science asserts—"Nature does not allow us for a moment to doubt that we have to do with a rigid chain of cause and effect, admitting of no exceptions." Enlarge this statement: The theory of gravitation demonstrates that the hosts of Heaven are parts of a vast mechanism, and that the phenomena of Nature are expressible in terms of matter and motion, resolvable into the attractions and repulsions of material particles. On these principles of materialism, our mind, if sufficiently expanded,

would be able to follow natural processes from beginning to end. It could see the molecules taking their position, by mutual specific attractions and repulsions, the whole process being the play and result of molecular force. Given a grain of wheat, an acorn, an infant, and their environment, expanded human intellect could trace out, *d priori*, every step of the process of growth; and, matter being given, we could, by the application of purely mechanical principles, fashion and furnish a world. Well, suppose we admit it all, which we do not, what then? Even on these principles, "we are obliged to regard every phenomenon as a manifestation of some Power by which we are acted upon; though Omnipresence is unthinkable, yet as experience discloses no bounds to the diffusion of phenomena, we are unable to think of limits to the presence of this Power."<sup>1</sup> Hence, the nature of things, their mechanical adjustment, leads to the conception of an Omnipresent Energy.

If it be said—Everything that comes into Nature, or is in Nature, or goes out of Nature, is part of Nature, or Natural; Force and Matter are phenomenal manifestations of objective Reality—that, meaning the within and the without, includes the supernatural; and concedes the argument by confessing that something not in Nature may come in, remain in, or go out. That Nature arises out of, is sustained by, is interpenetrated in every part, by an unknown energy, is capable of proof. Every organism, whether animal or plant, possesses, besides the obviously useful arrangements of its organisation, other arrangements the purposes of which it is utterly impossible to find out. Morphologists look upon the forms of animals and plants as something which cannot be mechanically explained. Attempted explanations, by means of descent and modification, rest, for all their power and meaning, on a deep and far-reaching law, at present unknown. Go yet lower: the origin of every simple salt crystal, obtained by evaporating its mother liquid, is no less mysterious as to its first cause, and no less incomprehensible in itself, than the most complex animal. When gold and silver crystallise in a cubical, bismuth and antimony in a hexagonal, iodine and sulphur in a rhombic

<sup>1</sup> "First Principles:" Herbert Spencer.

form of crystal, the ultimate cause in every case is hidden from us. Resolve all the appearances, properties, movements of things, into manifestations of energy within space and time; energy, space, time, pass all understanding. Materially and mechanically, our own beginning is unexplainable and full of mystery. The germ, in and with which we began to exist, was like every other germ; but, in the process of development, it acquired the differential characteristics of the sub-kingdoms; then successively the characteristics of its class, order, family, genus, species, race. Come to identity or personality, that of which every one is conscious, the most certain of all facts, even this cannot truly be known—knowledge of it is forbidden by the very nature of thought. It is unwise, therefore, for atheistic physicists to erect so elaborate an argument and such universal denial on absolute nescience. They cease to be guides when they forsake their own line of things. Knowing that matter and thought, even in their simplest elements, are incomprehensible—both ends being beyond mental grasp—they speak as if things were in their grasp and fully known: they are deceivers.

In one sense, physical science knows, or is destined to know everything; but, in another sense, it knows nothing. Ask the materialist, Whence came matter and energy? Who or what formed molecules? Who or what made them run into organic forms? He has no answer. "His mind may be compared to a musical instrument with a certain range of notes, beyond which, in both directions, we have an infinitude of silence."<sup>1</sup> The same fact is put in other words—"After all, what do we know of this terrible 'matter,' except as a name for the unknown and hypothetical states of our own consciousness?"<sup>2</sup> We neither know nor can know anything of matter, save through the medium of our senses, and these senses rest upon our intellect, so that we only know matter by mind—the visible by the invisible. "The sciences have in this respect one common aim, to establish the supremacy of intelligence over the world;"<sup>3</sup> not the supremacy of the world over in-

<sup>1</sup> "Matter and Force:" Prof. Tyndall.

<sup>2</sup> "The Physical Basis of Life:" Prof. Huxley.

<sup>3</sup> "On the Relation of Natural Science to General Science:" Prof. Helmholtz.

telligence. Hence, so far from matter being the only thing we can know amongst the many unknown, and the only certainty amongst those which must for ever remain uncertain, it is, if not inferior in certainty, surely subordinate to that greater truth—the existence of mind. Whoever knows that matter and its forms are shown to be the more marvellous the more they are investigated, and, in their ultimate natures, absolutely incomprehensible; knows also that the attempted interpretation of all phenomena in terms of matter, motion, energy, is an erroneous reduction of our complex symbols of thought to physical symbols, an absurd endeavour to explain mental phenomena by material phenomena, as if a disquisition on a flower would explain the hand that grasps, the eye that sees, the intelligence that discerns. It is an ignorant attempt to bridge over that chasm between consciousness and physics which must ever remain intellectually impassable.

It must strike even the most careless who realise the supremacy of mind that God being the Creator of all things—all things must include matter. (Col. i. 16.) The Bible does not tie us down to the fact that God did absolutely create matter; but we, believing that He did, that He brought it out of the invisible, seek to justify and verify our faith, for "every advance in our knowledge of the natural world will, if directed by the spirit of true humility, and with a prayer for God's blessing, advance us in our knowledge of God, and prepare us to receive the revelation of His will with profounder reverence."<sup>1</sup> With reverence, therefore, we ask, nor can we help asking—"Whence, and to what end is this matter?" The scientific devout man hesitates not to say—"It is an earthen vessel, framed to display the excellency of the power of God (2 Cor. iv. 7); it is the outer form of natural bodies, from which are evolved the spiritual (1 Cor. xv. 44); it is the fabric, or house of fashioning and use, for many vessels—some honourable, some dishonourable (2 Tim. ii. 20; 1 Cor. xv. 49)." In the first page of Scripture, matter and spirit are placed in essential opposition. The space between the two is spanned by creative will when the visible comes forth from the invisible.

<sup>1</sup> Sir Robert Inglis, British Association, 1847.

Matter is substance in various forms which every act of the Divine Spirit brings nearer to the final glorification (Rev. xxi. 3-5).

We are told, however, that "the creation of matter is unthinkable, even as the annihilation of matter is unthinkable ;" "there is neither more nor less matter in the universe now than there was in the beginning ;" in fact, "as to matter, there cannot have been any beginning, as there cannot be any ending." These assertions are nothing more than hypotheses. In the first place, that which is unthinkable cannot be so thought out as to become an unquestionable proposition of the highest certainty. In the second place, the capacity or incapacity of the human mind cannot, in any sense, measure or set boundaries to Divine action. In the third place, the eternal existence of matter is as inconceivable as its non-existence; we only know of matter by energy, and of energy by consciousness, and of consciousness as a sign of the Unknown acting behind it. This Unknown makes our consciousness aware that it is abstractedly possible for energy to compress matter to such an extent as to be without limit ; and thus, as the space occupied is indefinitely decreased, and the space unoccupied indefinitely increased, even though we may not be able to conceive matter reduced to nothing, we can and do get an approximate conception ; and we get no more than an approximate conception even of those things which we pretend to know fully. To say that creation of matter out of nothing is unthinkable is merely this—that we don't know how to do it, nor how any one else can do it.

Matter is in the world, and the pious mind conceives it came there because the Supreme Mind so willed. Socrates said that he was in prison of his own will, awaiting death, but his muscles and bones of their own will would have gone off to Megara or to Bœotia—"By the dog of Egypt they would, if they had been guided by their own ideas, and if I had not chosen, as the better and nobler part, instead of playing truant and running away, to undergo any punishment which the State inflicts."<sup>1</sup> The mind of Socrates willed his body into the prison-house. Divine energy brought matter into exist-

<sup>1</sup> "Plato : " Jowett's Translation.

ence to be, in its manifold shapes, the visible outer-works of an invisible universe.

Natural phenomena are consequently physical signals of an ever-present energy, and afford analogies whereby we rise to the conception, at least in some degree, of existences, absolutely immaterial and spiritual. It may be asserted—"We cannot argue from one state to the other;" nevertheless, the connection between mind and matter is intimate, and our consciousness of identity linking the invisible with the visible, the past with the present, forms a sound basis for argument. We are unable to attain the principle containing in itself all the various complicated conditions which evolve the seen from the unseen; but may represent them, not by that simplicity of motion once considered to be possessed by the planets in their repeated circular motion, but by those now known curves of complicity wherein all the various motions are contained, consequent on the unsymmetrical distribution of forces around the planetary bodies. As a matter of fact, we are acquainted with the transfer in the visible world of one grade of being to another, can conceive of a translation from some other state to this, and from this to some state connected with it. We can imagine the change of visible or invisible energy into heat, some potential, some kinetic, then build up the natural conception by a notion of gas or vapour indefinitely diffused, condensing either by contraction or by diminution of heat, until a liquid is formed, then regard the process as visible by which a liquid passes into a solid. In this way a scientifically exercised imagination obtains a view of the passage of things from the unseen to the seen, and how the operation of energy in and upon the matter of the universe produces infinite varieties of existence.

The same fact as to spirit and matter may be otherwise thought of. Different orders of being pervade the grosser and more material. All kinds of attractions and affinities exist where none could be expected. Mind, incorporate with matter, acts upon it and is reacted upon. The partitions between the visible and invisible are pierced, so that human intelligence permeates from one to the other. It is an unworthy imagination that infinite space contains nothing but

matter which is infinitesimal in comparison. The conception is child of experience in union with science, that not only human but other finite intelligences pass and repass. Such passage from the unseen to the seen, from the immaterial to the material, is in perfect agreement with the existing arrangement of worlds. The actions and passings of electricity, magnetism, light, out of invisible state and place into perceptible condition, may be taken as material analogue of spiritual migration and mutation.

We may have a sort of embodiment as to this by experiment. Take a glass tube, three feet long by three inches wide, perfectly cleanse it, and follow the example of Professor Tyndall in his experiments on light. Roll a small bit of bibulous paper into a pellet not a fourth of the size of a small pea, moisten it with a liquid of higher boiling point than water. Hold the pellet in your fingers till it is almost dry, then place it in a small pipe serving for the introduction of gas into the main tube, and allow dry air to pass over it into this tube. The air charged with the modicum of vapour thus taken up will, when subjected to the action of light, begin immediately to form a blue actinic cloud, and in five minutes the blue colour will extend quite through the tube. At the end of fifteen minutes the blue becomes a dense white cloud filling the tube.

Take away the pellet, empty the tube, sweep it by passing a current of dry air through, and fill it again with the vapour of hydrochloric acid. Now, though the amount of "light generating matter" is almost infinitesimal, when the electric lamp pours light through the tube, in one minute a faint cloud shows itself, grows in beauty, and in fifteen minutes the body of light is astounding.

When we think of the small amount of vapour carried in by the air at the first experiment, the appearance of a cloud so massive and luminous seems like the creation of a world out of nothing, and is, at least we may think so, a beautiful example of the material texture out of which was framed the visible world by Invisible Mind. As to the second experiment, our own intelligence directing the light that reveals existence of which we were before unconscious, not only yields

an example of passage from the unseen to the seen, but affords a symbol of the passing and repassing of those mysterious influences which are so active in the existing arrangement of worlds—

“Thro’ all our life the charm does talk  
About our path, it hovers near  
With words of promise in our walk,  
And whispers voices in our ear.”

It is agreeable to every faculty of our mental and physical powers, that we thus seek to view the mysterious passage from one state of things to another, the connection of former states with our present existence, and ascertain whether our faculties are at the end of the series. It is evident that they are not at the end ; every physical experiment, every mental inquiry, proves that we are only beginning to know. Our sense of Divinity has feeling rather than knowledge for its basis. We are on the threshold of creation, in the childhood of intellectual life ; nevertheless, even now, “the soul,” says Francis Newman, “is that side of our nature which is in relation with the Infinite ; therefore, we are the amalgam of two substances ;” or, as Isaac Taylor states, “a mean, essentially unlike what could have resulted from any possible construction of one by itself.” By this compounding of mind with matter we control both, and acquire the power to conquer and possess new worlds, to pass from sonship as to man unto sonship as to God.

“The wind, before it woos the harp,  
Is but the wild and tuneless air ;  
Yet, as it passes through the chords,  
Changes to music rare.”

There are those who think that science can neither contradict nor affirm what is taught by Scripture as to the beginning of things, and of creation ; and as “it is unworthy timidity in the lover of Scripture to fear contradiction, so it is ungrounded presumption to look for a confirmation in such cases ;”<sup>1</sup> but as science is undoubtedly able, with some accuracy, to retrace the past, when the earth was not, no religious man should stand outside while she reverently uncovers the inner works

<sup>1</sup> “Philosophy of the Inductive Sciences,” vol. i. p. 688 : Wm. Whewell, D. D.

and mysteries of the world. Such revelation is worthy of all acceptance. "So far as we can judge, no one will demonstrate what was the primitive state from which the progressive course of the earth took its origin. . . . We cannot, in any of the palæontological sciences, ascend to a beginning which is of the same nature as the existing course of events, and which depends upon causes that are still in operation. Philosophers never have demonstrated, and probably never will be able to demonstrate, what was the original condition of the solar system, of the earth, of the vegetable and animal worlds, of languages, of arts."<sup>1</sup> Despite all this, it is possible to obtain knowledge of past creations; for we detect processes of aggregation which are even now building up new worlds: processes "leading, according to the position and perhaps the character of the masses acted upon, to the formation of suns of greater or less splendour and magnitude, of streams and clusters of small stars, and of systems in which suns and stellar streams and clusters seem to be intermingled."<sup>2</sup> There are waning worlds and waxing worlds at the present moment, dried up as the moon, fertile as the earth, semi-fluid as Saturn, or cloud-form as nebulæ. They lie between the ruins of worlds that have been, and the chaotic materials of worlds which shall be. In spite of wear and tear, worlds are extending their sway, cosmos is conquering chaos. Science gives definiteness to our conceptions of creation, confirms or annuls those conceptions. We no longer look at the earth as a savage regards a steamship—a something wholly beyond comprehension. The process is one of energy, but not of energy only. The external world, so far as we see the phenomena and their characteristics, is unquestionably the result of intelligent action; while the inner world, as seen in the instinct of animals, in the morals, religion, intellect of man, has a voluntary capability of turning natural processes into other uses, of arraying energy against energy, of reducing Nature to such obedience, that the wind blows for us, fire burns for us, water becomes a mighty servant, and the electric fluid is our swift messenger.

<sup>1</sup> "Philosophy of the Inductive Sciences," vol. i. p. 688.

<sup>2</sup> Richard A. Proctor.

Test, by means of one word, "Beginning," whether our knowledge of God's Work does not enlarge and confirm our view of truth in Scripture. What does Beginning mean? It means the origination of things—"In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth." Until of late many of us had taken "beginning" to imply a comparatively modern time; but, in truth, time has no connection with it, except in meaning that before time was, when the Word was with God and was God, in that eternity, when the Son was, then were the worlds created. In that beginning, the Word, God, created all things. Now, God is eternally all that He is; there is nothing new, nothing by chance nor of caprice. If He is Creator, He is eternally Creator; for the power, the wisdom, the love, are eternal; and the act of Creation, proceeding from them, must of necessity be eternal, though not eternally creating, or we impose on the Creator the conditions of time, and subject Him to the vicissitudes of the future.

We are not responsible for the difficulty growing out of this, *i.e.* that God has eternally created, but the Creation had origin, and that origin gave birth to time—"Tempus a creatura cœpit, utrumque a Deo. Nihil in tempore novum est Deo, Qui condidit tempora, et ab eternitate existens omnia suis quæque temporibus distribuit." The difficulty really lies in the inadequacy of language to express, and the imperfection of our understanding to know, Divine things. It is certain that no number of creatures, vast as that number may be, no extension of space or ages, however grand that extension, can express the eternity and infinity of the Creator. We must, willing or unwilling, admit that, to our consciousness, all duration is comprised within two series, a series of past infinite moments, and a series of future infinite moments; we add these together, and they form relatively, eternity; but absolutely, time; one series is behind, another is before. As for God, to whom nothing is past or future, the two series exist under the same title, the one and the other are contained in the Now or Absolute Eternity of the Eternal. It may seem as if the idea of a created world, without commencement in time, and without limit in space, is one of those infinities which cannot be explained; in that case it is the

best possible example of the Infinity and Eternity of the Creator (Gen. i. 1 ; John i. 1-3).

Creation, to express the eternity, the infinity, the majesty, the wisdom, the perfections of God, ought to extend to an eternity of ages, to an infinity of spaces, to an innumerable variety of existences in every degree, all finite in themselves ; but, in space beyond space, and world beyond world, a symbol of Infinity ; the absolute Infinity being figured by an infinity that is relative ; the relative being duration and extent without bounds, only contained by eternity and infinite space. Is not this Pantheism ? No. The Creator alone is absolutely eternal and infinite ; but the creation, occupying all space and all time, subject to division and limit, does, in those innumerable divisions and exhaustless limits, represent to the utmost conceivable extent the operations of God. To obtain even a faint conception, we must deepen our notions of eternity and time. Time is the law of everything that changes, Eternity is the incommunicable and unchangeable attribute of God. Plato says—"Time is a movable image of immovable eternity." We cannot say there was a time when no time was ; yet, as time was created, and the world was fashioned, we ought to say—"There was no time without creation, the successive movements of which form time ; therefore, time and creation have always been ; nevertheless, they were created, and are not co-eternal with God ;" for, as St. Augustine said—"He was before them, although He may never have been without them ; because He did not precede them by an interval of time, but by immovable eternity." In this sense, God, as eternal Creator, is eternal Saviour.

Reasonings of this kind, illustrative of our feebleness, and of the vast meaning contained in so many texts of Scripture (2 Chron. vi. 18 ; Job xi. 7, 8 ; Isai. lxvi. 1 ; Col. i. 15-17) formerly seemed visionary ; but are highly useful as proof that the utmost exercise of all our powers enables us to take only a few steps within the threshold of creation. The telescope has manifested the world to be infinitely vast, and the microscope has revealed worlds within worlds, infinitely small. Divine attributes are not like the faculties or impulses of human nature, separate and distinct qualities or powers ;

God is One. He is in every place, but the presence is incomprehensible. He is not here or there as a property or extension. His relation to place, time, extension, is peculiar to infinitude. Divine power is never put forth unaccompanied by Divine wisdom, nor apart from goodness and justice. No attribute is dormant, there is no parting nor divisibility in the Divine essence. His plan of the world, everlastingly present with Him, had temporal realisation in that effectual interference by which the material universe became a pavilion of the infinity in which it was developed. There was first a direct personal self-operation, a putting forth of Divine energy; afterwards, the use, of all natural means, as they were called into existence. The action continues in that spontaneousness of Nature by which she seems to do all things as of herself. The worldly structure rises story above story, nor are the chambers of uniform dimensions, embellishment, furniture. We behold from a distance, a thousand halls, grand and beautiful; we look through some of the courts, and take them as a gauge of some vast, wonderful, mysterious life, and the visible universe as a tent of sojourning for wayfarers to the eternal future.

A bird's-eye view of the whole argument :

Standing on the threshold of the universe, we behold infinitude, and are conscious of other and wider worlds than that in which we dwell. The Divine account of creation gives the work of ages as in a moment. The world, or creation, gave a beginning to time—there was no time without a creation, and creation is the work of Omnipresent Energy. Nature is not complete in itself, but rests on something infinitely beyond; cannot be limited to material things, which are but a low form of substance in process of glorification. Transitions from the visible material to the invisible, transformations from world to world, gradation from state to state, show a connection of all things, specially of our souls, with the Infinite. Our present stage lies between the ruins of worlds that have been and the chaotic materials of worlds to come. Language is not adequate to express the eternity, wisdom, might of God, or of His works. Plans of the worlds, everlastingly present with Him, have local and temporal realisation; might being ever

accompanied by wisdom and goodness in operations tending to yet more wonderful and glorious manifestations.

Pass from argument to figure—God called a man from dreams into the vestibule of heaven, "Come thou hither, and see the glory of My house;" and to the angels round His throne, He said—"Take him, strip off his robes of flesh, cleanse his vision, put a new breath into his nostrils, but touch not with any change his human heart—the heart that weeps, and trembles." It was done; and, with a mighty angel as guide, the man stood ready for an infinite voyage. They launched without sound or farewell from the terraces of heaven, and wheeled away into endless space. Sometimes with the solemn flight of angel-wings, they passed through Saharas of darkness, through wildernesses of death, separating worlds of life. Sometimes they swept over frontiers quickening under prophetic motions from God. Then from a distance, measured only in heaven, light dawned through shapeless film, and in unspeakable space swept to them, and they with unspeakable quickness to the light. In a moment the rushing of planets was upon them—in a moment the blazing of suns around them. Then came eternities of twilight, that revealed, but were not revealed. On the right hand and on the left, mighty constellations built up triumphal gates, whose architraves, whose archways, seemed ghostly from infinitude. Without measure were the architraves, past number were the archways, beyond memory the gates. Within were stairs that scaled eternities around, above was below and below was above to the man stripped of gravitating body. Depth was transcended by height insurmountable, height was swallowed up in depth unfathomable. Suddenly as thus they rode from infinite to infinite; suddenly as thus they tilted over abysmal worlds; a mighty cry arose that systems more mysterious, worlds more billowy, other heights and other depths were coming, were nearing, were at hand. Then the man sighed and stopped, shuddered and wept. His over-laden heart poured itself forth in tears, and he said—"Angel, I will go no further, for the spirit of man acheth with this infinity. Insufferable is the glory of God. Let me lie down in the grave, and hide me from oppression of

the Infinite, for end I see there is none." Then from all the listening stars that shone around issued a choral voice—"The man speaks truly—end there is none." The angel solemnly demanded—"End there is none? Is there indeed no end? Is this the sorrow that kills you?" But no voice answered, that he himself might answer. Then the angel threw up his glorious hands towards the Heaven of heavens, and said—"To the universe of God there is no end, lo! also, there is no beginning."<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Altered from De Quincey's translation from the German of Jean Paul Richter.

## STUDY IV.

### RUDIMENTS OF THE WORLD.

"The world is not God, as the Pantheists affirm. It did not exist from eternity as the Peripatetics taught. It was not made by Fate and Necessity, as the Stoics said. It did not arise from a fortuitous concourse of atoms, as the Epicureans asserted; nor from the antagonism of two rival powers, as the Persians and Manicheans affirmed; nor was it made by angels, or by emanations of æons, as some of the ancient Gnostics held; nor out of matter co-eternal with God, as Hermogenes said; nor by the spontaneous energy and evolution of self-developing powers, as some have affirmed in later days; but it was created by One, Almighty, Eternal, Wise, and Good Being—God."—NEWTON'S *Principia*.

WHAT is, or was, the Primeval Matter?

Possibly something out of which all the varieties of matter have been formed. Something simpler than that which is now called elementary matter. The mathematical idea of the nature of "mass" is opposed to the notion of substances being composed of a vast variety of separate elements. The elements, now numbered sixty-four (probably to be increased by recent American discoveries), owe their distinctive properties to the grouping of certain ultimate atoms, possibly not of one kind, but of several kinds; for there are elements which appear to be so related as to have community of origin. If they were simple homogeneous masses, it is thought that their incandescent vapour would show in the spectrum one single bright line. The flame of hydrogen, the lowest in the scale, has four spectral lines, made up, it is supposed, of four different sorts of matter, but no conclusion regarding the complexity of hydrogen can be come to by means of the lines. The thickness of the spectral lines depends on their relation to the spectrum, whether toward the violet or the red ends. Some lines depend probably on the normal vibrations of matter, and the other on the harmonic vibration.

No force, known to us, can separate the constitutional atoms of the elements; or effect any change in them; but if what is

thought of Sirius and Aldebaran be true, that they are younger and hotter suns than our own, there the various kinds of matter may possibly exist in simpler form. Sirius contains hydrogen, but the proportion of metallic vapours is small in its chromosphere, and the hydrogen lines are enormously distended. The discovery of silicon in a new form, in the meteorites, renders possible the compound nature of that so-called element; and there is evidence of the compound nature of calcium in the Sun.

We are told—"by the different grouping of units, and by the combination of the unlike groups, each with its own kind, and each with other kinds, it is supposed that there have been produced the kinds of matter we call elementary."<sup>1</sup> If we accept this statement, it must be against all logic and experience. Units possessing precisely the same properties, or rather no properties; and, by energy acting in a straight line, striking against one another; then going off in another direction; till, again striking, they go off in a third direction, and so on; will for ever remain the same units and the same energy—neither creating new matter nor new energy. If, moreover, we bear in mind the all-important principle, that "nothing can be learned as to the physical world save by observation and experiment, or by mathematical deductions from data so obtained," we shall guard against those empirics who, reducing all existence to one element—destitute of all properties, and to one energy—acting only in a straight line, do then, to suit their theory, take in all that they have thrust out, and endue this one supposed form of matter with mysterious faculties and occult powers.

Consider now the nature and constitution of matter.

Lockyer states, as the result of very prolonged and careful investigation, that unless certain so-called elements are compound bodies, the elements of the sun and of the earth are not identical. This dilemma, if of positive value in argument, will necessitate the choice of believing in the existence of simpler bodies; or of crediting that the uniformity of chemical composition of the solar system, a most philosophical conception, is not true. As meteorites falling on the earth

<sup>1</sup> "Principles of Psychology," vol. i. p. 155: Herbert Spencer.

yield no new or strange elements, the probabilities are in favour of the compound nature of many "elements" of the chemist.

If with Newton we speak of dense invisible units, those are only symbolic, yet still they seem verified in chemical experiments which manifest particles of specific weight, size, elasticity, affinity, differences of quality, with chronometric vibrations—not force, but conditions of force. Get rid of the atom, as Boscovich does, substitute mere geometrical points, points without dimensions, as centres of force, force loci, which attract and repel each other in such wise as to be kept apart and at specific distances; behaving, so far as external bodies are concerned, just as an atom would. Pass on with Sir William Thomson and Helmholtz, to the vortex-atom theory, that matter consists of rotating portions of a something which fills the whole of space, that is, vortex-motion of an everywhere present fluid. Add to this, every so-called atom of any one substance, wheresoever we find it, on the earth, in the sun, or coming to us from cosmical spaces, possesses precisely the same physical properties, measurable dimensions, with shape, motion, laws of action, which we subject to scientific investigation. Then take a drop of water, and by means of a galvanic battery decompose it into the constituent gases; this shows that the parts may be separated until they are so small, that if again divided, the halves or parts are no longer similar to one another; but one is oxygen, the other hydrogen. Thus we have arrived at the grained structure of the whole. We are not wholly without hope that we may some day know the real weight of every atom—not merely the relative weight of several atoms; but the number in the given volume of any material; that the form and motion of the parts of every atom, and the distances by which they are separated, may be calculated; that the motions by which heat, electricity, light, are produced, may be shown by exact mathematical diagrams; that the fundamental properties of the intermediate and possibly constituent medium may be discovered. We shall then, for a while, turn from the motion of planets and music of spheres, to take our fill of wonder as to the mystic maze in which those tiny atoms run.

How finely grained water is, may be seen from the fact that were it possible to draw out a film 100,000,000th of an inch in thickness, it would probably still contain a few particles of water in its thickness.<sup>1</sup> As to the ultimate particles of the elements, by a rough process, Cauchy obtained the 400,000,000th part of an inch as their diameter. By a calculation upon what is called the electricity of contact of different metals, it is thought to have been ascertained that the grained structure must exceed the 700,000,000th part of an inch. By the molecular motion of gases, a result has been obtained which indicates that the 500,000,000th part of an inch may be the size of the particles. These points or atoms manifest powers of attraction and repulsion; march under three banners as gases, fluids, solids; but it is probable that every one is capable of existing in all three forms. The mysterious complexity of their nature may be inferred from gases. The result arrived at by several inquirers as to the molecular motion of gases is, that the average distance between the several particles of a gas at the ordinary temperature and pressure of the air, must be something between the 6,000,000th part of an inch and the 10,000,000th part of an inch."<sup>2</sup> The number of particles in a cubic inch of air is, approximately, about the number 3 with twenty cyphers after it; and as a plum is to the whole earth, so is a particle of water to the whole drop; there being in that drop about  $10^{26}$ , that is, 100,000,000,000,000,000,000,000,000. The particles of a gas are known to be free, detached from one another, and constantly flying about in all directions. The velocity of particles of hydrogen, according to Foulis' experiments, must be about 6055 feet per second at  $0^{\circ}$  C. This is a higher velocity than has ever been attained by a cannon ball. Joule's estimate for hydrogen was 6225 feet the second at temperature  $60^{\circ}$  F., and 6055 the second at freezing point. Clerk Maxwell and Boltzman have ascertained that in a mass of hydrogen, at ordinary temperature and pressure, every particle, on an average, has 17,700,000,000 collisions per second with other particles; that is to say, in every second its course is changed

<sup>1</sup> "Recent Advances in Physical Science," p. 311: P. G. Tait, M.A.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.* p. 315.

17,700,000,000 times ; and, yet, the particles are moving at the rate of 70 miles the minute. When rude voices say—"The Lord never passeth by ; not in the wind, not in the earthquake, not in the still, small voice ;" we cannot but marvel that some cunning creatures are so savage as not to perceive God unless He thunders on them.

The idea of the gaseous state in which a given space contains millions and millions of molecules in rapid movement in all directions, each having millions of encounters in a second, is not of universal application. It relates to the peculiar physical conditions of our planet, and doubtlessly to the neighbourhood of the bodies of the solar system ; but what is the condition of the molecules in those regions of space remote from the influence of gravitation, where rarefaction is at its utmost, the minutest particles of matter are scarce and rarely meet a fellow with which to collide ? Crookes shows, in the highly rarefied vessels under his superb manipulation, that the free path of the molecules is made so long as their collisions are rare ; and they cease as a whole to have gaseous properties, and become invested with hitherto masked properties. In this outside world, to use the words of the distinguished physicist, "a world where matter exists in a fourth state," these molecules move and obtain available kinetic energy, there the corpuscular theory of light holds good, there light does not always move in a straight line, there the impacts of imponderable molecules produce intense heat.<sup>1</sup>

If we look at Nature in her working dress, we find that the elements are not apparently of the same relative use and importance. It is a startling fact that the variety of existences which Nature contains, far from exhausting all the forms and combinations of which the elements are capable, only uses a few. The solid globe, whithersoever our search extends, is composed of say—silicon, aluminium, iron, magnesium, sodium, potassium, and oxygen. The broad ocean composes its vast masses of fluid principally from two elements—oxygen and hydrogen,—and the salt consists mainly of chlorine and sodium. The air is formed of nitrogen and oxygen. The

<sup>1</sup> W. Crookes, F. R. S., "On the Illumination of Lines of Molecular Pressure, and the Trajectory of Molecules." *Proceedings, Royal Society*, vol. xxviii. no. 191.

animal and vegetable worlds, innumerable in forms and functions of life, are chiefly built of carbon, nitrogen, hydrogen, oxygen. It is, indeed, astonishing that the great variety exhibited in the whole world is unfolded out of few materials. The Creator has taken but a handful of elements wherewith to form, in the main, the gorgeous structure of our dwelling. Do we ask why? The answer comes—as yet the world, to us at least, is rudimentary. Eternity and space contain endless surprises and possibilities; we know not what we shall be. There are latent forces of development which, when called forth, will exhibit new and exquisite powers. The elements, now little used, may hereafter display magnificent variety and surpassing beauty. The great Master has wrought charming music with few notes; what soul-stirring melodies will awake gladness when all the chords are touched!

Listen to the life-throb of our universe. By scientific use of imagination, we may conceive all the mechanical, chemical, vital operations of the world, as resulting from an infinite congeries of invisible atoms or mathematical points of attraction and repulsion. These countless centres are so many starting points of motion, causing atoms to cluster into molecules, and molecules into masses. In other words: "Atoms and molecules are little magnets with mutually attractive and mutually repellent poles. The attracting poles unite, the repelling poles retreat; vegetable, as well as mineral forms, are the final expression of this complicated molecular action."<sup>1</sup> This life-throb of the whole visible and palpable world is a pulsation going forth every instant from the Eternal Energy, bringing out from the invisible and intangible that which is visible and tangible.

To develop the visible from the invisible, there must be a passage from the one to the other, or an ethereal medium, a stage in which the energy had passed from one and had not arrived at the other: that passage or medium none of us can explain. Further, if we assume that all energies are reducible to One Energy, and that all forms of matter are derived from one primeval substance, is not this an attempt to explain the creation of matter? for it is demonstrably impossible for

<sup>1</sup> "Matter and Force:" Prof. Tyndall.

variety to have unfolded itself from this supposed primitive physical unity. The change must have come from without, and even allowing that the change can be mechanically formulated, we recognise in it the Unknown Energy. The variety called Nature did not evolve itself from unity, neither does Nature of itself, apart from the primal Energy, guide or maintain the variety of continual change. Organic force does not seem to be interchangeable with mechanical. No physical force, that we know of, can be converted into that which is called vital, or counted as the correlative of mental change. Again and again there have been intrusions of new things, interpenetrations and modifications of energy. If chemical action differs from mechanical; if life is not chemistry, and certainly it is unknown in our laboratories; and if mind is not matter; certainly many and great are the changes that have been wrought in the nature and essence of things.

View the whole from another standpoint, from the brow of a hill when all is still, the breeze having died away. The air is clear, and we listen in vain to catch a sound other than the low murmur of waves breaking on the shore. The shepherd's flock slumbers beneath the elm-tree shadows, and cattle stand in cool hollows by the river-side. The green meadows, fresh and luxuriant, seem also asleep, Nature is in repose. Is it indeed so? Come again, after a little time, and a change has been wrought. Even the flowers which bedeck the soil, the very substance of those hills standing firm, the deep sea so placid, the quiet, still air, are all in motion. From year to year the limestone of the rock changes its hard lineaments. The elastic sod, pressed by our feet, is not the same, its materials are being altered, carried away, renewed. Changeable the wind, so the sea. All things are working, and for ever in vast complications, every one child and parent of other. The contemplative mind beholds every day the passage of things invisible into sight, the transfer of the seen into the unseen. The passing away of the world might be called a pause, and the annihilation of solid spheres a rest, rather than the crash of destruction. We reverently lay all our science at the feet of the Eternal.

"Oh purify my eyes,  
More and yet more, by love and holy thought,  
Thy presence, Holiest One, to recognise!"

The theory which reduces the universe to mere atoms, energy, empty space, and thence deduces the whole series of phenomena, encounters an obstacle at the outset: atoms seem absolutely unchangeable. The monistic doctrine of homogeneous atoms will not work; and if we accept many atoms of many kinds they explain no property of body which has not been previously attributed to the atoms themselves. Pulverising the world into particles, next to nothing, in order to hit upon something just beyond, is a hopeless task; and to imagine that out of the superlatively little may be drawn the secret of the world's power and constructive skill, is a strange delusion. Starve the atom as you will, and then make a miniature of it in your thought; but, having dropped the attributes, how can you pick them up again? Make its essence to be extension or palpableness, merge it into dynamic points, unextended centres of attraction and repulsion, you cannot get to the beginning of things. The final simplicity of the atom must include internal movements; when these are sufficiently excited, rays are emitted of a length which is in measure of the time of vibration of the molecule. This change of form, these internal movements, are impossible without shifting parts and altered relations; but then your atom is a wonderful whole, made up of many parts. The atomic theory is no explanation of the creative mystery.

Reverse the process:—The eye of modern science seeks, but findeth not, some original, undivided material as the continuous substratum of all forms and distinctions. We cannot get beyond an infinitude of discrete atoms of different internal vibrations, agitated by movements carrying them in all directions, forming the myriad types with which is printed the Book of Nature. By means of these elements we produce, without any change in kind or proportion, substances with marked differences of physical and chemical property. Several distinct compounds are formed out of the same relative weights of carbon and hydrogen. Simple carbon appears as charcoal and the diamond. Apparently trivial changes in atomic

arrangements effect changes of the most unexpected and startling order. Phosphorus is, in the yellow, semi-transparent form, highly inflammable. White phosphorus, formed by exposure under water to light, is less combustible. Black phosphorus is obtained by sudden cooling of melted phosphorus. Red phosphorus can be prepared in various ways, and is combustible only at a high temperature. If we attribute these differences to various grouping of the atoms, and say—“Whatever their form, it is easy, within certain limits, to vary in imagination the adjustment of their homogeneous sides, so as to build molecules of several types, and ultimately aggregates of contrasted qualities;” then, in the ultimate stuff of the universe, there are not only myriad types, but myriad types of the same letter. Nor is this all; every one of these letters has its own select list of companions and peculiar terms of fellowship. The hydrogen atom vainly tries in levity, with low figure and light weight, to be intimate with the oxygen element. The reply is, “None of you, or two of you;” and so, throughout, there are certain mathematical proportions. One gas unites with one, two, three, or more volumes of another. There appear even to be special conditions for the likeness “of daisy to daisy, of bee to bee.” Then, lest we imagine everything is known, we find that while the same substance is always made up of the same elements, in the same proportion; the same elements in the same proportion, do not always form the same substance; a paradox, yet strictly true, forcibly illustrating the omnipresence of mystery.

Now view the printing of the Book.

The ultimate particles of matter cluster into molecules, then into masses, not trying or experimenting to obtain different grouping, or to combine unlike groups, but every one taking its own invariable form. For example, water, wherever and however formed, is always the same substance, and made up of the same component gases in the same relative proportions.

“No theory of evolution can be formed to account for the similarity of the molecules throughout the whole region of the stellar universe, for evolution continuously implies continuous change, and the molecule is incapable of change or decay,

of generation or destruction. . . . Though, in the course of ages, catastrophes have occurred and may yet occur in the heavens, though ancient systems may be dissolved and new systems evolved out of their ruins, the molecules out of which these systems are built—the foundation stones of the material universe—remain unbroken and unworn."<sup>1</sup> They are endowed with attractive and repellent poles, whose play produces definite forms of crystalline architecture of constant similarity, yet endless diversities, through various and strong interactions.

Atoms and molecules forming, so to speak, letters and words, these are arranged in sentences. Every solid body when slowly deposited from an aeriform or a liquid condition, takes a definite symmetrical shape, which we call crystal—the process we call crystallization. "All crystals, without exception, are solids bounded by plane faces symmetrically disposed about certain straight lines called axes. No mathematician could determine these axes with more accuracy than they are found to exist. Numerical relations of the most remarkable kind exist in the proportions in which alone natural substances will combine, and these numerical relations exist also in plants. . . . Nothing is more striking in botany than the mode in which certain numbers, such as three and five and their multiples, prevail. . . . Can we believe them to be exhibited in Nature by a mere concourse of atoms, or by self-existing and self-created proportions of matter without the intervention of Intelligence and Mind?"<sup>2</sup> Little importance, therefore, attaches to that unphilosophical theory which assumes that chance, having an eternity wherein to try and fit and combine, did, at length, by a hap-hazard arrangement, form the worlds; and, by chance, continued them. Cicero had a word on this—"The man who believes this (that the world with all its beauty, with all its fittedness for man, as well as for animal and vegetable life, was made by the chance meeting of atoms) will believe that if a countless number of the letters of the alphabet—their material being either gold or anything else—were thrown in a mass in some place, from

<sup>1</sup> Prof. J. Clerk Maxwell.

<sup>2</sup> "On the Limits of Science:" Wm. Forsyth, *Fraser's Magazine*, February, 1875.

these letters, shaken out on the ground, there can be formed the annals of Ennius, arranged in such order as to be read continuously."<sup>1</sup> Seeing that all art, all science, are built on the discoverable intelligible purpose and use, present and prospective arrangement, it may be regarded as absolutely certain that the placing of every letter, word, sentence, paragraph, in the grand historic chapter of existing worlds, has been ordered by Supreme Intelligence.

In every molecule (we now arrange our thought in figure of another fashion), formed by combination of separate atoms, we have, as it were, a solar system. The atoms are not supposed to be indefinitely near one another, but at distances great in proportion as are the planets from the sun, and revolve round each other. The distance of a fixed star from us is very great compared with that of the sun, but a portion of matter which, in our most powerful microscope seems almost indescribably small, may be as wonderfully complex in structure as is the star itself. The molecules, by means of constructive energy, build themselves up into definite shapes, but create neither new matter nor new energy; neither the vegetable body nor the animal body, as regards matter and energy, can create anything. All the mystical play of mechanical, chemical, molecular processes, leaves the magnitude of matter and the energies unenlarged; but life and intelligence so enlarge, modify, and direct the play, that the process becomes infinitely more mysterious than the mere shaking together of material particles. Matter, therefore, is not the equivalent of all phenomena; cannot create matter nor originate energy; it is a something in relation to that which went before; a something in relation to that which will follow: nor is gravity or energy an essential of matter, but that by which it is pressed or pushed about. Hence, matter, in itself, whether ponderous as gold, or dense as steel, "subtile" and ethereal as gas or magnetic fluid, is not self-motive; we only know matter by its manifestation of energy, and "we are irresistibly compelled by the relativity of our thought to vaguely conceive some unknown force as the correlative of the known force."<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> "De Natura Deorum," ii. 37.

<sup>2</sup> "First Principles," p. 170: Herbert Spencer.

The operations of this energy, even in the lowest forms, are beautiful and delicate. From a solution of common salt, let the water slowly evaporate, and the minute particles of salt, so minute as to defy all microscopic power, deposit themselves; and, through the clustering of innumerable molecules, a fine crystalline mass of miniature pyramids is raised by structural energy. The ice of our winters is of equally skilled handiwork in definite shapes; precious to the eye of science as the diamond, and purely formed as they are delicately built. The cells of the sheath of a straw, when examined by polarised light, are found to have the architecture of a crystal: the molecules are set in definite positions. The exquisite texture of light is a miracle of beauty in its gorgeous colours; a marvel in the invisible rays, which exceed in heat; a wonder of chemic power to the world in the ultra-violet rays; and a mystery, in making all other things to be seen, itself unseen. The atmosphere is not only charged with subtile power, but contains carbonic acid—food for the vegetable world; and oxygen diluted with nitrogen—the support of animal life. All these, whether waves of æther, or of atmosphere, atoms coalescing in sky-matter, or matter in invisible masses, move to the music of law.

Pass from the rudiments to the mechanism of worlds.

Diffused matter is contracted into collections of attenuated flocculi, and solidified into masses. If we could mentally see the generation of the movement, the first operation of energy would be, Guthrie thinks, "approach by vibrations," that is to say, from what we know of things, a slight shiver as of leaves in faintest wind, a throb extending through the sphere of motion, the whole showing a complication vaster than the mightiest ocean swell. We may conceive of this motion having a rhythm which could be traced in light, heat, electricity, in the spiral arrangements so general among the more diffused nebulæ, and in every particle of matter—rhythm prepared for by some primordial condition, and continued by persistence of energy. By contraction and impact, the potential energy would be gradually transmuted into heat and the visible motion of the mass.

Energy, carrying the moved body in the same straight line

for ever, would cause an infinite space, void of everything except the moving body ; or if centres of equivalent energy were placed at equal distances, they would remain in equilibrium for ever. How, then, are the vast curves of the planetary bodies obtained ? To represent it mentally, fill an apparent vacuity with an ethereal medium—a species of matter—countless lines radiate from the centre to every side, and along every line this medium presents resistance, so that the exact line on which matter sets out, drawn by attraction to the centre, cannot be continued, but becomes a curve ; and a curve the more complex in proportion as the energies are more numerous and varied. Apply this to nebular condensation, and to precipitation of diffused matter into flocculi of denser matter. As the matter moves by gravitational energy, the direction would be, first of all, in a straight line ; but the direction being continually influenced by surrounding bodies, themselves in relative movement, rotation and revolution would then be set up, and conditions analogous to those of the sun and solar system be established. The sun, our earth, the other planets, had their own concentrations, say of nebulous ring, gaseous spheroid, liquid spheroid, and spheroid externally solidified. If we regard this energy as merely mechanical, it possesses nothing directive ; no more produces a planet than a poem ; neither explains the energy of gravity which brings all bodies together, nor that of repulsion which tears them asunder. The pressing and pushing about of matter are not the equivalents of all phenomena ; but, as magnetism, heat, light, are held to be different modes of some one universal energy, we regard the attraction and repulsion of matter as manifestations of a mysterious Power,—a Power which, Herbert Spencer says, “transcends intuition and is beyond imagination.”

Continue the mechanical investigation :—

1. *The Earth.*—The form of the earth is a spheroid or ellipsoid. It is thus accounted for. A detached fluid mass, if at rest in space, would assume, by gravitation of its particles, the form of a sphere. When it began to rotate on its axis it would become flattened at the poles, and bulge at the equator. This bulge is now about 1 in 300, or something like

thirteen miles of extra matter all round. When separated and aggregated from the nebula, out of which was produced the solar system, our earth probably exceeded 400,000 miles in diameter, and the mass took about  $29\frac{1}{2}$  days to rotate. The earth's oblateness is proof that it was modelled when in a yielding or plastic condition, before the crust had been formed, when an incandescent globe rolling through space, with all the water and other vapourisable matter in a gaseous state. Sir Isaac Newton calculated that "a comet formed of iron would absorb so much heat in its near approach to the sun as to require 5000 years to cool." The time required for the cooling of the earth from its molten condition to a habitable state would, according to Bischof's experiments on basalt, be 350,000,000 years. The computations vary from about 100,000,000 to about 1,000,000,000 years. The waters having attained a state fit for the support of life, the vital period began, and it is calculated from the rise of temperature (taken over the whole earth's surface), at an average of one degree for 100 feet of descent, that about 10,000,000 years ago the surface of the earth had just consolidated, or was about to consolidate, and that, in some thousands of years after that, the heat "would not interfere very greatly with the growth of plants; so from this point of view we are led to a limit of something like 10,000,000 years as the utmost we can give to geologists for their speculations as to the history even of their lowest order of fossils."<sup>1</sup> Some able men assert—"The physical data of this argument are unreliable. It is quite possible that no sensible temperature from within has been felt in the sea and in the soils since the commencement of the laying down of the lowest fossiliferous rocks."

2. *The Planetary System.*—Not only are the planets shaped like the earth, they move in the same direction round the sun, and in nearly the same plane, with rotation in the same direction as their orbital motion. The orbits, both of planets and satellites, nearly coincide, and differ but little from circles. These peculiarities are considered to be remaining indications of a previous state, in which the whole planetary system formed one connected mass, with uniform rotatory motion,

<sup>1</sup> "Recent Advances in Physical Science," p. 167: P. G. Tait, M.A.

and support the hypothesis that the star system was formed out of a nebulous mass by the mutual attractions of its parts : every one, star and sun, in his own order, receiving definite form, size, function, to become a dwelling-place for life ; or, in some other way equally good, to show forth the glory of God. Our own system, according to Sir William Herschel, might "be said to be one that has fewer marks of profound antiquity on it than the rest." He stated in the same paper, 1785—"Our system, after numbers of ages, may very possibly become divided, so as to give rise to a stratum of two or three hundred nebulæ, for it would not be difficult to point to so many beginnings or gathering clusters in it."

3. *The Connected Mass.*—The nebulous mass, out of which our system was formed, not only filled all the space now occupied by the system, but extended vastly further than the limits of the most distant planet. Comets, crowds of shooting stars, and the zodiacal light exhibit traces of dispersed matter such as existed in that old condition ; matter, scattered as powder, but moving, and ignited like those nebulous patches which now shine in the far-off regions of the firmament.

Now observe two facts,—1, A large amount of light and heat sent out into space returns not again ; so that the sun and stars are cooling. 2, The motion of large bodies in space is being gradually stopped by ethereal friction. A great part of the original mechanical force has already been converted into heat and dissipated, and, as to the stoppage of visible motion, every tide on the earth and every day's march through space bring us nearer to the end, not of our system only, but of all systems. The sun is hastening to his destiny, to that gathering of matter into one universal centre, that equilibrium in which, motion ceasing, there will be no light, no warmth, no life. The life of man, the existence of our sun and planets, are but as a ripple on the bosom of the eternal deep.

Work this out more definitely. The chief part of the primordial energy now belonging to our system is in the form of solar heat. This energy will not remain ours for ever ; portions are continually radiating from it into infinite space.<sup>1</sup> "The sun is so much colder that we may have our fires ; he is also so much

<sup>1</sup> "Aim and Progress of Physical Science : " Prof. Helmholtz.

colder that we may have our horse-racing and our Alpine climbing. It is, for example, certain that the sun has been chilled to an extent capable of being accurately expressed in numbers, in order to furnish the power which lifted this year a certain number of tourists from the Vale of Chamouni to the summit of Mont Blanc."<sup>1</sup> We calculate that only the 454th part of the original mechanical force which worked the condensation of our system remains, the other has been converted into heat; every tide, though with incalculable slowness, diminishes the mechanical force of the earth; and our store of heat, though sufficient for an immeasurable time, is lessened by daily scattering into space. These are not lost as to the universe, but whither they go and into what they are formed no man knoweth. Despite this scattering, the earth's temperature during the historic 4000 years has not sensibly diminished, and a sufficient quantity of heat for the total emission of 2100 years would be generated by the combustion of only 1-10,000th part of the sun's diameter. So small a change our closest astronomical observations would hardly detect. The store of energy we possess is indeed immensely great, and the incessant emission of light and heat during the period of human history has not sensibly decreased it; still, the inexorable laws of mechanics indicate that it must finally be exhausted. If the universe is delivered up, as physicists say, to the undisturbed action of physical processes, all energy will pass into the form of heat, and all heat passing, by radiation and conduction, from the warmer bodies into bodies less warm an equilibrium of temperature will be established. From that time evermore the sun will have neither light nor heat, the universe will rest, the earth be dead. Our race may have a long, not an endless existence. Ere the end, thus delineated by science, Scripture declares that there will be a crisis—a judgment—the time of which is mercifully hidden.

The common method of measuring geological time is, by some, considered to be unreliable, because the thickness of stratified rocks belonging to any period is no indication as to length of time. Ten thousand feet may, under certain circumstances, be formed in as many years; but, in other conditions,

<sup>1</sup> "Vitality:" Prof. Tyndall.

require as many centuries. Palæontology may be accounted still worse as a guide, for species may not change at anything like a uniform rate. If, however, the great variations of climate are the result of changes in the eccentricity of the earth's orbit, and by changes in the direction of the polar axis from precession of the equinoxes, we have a means, but still open to doubt, of calculating when those variations occurred. According to the formula of M. Leverrier, there are three chief periods of high eccentricity, with a few subordinate maxima between them. About 2,650,000 years back the eccentricity was inferior. It then began to increase, and 50,000 years after, namely 2,600,000 years ago, it attained  $\cdot 066$ ; 50,000 years after that it diminished to  $\cdot 0167$ , about its present value. It then began to increase, and in another 50,000 years, or 2,500,000 years ago, it approached almost the superior limit of  $\cdot 0721$ . Then diminishing, at 2,450,000 years ago, it was  $\cdot 025$ . These two maxima separated by a minimum, and a period of 200,000 years, form the first great period of eccentricity. Passing on more than a million and a half years, there is the second great period of three maxima, separated by two minima: the first maximum 950,000 years ago, the second at 850,000 years ago, the third at 750,000 years ago—the whole occupying nearly 300,000 years. Passing on another million and a half years, that is, to a time about 800,000 years in the future, we come to the third great period of three maxima, at periods of 800,000, 900,000, and 1,000,000 years to come, which are separated also by two minima. These three great periods, two past and one future, are separated from one another by about 1,700,000 years; and seven times in the whole period the earth's orbit is more circular, four in the past and three in the future.

Unless the physical principles on which these eccentricities were calculated are erroneous, climate must have been greatly affected. For example, 850,000 years ago the heat of the sun at midwinter was 837 instead of 1000 as at present. Whether this value be a little too high or too low the effect on temperature must have been considerable. The glacial epoch, which so greatly troubles geologists, is not that extending from about 980,000 to about 720,000 years ago; but the one beginning

about 240,000 years ago, and extending to about 80,000 years ago. The whole question is argued in Mr. Croll's book, "Climate and Time," pp. 311-328; and he considers the facts of geology to be consistent with the glacial epoch not dating back beyond 80,000 years. Reasoning after his manner, it may be inferred that the mean thickness of stratified rocks has been greatly over-stated. Their maximum thickness of 72,000 feet in Great Britain must not be taken for their mean thickness. "Had the materials been spread over the entire ocean bed, the formation would have had a mean thickness of little more than 200 feet; and spread over the entire surface of the globe would form a stratum of scarcely 150 feet in thickness."<sup>1</sup>

A change in the obliquity of the ecliptic would alter the level of the sea. As to the last elevation, it seems almost certain that 11,700 years ago the general sea-level on the northern hemisphere was higher than at present, that was the period of the 25-foot beach; and 60,000 years, the age of the 40-foot beach.<sup>2</sup>

The alternate warm and cold periods, in north and south, during the glacial epoch, explain the distribution of many plants and animals. As the cold became intense, they would invade the equatorial lowlands; and the inhabitants of these would migrate to the tropical and sub-tropical regions of the south, the southern hemisphere being at this period warmer. On the decline of the glacial epoch, as both hemispheres regained their former temperature, animals and plants again changed places—those not able to do so would die. Warm zones, whether of land or sea, being almost equivalent to life, it is evident that the growth and distribution of plant and animal life are not wholly due to evolution, but rather to climatic agents. Every planet, for a certain long period, presents more of its northern than of the southern hemisphere to the sun at the time of nearest approach; and then, during a like period, presents more of its southern than of the northern hemisphere. Summers and winters are more or less contrasted as the eccentricity of orbit increases and decreases,

<sup>1</sup> "Climate and Time," p. 366: James Croll.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 407-409.

having the least and greatest eccentricity one or two millions of years apart. To all this there is a response in the changed functions of living creatures, and in the perpetual ebbings and flowings of species. By slow, inevitable change, by elevation and subsidence of land, every climate is altered; every habitat of life is, in turn, destroyed and made new again. Parts, at one time thickly peopled, at another are deserted. The result is, every extensive region has its own meteorologic conditions, and every locality in these regions differs more or less in its structure, in its contour, in its soil. Southern animals lived in our own land during the warm periods of the glacial epoch, and northern animals during the cold; the alternate successions of warm and cold periods bringing about the successive deposits, and leaving in those sediments relics of varying organisms. A surface would remain without seed or germ for many ages, afterward life abounded; and when the ice-sheet was again spread, everything animate and inanimate was ground to powder.

Notwithstanding these statements by physicists, it is doubtful whether there were any other than mountain glaciers previous to the great glacial epoch; many geological facts evidence a former warm climate extending over the whole globe. Naturalists and palæontologists and geologists of reputation, and who have searched Nature, decide against the former glacialisation of the tropics, sub-tropics, and even of much of the temperate zones. It is perfectly well known that before the glacial periods of the north and south high latitudes, a tropical and sub-tropical flora and fauna existed where they do now, and that these, having a vast ancestry, still remain. Again, as to the vast collections of strata which underlie those of the glacial period in Europe, there is no trace of a general similar condition. There are remarkable deposits in South Africa and in Hindustan, which some geologists attribute to ice-carrying, and to which other geologists just as strongly deny any such origin. In whichever way the question may be settled, the history of our earth shows the work of a "consummate strategist; who, from his mount of observation, directs the movements of a great army, nowhere setting at nought the laws of energy, but exhibiting

and enforcing those laws in delicate, beautiful, marvellous, victorious operations."

The manifold facts, thus studied in rudiments of the world, are a manifestation of energy underlying all the phenomena, and extending to an infinity of worlds in variety of operation and mystery of life. Everything is rooted in the transcendental. There is a continual passing from movement to repose, which is not final rest; a ceaseless oscillation from life to death, from death to life; the order of physical phenomena, like the order of mental phenomena, is inscrutable, flowing from a past eternity into a future eternity. Is this vastness or incomprehensibility of Nature, a reason for relinquishing the study? Certainly not. "What can be a stronger stimulus to the zealous exercise of our best powers, than the conviction that though we may never be able to attain to 'absolute' truth, yet we can be for ever approaching to it, ever striving upwards so as either ourselves to reach, or to help our successors to reach, a still loftier elevation whence a yet more comprehensive view may be obtained. 'Tendre à la perfection sans jamais y prétendre' will ever be the animating spirit of the genuine philosopher, as the 'forgetting of things behind, and reaching forth unto the things before,' of the greatest of Christian Apostles, will continue to the end of time to nerve the efforts of every true aspirant after moral excellence."<sup>1</sup> The continual effort of the creature to know the, at present, unknowable reality, is a conscious seeking after fulness of life.

As if to encourage that seeking, an All-sustaining Power is everywhere manifested in the existence and phenomenal activity of the universe, who is alike the cause of all and essence of all, without whom the world would not be even the shadow of a vision, for thought itself would vanish. Beyond His infinitude can nothing extend, before or after His eternity can nothing be conceived. The knowledge of His essential existence is that to which the nature of things and the course of time conduct us. How we, the imperfect, are united to the Perfect, and things temporal to the Eternal, human eye cannot see. It is a mystery hidden within the depths of Divine essence, as is the union of mind and matter; but we know

<sup>1</sup> "Mental Physiology," p. 412: Dr. W. B. Carpenter.

that dependent beings cannot be the authors of their own existence. Their origin is to be found in the will and power of the Independent and Perfect. The universe cannot be regarded as an enclosure, nor infinitude as an extension, nor time as a limitation, of the Eternal. The repetition of organisms in time and space, the course of ages and series of expanse, the number of metamorphoses and progress of evolution, are practically infinite and eternal, to reflect the perfection of their Author. The infinite series of advancing conditions is expressed by Leibnitz in a mathematical symbol, the hypothesis of the hyperbole. We conceive for every given state of the universe a preceding less perfect state. Nothing hinders the supposition, and we give it endless extension; yet, all will be contained within the infinity and eternity of God: such a world is the fittest representation of Divine Majesty. With the telescope, we contemplate the magnitude and numberlessness of worlds; with the microscope, we discover life extending beyond life, surpassing all imagination; science declares infinitude in the multitude and delicacy of principles, in the grandeur and number of existences. Time will never fail to conquerors in knowledge, and the regret of Alexander that there were no more worlds to win, will not be ours who always march to new discoveries of intelligence and power.

In conclusion of the study, picture *Astronomic Realities*.

The sun rules a wonderful variety of planets, and a yet more wonderful variety of life. As fuel for his fires, he gathers from out of space, cosmical bodies and all the forces represented by their velocity. These chips in the great workshop of Nature, this dust from the mighty grindstone of the universe, which the artificers, Attraction and Repulsion, have cast aside, are passed through fire that they may quicken and sustain worlds of life. Close round the sun, Mercury flies in dazzling splendour with unmatched velocity; nearer than Mercury, another planet, Venus, in her beauty, alone; Earth, with her one satellite; ruddy Mars, with two attendants; then hundreds of tiny orbs careering, many coming almost within hail of their fellows. Then that wonderful outer family of planets, the least of which exceeds in size the volume of all

the minor planets and asteroids combined. Yet further, the vast globe of Jupiter and symmetrical family of satellites; more distant, giant Saturn, of ring-system as a shield, and eight primary attendants, the outermost at range of four and a half millions of miles. Then Uranus and Neptune, brother orbs, but wide apart, and so distant from Saturn that the full span of Jupiter's orbit scarcely brings them together. Uranus, and possibly Neptune, rotating from east to west—unlike all other planets—their moons revolving in the same retrograde direction.

Thence, pass through a desert of vast, inconceivable space to those binary, triple, multiple systems, where sun moves round sun with trains of planets and satellites, glorious creations, making God's mansion sparkle with splendour. Separated, star from star, by enormous intervals of black or stippled ground, the intervals themselves open, with revelation of depth and height rich indeed to the imagination. Seen by unaided eye, the glory of many worlds is but a sparklet, or the scintillation of a needle-point. Different orders of vapours, or fluid nebulæ, perhaps first germs of worlds in infinite series of suns and stars; suns that seem to be members of a new system of higher order, stars which have no dominating centre; prove the sky to be more various and complicate than the wisest thought. Cloudlets—gaseous, stellar, irregular, planetary, ring-formed, elliptic; those light forms of the Milky Way, with shapes fixed or variable; governed by unseen mysterious influence—gravity. There, a green star with deep blood-red companion; there, one of orange hue, accompanied by blue or purple satellite; white orbs mingled with red, light or dark, purple, ruby, vermillion; "a casket of variously coloured precious stones."

Our spirit stops at the centre of centres, the centre of creation, the capital of the universe, whence are the laws which govern and uphold all worlds. Who shall describe the throne of might! the palace of splendour! the inner abode of Deity! What line shall measure, what space contain, what time can reckon, the roll, the circle, the vast procession of million clustered suns? No painter can picture, no poet describe, no heart conceive, the grandeur of that source whence flow infinite and eternal streams of goodness!

Is it a dream, these worlds crowding the sky with more, and exceeding gorgeous dwellings, than any earthly city of myriad abodes? Will they pass away from thought, leave no trace, as the baseless fabric of a vision? No: all have their use in the vast design, and carry to the invisible universe memories and memorials of great transactions, every star is a footprint of God. We look upon them from our dwelling, as links of light burning in the sky to join past, present, and future, into that vast consciousness by which intelligent creatures discern the course of time. We remember what of love and fear, of joy and sorrow, dwell in one heart; how many hearts throb in the little star of Earth; how numberless are the greater stars; until, translated in spirit by the wonderful, the soaring view, our souls full of grateful memories approach the eternal.

Oh! "to have  
Attentive and believing faculties.  
To go abroad rejoicing in the joy  
Of beautiful and well created things;  
To love the voice of waters, and the sheen  
Of silver fountains leaping to the sea;  
To thrill with the rich melody of birds  
Living their life of music; to be glad  
In the gay sunshine, reverent in the storm;  
To see a beauty in the stirring leaf,  
And find calm thoughts beneath the whispering tree,  
To see, and hear, and breathe the evidence  
Of God's deep wisdom in the natural world!"

*N. P. Willis.*

## STUDY V.

### THE ORIGIN OF LIFE AND THEORY OF RULE.

" We will trust God ; the blank interstices  
Men take for ruins, He will build into,  
With pillar'd marble rare, or knit across  
With generous arches, till the fane's complete,  
The world has no perdition, if some loss."

E. B. BROWNING.

THALES (B.C. 636) considered that water was the source and continuer of life. Diogenes, of Apollonia (B.C. 400), said the air was ἀρχή, a beginning, a soul, such as philosophers sought, evolving itself in all life. Democritus (B.C. 460-357) taught that nothing existed but atoms and empty space—all else is mere opinion. Epicurus (B.C. 341-270) asserted that the mechanical shock of atoms is the all-sufficient cause of things. It was early maintained by Empedocles (B.C. 450) that the fittest survive, and unfit combinations rapidly disappear: Thence, till our own time, a few scientific men have held that—"Nature does all things, does them of herself without God." "The mechanical shock and interaction of atoms, trying of motions and unions from all eternity, without any determination by intelligent design, account sufficiently for the constitution and phenomena of the universe." They would have us believe that atoms, individually dead, without sensation and intelligence, get up of themselves, run together, form all actual and imaginable combinations, as if under a drill-master, without a drill-master. Every one, by itself, is dead ; yet, together, they live. When apart, they are without sensation, possess no intelligence ; but, collectively, they possess sensation, are full of wisdom, and form the universal mind—if there is any mind. We are told—"The physical philosopher can know nothing but matter, force, space, and necessity." Were we not sure that there is indeed Intelligence

at the heart of things, these men, with their theories, which place our feet on the rungs of a ladder the reverse of Jacob's, and leading to the antipodes of heaven, would make us say—

" We are sick, and heart-sore,  
And weary ; let us sleep—  
But deep, deep ;  
Never to waken more."

Men, who believe anything that is not in Scripture, assert that all things exist by "*a continual becoming*," and that this intelligible hypothesis explains everything—"matter being eternal." Then we are told—"Matter itself, as generally conceived, does not necessarily exist, may be only a phenomenal centre of energy ;" indeed, "matter is but the hypothetical mode of our own consciousness." This is delightfully clear,—naught is everything and everything is naught.

Some discern in matter "the promise and potency of all terrestrial life ;" nevertheless, the "chasm" between our consciousness and this matter "must ever remain intellectually impassable." They say—"Everything may be explained on mechanical principles ;" yet, things exist which are not material. "The so-called 'imponderables,'—things of old supposed to be matter—such as heat, light, etc., are now known by the purely experimental, and therefore the only safe method, to be but varieties of what we call 'energy.'" <sup>1</sup> In maintenance of materialism it is affirmed—"There is one energy, and that is mechanical ;" chemical energy is mechanical, only *something different*. "A living organism is entirely mechanical," but with its mechanical and chemical relations, *has something else* which is not like matter, nor like mechanical force. It may be fairly questioned by plain men, whether science is not hindered by such statements ; chemical energy is something more than mechanical power, if, at the same time, it is something different ; and a living organism is not wholly mechanical if it contains something not explainable by mechanics.

A professor supposes, "that by the different grouping of

<sup>1</sup> "Recent Advances in Physical Science," p. 17 : P. G. Tait, M.A.

the same units, and then by combination of the unlike groups, each with its own, or each with other kinds, you get everything else;" another professor talks about "Nature's great progression from the formless to the formed, from the inorganic to the organic, from blind force to conscious intellect and will," and the thing is done. The former professor gravely assuring us, "the system is now complete, no further advance in the same direction is probable or required." The latter stating, those who do not accept it have not kept pace with recent advances in natural history, are behind in science, generally unworthy of consideration. So there is causality, but no cause; power, but no person; rule, but no ruler; and we are to graduate under Professor Mephistopheles;—

"More brains have I than all the tribe  
Of doctor, magister, master, and scribe;  
From doubts and fears my soul is free,  
Nor hell, nor devil has terrors for me."

*Faust.*

The physical action which accompanies vital and mental changes seems to be an undulatory displacement of molecules, resulting in myriads of little waves or pulses of movement; so that states of consciousness are attended by the transmission of a number of little waves from one nerve-cell to another. Because life and consciousness and thought thus act on our bodies, we are told that the unit of motion is identical with the unit of feeling; that between the two there is such an unfailling parallelism that the one group of phenomena can be correctly described by formulæ invented to describe the other group. It is equal to the absurdity of saying that the oscillations of a needle are identical with magnetism, and that the two are to be recognised as one. These little waves or pulses of movement are modes in which our life reveals itself. They are not the occult reality, but an appearance; not the cause, but the effect.

We are told—"Life essentially consists in the continuous adjustment of relations within the organism to relations in the environment." It is nothing of the kind; the adjustment is caused by life, is the exhibition of life, not life itself. Some, seeking great accuracy, state—"In the vegetal world,

and in the lower regions of the animal world, the life is purely, or almost purely, physico-chemical ; it becomes more and more predominately psychical as we ascend in the animal world, until at the summit it is mainly psychical." Now, physicists do not know matter, only know states of consciousness which they call perceptions of resistance, extension, colour, sound, odour ; do not know motion, only know the sequent states of consciousness produced in the muscles of the eyes, or of the tactual, or of other organs, in the act of attending to the moving object ; it is rather strange that, by things which they know not, they are able, without any *occulta vis*, to explain more unknowable things.

No one pretends that he can "cognise this *occulta vis*" in life ; and it is sought, strange to say, among the dead. Taking protoplasm, that simplest substance in which life manifests itself, materialists kill it, find three dead compounds, carbonic acid, water, ammonia, the result of decomposition, ordinary matter ; and then try to find life—the *occulta vis*, amongst these dead. Not finding it, they assert—"This protoplasm is composed of ordinary matter, differing from it only in the manner in which its atoms are aggregated, and is again resolved into ordinary matter when its work is done." Then, to excuse the blunder of seeking the living among the dead, it is stated—"The compounds or constituents of protoplasm, like the elementary bodies of which they are composed, are lifeless ; but when brought together, under certain conditions, they exhibit the phenomena of life." We know that very well, but the "certain conditions" are vital. When we ask them to make the dead live, and carbonic acid, water, ammonia, are brought together, there is no protoplasm, nor any sign of life, nor is any process known in their laboratories by which life can be brought into existence. Why the substance, protoplasm, should manifest properties which are not manifested by any of its constituents they do not know, and very likely never will know. Mysterious as the fact is, it is common ; for every chemical synthesis is the manifestation of a new set of properties equally insoluble. We say equally insoluble, yet must add, that though by chemical synthesis we do produce new sets of properties, we cannot, by any synthesis,

construct organisable matter. The affinities of life and living matter belong to a chemistry which we do not understand, nor can we imitate. We cannot even make the dead matter, not a bit of that material which has the chemical relations of protoplasm; nor, if we had this dead matter could we give it the breath of life, or restore life to the tissue whence it had departed.

This twofold fact is proof that a peculiar operation must have accompanied the advent of life. By some grouping of particles into peculiarity of structure, by some undulatory displacement of molecules resulting in myriads of little waves or pulses of movement, by some new force put in operation by the universal underlying energy, there was a new work. This new force became henceforth one of the natural powers: by which plants, beasts, men, have life in themselves.

This may be illustrated by growth. "The faculty of combining heterogeneous compounds into matter like itself—growth, in fact—is the very thing possessed by no other substance in the world."<sup>1</sup> It is the product of an occult power, and protoplasm is on an equality with complicated organised beings. Let it be imagined that over the table and on the floor are spread in confused mass all the letters of the alphabet, capital and small, thousands intermingling; these are seen to be slowly adjusting themselves, until every scattered type has come into due place, and arranged itself for the printer to take the impression of a book. Of course some invisible power is at work. Work more wonderful than this is wrought by protoplasm, and any attempt to minimise the distinction and difference between living matter and dead albumen and protein is to confuse counsel. Take some complicate chance formation from the bottom, or from the shore of the sea, at the beginning of the world, "And when you have got this substance, you are as far on your way to albumen as a man ascending a hill would be on his way to the moon. And when you have got albumen, you are still as far from living matter as in the moon you would be from the fixed stars."<sup>2</sup> No process has been discovered which can

<sup>1</sup> "The Protoplastic Theory of Life," pp. 184, 185: J. Drysdale, M.D.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.* p. 260.

explain the origin of living matter ; and if such process were discovered, it would enlarge our admiration of the wonderful act, by which Nature mysteriously bridged the gulf which separates the dead from the living.

Physical science, reverently waiting on the threshold of existence, seeks to know the forms of the outer world by means of optical and tactual process, and to bring the how or manner of creation into representation for the perception of our inner man. The process is from without inward, and has a limit which cannot be passed—the Ultimate Cause being utterly unknown, though immanent in all phenomena. We know merely the rougher constituents of living things, that all animals and plants consist, in great measure, of fluid water ; that the material basis of life is albumenoidal substance.

Scripture draws another picture, not of the How, but of the Why there is life. Through creation, redemption, regeneration, we have in time, in Nature, in history, a revelation of those great acts by which the Eternal graduates us for everlasting existence. As in matter, the visible garment of the Almighty, there are infinite metamorphoses ; as in life, we behold illimitable progression ; as in the historic development of thought, we find that the mental habits of bygone generations enter the very spirit of present modes of thinking ; so in Revelation, we are taught to adore a Father who leads us to complete fulness of life. Every temptation we resist, every generous impulse wisely yielded to, every noble thought that is encouraged, every sacred aspiration realised, adds its own energy to the impetus of the great movement which is bearing all true-hearted men towards a higher character and richer existence (John xiv. 23). Revelation shows that there is a Spirit of infinite perfection in whom we live and move and have our being : that all Nature is a Word of God coming from everlasting realms, bringing tidings of the past and carrying intelligence to the future.

Have the living particles which are arranged into the shape of an organism an innate tendency to arrange themselves into the shape of that very organism to which they belong ? This is a hard thing to say, though the tendency to assume the specific form must be inherent in all parts of the organism.

What is the energy which gives this tendency? If we say polarity of the organic units, that is a name ascribed to atoms for something of which we are ignorant; nor does it explain what we want to know—how living particles, or units, possess the property of arranging themselves into the special structures which they construct? The power cannot be in the atoms of albumen, or fibrine, or gelatine, or the hypothetical protein substance; for, in that case, how are we to account for the unlikenesses of different organisms? Laying aside these particles, the chemical units, can we find a sort of morphological unit, a microscopic cell, by multiplication of which all developmental changes are effected? No; for the cell is itself a manifestation of this strange power, and though cells are the ultimate visible components of many organisms, they are not universal. We are driven to the conclusion that, complex as are chemical units, physiological or life units are more complex; that difference of composition in these units themselves, leading to differences in the mutual play of energies, causes the endless variety of existing forms.

Oken said—"Every living thing arose out of slime, and is nothing but slime in various forms. This primitive slime originated in the sea, and from inorganic matter in the course of planetary evolution." Oken might have stated it more correctly and Scripturally: in the water, and out of the earth, the Lord God made things to grow. Hæckel tells us—"Life is nothing but a connected chain of very complicated material phenomena of motion. These motions must be considered as changes in the position and combination of the molecules." Now, when a man says life is something that he knows of, and is nothing more, he would have us think that a wonderful amount of knowledge is in his possession: whereas he mistakes the chain, a result of life, for life itself. To minimise in words the distinction between living and unliving matter, does not alter the fact that the two are as far from one another as the east is from the west. Supposing, but not admitting, that under certain circumstances we may be able to generate a low order of life by a peculiar grouping of particles; we shall do it by use of natural power, and the mystery will remain unsolved. It may be possible to use *occulta vis* for production of or-

ganisms, but that reads not the riddle any more than our use of galvanism explains the reason of galvanic powers. We know that the formative energy by which crystallising matter unites together, has its inner power by chemical constitution, and its external power by influence of surrounding matter; so the semi-fluid state of matter may possibly have initiated life, passed into amorphous organisms, and thus changed form, as these organisms do now every moment; but the ultimate causes, whether of physical or of vital phenomena, centre in mystery. "Autogeny," or "spontaneous generation," are only dark words which veil ignorance by putting back, not explaining, the difficulty.

The difficulty becomes greater through another fact:—The vital substance of the whole universe, identical for one and all living creatures, is semi-fluid, transparent, colourless, structureless. This is a pregnant and significant fact, proving that there exists, beyond all our visual and chemical investigations, a distinct and special endowment of which we know absolutely nothing. It proves, in a Divine sense, the doctrine of evolution: from this, which is as nothing, man was formed.

This matter of life, one and the same for all, is neither indestructible nor unchangeable. It is formed by secret, peculiar operation of ordinary matter, and to ordinary matter returns. Fungus and oak, worm and man, die—always are dying; nor can they live unless they die. "In the midst of life we are in death." Does protoplasm, thus living and dying, generate protoplasm, of itself, from the one primal substance, to form plants, animals, men? No: only when it has been built by life into organism, are vegetables and animals produced. Had we been present when living protoplasm was first evolved from not-living matter, it is unlikely that the sight would have enabled us scientifically to bring together the physical, chemical, and other conditions of existence. We may speculate about all forms of life commencing as Monera, or simple particles of protoplasm, and that these monera originated from not-living matter; we may theorise as to the monera acquiring tendencies towards the Protista, others towards the Protophyta, and others towards the Protozoa; but, though there are structural analogies, no proof

exists of passage from one to another. We may think of dead matter becoming living, and in our own way settle the dispute as to the physical basis of life, for certainly at the beginning, ere life was, something began to live that was dead before; but a looker-on at the primal origin of earthly life might not have seen more of a miracle, nor anything more startling, than there is in the beginning of a new life now; yet it was a marvellous crisis in the world's history, the beginning of a state the results of which no created being can calculate.

"The sun, the moon, the stars, the seas, the hills, and the plains—  
Are not these, O soul, the vision of Him who reigns.

\* \* \* \* \*  
Speak to Him thou, for He hears, and Spirit with spirit can meet—  
Closer is He than breathing, and nearer than hands and feet.

\* \* \* \* \*  
And the ear of man cannot hear, and the eye of man cannot see;  
But if we could see and hear, this vision—were it not He?"

*Tennyson, The Higher Pantheism.*

We peer into the particles of living moving matter. They all possess the same microscopic structure, no physicist can detect any difference, but within that apparent identity are those infinite varieties of molecular constitution and arrangement whence proceed all living things. The variety establishes an essential difference where human faculties and instruments find sameness. The unity explains the apparent similarity in the structure of the parrot, the cat, the dog, the monkey.

The life-point, in union with the force-point, or material atom, is the concentration of a world-wide mystery. It does that which no mere mechanism can explain. "In living centres, far more central than the centre as seen by the highest magnifying powers—in centres of living matter where the eye cannot penetrate, but towards which the understanding may tend—proceed changes of the nature of which the most advanced physicists and chemists fail to afford us the faintest conception."<sup>1</sup>

Living matter takes up non-living matter and converts it into living matter; transforms matter and transmutes force by means of constructive power; as were it a master director, or designer, to produce infinite variety of form for specialities

<sup>1</sup> "The Mystery of Life:" Dr. Liopel S. Beale, F.R.S.

and diversities of use. Life and motion are constantly transmitted from atom to atom by "a power which cannot, under any circumstances, be developed from matter that has not been made to live by the influence of that which is already living."<sup>1</sup>

Consider a remarkable assertion: "The absolute commencement of organic life on the globe I distinctly deny. The affirmation of universal evolution is itself the negation of an absolute commencement of anything. Construed in terms of evolution, every kind of being is conceived as a product of modifications, wrought by insensible gradations on a pre-existing kind of being."<sup>2</sup> By this theory, life began with portions of protoplasm—not protoplasm; more minute, indefinite, and changeable than those mere fragments of matter called "protogenes." Then by a process of action and reaction between incipient types and their environments, and the survival of those fittest to live, after an enormous period of time, the comparatively well-specialised forms of ordinary Infusoria were reached.

We have stated the case clearly, for there must be no mistake. The conception of a first organism, in anything like the common or natural meaning, is wholly at variance with a right view of evolution thus propounded: life sprang from no life—from nothing! There can be no greater condemnation of the system as an attempted explanation of the origin of things. We are virtually told—there is continual commencement, but no primal start; all things came out of nothing, yet never began to come out; push back the beginning far enough, do it little by little, and there will be no beginning. You may gradually organise an organism by such imperceptible and inappreciable differentiation, that life never begins as life, and the organism has no absolute commencement. We are to suppose that there is a vacuum, or something else; this nothing or something is to be turned about, somewhere or nowhere, a very long time, no one can tell by whom, till the churning makes it very hot. Then, cooling down, the particles of this nothing which has become some-

<sup>1</sup> "Life-Theories and Religious Thought:" Dr. Lionel S. Beale, F.R.S.

<sup>2</sup> "Principles of Biology," vol. i. p. 482: Herbert Spencer.

thing, differentiate, assort, adapt, combine themselves. After further myriads of ages, arise those beginnings of life which are not beginnings. At length come the protophyta, real beginnings, which insensibly advance into fragrant flowers, cereal plants, fruit and forest trees. With the protophyta, or soon after, grow the protozoa into all the animals.

This doctrine is commended as natural and reasonable by men—

"Too comic for the solemn things they are,  
Too solemn for the comic touches in them,"

who tell us that the special creation hypothesis must now be consigned to that limbo where hover the ghosts of slaughtered theories. Instead of the declaration—"God said, Let the earth bring forth the living creature," we are to take the following natural, simple, reasonable explanation, concerning life:—"It is an integration of matter and concomitant dissipation of motion, during which the matter passes from an indefinite, incoherent homogeneity, to a definite, coherent heterogeneity, and during which the retained motion undergoes a parallel transformation."<sup>1</sup> Compare it with the words of Moses—"God said, Let the earth bring forth grass, the herb yielding seed, and the fruit tree yielding fruit after his kind, whose seed is in itself. Let the waters bring forth abundantly the moving creature that hath life, and fowls that may fly above the earth in the open firmament of heaven. Let the earth bring forth the living creature after his kind, cattle and creeping thing, and beast of the earth after his kind." Ask a truly scientific assembly whether "the earth bringing forth and the waters bringing forth," do not equally well explain the very doing of the thing, as the integration and concomitant dissipation, and the passing from some sort of indefinite, incoherent homogeneity, into another sort of definite, coherent heterogeneity? Yet we are told—"Now that we have arrived at this formula, we find ourselves expressing it in terms that are universal. Instead of a mere law of biology, we have enunciated the widest generalisation concerning the concrete universe as a whole. . . . This leap of inference on Mr. Spencer's part, like the similar leap taken

<sup>1</sup> "First Principles," p. 396: Herbert Spencer.

by Newton from the fall of the apple to the motions of the moon, is the daring act which completes the formation of the hypothesis."<sup>1</sup> So that when a man, translating the formula, says "the joining of stuff into a lump, then the equal unjoining and sending out of movement from it, the making stuff pass from a no sort of unstickingness into some sort of holding-togetherness, while the movement not sent out undergoes a like change from no sort of keeping-togetherness into some sort of sticking," he explains the concrete universe as a whole. Really, we should not have known it unless very clever people had told us.

There are individual developments actually taking place, more marvellous than the mysteries of evolutionists. Take a vertebrate animal. The germinal vesicle of the ovum contains one or more germinal spots, and is included within a vitellus. The first step in the development of the embryo is the division of the vitelline substance into cleavage masses, each of which contains a nucleus, and the germinal vesicle is now no longer seen. In this process, the nucleus is the first to divide, its substance separating into two poles. A constriction then appears in the protoplasmic mass, and the single cell is subdivided; each of these again divides into two, until the mulberry stage is reached. This globular lump of cells gives rise to the fiddle-shaped area, from which may proceed fish, amphibious animal, reptile, bird, mammal, man. It is a simple oblong, violin-shaped, thin disc of three connected membranes, lying one above another. Out of the lower layer arises the inner delicate skin (epithelium) for the intestinal tube from the mouth to the anus, lung, liver, salivary glands, etc. Out of the middle layer arise all the other organs, muscles, bones, blood-vessels. Out of the upper or outer layer arise the skin (epidermis) and the central parts of the nervous system (spinal marrow and brain). A central line or streak divides the whole into two equal lateral halves. On both sides of this furrow arises a longitudinal fold, which, growing over and joining, forms a cylindrical tube, the medullary canal, the foundation of the central nervous system, the spinal marrow. Mr. W. Kitchen Parker says—"The spinal axis is

<sup>1</sup> "Cosmic Philosophy," vol. i. p. 351: John Fiske.

not originally pointed anteriorly in anything but amphioxus, in all other vertebrates it is dilated from the first. This dilatation is soon seen to be divided into *three* vesicles, the primitive fore, mid, and hind brain. The fore-brain gives rise to the olfactory lobes, the cerebral hemispheres, and the vesicle of the third ventricle, from which latter arise the optic vesicles, which give rise to the optic nerve, retina, and choroid. The mid-brain gives rise to the corpora quadrigemina (in birds and reptiles corpora bigemina—the so-called optic lobes), and the crura cerebri. The hind-brain is differentiated into the cerebellum, the pons Varolii, and the medula oblongata." All these, originally arranged in the same way, develop into such different groups that it is very difficult to recognise their corresponding parts in fully organised brains. As yet, in this gradual commencement and apparently original equality, you cannot distinguish mammal, bird, reptile, from one another. The heart, the liver, the limbs, all parts of the body, are originally the same in all vertebrates ; but from this stage proceed the ever-increasing separation and differentiation of the higher animals, every one after his own order. It is a multiplication of mysteries.

Materialists inquire—"Why this process of natural genesis? Why should not Omnipotence be proved by the supernatural production of plants and animals everywhere throughout the world from hour to hour?" As if God were to begin at the end ; or as if He did not, hour by hour, produce from germ of plant and fish, of bird and beast, all the living creatures after their kind. What process is there that, long continued, would not be accounted natural? But who knows that anything is natural, or of itself? To call a thing "natural" is to pronounce it Divine, or to make the word a cloak for ignorance. Scales, feathers, hair, fin, wing, limb, claw, paw, hand, are formed in successive processes of fœtal life, and by series of modifications, so small, that only the microscope can reveal the secret transformation. Changes into hoof or hand, into gill or lung, specialities of structure variously adapted, and passage of lowest forms into highest and furthest differentiation within a few months, not by confusion of parts but by variety of design, are that natural process whose initiation and continuance no one can explain.

Pass from the phenomena of life to those of mind, a region still more profoundly mysterious.

By union with matter, mind takes possession of a new world, doubling its powers of action and extending its sphere of existence. Corporeal existence may indeed be the basis of intellectual activity, of moral agency, of sociality among all created intelligent beings. When we consider the exquisite sensations of organised existence, the alliance with various properties of solidity and extension, the mechanical and animal indices of motion, the new consciousness of duration by collation of mental history with the equable motion and symphony of time in that vast register of duration, the material universe, we may conceive that body is to mind a means of existence serving such important ends, and carrying such consequences, as make it the general, if not universal, law of finite existence in all worlds: first, the natural, then the spiritual body (1 Cor. xv. 44, 45). We are conscious that energy and activity are infused into the most exalted of our moral sentiments by their alliance with animal sensations. If we were only animals, we should neither need nor possess an imaginative faculty. If intellectual only, or moral only, we should disregard as degrading or illusory whatever presented less than absolute truth, reason, rectitude. Imagination and its sensibilities do now, however, abate or stimulate every function of life; mingle with and yet further ennoble the highest and purest of our intellectual and moral feelings; so that we possess the germ and instinctive expectation of another and a higher mode of existence. This future and unseen world, brought thus into definite alliance with us, is as simply natural and true as the present nature. Our consciousness, our religious conceptions, our instinctive yearnings, take away the dim remoteness from the world to come, and connect our own homely land of trees and water with the momentous transactions of the future. The Bible, telling us of our three stages of life—in the body, out of the body, clothed with spiritual body—brings the visible and invisible worlds into that conjunction which the wisest and best of men accept as obvious and natural.

Concerning our own intelligence, it is certain that coming

into contact with a corporeal state is not a degradation ; and doubtless reveals a new sphere and mysterious power of influence, various sentiments and modes of action, that would otherwise be wholly foreign to incorporeal existence. This means of quickening peculiar knowledge and varied action, bringing imaginative sentiments into alliance with animal sensations, their intermixture with ideas of beauty and order, not only form part of our own training and transformation, but may have formed part of that discipline under which some angels fell, and by means of which some were exalted. We are not to apply this to those superior intelligences as if they, by any incorporation with gross matter, could attain a higher nature ; but, without discussing the nature of their "spiritual body," or contemplating the possibility of spirits having come from a pre-existent state into the new order of things on earth ; it is not inconceivable that even archangels round the throne of God may be connected with the energy, motion, heat, and light of the universe, providential arrangements and occurrences (Ps. civ. 4 ; Heb. i. 7). The material universe may be the clock by which spirits become conscious of the lapse of duration ; while the creative, sustentative, renewing processes, make known other depths of the manifold wisdom of God (Eph. iii. 9-11).

Great minds, discoverers of universal laws—Copernicus, who marked out the true path of our sun and earth amongst celestial worlds ; Kepler, who defined the curve described by the planets around their central luminary ; Newton, who was able to fix the condition, unique and supreme, whence results the equilibrium of worlds—did not study the universe as subject in all its movements to blind necessity, as were there no law, nor wisdom, nor beauty, nor harmony. Their investigation was a search for simplicity with comprehensiveness ; and when the discovery of admirable symmetry and universal harmony established the all-pervading sway of power and wisdom, they bowed before the eternal throne, and worshipped Him who sat thereon.

Their knowledge is now our own, and illumines the way to Him by whom our imperfections are to have remedy, our spiritual hopes to be satisfied, our yearnings after immortality

realised. What saith one of our students of science? "I protest that, if some great power would agree to make me always think what is true and do what is right, on condition of being turned into a sort of clock, and wound up every morning before I got out of bed, I would instantly close with the offer."<sup>1</sup> This he says, unaware that the thing is done for the willing, not by degradation but by re-creation (1 Cor. i. 30).

If exact science and advanced modern philosophy cause a man to wish he were "a sort of clock," and made, even against his will, to "think what is true and do what is right," what a proof this is of Scripture—that we have all gone astray! "Quid prodest omnes rerum cognoscere causas, si fugienda fugis, vel fugienda facis?" How small, as to real value, are secular science and philosophy in comparison with the truth and moral power possessed by the real Christian who knows that his sins are forgiven, that he receives grace to resist temptation, that he is being disciplined by the Spirit of God!

. . . "These are truths that wake  
To perish never;  
Which neither listlessness, nor mad endeavour,  
Nor man, nor boy,  
Nor all that is at enmity with joy,  
Can utterly abolish or destroy."

*William Wordsworth.*

That we are under the guidance of a Wise and Benevolent Power may be clearly shown. There is an orderly operation in the universe which produces definite sequences and results. The law of the origin and progress of many and enormously extended series of natural phenomena has been attained with such accuracy and thoroughness, that we can prophecy their course with the greatest certainty. By that one simple law of gravitation, regulating the movements of the heavenly bodies, we determine and predict to a fraction of a minute, for past and future years, the motions of bodies distant and complex as the double, triple, multiple stars. Knowledge extends our view to regions whence light, the quickest of all messengers, needs many years to reach the eye. We subject

<sup>1</sup> "On Descartes' Discourse:" Prof. Huxley.

to our will the powers of a world greatly unfamiliar, partly hostile, and have their use for our reward. That which we grasp, or see, or hear, every thought or emotion of mind or heart, makes us conscious of things and processes of operation which our intellect, if sufficiently expanded, would be able to follow from beginning to end. The array of the external world, our own natural powers, all thought and emotion, or whatever goes to produce consciousness, those sacred longings for pure and endless life, the mysterious force of conscience, proclaim the great fact—that the ponderous and wonderful mechanism of the world is the product of some great Governing Mind.

A leader in science, deservedly a leader in physics, has given his own revelation of world-government.<sup>1</sup> The figure is startling and daring—"The chess-board is the world, the pieces the phenomena of the universe, the rules of the game are what we call the laws of Nature. The Player on the other side is hidden from us. We know that His play is always fair and just and patient. But we know to our cost that He never overlooks a mistake, or makes the smallest allowance for ignorance. To the man that plays well the highest stakes are paid with that overflowing generosity with which the strong shows delight in strength, and one who plays ill is checkmated without haste, but without remorse." Shrinking from his own words, the professor says—They are like a picture of Satan playing chess for the soul of a man, and "would substitute for that mocking fiend a calm, strong angel who is playing for love, as we say, and would rather lose than win." Afterwards, forsaking the angel, he says of our life's training—"It is a rough kind of education, one in which ignorance is treated like disobedience, incapacity is punished as a crime; it is not a word and a blow, but the blow first without the word. It is left to you to find out why your ears are boxed."

In a sense, all is true. If we break Nature's laws we must pay Nature's penalties. We have heard such wisdom from men ere this. Wisdom must be far purer and more spiritual if it is to strengthen and comfort us. Why not say—"Nature is by the will of God; he who breaks Nature's laws breaks

<sup>1</sup> "Liberal Education:" Prof. Huxley.

God's law for the uses and wants of our earthly being?" Clever words, well said, have salt in their wit—are pleasant and preservative, we like to hear them; but jesting speeches do not take away from upright minds that distressing uneasiness which is their present greatest trial concerning the moral system of the universe.

All reasonable beings would gladly believe that there is a God, all-wise, almighty, all-perfect; but the existence of evil causes doubt and perplexity. In vain we try to stifle the doubt: evil, misery, ruin in this world and the next; the trials of saints and the anguish of martyrs; great men, good men, gifted men in sorrow; render the world a waste, and our path through it, not a way of peace, but a dark road amidst mountains of despair. Are beings called into existence, and irrevocably destined to endless unmitigated torture? Are we to charge God with such acts of injustice and cruelty as render all the atrocity of men and excesses of the devil but exhibitions of comparative purity? The doctrines of Creation and Divine Rule render the fact more distressing, for they teach that every organism forms part of a grand universal teleology.

Having honestly exposed the difficulty, we candidly admit that, like many other mysteries of the universe, it is inexplicable by humble intelligence; but it is possible to give reasons for the existence of evil which, if they cannot remove the whole difficulty, enable us to believe that what is unexplained will hereafter afford wonderful views of the power and love of God. In the Study on the Pre-Adamite World the moral aspect is viewed; now take chiefly the physical.

Evil, as a fact, does not belong simply to theology. Atheism, in trying to get rid of it by a shift to chance or to fate, ascribing both good and evil to unintelligent causes, neither accounts for the vast preponderance of good nor alleviates the evil. That a mixed state of things is temporally necessitated by the physical constitution of the universe is certain. The earth has ever been a scene of warfare. Fossil structures, in common with the structures of existing animals, present elaborate weapons of destruction. Throughout all time, there has been a perpetual preying of the superior on

the inferior—a ceaseless devouring of the weak by the strong ; and animals were so framed as to render bloodshed necessary. In innumerable cases the suffering inflicted seems to bring no compensating benefit ; the low and repulsive destroy the attractive and noble ; and there are elaborate appliances for securing the welfare of organisms, incapable even of feeling, at the price of misery to organisms susceptible of high happiness. Of the animal kingdom, half are parasites. Every known animal has its own species, and generally more than one. The *Bothriocephalus latus* and the *Tænia solium*, two kinds of tapeworm which flourish in the human intestines, cause much distress, sometimes ending in insanity. From the germs of the *Tænia*, carried into other parts of the body, arise partially developed forms known as *Cysticerci*, *Echinocci*, and *Cænuri*, which cause pain and disease in the brain, the lungs, the liver, the heart, the eye, and other parts, often producing death. Five other parasites of a different class are found in the human viscera. Another class of *Entozoa*, of the subdivision *Trematoda*, exists of five kinds, attacking the liver, the gall-ducts, the portal vein, the intestine, the bladder, the eye. The *Trichina spiralis* in one phase of existence is embedded in the muscles, and thence passes into the intestines. As to the external parasites, or *Epizoa*, there are creatures that bury themselves in the skin, and there lay eggs ; others infest the surface of the body. Man, animal, plant, are infested ; and the two former endure suffering even unto death. Pain and sorrow are not partial nor accidental, but wide-spreading as life, and wrought into the very nature of things.

Is it possible to extract good out of this evil ? Try. In the lowest grades of existence are creatures wholly inert ; their life is diffused, without central being, and may be called external ; yet, even in these, is a conflict of forces. Amongst them are living things with life and motion clearly manifest. Higher in the scale are organisms with members of great variety and complexity, every one fitted to function ; but life and activity are not at their best until some obstacle has to be surmounted, some difficulty to be overcome. Then action and reaction, the taking this, refusing that, the operation of will, come in. We conclude from the whole, that obstacles,

difficulties, evil, are not something arbitrary, altogether hurtful, but the natural accompaniments of a limited condition—spurs exciting to defence and enlargement of the sphere of activity. Existence, notwithstanding this conflict, is better than non-existence; a plant excels a stone, an animal is superior to a plant, and of all animals man is supreme. Physical evils are undoubtedly among the elements of progress urging toward relative perfection of life; the struggle to escape from the evil giving more energy and leading to amelioration, to the casting off those peculiarities, or infirmities, or uncleannesses, which tend to nourish evil parasitic life.

The moral lesson is not less evident—If a course of action is pursued which tends to throw anything out of balance, detract from physical or moral completeness of life, such departure from completeness, goodness, truth, is evil, and brings more or less of misery. Whether or not spiritual evil can poison the root of things, and cause degeneration and misery in lower forms of life, physical science cannot tell; but we may regard the moral sense of man as an analogue to the sense of pain shared, in some degree, by all conscious beings; even as our capability of spiritual improvement and physical betterment is to be regarded as token of a perfection yet to be attained.

Thus viewed, evil is a temporary incident attendant on a state of discipline for the growth, supremacy, and multiplication of the best. The beneficence of pain is seen as an incentive to action, to consciousness, use and development of powers, enforcing obedience to law as the requirement and condition of a happy life.

When men assert the existence of evil to be inconsistent with the personality or with the goodness of God, they really demand a universe absolutely perfect from the beginning. Would such a universe certainly mirror forth Divine power, wisdom, goodness? Free responsible beings are the highest created existences: amongst these, if they are to be thoroughly tested, evil, some time or other, is sure to arise; and extend, by their agency, to physical things. Would God's universe be better, happier, grander, without freedom? Are free spirits never to spring into life, lest evil drag them away?

Must life be denied to infinite numbers of happy, progressive beings, delighting themselves in Divine Goodness, because the mysterious gift of freedom may be abused? Would not this elevate evil into a power restraining even Godhead, and render the world a vast expanse of stagnation without life, growth, progress? Are not onward movements essential to the happiness of finite beings? and can we form any idea of life, growth, progress, without conflict, without evil? The march of the universe through evil to perfection—a perfection to be attained, is a higher conception of Divine working than the idea of a machine complete in all its parts, but incapable of development and progress. [ Those who think most profoundly, believe in a vast design of wisdom and mercy, the full understanding of which must necessarily be deferred to a future further advance towards perfection. Scientific men admit that millions of years are as nothing in the life of the universe; and if, in the brief period of human history, we can trace a gradual though slow abatement of moral and physical evils, analogy leads us to extend that fact to the universe; and confirms the Revelation that all things are in the hand of a mighty, wise, loving Ruler—are moving through evil and by evil to more perfect good.

. . . " Life is not as idle ore ;  
 But iron dug from central gloom,  
 And heated hot with burning fears,  
 And dipped in baths of hissing tears,  
 And battered with the shocks of doom,  
 TO SHAPE AND USE."

*Tennyson.*

## STUDY VI.

### THE CREATIVE WORDS.

Gen. i., ii. 3.

"Speaking is the revelation of thought; Creation is the realisation of Divine thought."—KEIL AND DELITZSCH, *Pentateuch*.

"According to Fichte, there is a 'Divine Idea' pervading the visible Universe; which visible Universe is indeed but its symbol and sensible manifestation, having in itself no meaning, or even true existence independent of it. To the mass of men this Divine Idea of the world lies hidden: yet to discern it, to seize it, and live wholly in it, is the condition of all genuine virtue, knowledge, freedom; and the end, therefore, of all spiritual effort in every age."—THOMAS CARLYLE, *State of German Literature*.

We pass now from purely scientific arguments to the Record of Creation in Holy Scripture. This portion of our subject demands expository treatment, and will lead to some of those transcendental, yet most practical truths which the Gospel Revelation proclaims. Our main object is, in all fairness, to harmonise the Scriptural Record with the true conclusions of science.

Science confesses that the world is inexplicable without "the omnipresent existence (ignored by positivism), whereof the phenomenal world is the multiform manifestation."<sup>1</sup> Our previous studies show that there have been breaks of continuity in the visible universe which must have been bridged from an external source—"all portions of our science, and especially that beautiful one, the Dissipation of Energy, point unanimously to a beginning, to a state of things incapable of being derived by present laws (of tangible matter and its energy) from any conceivable previous arrangement."<sup>2</sup> This fact science, whose province is the discoverable, has revealed; what saith Scripture?

<sup>1</sup> "Cosmic Philosophy," pref., p. x.: John Fiske.

<sup>2</sup> "Recent Advances in Physical Science," p. 26: P. G. Tait, M.A.

"In the beginning," בְּרֵאשִׁית, "of old;" ἐν ἀρχῇ, LXX.; am Anfang, Luther; is to be taken as the head of all time, preceding every kind of existence—that commencement of Divine history when the ideal, fundamental, eternal plan of God began to be realised in creation. All worlds are gathered into one view, one act: for with God past, present, future, are an eternal now. The Bible in its first Hebrew word states a fact which it is now the glory of physical science to affirm. The earth and all things therein, the heavens and all their host, "are phenomena the very nature of which demonstrates that they must have had a beginning, and that they must have an end."<sup>1</sup> There is no parallax by which to calculate the precise time, there is no older event, for in the generation of the Son of God (John i. 1-3) the same word is used to show that Christ is co-eternal with the Father. In the beginning, being God and with God, He acted as the Creative Power. As Creation was in the beginning, and originated time, there never was a time without Creation.

In carrying up the mind to a conception of the age of our own earth and planetary system, it must be remembered that physical statements, like those in the Study on "Rudiments of the World," pp. 87-92, are made, and rightly, on the ground of our belief as to the progressive order and continuance of things. It is not necessary as theologians, physicists, geologists, so far as faith in God and Holy Scripture is concerned, to accept those calculations which assign great antiquity to our own world. Reckoned backwards—on scientific principles of progression from the past, and forwards—according to the doctrine of continuance, they are affirmed by science not as absolute but highly probable facts. It was possible for God to have acted in any other way and by quicker process; and He may, as to the future, change all things in a moment; knowing this, chastened in mind by Scripture, we apply science as a light to the meaning of sacred physical statements that intellect and pious emotion may be alike content. "God knows, can, and wills all together; wills at once the end and the means—the end by an antecedent, the means by a consequent volition."<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> "Advisableness of Improving Natural Knowledge:" Prof. Huxley.

<sup>2</sup> "Final Causes," p. 438: Paul Janet.

כָּרַךְ, create, is the proper word to denote Divine production. Our faith pierces the phenomenal externality of the world to its supernatural and essential source, and has power to understand that the worlds were framed (Heb. xi. 3). Fuerst states, in his Concordance, that "create" has not essentially the meaning of making things out of nothing: "כָּרַךְ, non habet producendi ex nihilo vim." The LXX. version is "ἐποίησεν ὁ θεός τὸν οὐρανὸν καὶ τῆν γῆν." כָּרַךְ, create, עָשָׂה, make, יָצַק, form, interchange in use; for example, "create" and "make" (Gen. i. 1, ii. 2) are "make" and "create" (Gen. i. 26, 27); "form" seems equivalent (in ch. ii. 7) to "make" and "create" (in ch. i. 26, 27); nevertheless, in Scripture the highest possible meaning is always the dominant, and passes by gradations into lower forms. Again, כָּרַךְ is work which none but God can do; עָשָׂה means making, indefinitely, as a table; יָצַק is to form, fashion, make in shape, say a round or a square table. We may safely say—"The Hebrew word is limited, in its primary meaning, to the working of God, and is never used in Scripture (where it is used in Kal thirty-five times) to describe the works of man, and presents an instance of the exactitude and precision with which the Holy Spirit writes."<sup>1</sup>

We are told by unbelievers—The Bible account of Creation "is discredited by its barbarous origin, and by the absurd or impossible assumptions which it would require us to make:"<sup>2</sup> "we may with equal propriety speak of the creation of cholera, of a conflagration, of a railway accident, as of the creation of man."<sup>3</sup> We are asked to believe that God did not create anything, or, at most, only little things; say—nothing larger than an infusorial point; and are assured that a few clever men can trace their pedigree from cosmic dust to sea-slime, from sea-slime to protoplasm, and from protoplasm, by successive evolutions, to the philosopher who weaves the hypothesis with scientific imagination and mends all breaks in the web with threads of fancy. For our own part, we prefer the grand old Faith; we cannot believe that the world, an unconscious thing, unconsciously developed itself—bringing things

<sup>1</sup> Wordsworth's "Commentary."

<sup>2</sup> "Cosmic Philosophy," vol. i. p. 464: John Fiske.

<sup>3</sup> "Natural History of Creation," vol. i. p. 66: Dr. Hæckel.

that are out of things which were not : we hold that " Nature's great progression from the formless to the formed, from the inorganic to the organic, from blind force to conscious intellect and will," must be accounted as God's way of doing things. It is absolutely and for ever inconceivable that carbon, hydrogen, nitrogen, oxygen atoms, should be otherwise than indifferent as to their position and motion—past, present, or future. Are we, " the cunningest of Nature's clocks," to believe that there is no Intelligence at the heart of things? Are we to set our time as if it were more philosophical to regard unconscious, unintelligent energies as wise creators and intelligent guides than to have faith in God? We will not thus sell ourselves for nought.

The very wonderfulness of creation is perverted into a plea for unbelief; we are assured—" It is impossible to think of creation; and to prove it is the impossible task of establishing an equation between something and nothing." We reply—It is as easy to think of creation as of matter or space, of time or eternity; and the world is full of equations impossible to man and incomprehensible by human reason. The conception of matter acting upon matter is essentially incapable of being construed in our consciousness. Whether we regard the atom as divisible or indivisible, we cannot get rid of mastering difficulties, and the hypothesis of attractive and repulsive energies lands us in bewildering contradiction. The æther, the interstellar medium, in which the phenomena of light are displayed, surrounds and enters every solid, liquid, and gaseous substance; is imponderable, impalpable, cannot be isolated, nor compressed, nor attenuated, nor excluded from any space or substance; " its properties are those of a solid rather than gas, it resembles jelly rather than air."<sup>1</sup> It seems hardly credible that men knowing of these mysteries should refuse the Divine Mystery. They are aware that their own mind, correlated with a complex nervous system possessing minute particulars of organisation, modifies surrounding agencies; yet, they tell us that Supreme Wisdom does nothing of the kind—" there is no intrusion of creative power in any series of phenomena;" " it is beneath a philosopher to examine the

<sup>1</sup> " Fragments of Science," p. 4 : Prof. Tyndall.

evidence for miracles." We are to accept the government of La Madre Natura, let her again have altars and groves; we must live simply for the moment's sake—immortality being a dream; free-will, virtue, responsibility—fond delusions. Why, Martin Luther would be very rude and say—"I would rather be in hell with Jesus Christ than in heaven with men like you."

"God created," אֱלֹהִים בָּרָא. The Hebrew noun is plural: *nomen majestatis*. The mind of the Church discerns in this a threefold Divine self-consciousness in inseparable and co-eternal unity. Jehovah the personal God, covenanting with men; the Son of God, incarnate, is Christ, very God of very God, neither made nor created, but begotten; the Holy Ghost, proceeding, is the Spirit moving upon the waters. Trinity in unity is a transcendental doctrine. It began to be revealed when God created; it was further unfolded when the Spirit moved on the face of the deep; it was proclaimed in the counsel-words, "Let us make man;" it was formulated in the triplicate mention, "God created man in *His* own image, in the image of God created *He* him, male and female created *He* them." Trinity of name and person—Father, Son, and Holy Ghost: the trinity of work—Creation, Redemption, Regeneration.

The Doctrine of the Holy Trinity rescues us from what Spinoza says—"To define God is to deny Him," *Determinatio negatio est*; rescues us from the error that thought and volition, as known to us, are the very nature and essence of the Infinite; enables us to see that the personality is not a limitation, but an ineffable reality raising us from the error of regarding the Eternal as mere infinitude; and gives knowledge of Him as the all-pervading and all-sustaining Power. It meets, as far as possible, the difficulties of men like Goethe—"Since the great Being, whom we name the Deity, manifests Himself not only in man, but in a rich and powerful Nature, and in mighty world events; a representation of Him, framed from human qualities, cannot be adequate; and the thoughtful observer will soon come to imperfections and contradictions, which will drive him to doubt—nay, even to despair; unless he be little enough to let himself be soothed by an artful

evasion, or be great enough to rise to a higher point of view."<sup>1</sup> Thus, the Great Cause, who, in all causes, is that which had no beginning, the "I am that I am," who is the transcendental in all existence, may well be called "Three in One;" seeing that solid, fluid, gas, form the one matter of all material being, and three elements in space, constitute the one infinitude. Though we cannot by searching find out God, we may feel after Him in the world, and in our mind know all that concerns us as intelligent and responsible beings. We have revelation of Him, in a symbolic way, as the Source of all things, as the Power disclosed in every throb of the mighty rhythmic life of the universe, as the One from whom proceeds that moral law, obedience to which is our only guarantee of incorruptible happiness.

The going forth of creative energy is revealed under the symbol of a Word. The Word of God must have the highest power and meaning attributed to it of which our thoughts are capable, as representing an effluence of Divine will and energy to fashion the universe out of chaos. Science represents this operation as an evolution "in accordance with discernible physical laws," but Scripture reveals that these laws exist and act by a "Divine power immanent in the cosmos." The Word, or that which it represents, entered chaos, gave it capacity to assume beauty of form and energy of life. That the Word was not a sound, nor a voice of articulate words, is evident from the fact of our Lord being called this Word (John i. 1-3). Word is the expression of thought, that by which our ideas become known to others: hence, doubtless, "Word" and "said" are used for the creative acts which gave outward expression in matter to the types in the Infinite Mind. God's Words are the potential seeds from which spring into actuality that which Divine wisdom had eternally prefigured, even as our own thoughts and wills are the ground-plan of our conduct, and the essence of our character.

Further—Word, *מִימְרָא*, means or represents the mediative element or outward expression of Divine action, as wisdom is the mediative element of Divine presence, vivifying and uniting all things. The Word, as understood in Palestine,

<sup>1</sup> "Eckermann," vol. ii. p. 357.

was the complement to wisdom—the Divine thought. The Greek *λόγος* (*sermo, ratio*) mingled the two ideas. "According to the later distinction of Philo, wisdom corresponds to the immanent word, *λόγος ἐνδιάθετος*; while the Word, strictly speaking, was defined as enunciative, *λόγος προφορικός*. The one prepared man for the revelation of the Son of God; the other for the revelation of the Holy Spirit."<sup>1</sup> The correctness of this distinction may be called in question—*λόγος ἐνδιάθετος*, אֱלֹהִים, is the immanent reason, in the Holy Trinity, viewed ontologically; but viewed deontologically (as here, Gen. i.) the *λόγος προφορικός* is the mediative principle (person) by which God expresses Himself in creation.

וְהָאֵרֶץ תִּהְיֶה תֵהוֹמָה, "The heavens and the earth."

The heavens were created before the earth. How long before no man knows. The heavens mean, doubtless, space, heavenly bodies, and the angels. Much stress cannot be laid on the words spoken to Job (xxxviii. 7), as to angels presiding at the creation of the earth; the former half is obviously figurative, the latter may be. There is an analogue of relation in creation to the Creator; creation is the Divine mirror—and the life of God, complete and hidden in Himself, is that internal source whence all things have sprung. We may count the external glory of the heavenlies, manifested in time, as a symbol of the inner and eternal glory.

The creation of heaven and earth recorded in the first verse of the inspired account, is possibly separated by an interval too vast for human measurement from the wasteness and emptiness described in the second verse; nevertheless, to regard the first verse as stating a fact—God created the heavens and the earth, and then to take the remainder as a narrative of the order in which the earth was framed, seems simpler and agrees with the Fourth Commandment. We obtain, moreover, a natural and consistent meaning by taking וְהָאֵרֶץ תִּהְיֶה תֵהוֹמָה thus, "Now, as for the earth, it was wasteness and emptiness;" the initial state, or condition precedent to the moving of the Spirit; a vast vaporous ball spun out from the general mass forming the nebula once representing the solar system.

<sup>1</sup> Smith's "Dictionary of the Bible"—Wisdom.

Whether space was furnished at once by the fiat of Omnipotence with burning orbs and glorious spirits, "the man of science, if he confine himself within his own limits, will have no answer."<sup>1</sup> Nevertheless, we may regard the time-world as the historical realisation of God's eternal design. This realisation was everlastingly decreed, but did not begin until the moment of living effectual interference: indeed, there was no time until creation, when the finite began to be; but after that were stages, intervals, processes, of Divine effectuation. Angels preceded the earth, and rejoiced at its foundation. Wasteness and emptiness were moved upon by the Spirit, light shone, the firmamental tenuity was stretched out, there was a progression from the formless to the formed, from the inorganic to the organic, from animal instinct to human intellect and will. "There is nothing incompatible with the belief that all exercises of God's power, whether ordinary or extraordinary, are effected through the instrumentality of means—that is to say, by the instrumentality of natural laws brought out, as it were, and used for a Divine purpose."<sup>2</sup>

The seer beheld the earth, תהו ובהו, "in wasteness and emptiness," shut up in gloom. Matter was there; but as the Germans say, "*öden-wüst und wüsten-öd*," shapeless, formless, unconditioned. Over the earth-materials, mingled with waters of the deep, which as yet were not waters, moved or brooded the Spirit of God. Whether we take the orthodox view, that the Holy Ghost was the agent, or a depraved interpretation, "the air or wind flutters while all is involved in darkness,"<sup>3</sup> we are assured that means were used, and the means were that energy which effectuated the Divine will.

The work upon dead matter, ascribed to the Holy Ghost, illustrates the enlightening, vivifying, ordering, elevating influence of the Spirit of God in our own nature. It is not a mere coincidence that the long and varied operations of Creation, Providence, Redemption, Regeneration, are full of peculiar and striking resemblances. The culminating point in Christianity, the loftiest and most mysterious height of

<sup>1</sup> "The Constitution of Nature:" Prof. Tyndall.

<sup>2</sup> "The Reign of Law:" Duke of Argyle.

<sup>3</sup> "Essays and Reviews:" Mosaic Cosmogony.

revealed truth, had its due place assigned at the very beginning. This is just what we ought to expect. The Divine and Spiritual are not unnatural, but the very soul of Nature.

We have wheels within wheels, and rhythm within rhythm ; of the inner quality working the wheels and producing the rhythm, enabling matter to attract matter, we know nothing : it may exist in the form of motion, that is dynamic energy ; or in the form of energy with distance to act through, that is potential energy. The convertibility of these energies consists solely, so far as science is aware, of transformations of dynamic into potential and of potential into dynamic energy ; "The law which moulds a tear rounds a planet." In the application of law to Nature there is no such thing as small or great. The soft wind gliding over an Italian mountain is as firmly ruled as the earth in its orbital revolution round the sun. The gathering or dispersion of the slightest mist is by that energy underlying all things of which we know that it is not matter. Notwithstanding, it is unscientifically asserted—"Matter is the origin of all existence, in it all natural and mental forces are inherent ;"<sup>1</sup> a statement at once disproved by the fact that energy is not matter, nor an essential part nor property.

One of the hypotheses of science—it is but hypothesis—regards the primal matter as diffused stuff without structure, properties, parts, or indeed anything whatever ; in which was no spirit, no life, no matter—such as we are acquainted with ; and that out of this stuff matter was formed, or gathered, or contracted, by energy acting in a straight line, "push ;" the "push" not being mechanical power, nor chemical, nor vital, but conveying them all, and furnishing infinite space with blazing suns and worlds of life. We can have no objection to this as a reverent attempt to explain God's way of doing things ; but if stuff, push, space, are regarded as cause, continuance, and limit of all things—three idols ; we must maintain that pure science knows no such idolatry, the self-generation of natural laws, because of the persistence of matter and energy, is physically and logically impossible. Other things must come in, or matter and energy ever remain as

<sup>1</sup> "Kraft und Stoff," p. 32, Dr. Büchner.

matter and energy. We endeavour to understand and explain, so far as human powers allow, these other things; so as to know in what manner God created the heavens and the earth, and what physical effects were consequent on that interference of Divine Energy recorded in the symbol—"The Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters."

וַיְהִי אֹרֶךְ יְהִי אֹרֶךְ, "Let light be, and light was."

An example of brevity with comprehensiveness: a volume in a sentence. Not the creation of light, nor the first call into existence, is recorded; but the coming of light in place of that darkness which was upon the face of the deep. The fluid globe surrounded by a vast pall of condensing clouds, the vapours gathering in dark masses, dense and gross, on the deep—put on light as a garment. Light is not a substance, but, like heat and magnetism, a mode of energy: energy, giving that peculiar shivering, brilliant motion to the ultimate particles of matter whereby the world is clothed with beauty: energy, causing and transmitting the molecular tremors of stars, countless millions of miles distant, and translating them into that human consciousness which we call "Light."<sup>1</sup> Moses, speaking of light, as existing without the sun, anticipated on a large scale what Professor Tyndall beautifully performs on a small scale—the extraction of light from total darkness.

He who would have Apostolic authority for this statement as to the coming of light, and see the spiritual use made of the natural fact, will do well to remember—"God, who commanded the light to shine out of darkness, hath shined in our hearts, to give the light of the knowledge of the glory of God in the face of Jesus Christ" (2 Cor. iv. 6).

וַיְהִי עֶרְבַּי וַיְהִי בֹקֶר יוֹם אֶחָד: "Evening was and morning was day one." The first number being cardinal, the others ordinal, is a startling example of Scriptural exactness. The inspired seer saw the light as a Divine product—one work, one period. He knew not that any other would follow. So soon as others came, he could say—These are the second, third, fourth, fifth, sixth.

The Days of Creation are fully investigated in Study VII.

The words "light" and "darkness" are no indication that

<sup>1</sup> "Radiant Heat and its Relations."

creative days were common days. There is no mention of light and darkness after the fifth verse, in which "night" means the darkness which was upon the face of the deep, and "day" is the light which followed. Day is light put within limits; and night is darkness put within limits; but the days are not long periods of light alternating with long periods of darkness. Their measure and definition are not by light and darkness, the two sides of a common day, but by evening and morning. The peculiarity of reckoning marks a peculiarity like that in Daniel (viii. 26), where the vision of the evening and the morning is for many days. Knowledge of the earth's physical history gives grandeur to these days, some thought-standard of eternity—some measure of God's day. "We must not suppose that the evening and the morning were merely the sequence of the preceding darkness and of the light that followed it, notwithstanding that the first evening and morning so fittingly append themselves to such a contrast. Still less are we to think of the usual evening and morning, since the earth had not yet been arranged. Evening and morning denote rather the interval of a creative day, after the Hebrew mode of reckoning from sunset. The morning that follows stands for the second half of the day proper."<sup>1</sup> The fact of God setting certain divisions of time before the sun was conditioned, and then making the sun ruler, as He first formed the animals, and afterwards appointed Adam to be king, is not a mark of equal cycles, but that time-limits contain all created things.

רָקִיעַ, "Firmament," the heaven or sky of the earth-world.

The Greek word, στερέωμα, and the Latin, *firmamentum*, have led some to think "that the Hebrews understood the sky to be a permanent solid vault."<sup>2</sup> The Hebrews may have thought so; Moses himself may have thought so; some ancient nations may have had the idea of a solid firmament; but, nevertheless, "firmament" simply means extension involving great tenuity. The fowls flew in it, the sun and moon were set in it, the stars lighted it. No candid reader will think that the inspired writings mean that fowls were flying

<sup>1</sup> "Genesis:" Prof. Lange.

<sup>2</sup> "Essays and Reviews:" Mosaic Cosmogony, p. 220.

in a vault, that the sun and moon moved up and down in it, and that stars were little lights thereof. Dr. Kitto writes—"A portion of the heavy watery vapour had flown into the upper regions, and rested there in dense clouds, which still obscured the sun; while below, the earth was covered with water. Thus we see the propriety with which the firmament is said to have divided the waters from the waters." The waters were not waters in the modern scientific sense; but that fluidity out of which land and water were formed.

The difficulties of this part of the account of creation are too conspicuous to require enumeration. There is great difference of opinion as to what is meant by *רָקִיעַ*, literally "expanse;" and what are the two kinds of water—one above, the other beneath. The water beneath the expanse does not mean common water, or it would have been designated the water which is upon the earth: it means the æthereal substance which surrounds the atmosphere and reaches to the great expanse in which the heavenly bodies are located. The water above the *רָקִיעַ* signifies that super-celestial immensity which extends into infinity. That the Hebrew word *רָקִיעַ* means "expanse" need hardly to be proved (see Ps. cxxxvi. 6; Job xxxvii. 18; Ex. xxxix. 3, *וַיִּרְקְעוּ*, "and they stretched out one"—the English version copies the LXX. and the Vulgate); that the visible sky in its wide sense is intended, is proved from ver. 8, "And God called the expanse, *שָׁמַיִם*, heaven." The design of this narrative is to convey an idea how the expanse enclosing the heavenly bodies was cleared. The meaning, in a narrow sense, is limited to the earth; in a wider meaning, it extends to all space. We have a plain declaration that the boundless space surrounding the expanse is called "water." Ps. cxlviii. 4, "Praise Him, ye heaven of heavens, and the *waters* that are above the heavens;" also Ps. civ. 3, *הַמִּקְדָּרָה בַּמַּיִם עֲלֵינוּ*, literally—"that ceileth His upper chambers with water." This idea was entertained by the ancient Rabbis. In Talmud translation, *חַיִּינָה*, we find R. Akiba said to the wise men—"When ye enter the bright clear marble, ye shall not say 'Water, water;'" i.e. when ye contemplate the substance of the super-celestial æther, ye shall not think it common water, although it is so called.

The earth germinated and brought forth grass, herb yielding seed, and tree bearing fruit; which may be thus arranged—

אֲשֵׁר, Algæ, Fungi, Lichens, Mosses.

בִּצְבָב, Herbs, Vegetables, Grasses.

עֵץ, Tree, or fully פֵּרַי עֵץ Fruit Trees.

It is remarkable that the comprehensive word אֲשֵׁר may include all that class of vegetable life which we call "Flowerless," that בִּצְבָב, herb, עֵץ, tree, designate all flowering plants. It is not less remarkable that this comprehension of all vegetation into grass, herb, tree, disposes of every attempt, by means of evolution, to discredit the Divine account. Indeed, the general summary accords with the indefiniteness of modern classification, and finds confirmation so far as evolution is scientifically accepted.

The existence, nevertheless, of a certain common similitude amongst organisms, so that all plants are akin, the kinship extending to and embracing even every form of animal life, has been cited in argument against the Divine narrative. The argument falls to the ground so soon as the fact is realised that He who established the primitive unity endued it with essential differences; which grew up—if we speak scientifically—according to natural law into special structure and function of "kind after its kind."

#### LIGHTS IN THE FIRMAMENT.

The lights are not the primal illumination אֹר, light; but the collocation of light in such manner that there may be lights for many worlds. מְאֹרוֹת properly means luminous instruments, receptacles, places, or bodies whence light proceeds. The word was afterwards used in a wider sense: in poetry, as we use it—"Sun of my soul;" Prov. xv. 30, "Light of the eyes;" also in connection with the candlestick or lamp in the tabernacle, where a special dignity attaches to that light as emphatically "the light." In accurate meaning it is always a vessel of light or for light. Prov. xv. 30, "Light of the eyes," means the exquisiteness of the faculty, the beautiful vessel and its light. The meaning is analogous to אֵלֵי מְאֹרוֹת, "all the vessels of light in heaven."

The sun, moon, stars, are spoken of in their relative im-

portance as lights seen from the earth, not as they are in themselves. The word *אֲנִי*—constituting them to be lights and signs, dividers of the day and night, rulers of the seasons—means to crown or make a king, and is used of the firmament. In Ps. civ. 19 it is translated “appointed”—“He appointed the moon for seasons.”

The peculiar power of the letter *א*, showing that the sun is light-bearer, the instrument or holder of light, not light itself, but to regulate it for the future, seems to anticipate the following scientific statement:—“In nebulous sphere, just become luminous, and in the red-hot liquid earth of our modern cosmogony, light was not yet divided into sun and stars, nor time into day and night, as it was after the earth was cooled.”<sup>1</sup>

On the Fifth Day, power was given to the waters, and they brought forth abundantly. *וַיִּשְׂרַץ יְהוָה אֶת הַמַּיִם וַיִּבְרָא חַיָּוָה*, “Let the waters swarm:”—

“Ut merito maternum nomen adepta  
Terra sit, e terra quoniam sunt cuncta creata.  
Multaque nunc etiam existant animalia terris  
Imbribus et calido solis concreta vapore.”

*Lucretius, De Rerum Natura, v. 793-796.*

“With good reason the earth has gotten the name of mother, since out of the earth all things are produced. Many living things even now are being formed in rain water, and in warm vapours raised by the sun.”

Moses had a deep scientific spirit. He knew or, not knowing, uttered that latest of truths—“All living powers are cognate, all living forms are fundamentally of one character.” He anticipated the researches of the chemist, that there is “a striking uniformity of material composition in living matter.” He was not a “barbarous Hebrew” with absurd hypothesis—that species arose without natural agencies, without modification of organic or of living matter. He makes no mention of species, goes below them, declares that their unsearchable roots are in cosmical life—the waters swarmed. We may say, in Hugh Miller’s words—“What fully developed history is

<sup>1</sup> Prof. Helmholtz: “Interaction of Natural Forces.”

to the prophecy which of old looked forwards, fully developed science is to the prophecy which of old looked backwards."<sup>1</sup>

The great truth, declared by Moses, is affirmed by science that, regarding organisms, the difference as to one another is of degree, not of kind: "in all living beings the matter upon which *existence* depends is the germinal matter (bioplasm), and in all living structures the germinal matter possesses the *same general characters*, although its *powers* and the *results of its life* are so very different."<sup>2</sup> We are not warranted in thinking, though asserted by some, that vital energy and chemical energy are the same as mechanical power: nor that all substances are resolvable into one kind of matter, the primordial, out of which some surmise all the elements were evolved, "by the different grouping of units, and by combination of unlike groups, each with its own kind, and each with other kinds;" for there are secrets in every organism which we cannot hope to detect—barely to conjecture; things beyond our understanding, things outside the ordinary chemical and electrical affinities.

On the Sixth Day, God created *חַיַּת הָאָרֶץ*, the flesh-eating animal, or wild beast: *בְּהֵמָה*, cattle, or the herb-eating animal; and *קְרִמַּיִם הָאָרֶץ*, creeping things, all the lower forms of life which are on the land; *לְמִינֵהוּ* after their kind. The fierce and terrible are first mentioned because terrible; the others follow according to their apparent importance. It is probable that the order of life's appearance on earth was, first, with the lowest grades of vegetable and animal existence; and then, by progression, to the higher types; possibly according to the classes in which the flora and fauna are scientifically arranged. Animal life is thus classified—Protozoa, Cœlenterata, Anneloidea, Annulosa, Mollusca, Vertebrata.

The arrangement in Scripture is probably rhythmical, not scientific, we have not only the six days apportioned into two triplets, so that the work of the first is completed on the fourth, that of the second on the fifth, and that of the third on the sixth; but the two triplicates are headed by the seventh or sabbath day. These triplicates themselves are

<sup>1</sup> "Testimony of the Rocks."

<sup>2</sup> "Protoplasm, or Matter and Life:" Dr. Lionel S. Beale, F.R.S.

triple : in vegetation—grass, herb, tree ; in light—sun, moon, stars ; in life from the water—fish, bird, creature of length ; in life from the ground—wild beast, cattle, creeping thing. Over all this life man is constituted king.

Pausing to look around, we observe—The evidence in favour of Evolution having shown some truth—though not the whole truth, it is one of the Bible's great triumphs to overcome all objections, difficulties, doubts, which arise on the supposition that the Divine narrative asserts the special creation of species. "The book does not so speak, as all may see who will."<sup>1</sup> Plant, fish, bird, mammal, man, were framed by a continually ascending process from unity to diversity. The fundamental statements enabling us to see, as by a succession of dissolving views, that God is the source of all things : so that Nature, endued with energy, advances, grade by grade, until the earth is filled with life. Particulars of the process are not revealed, nor by what means the great gulf between the dead and the living was spanned, nor how the vital spark was first kindled. These were left for science to discover—if it can : the province of science being the discoverable, that of revelation the undiscoverable. We now, and rightly, regard it as perfectly natural that the stately oak should be developed from the tiny acorn ; is that really less miraculous, less divine, than the production of the earth's primal and rudimentary forms ? Is there not, indeed, between the inanimate ground and the acorn, between the acorn and the oak, a somewhat similar passage from the inanimate to the animate—a continual coming of life from the dead ; which, though it does not seem to require the vital spark from heaven, as in the first operation, is not less wonderful than was the primal origination ? If this be granted, the manifestation of God in Nature is credible and scientific ; and grades of life are steps on God's great altar-stairs by which life, onward advancing and upward ascending, approaches the ever-living One.

נַעֲשֵׂה אָדָם בְּצַלְמֵנוּ, "Let us make man in our image."

Job (x. 9) said—"Thou hast made me as the clay." God gave the spirit of life to the frame which he had formed

<sup>1</sup> "Cambridge University Sermon," Gen. i. 1 : Rev. T. G. Bonney.

out of the dust, and so man became a living soul—of the earth, earthy ; but of the soul and spirit, heavenly. When nature-life, as distinct from spirit-life, had attained the summit of opulence and intensity in animal-life, then was created a form for spirit-life. The vegetative life had been subordinate to the animal, now animal life is made subordinate to the spirit, and Adam comes—the up-looking one, the moving principle of the earth's history.

We must not imagine that God's hands formed a clod of earth into human form, and, standing near, breathed into it from without the breath of life. The hand of God is the power of God, which, even in visible things, works invisibly. Man came into existence, as did also the other creatures, by Omnipotence acting invisibly ; but, as to man, a solemn word of Divine self-determination and mysterious meaning preceded the creation. The Words of God, as we have said, represent the energy by which material is formed, fashioned, vivified—beasts in their impersonality, man in his personality ; beasts by a distribution of existing materials, man by God's immediate formation, and, as it were, by God's breathing ; so that he, in spiritual person, is akin to God, and rules as the God-man. The Breath of God did not become a living soul, but made man to be a living soul—a candle illumined by the Lord.

This illumining we are not to apprehend as endowing with spirit, but rather a creating in the soul of spirit-elements to become man's true spirit-form. The Breath of God is that Divine energy which created the God-willed spiritual human personality.

Man in the "image of God" means the ideal, or sort, or kind. In the "likeness of God" means the relation or order of spirituality essentially distinguishing him from brutes. Man is neither, as to his body, the precipitate of the spirit ; nor, as to his soul, the sublimate of matter. He is a combination of both in Divine origination as to the body, and by in-breathing as to the soul. The body, thus fashioned, is to receive at the resurrection a re-fashioning of glory ; and the soul, now possessing not only the life which God wrought in matter when He made the brute, but that life in union

of soul and spirit which was effected by Divine inspiration, receives yet higher blessing and energy through the incarnation of Christ; for the Son, the form of God in heaven, assumed the fashion of man on earth that He might fill the earthen vessel with heavenly treasure. Thus, also, the Word of God is a living voice of good tidings bringing immortality to light. First the natural body, then the spiritual body.

If we are called to explain the creation of man, so as to help an evolutionist in his endeavour to accept the Bible account, we suggest—From some form, possibly nearer to man than any now known, by exaltation and exquisite fashioning of inner relations in adjustment with enlarged and more complicate outer relations, man may have come forth as from sleep—a prodigy. There are existing illustrations. The crawling creature leaps forth a beautiful vision of sportfulness in the light. The leaps and surprises in animal life to higher forms are numerous. The intellectual power of a great man—the man of a million, as it contains a promise and potency of greatness for all; may be taken as a recurring symbol of that exaltation by which, after the dust had become flesh, the flesh attained capacity for spirit. In other words—“God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul.”

Materialists assert—“That which we call spirit disappears with the dissolution of the individual material combination.”<sup>1</sup> There is no proof of such positive statement, nor is proof possible. Matter is only known by mind; and while maintaining that the smallest particle of a grain of sand is utterly and for ever indestructible, we cannot think that our inner personal individuality, all that by which we understand the mechanism of worlds, is extinguished at death as by the extinction of a light. We do not know, probably never shall know, how matter is able to assume consciousness; how, then, are we to believe that materialists know there is nothing more in the universe than matter? If we accept the words of Locke as to all our ideas depending upon the senses—“*nihil est in intellectu quod non prius in sensu*”—we add the correction of Leibnitz—“*nisi intellectus ipse.*”

<sup>1</sup> “*Kraft und Stoff*,” p. 13: Dr. Büchner.

As to Providence, God, Creation, we are told—"What this or that man may understand by a governing Reason, a universal soul, a personal God, etc., is his own affair. The theologians, with their articles of faith, must be left to themselves."<sup>1</sup> So we are to give up every hope as to the future, cast to the winds all reverence for God, and believe—not that God created all things out of nothing, but that all things created or evolved themselves out of something very little better than nothing. A man may as well say—"There is nothing behind the door"—simply because he cannot see through the door; as deny the Divine act of causation, because he cannot detect the *occulta vis*—the Hidden Energy.

Accurate investigation of the Creative Words enables strong men to check naughty little ones, who count it a stroke of wit and genius to scoff at those things which greater minds worship. Progressive elucidation and research by scholarly process may be compared to that operation in nature which, little by little, rolls away the morning mist from a splendid landscape; as every successive word and statement is rescued from ignorance and misrepresentation, fuller meaning, richer beauty, ever-growing power of sacred verity, go forth as matter for deeper investigation and for solution of mysteries, which will exercise the intellect of future ages. The dogmatism descending to puppyism which places something infinitely less than a tadpole at one end of the series, and man at the other, and professes to know all about it, must be rebuked with calm and simple statement. One line of thought is sufficient. The Book, abused by Secularists as of barbaric origin, mightily rules the intellect, emotion, conscience, of the civilised world; and wherever intellect is enlightened by it, or morals are purified by it, or conscience is instructed by it, men live rightly for mutual welfare and the glory of God. Materialists, abusing the doctrine of Evolution, assert that an infinitesimal something, by imperceptible accretion and infinite variation, during immeasurable time, became worlds of life and beauty, apart from God, and without any ordering of Providence. Writers of the Bible, especially Moses,

<sup>1</sup> "Kraft und Stoff," p. 43: Dr. Büchner.

connect the natural with the supernatural, man with God, state that the universe was originated and is maintained by the Deity, and that by Divine inspiration they give an account of the creative process. The whole matter is capable of disproof, or it can be verified. An unscientific age could not possess the knowledge of our own scientific time, nor men styled "semi-barbarous" be adorned with the accuracy and genius of modern professors. The words written by one of these men have been studied in part, and will be further investigated. As yet, nothing has been found contrary to science; where science can effect research, there has been verification, and the recesses of nature contain counterparts of many spiritual truths. These truths are scattered over the surface of Scripture, or lie within the depths, much as the plants and gems of nature are arranged on and in the earth. No formal order, no system, can be found anywhere; but as grasses of many forms, flowers of every hue, trees of graceful foliage, contain wonderful unity in richest, wildest variety—so Bible truths and facts, whether scattered, or knit together in every part, plant deep roots in mysteries of love and wisdom.

In further applying accurate modern tests to the Inspired Record, which most of us love and regard as true without and beyond confirmation, bear in mind that authoritative statements about facts or phenomena can only be found perfectly to agree with science in its final results, and this agreement must in no wise be hastened. We say authoritative, because due exception has to be made for accounts which are popular, or figurative, or poetical, and not meant to assert physical law. Nor is this any weakness: the waters of the sea in one place look blue, in another green, the difference being due to depth or shallowness; so there are recesses in Holy Scripture which none but saints can enter, and there is power moving on the very surface able to mould the minds of Dante and Milton, Michael Angelo and Raphael, that they may enrich and adorn our race. Not only so, there is another beauty; the Word was spoken—not to anticipate discovery, not to render experimental and inductive processes of the human mind unnecessary to the attainment of knowledge, but to set

up an authoritative teaching where experiment and induction are inadequate to explain and establish the relations between God and man, and between man and his neighbour ; to erect true foundations of the body politic on an immutable, because Divine, morality ; to train the individual for his probation in time and for his future life in eternity.

If, after most careful analysis, the record of physical facts be found sometimes scientifically inaccurate, not the less will Holy Scripture contain the Word of God. A diamond is not the less a diamond because of the rudeness of its setting, and the truths of Holy Scripture are not less Divine, because the framework partakes of human imperfection. If every effort fail, even then, human fallibility cannot affirm, as infallible dogma, essential contrariety : the angle of parallax, by which to measure the lights of God, may have its base in an existence which is wider than human life.

## STUDY VII.

### INTERPRETATION OF THE DAYS.

"Cogitavi dies antiquos, et annos æternos in mente habui."—Ps. lxxvii. 5.

"Les jours de la création marquent la hiérarchie des êtres et des époques successives de leur apparition sur la face du monde ; mais l'action de Dieu ne se décompose pas en époques. Elle est une puisque elle est parfaite."—EMILE SAISSET.

WE have considered the days of creation, well knowing that simple truths are often deep.

What mean these days ? Are they an enumeration and a separation of actual days and nights before the earth and sun were so conditioned, each to each, that day was possible ? Or do they mean that there were births, growths, seeming pauses, in the progress of Divine work ? The latter opinion prevails with many thoughtful men. They take the outward appearance as a garment for the spiritual reality. The letter is the body, the spirit is the soul. The letter and the spirit are held together by the real meaning. Endeavour to attain that meaning, as to days, by considering—

#### THE FACTS ON WHICH MOST MEN ARE AGREED.

1. On scientific and Scriptural warrant they believe that the origin of the world is very ancient ; so ancient that the beginning, in which heaven and earth were created, is taken by St. John (i. 1) to prove the co-eternity of Christ with the Father. Placing, however, the beginning of things thus early (Gen. xlix. 26 ; Deut. xxxiii. 15 ; Job xv. 7, xxxviii. 4 ; Ps. xc. 2 ; Prov. viii. 22-31 ; John i. 1-3, xvii. 24) neither lessens the marvel nor destroys the fact of creation.

2. There is no more matter now than was originally created, nature not possessing the power, in itself, of originating matter ; but cosmic processes throughout the universe, and the "fact that God is daily and hourly creating those

myriads of human souls which He infuses into the bodies prepared by His providence,"<sup>1</sup> convince many that creation was not an instantaneous, but a continuous and progressive series of marvellous operations. It is true that of a *creatio continua*, in the special sense of creation, Scripture knows nothing; nevertheless, of creation as a continuous agency of God, and specially of the Divine maintenance of the world as a *creatio continua*, Scripture does know (Isai. xl. 28, xlii. 5); and if we regard the human spiritual nature as so planned that, associated with matter, it is able to propagate itself out of itself, this procreative process can only be explained by the co-operation of God's creative power,<sup>2</sup> and the continuous process is not less divine than the growth of a world in an hour.

3. Man has existed on the earth more than six thousand years. His remains and implements are found in places, and side by side with such relics of plants and animals, as leave little or no doubt of a high antiquity. The cave gravel and peat deposits, shell mounds and lake-dwellings, though not as yet giving any reliable data for estimating the precise age, may be fairly taken as proof that man contended with the mammoth. The genealogies of Christ, commonly and erroneously taken to show the age of man, indicate the line and families of Messianic descent; not always by actual procreation, but occasionally by adoption, or other succession. Hilary says—"There are four genealogies of Christ in the four Gospels: 1st, in St. Matthew, from Abraham; 2nd, in St. Mark, from God the Holy Ghost; 3rd, in St. Luke, from Adam; 4th, in St. John, from Eternity." These show, not the age of the world, but that Jesus is the seed of the woman, the second Adam, the father of a new and spiritual race.

4. The world has been and is continually though slowly changing; new animals and plants arising with varied modifications, or becoming extinct, by the slow successive determinate action of local causes, of which the chief is the gradual lowering or raising of temperature. Our own country has sunk many times beneath the sea, and again been raised.

<sup>1</sup> "Daniel the Prophet," Intr., p. xxii. : Dr. Pusey.

<sup>2</sup> "Biblical Psychology," pp. 133-142 : Prof. Delitsch.

Iceland, a thousand years ago, according to Icelandic histories, was covered with forests of birch and fir; and at that time Greenland was fertile in the south.

Men generally agreeing as to the four classes of facts which we have enumerated; 1st, the antiquity of the earth; 2nd, its progressive formation; 3rd, earlier occupation by mankind than is given by the common date; 4th, the orderly continuous and progressive operation of nature; are met by assertions of this kind—"It is not likely that God should have inspired Moses to write a history of creation to be believed by all people, in language the meaning of which it were hard to find, and yet harder to believe."<sup>1</sup> Timid souls, rendered more timid by the reckless unbelief of godless men, cling almost superstitiously to the old ways of explanation, and say—"There is indeed a measure of difficulty, and a kind of unnaturalness, in giving a different sense to the words than that which has been generally accepted; and which, unless required by science, no one would think of giving." Students of science, provoked by this obstructiveness of ignorance and of fear, reply with some scorn—"We know, even as a matter of common sense, that God did not make the world in six days, and no man of science believes that He did. Cannot you divines, while contenting our emotions, satisfy also our intelligence?"

They have been answered by an explanation of the manner in which it is conceived the world was created in six days—That heaven and earth were created in the beginning, and that the six days' work was the restoration rather than the creation of the earth. In that beginning, angels were made, and in some way or other connected with the earth; animals and plants, in great variety and beauty, lived, passed away, and were succeeded by others. It was a golden age: no sin, no sorrow, everything good and very beautiful. In process of time, some of the angels sinned, and their evil courses cast the earth into chaotic confusion. Then, Divine power reformed the world, as we now see it, with man as chief; who, after due probation, is to occupy those places in heaven from which the evil angels fell. In commemoration of the work, and as a

<sup>1</sup> Suarez: "*Tractatus De Opere Sex Dierum*," lib. I. cap. xi. 42.

measure of the days, Holy Sabbath was instituted. In that primitive period are to be found all those crises and periods required by geologists, and to those ancient ages must be attributed the fossils and animals of astonishing form, preserved in the rocky pages of the earth as a revelation of the mysteries of former existence.

This statement about angels, happy eras, chaotic relapse, does not content thoughtful men who require a substratum of fact on which intelligence may faithfully erect a house of piety. They reply—"There is no great break of continuity, or universal chasm, separating the former good time from the later evil time; go back far as we may, dig deep as we can, death reigned in the world even as now; the stony leaves of ancient history bear no record of angelic life, the legend is alway of the destroyer and of the destroyed. On these leaves are impressed and printed likenesses and relics of vegetable, fish, reptile, bird, mammal, and human organisms. Life following life, with hundreds and thousands of feet of slowly deposited rock intervening; but no record of peace, no foot-prints of angel anywhere. There are different ages of life, various stages of growth, some are young, others old. Their history states that they devoured their fellows and propagated their kind. Worn teeth and aged structure prove a long duration of individual existence, and many relics are token of continuance as to species. Would you have us believe that within six days the firmament was spread out, land raised from the sea, and dried; that trees grew up bearing on their bark, and in the rings of their structure, record of centuries; that river channels were worn and excavated through thousands of feet of solid rock, leaving in the different stages of depth countless generations of creatures which grew, performed all the natural functions, and at length died of full age? Are all these marks of progress and tokens of age mere freaks of construction? did vegetables grow up instantaneously for full-grown animals to feed on; and fruit, already ripe on the trees, delight the sight and taste of man; and, in the latter end of the sixth day, was Eden planted, were beasts named, did Adam sleep, was Eve formed? Are we as geologists, naturalists, farmers, men of general observa-

tion, to credit all this? That old world, moreover, was not an existence wholly good: it is hard to conceive that the monster forms were suitable companions for holy, happy angels, or that the bone-breaking and fierce devouring by these creatures belonged to a pure and peaceful existence. Nor was it separated from the present world by utterly destructive catastrophes: it contained all those plants, animals, men, whose remains, strangely revealed to us, are brought from one common grave. Extinct species are so mingled with those now in existence that the two worlds overlap each other, indeed are not two worlds, but one; there is no trace of any chasm, deep and wide, engulfing that first or former creation in utter destruction; no universal break found in which the old world passed away and the new began."

These statements, of honest and wise opponents, are very strong proofs that the Day theory is inadequate, unscriptural, unscientific. Some further consideration may lead such as hold the theory gladly to abandon it for one that contents piety and satisfies intelligence: one that unites the view of the prophets with the requirements of modern science:

"That mind and soul, according well,  
May make one music as before."

*In Memoriam.*

In an apparent vision, or narrative, or dream, or by whatever means we possess the memorial of creation—whether as picture for the seer to look on, or as history for the prophet to write—it is certain that the whole representation, if Divine, would in its very nature transcend physical science. It must be borne in mind that the Hebrew language has no scientific terms; so that, whether dealing with science or prophecy, symbols must be used. It also seems natural that the word "Day" should be used: a word which includes the work of man for containing and describing the work of God, and for a symbolical measure of time. Fitness and simplicity, moreover, would take evenings and mornings for divisions and changes; darkness and light for pauses and operations in the sublime scene. Nor is that all—as past, present, future, are distinctions for man's use only, and can have no real meaning in reference to Deity, they are often ignored in Holy Scripture.

The prophet not unfrequently speaks of the future as actually present, apparently, perhaps really, unconscious that centuries have passed away, or will pass away before the prediction can be fulfilled (Isai. ix. 13; Jer. xlix. 28-30; Isai. xxxiv. 5, x. 34, xi. 1).

The prophets did not always understand their own writings (Dan. xii. 4; Ephes. iii. 5; 2 Pet. i. 19-21). In many holy reflections, Divine realities are clad in garments of imagery (Ps. xix. 1-6). The Tabernacle was a figure of good things to come (Heb. ix. 8, 9). The sacrifice of Isaac had a deeper meaning than Abraham knew (Heb. xi. 17-19). The child promised to Ahaz (Isai. vii. 14); the man of sorrow, in whose hand the pleasure of the Lord was to prosper; and who, though dying, was to prolong his days (Isai. liii. 10); are examples and proofs that the Word of God is high and deep, full of mystery to feed the curiosity, exercise the powers, encourage the hope, augment the wisdom of men and angels. They may help us to understand the true meaning of the language in which the Mosaic account of the creation was revealed.

Further—there is a correspondence traceable between the first three and second three of the days in which God created the heaven and the earth. The first, second, and third days answer, severally, to the fourth, fifth, and sixth days. On the first—there is light, on the fourth—light-bearers; on the second—the waters are separated and the firmament is constituted, on the fifth—the waters and firmament are occupied by fishes and birds; on the third—dry land appears, on the sixth—it is replenished. The work and the days are a parable.

A comparison of one part of Scripture with another also suggests that the idea of completeness and perfection is presented by use of the number seven in the Mosaic record. The seventh day, or Sabbath, is the key-note in every Hebrew observance; the factor in all sacred times and things; ruling days, months, years, jubilees. It is part of the civil and of the ecclesiastic law. It concerns master and servant, the home-born and stranger, the harvest and the beast of the field. There are seven spirits, seven stars, seven angels, seven

churches, seven seals, seven trumpets, seven vials. It is the representative symbolic number, the subject for precept, the rule and measure of observances, possessing internal properties and external associations. Internal—as the symbol of Divine and human labour and rest. External—as to periods and numbers, impressing times and seasons with a seal of sanctity. The seventh month ushered in the Feast of Trumpets. Seven weeks were the interval between Pass-over and Pentecost. The seventh year was sabbatical. Seven days were the measure of feasts, of the time occupied by priestly consecration, and removal of legal uncleanness. The sprinkling of purification was seven—whether with water or blood. The arms of the golden candlestick were seven; the chief vessels of the Tabernacle were seven; and there are sacred sevens for forgiveness, for perfection, for interpretation of prophecy. Through God's creation, sevens express the arrangements of nature, the laws of labour, the sanctification and division of time, and form part of God's commandments (Gen. ii. 3; Ex. xx. 9-11, xxxi. 12-17). It may then be inferred that the Scriptural account of creation was intended to be regarded as pictorial, symbolical, mystical. The wise son of Sirach said—"All things are double, one against another."

Consider the various uses of the word "day."

Fuerst observes, in his *Lexicon*, that Day only exists in derivative senses, and is used to signify a period. Eating the forbidden fruit, and the consequent liability to death, are called one day—the day of death (Gen. ii. 17). Day of the Lord is a period of mercy, or a time for the acting of God-power. Day of vengeance is time of punishment. Day of judgment is the crisis of doom. Day of rest is a figure of repose after the creative act, and a symbol of the great duration of our own rest in heaven (Heb. iv. 9). Origen says "a whole age is a day."<sup>1</sup> Day is time of life, one who has a hard time, heavy time, לְקִשָּׁה יוֹם (Job xxx. 25). Day is time of light, לְאוֹר יוֹם, in the sense of light being day (Gen. i. 5). Day is present time (Ps. ii. 7); "This day," now, "have I begotten thee," הַיּוֹם יָלַדְתִּיךָ. Day is before now, לְקִדְמוֹת יוֹם (Isai. xlviii. 7).

<sup>1</sup> "De Oratione," p. 249.

No man is able to determine the duration of the first three days, the sun not being conditioned, light and darkness depending upon circumstances with which we are unacquainted; and what about day in the Arctic regions, where there is a six months' night? That the now ordinary time was not meant, seems clearly indicated by all the days being called one—"the day that the Lord God made the earth and the heavens" (Gen. ii. 4). To insist upon twenty-four hours as the limit, now that we have exacter knowledge, both of Scripture and Science, is to make knowledge useless. The light was day, the darkness was night. In contrast with this, evening and morning are used to designate the creative period; and on the seventh day, as if to show that the Sabbath day is not yet ended, neither evening nor morning is mentioned. Evening and morning, speaking exactly, do not include a day, are only parts of it; do not mean darkness and light, but the creative period—the period of strong and beautiful world-building process: "it was evening and it was morning, day one."

The extent of duration must be fixed according to the nature of the realities signified. Take a few examples—"Thou art to pass over Jordan this day," the day meant a time not ending till after the death of the speaker (Deut. ix. 1). The "day of temptation" (Ps. xcv. 8) was a period of forty years. In Josh. iv. 6, "the time to come" is literally "tomorrow." In Ps. xc. the words, "A thousand years in Thy sight are but as yesterday when it is past, and as a watch in the night," seem to show that if Moses wished to indicate long age-periods, he would use the word "day." We conclude that "the days are representative terms, on the same scale as work and rest. . . . All alike denote Divine realities answering to human ones in precisely the same manner. Truly as God's work is similar to our work, His rest to our rest, so are His days to our days."<sup>1</sup> When, in the cosmogony, we read of six days, we have no more right to suppose that in six periods, every one of twenty-four hours' duration, God made all things; than we have to suppose that He literally gave Hebrew names to things, and rested; we are to understand

<sup>1</sup> "The Week of Creation:" Geo. Warrington.

that He created all things in such periods of time as might to man's finite mind be most fitly represented by six days.<sup>1</sup>

Two difficulties now meet us—

1. If the days mean vast periods, a great space should be occupied by plants only, then by plants and fish, after that by plants, fish, other animals, in layers answering to the time of their creation; but no such separateness exists—the organisms overlap both in place and time.

2. If day means age, the ages would, according to the figure used, be separated by long intervals of darkness destructive to life.

Solution 1.—The creative process of plants and animals was by orderly advance to the higher organisms; and is rightly represented, as it would appear to man, in succession. There was a time when no life existed, then came the rudimentary plants, then moving creatures of the water, after that land animals. The preparation for and initiation of all life was, doubtless, by somewhat similar and, to a certain extent, simultaneous operation. Life, in the sea, did not wait until vegetation had done a perfect work; nor had the sea become full before the land began to be inhabited. There were no grand tenantless forests on the shores of vast dead seas; wherever nutritious plants grew, there animals existed. This fact explains and justifies the Scriptural use of the word "day;" in one sense, the almost simultaneous origination of initial creative processes is represented; and, in another sense, the vast ages of orderly progressive evolution are comprehended.

Solution 2.—Light and darkness seem purposely excluded, as if to guard us against thinking that a literal day was meant. Evening and morning appear to be chosen because they do not mean day and night. After the fifth verse neither light nor darkness is mentioned. Light is called "day," not as meaning twenty-four hours, but that brightness which was produced by operation of the Holy Ghost; and the darkness is called "night," to denote that chaos out of which light was brought. Any one of sufficient attention may observe that, in the fifth and in the eighteenth verses of the first chapter of

<sup>1</sup> "The Week of Creation:" Geo. Warrington.

Genesis, "day" and "night" are spoken of separately, and in contrast with the "evening" and "morning" in verses 5, 8, 13, 19, 23, 31. In fact, as in Dan. viii. 26, "the vision of the evening and the morning which was told is true; for it shall be for many days."

The real difficulty arises out of the Fourth Commandment—"Remember the Sabbath day, to keep it holy. Six days shalt thou labour, and do all thy work. But the seventh day is the Sabbath of the Lord thy God: in it thou shalt not do any work, thou, nor thy son, nor thy daughter, nor thy manservant, nor thy maidservant, nor thy cattle, nor the stranger that is within thy gates: for in six days the Lord made heaven and earth, the sea, and all that in them is, and rested the seventh day: wherefore the Lord blessed the Sabbath day, and hallowed it" (Ex. xx. 8-11). "In reading through the eleventh verse it is extremely difficult to believe that the seventh day is a long period, and the Sabbath day an ordinary day; that is, that the same word 'day' should be used in such totally different senses in the same short sentence, and without explanation."<sup>1</sup>

This difficulty, fairly met, establishes the verity of the symbolism. The word "day" is not used in two different senses. As the day of toil to man, so is the day of rest; and as the day of work to God, so is the day of repose. The true difficulty is—creation is continuous, no break exists anywhere, processes now in operation perpetuate the primeval operation. "Deus operatur semper, et quietus est." God's life is all Sabbath and no Sabbath. The Mosaic account implies a cessation and change in world-development, there not having been any such change; consequently, Gen. ii. 2, 3, is only *ἀνθρωπινὸς λόγος*, adapted to early unphilosophical conceptions. Human labour in producing, is a symbol of the Divine act in creating; man's repose is a figure of Godly rest. How long did it take God to create the world? Not so long in the Divine lifetime as a week is in man's lifetime. Grand as is the universe, vast as are its operations, many and various the inhabitants, the whole must be regarded by man as not so great a task to God as a week's work to himself. The days

<sup>1</sup> "Essays and Reviews," Mosaic Cosmogony: C. W. Goodwin, M.A.

are all the same, and are all symbolical. Suppose that Moses meant—For six successive Divine days, in which moments are years, God's hand worked ; on the seventh Divine day, not yet concluded (Heb. iv. 3-9), He began to rest. Let all holy men, as made in God's image, observe God's rule. Would not such a meaning add greatly to the force of the Divine command ? In it is a moral measure for all time, and the key-note of providential arrangements. In it is a peculiar majesty, specially suited to the grandeur of creation revealed by the growth of science ; and the withholding of a true interpretation until now, affords proof of original inspiration. The sanctity and safety of the Sabbath are not shaken, but assured ; built on truthful, not erroneous interpretation. We may not presumptuously take any day we please as a seventh of our time ; the day was fixed, first, by Divine command ; and, now, is settled by Scriptural example and Christian use. Our days, our weeks, our Sabbaths, our work, our rest, are appointed, made holy, linked to God. We liken them to a ladder, set upon the earth, by which we climb to heaven. They are as a pathway across the territory of time ; one end vanishes in the past to possess the antiquities of God, the other is lost in the great world-times of the future. The sacred week has not yet been measured by science—as to its duration, nor comprehended—as to its work ; on the use we make of our own day in it depends our weal or woe in future life. We men shall rise on stepping-stones of our dead selves to higher things ;

“ Or reach a hand through time to catch  
The far-off interest of sins.”

Our conclusion, as to the days' vast extent, receives support from two works lately published on chronology.<sup>1</sup> The writer shows that the Babylonians were acquainted with a solar period of 1460 years, and with a lunar period of 1805 years. The latter having been discovered by observation, not by calculation, some idea may be formed of the immense antiquity of Babylonian astronomy—already, even in the second

<sup>1</sup> “ Die Daten der Genesis : ” Jules Oppert.—(From the “ Nachrichten von der k. Gesellschaft der Wissenschaften zu Göttingen,” No 10, 1877.) “ Salomon et ses Successeurs : ” Jules Oppert. Paris, Maissonneuve & Cie. 1877.

millennium before the Christian era, familiar with those periods. The author states that the chronology, as found in the first eleven chapters of Genesis, is "original and unfalsified;" and agrees with the chronology of the corresponding periods of Chaldean tradition. As to the time occupied by creation, where the Bible reckons one hour, the Chaldeans computed 10,000 years. The seven days, or 168 hours of the Bible, are the 168 myriads of years of the Chaldean historian, Berosus. In the antediluvian period, a Bible-week answers to five years, or a "Doss" of months in the Chaldean chronology: the proportion being as 23 to 6000, and 23 years including 1200 weeks. As the divisor 23 occurs three times in the chronology of the antediluvian patriarchs, so the divisor 6000 occurs three times in that of the Chaldean antediluvian kings. Whether or not further investigation will confirm the antiquity asserted by Jules Oppert remains to be seen. Our own argument has been worked out independently.

We are asked—"Why the larger interpretation, supposing it to be correct, was not earlier and forcibly given?" We reply—The true interpretation may have been lost, as the Chaldean History was lost; or, we may say—It would have been useless, men could not have understood it. Men, studying Nature all these thousands of years, have not attained to a full knowledge of it; no wonder that they are imperfect in interpretation of Scripture. Philosophy has been many ages in progress, yet how little is that progress! We may be sure that a faultless interpretation of Scripture will not be inconsistent with a perfect knowledge of Nature. The sacred language is not only for the mass of mankind—incapable of reasoning, but for those who are able to give a reason for the hope that is in them, men like Newton and Pascal, Butler and Paley, competent in the domain of scholarship. God's Word abides in the same letter, while reason and science change their language, but it expands within its own limits for verification of the Divine origin, for contentment of our emotional and intellectual requirements. No addition can be made by human ingenuity to the amount of revealed information; spiritual and material substance are alike of God, and cannot be added to; but—as we obtain deeper, wider, more

accurate knowledge, the Word of God and the Work of God are found to grow with our growth and to be in perfect accord. The Bible will never be left amongst the childish things which men put away; the vitality, elasticity, comprehensiveness of meaning, answer all the requirements of life and knowledge; fresh truths are discovered, hidden depths are continually revealed (Ephes. i. 9, 10; Heb. xii. 27, 28; 1 Pet. i. 25).

Changes, rightly made, vindicate, rather than impugn, the fact of Divine inspiration; and out of the nettle, danger—wrong interpretation, pluck the flower, safety—true meaning. To abide by the letter, yet find a larger meaning in it; to hold a natural fact, and see a spiritual reality; to discover that man's day is a microscopic miniature of God's day; is gain not loss. "Scripture cannot be broken." Men may obtain imperfect views; from various stand-points take opposite aspects; and truth, being progressive, the knowledge of past and present generations is necessarily incomplete; but this establishes our position: the Book is a mystery, the origin is Divine, the diction is by Inspiration, the substance is of God. Men have been fearful, not fully knowing its depths. A half-civilised world explains it, the interpretation is erroneous, and the Mephistopheles of science rejoice. The unbeliever does not discern in it a mighty spiritual meaning. What of that? The circle of knowledge is extended, physical nature is proved to be God Almighty's material garment, and the unbeliever becomes faithful. Then, though the words remain the same, the fashion of their countenance is altered; and that which was suitable for the world's childhood, becomes a fit companion and consolation for our manhood. Milton—strong like a seraph; beside him—Shakespeare, careworn Dante—his song rising and descending with interchange of gift, large-browed Verulam; these—amongst the greatest of those who know and do, these—now silent faces of the great and wise, bent in lowly reverential homage to the precepts of the ancient Sacred Book.

Theology, shouldered and jostled by the sturdy growths of modern thought, is becoming sturdier; conquering rude malicious opponents, fascinating the intellectual. Theologians

have been too patristic, too sectarian, and have not yet done with their schools; doubtless, the freer Theology of the future, if we are faithful, will move as by the Spirit of God on the face of the waters. Meanwhile, Theology bids us follow Nature with unfaltering steps, and to study God's great works and processes for which no measurement nor computation can be found. There were days without sun, a formless abyss, light coming forth from darkness, sky clearing, firmament expanding, hills emerging, waters gathering, life quickening.

"Oh! I know the hand that is guiding me,  
Through the shadow to the light;  
And I know that all betiding me  
Is meted out aright.  
I know that the thorny path I tread  
Is ruled with a golden line;  
And I know that the darker life's tangled thread,  
The brighter the rich design."

*Anon.*

Not unconscious of the argument against our earth's antiquity, drawn from the genealogies of Christ, a few reasons are appended to show that they do not historically fix the age of the world.

These genealogies prove that the computation of time was attended to in early periods; but the variations show that chronology was always subordinate to the greater work of marking the line or family in which our Lord's birth was to be realised. Not even on this account were all the names preserved: it was the practice of the Hebrews to omit names from their genealogies for moral and judicial reasons;<sup>1</sup> and in the times from the patriarchs down to Moses, or even to David, one name sometimes stands for a whole century in the genealogical series. The sojourn in Egypt of four hundred and thirty years has only the names of Levi, Kohath, Amram, Aaron, Eleazar, to correspond to it; and five of the tribe of Judah—Pharez, Hezron, Ram, Amminadab, Nahshon. It was also the custom to repeat ancestral names generation after generation: the Pharaohs, Benhadads, Abimelechs of Gerar, show this. Definite round numbers were likewise

<sup>1</sup> "The New Testament," Luke iii. 31-38: Bishop Wordsworth.

chosen ; for example, from the patriarchs to David are ten generations (Ruth iv. 18-22) ; but we learn from other sources (1 Chron. vi. 1) that twenty-two generations existed between Levi and David. Ten generations fill up the interval from Noah's sons to Abram's father ; and further back, from Adam to Noah (Gen. xi. 10-26, and v.). Sometimes—the Hebrew having no terms for "grandfather" and "grandson"—grandsons and great-grandsons are counted sons (Matt. i. 8). Ozias (Uzziah) was three generations from Joram ; Salathiel, son of Jechonias (Matt. i. 12), was really son of Neri (Luke iii. 27) ; Zerubbabel is called son of Salathiel (Matt. i. 12) ; but we are told (1 Chron. iii. 17) of a different son : Salathiel being Jechoniah's grandson. A founder's paternity extends, in fact, over all who derive their origin from him (Gen. xxxi. 28-43 ; 1 Chron. ii. 50, 51).

Both the genealogies, by St. Matthew and St. Luke, are probably not only of Joseph, but also of Mary ;<sup>1</sup> and if the Matthan of St. Matthew is the same as the Matthat of St. Luke, Jacob and Heli were own brothers. St. Matthew reduces the seventeen generations, from David to the carrying away into Babylon, to fourteen : leaving out Ahaziah, Joash, and Amaziah, between Joram and Ozias ; and in order to make up the fourteen, from the Captivity till Christ, Jechoniah has to be twice counted. In the genealogy of St. Luke, from Adam to Abraham, Cainan is inserted between Sala and Arphaxad, in accordance with the LXX. version. The Hebrew makes Arphaxad to be aged thirty-five years at the birth of Salah ; but the LXX. states that Arphaxad was one hundred and thirty-five when he begat Cainan, and Cainan was one hundred and thirty when he begat Salah, and adds one hundred years to the ages of every one of these—Salah, Eber, Peleg, Reu, Serug, and one hundred and fifty to Nahor. Indeed, the LXX. adds one thousand four hundred and sixty-six years to the pre-Abrahamic period. Shem is put first of the sons of Noah, but was probably the youngest, and Japheth the eldest (Gen. x. 21 ; 1 Chron. xxvi. 10). St. Paul says there were four hundred and fifty years of lifetime for the judges, but only four generations are named—Salmon, Boaz,

<sup>1</sup> "Genealogies of our Lord," pp. 57-66 : Lord Arthur Hervey.

Obed, Jesse ; yet for a similar period, from David to the manhood of Jehoichin, were nineteen or twenty-one generations (2 Kings xxiv. 8-16). "No interpreter of Scripture, from the earliest times down to the present day, has ever been able to identify the ancestors of Christ, mentioned by St. Matthew or St. Luke, with any of the descendants of Zerubbabel, or other members of the house of David, whose names are recorded in the Old Testament."<sup>1</sup>

From B.C. 536 to B.C. 457, is only seventy-nine years ; yet six generations are named (1 Chron. iii. 17-24). In our copies of St. Luke, there are seventy-six generations from Adam to Christ ; but Irenæus speaks of seventy-two, Augustine made seventy-seven—a mystical number from which he extracted wonders. It is also significant that in the whole time from the entrance to Canaan till the birth of Samuel, a space of four hundred years, only three high priests are named : Eleazar, Phinehas, Eli.

These examples, which can be multiplied, suffice to show that names are used to bring us into contact with regions and epochs : not as accurate measures of time, but as links to unite the old and ever-young humanity with God by means of Jesus Christ. Names, placed in symmetrical series ; and numbers three, seven, ten, forty, reduced, or increased, or multiplied ; are chosen with symbolical meaning. Indeed, at first there was no permanent chronological era even in common life. Facts were handed down, by memory and tradition, from father to son. As for Scripture, the words of every account extend to some great man—to the patriarchs, to Noah, to Adam, thence to God. There are no ways of historically filling these gaps. Names actually and literally true, as applied to individuals, are also applied symbolically and collectively to the families, tribes, nations, by whom the earth was replenished. We arrive at the conclusion that chronology, in an exact and scientific sense, lies altogether outside of Revelation ; only exists in Holy Scripture for genealogical, not scientific purposes : charges of errors as to chronology are not to be regarded, are beside the scope of Scripture, do not affect those divine and spiritual truths which it is the object of Revelation to teach.

<sup>1</sup> "Genealogies of Our Lord," p. 94 : Lord Arthur Hervey.

## STUDY VIII.

### DAY I.—LIGHT.

“Truth is the Body of God, and Light is His Shadow.”—PLATO.

“Sicut lux si ipsum et tenebras manifestat, sic veritas norma sui et falsa est.”—  
SPINOZA.

STELLAR Worlds existed before the earth. The poetry of Job (xxxviii. 7) is beautiful and true: when the foundations of the earth were laid, “the morning stars sang together, and all the sons of God shouted for joy.” We adopt the words of St. Jerome—“What eternities, what times, what originals of ages, must we not think there were before; in which angels, thrones, dominions, and the other powers served God; and existed apart from the changes and measures of times?”

Light is a wave-like movement, a peculiar shivering motion of the ultimate particles of bodies. The all-pervading æther takes up these molecular tremors, and conveys them with inconceivable swiftness to our organs of vision. This transported shiver of bodies, millions of miles distant, which awakes the splendour of day, and shines in the firmament at night, is, when translated into human consciousness, light. When we detect by a thermometer, or by the sensation, that from which, as Locke says, we denominate the object “hot,” that is heat; and when we become aware of it by the eye, it is called “light.”

There is no body in nature absolutely cold, and every body not absolutely cold emits rays of heat. To render radiant heat visible, it must be raised to a certain temperature, when it emits a feeble red light; as heat grows, light augments in brilliancy, until, finally, it is dazzling white. “The difference between radiant heat and light is simply the difference between a low note and a high one.”<sup>1</sup> If we conceive the

<sup>1</sup> “Recent Advances in Physical Science:” Prof. P. G. Tait.



brightness would increase—the energy of heat would be transformed more or less into that of light. If the whole mass of the earth was agglomerated almost at once, and if the different parts impinged together with properly arranged velocities, we can note the state of things before and after that moment. Before—were scattered masses of matter. Then—at the instant of impact, the integrated mass became of high temperature, and light shone. Before that moment was darkness, after it was light. We cannot imagine that Moses, though learned in the wisdom of the Egyptians, knew this; or knew that the elementary atoms have their own shapes and powers, whereby they arrange themselves into molecules of exceeding complication and varying vibration; or could be aware that 458,000,000,000,000 vibrations in a second are necessary, in order to give us the consciousness of the lowest or red light; and we wonder that, in relating the primal illumination of the earth, he tells us first of the light, and after that of the luminous body—the sun.

That which caused the integration of the earth, and of the sun, and the production of light and heat, was energy. Energy may be defined as the power of doing work. There is always a tendency, in every transformation of energy, to pass from a higher to a lower form; indeed, all the energy in the universe is passing on to the lowest and final form of equally diffused heat. This, the dissipation of energy, is by no means well understood. There can be little question that the principle concerns the whole theory of thermo-electricity, of chemical combination, of allotropy, of fluorescence, etc., and perhaps matters of a higher order than common physics and chemistry. In astronomy, it shows us the material of potential suns, suns in the process of formation, in vigorous youth, in the phase of habitation for life, and in every stage of lingering decay. It reveals to us every planet and satellite as formerly a tiny sun. It carries forward our thought to that time when the materials of present systems shall be component parts of future larger suns and planets. Finally, it conducts us to that necessary future, if physical laws remain unchanged, when the present warm glittering show of life will be dark and cold and dead. It also reminds us of a beginning, a state beyond which we are totally

unable to penetrate, a state produced by other than now visibly acting causes, by that transfer of energy from the Unknown, of which the universe and all material phenomena are memorials.

The elementary atoms, possessing their own shapes and powers, arrange themselves into molecules of manifold combination, and exceeding variety of vibrations. When raised to incandescence, or white heat, and their lights are tested by spectrum analysis, the glowing vapours indicate, by lines, the different elements which are present: thus we learn of what materials the sun and stars are composed.

Heat and light are the product of a transfer of energy. Transfer of energy, through a solid body, is effected simply by vibration of the solid body; through air, by setting it in motion at its own period of vibration; through what we call a vacuum, by the magnetic medium—that which Clerk Maxwell gives reason to believe is the medium which conveys light and radiant heat. Vibrations in the atmosphere, occurring less frequently than sixteen times in a second, produce in us consciousness of a succession of noises. Vibrations occurring oftener than 16, but less than 30,000 times in a second, produce in us the consciousness of musical notes, varying in pitch with the vibrations. Vibrations in the æther, occurring oftener than 30,000, but less than 458,000,000,000,000 times in a second, do not affect us through the ears; but the more rapid ones, acting through the nerves of the skin, produce in us the consciousness of heat. Vibrations at the rate of 458,000,000,000,000 in a second, affect us through the eyes, and produce our consciousness of red light. As the vibrations increase, corresponding shades of colour appear, until, at the rate of 727,000,000,000,000 in a second, we have the consciousness of violet light. Higher rates produce the invisible actinic rays, which excite no definite state of consciousness in us. Thus, by one and the same external agency—vibrations among particles of matter—are sensations caused—different, as sound, heat, light, actinism.

In sound-waves, the particles of air vibrate back and forward in the direction travelled by the sound. If, by another

sound, we raise such undulations as fill the depressions in the waves of the former sound, this adding of sound to sound will cause silence. Light and heat travel through æther at the rate of about 186,000 miles a second, the direction of the vibrations being across the path in which they move. Two sets of rays may be made so to interfere with one another, as to be mutually destructive: the two rays of light produce darkness, and the two rays of heat cause heat to disappear.<sup>1</sup>

Passing a slice of solar or of electric light through a prism, we unroll it into the beautiful colours of the spectrum. At one end is the red, at the other the violet, the remaining prismatic colours lying between. Red is hottest of the colours, and beyond it are the invisible rays called heat rays. Violet is the coldest, and beyond it are the invisible actinic or chemical rays. In the three—heat, light, actinism, resides the miraculous generative energy which fills the earth with warmth, life, splendour. Concerning their nature, whether we call it vibration, or heat, or light, or actinism, we affirm nothing, and know nothing. Aristotle, one of the most thoughtful men, would say—the energy streamed from God, the Infinite and Eternal Mind, as light issues from the sun—whereby the blood heats, and the blossom blows, and the sea rolls, and all the world is warmed.

To a certain extent, we can give a mechanical explanation of heat and light as the products presented to our consciousness of a perpetual trembling, or swaying to and fro, of the invisible atoms which visible bodies consist of; but, when the explanation is connected with the linked purpose of the whole, we are conscious of wisdom and might exceeding all our thought. Light, wonderful and mysterious, is but a single point in the vast scheme of Nature. When we contemplate the heavens some clear autumnal evening, and marvel at the beauty of Sirius, that starry splendour is brought to us by medium of atomic shivers maintained, during the past twenty-two years, at the average rate of six hundred millions of millions of vibrations the second; and reveals a scheme of worlds and possible sphere of life, vaster than our own. Nor is that all: several optical phenomena indicate that a dis-

<sup>1</sup> "Recent Advances in Physical Science," p. 205: Prof. P. G. Tait.

turbance partaking, if such be possible, of the nature of compression would be transmitted with a velocity almost infinitely great in comparison with the existing velocity. We may ascend by this thought to the possible nature of the means by which intelligence is conveyed to other beings of the things that are done in our world.

The medium actually used, æther, is specially fitted for the transmission of the waves which constitute light. These waves are so small, that from forty to fifty thousand are required to occupy the breadth of an inch, and trillions enter the eye during a few seconds. The red wave has a length the  $\frac{1}{10,000,000}$ th part of an inch. In one second 458 millions of millions of vibrations occur. At the line H, in the violet, the length of the wave is the  $\frac{1}{10,000,000}$ th part of an inch; and the number of vibrations is 727 millions of millions the second.<sup>1</sup> The optic nerve is not conscious of the heat in the hot rays, nor of waves larger than the red, nor of those smaller than the violet. The eye is only able to see different proportions of the three primaries—red, green, violet; therefore, our sight may be fairly considered as rudimentary. "Take the number of fibres in the optic nerves as two hundred and fifty thousand. Every one of these is capable of innumerable different degrees of sensation of one, two, or three primary colours."<sup>2</sup> What a manifold undeveloped system of signs and images we have within us! We cannot but think that their wonderful potentialities are prophecy of a coming richness and fulness.

In all creatures the eye is a wonderful instrument; but, probably, the eyes of insects excite highest admiration. On the heads of beetles, bees, flies, butterflies, and other insects, are two protuberances; these, examined by the microscope, are found to contain a prodigious number of small transparent hemispheres, placed with the utmost regularity in lines crossing one another as lattice-work. These hemispheres are eyes which, like so many mirrors, reflect the images of surrounding objects. Some insects possess thousands: so abundant is the supply of light and gladness even to smallest creatures. A

<sup>1</sup> "Spectrum Analysis," p. 11: Henry E. Roscoe.

<sup>2</sup> "The Perception of Sight:" Prof. Helmholtz.

manifold infinite adaptation of means is unfolded for our contemplation.

We know what a language of twenty-six letters does in collecting, preserving, enabling us to verify the experiences of millions of men in thousands of generations. All this seems nothing in comparison with light, which brings revelations from star-depths, and which even our present optic nerves when all developed into use, may translate into human consciousness, forming distinct physical images of operations wrought by ministers of flame, or by guardian spirits, or by cherubim and seraphim. We may be able to see waves of radiance, at the rate of six hundred millions of millions the second, impart their motor energy to the atoms which vibrate in unison in the molecules of growing grass and flower; and behold how these are arranged by tremendous chemical energy into their substance and tissues; so that grass and flower, adorning the earth; bird, beast, man, filling the world with life; are metamorphosed beams of light. Who is he that will not worship the invisible God, and say?—

"Well hast Thou taught the way that might direct  
Our knowledge, and the scale of nature set  
From centre to circumference; whereon,  
In contemplation of created things,  
By steps we may ascend to Thee."

*Paradise Lost.*

Every kind of light is not equally suited for vegetation. Lamp-light, gas, petroleum-light, are poor in chemical rays. The white Bengal light of arsenic, the flames of the blue Bengal light, and of burning sulphur, produce a more powerful chemical effect; but, in photographic power, are surpassed by lime, magnesium, electric lights; the most important light, in every respect, is sunlight.

The pure earths, when violently heated, yield from their surfaces lights of extraordinary splendour. "We have pretty good reason to believe, that probably all the planets emit light in some degree; for the illumination which remains in the moon in a total eclipse cannot be ascribed entirely to the light which may reach it by the refraction of the earth's atmosphere."<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> "The Sun:" R. A. Proctor, quoted from Sir Wm. Herschell.

Humboldt, in his "Cosmos," writes—"The earth becomes self-luminous; besides the light which, as a planet, it receives from the central body, it shows a capacity of sustaining a luminous process proper to itself." The words of Schubert are very beautiful—"What if every proper polar light, which we call the Aurora of the North, were the last glimmer of a twilight of a world-day that has set, when the whole earth was surrounded by an expanse of air, from which the electromagnetic forces radiated light in a much greater degree than that of the polar light, and at the same time with animating heat, in a manner almost similar to what still occurs in the luminous atmosphere of the sun."<sup>1</sup>

It is not light only which produces the sensation of brightness. The weakest electrical currents passed through the eye produce consciousness in the mind of flashes of light. A blow or pressure on the side of the eyeball with a finger, gives an impression of light. Fevers, contamination by narcotic or intoxicating drugs, by causing increased pressure of blood, excite sensations of light. Even when the eye has been destroyed, irritation of the stumps of the optic nerve produces like feelings.

The peculiarities which separate the sensation of light from all others do not depend upon any peculiar qualities of light itself; the working power of Nature is something in and yet beyond us. While moving silently in the chambers of our consciousness, it heats the atmosphere, produces the winds, and thereby shakes the ocean; it gives life to forest and field, to cattle on a thousand hills, and reveals to man the wonderful works of God. In human affairs, "ars est celare artem;" and Moses, when he made known the fact that light preceded the luminary, and began that marvellous work which the sun had appointment to rule and perfect, was guided by a higher wisdom than is common to man. An experiment may illustrate this. Converge the rays of an electric light by means of a concave mirror. Place between the luminous focus and the source of rays a solution of iodine in bisulphide of carbon. Now the light is cut away, but the dark hot rays are still there; try—your hand cannot endure even for a moment the

<sup>1</sup> Quoted in "Kurtz's History of the Old Covenant."

intense heat. At this focus you may burn all that is burnable, and that which cannot be burned raise to white heat and light. At the opposite end of the spectrum, the invisible cold ultra-violet rays may have their refrangibility lowered and become visible. Thus beautiful colours shine visibly forth, and light is extracted from darkness to discourse in harmonious tongues of musical flame. "Day unto day uttereth speech, and night unto night showeth knowledge."

We now understand somewhat of the creative, architectural, beautifying, vivifying process, which began in our earth with that wonderful going-forth of energy by whose operation light sparkled into existence. This statement is not too scientific for Scripture, though Scripture is no teacher of science. We are not would-be discoverers in Bible language of latent physical systems, but endeavour to "bring forth things new and old." "If any one were to suggest that the nebular hypothesis countenances the Scripture statement as to light, by showing how the luminous matter of the sun might exist previous to the sun itself, we should act wisely in rejecting such an attempt to weave together two heterogeneous threads; the one a part of a providential scheme, the other a fragment of a spiritual speculation."<sup>1</sup> Despite this, if Scripture is assailed by perversion of science, we are warranted in the use of scientific weapons for defence. If, with the growth of science, our ideas and knowledge of Nature are enlarged; so is it the crown and glory of Scripture to reveal deeper depths of physical, intellectual, and moral meaning in the recesses of sacred language, as we search with clearer, purer light. "I think it to be the character of Holy Scripture (as it is in a measure of all deep sayings, even though human) that it contains much more than at first sight appears; that it requires to be searched into, *i.e.* below the surface; that it yields mines of treasure when so searched, which those who are content to remain on the surface do not see."<sup>2</sup> We rightly refuse explanations, fashioned by ignorance; scorn concessions, prompted by cowardice; and rebuke those whose defences are rather surrenders than vindications of sacred mysteries. The Bible speaks with words that live for ever,

<sup>1</sup> "Philosophy of the Inductive Sciences:" Wm. Whewell, D.D.

<sup>2</sup> "Daniel the Prophet," intr. p. lxxv. : Dr. Pusey.

and utters truths which only ages of advanced intelligence can fully understand ; artless for the childhood of our race, and in highest style of wisdom for those who are great in truth.

In stating the scientific aspects and explanations of light, we not only aim at vindicating the accuracy of the Mosaic account, but convey other lessons concerning the presence of Mind in the world. In those simple but grand words—" Let light be, and light was," we have in briefest form the most comprehensive expression of Almighty Power working in accordance with Infinite Wisdom. Light stands at the summit of things, so subtle, so delicate, almost supersensuous, as were it a link between spirit and matter. A creature, shall we say, of infinite extent, of unsurpassed beauty, entering all worlds and passing beyond all worlds, itself unseen yet revealing all things ; a revelation of the works as Holy Scripture is a revelation of the thoughts of God? Light, alone among all the Divine workings and products of Nature, is found worthy to symbolise the Divine Being Himself. In it we have deep and real analogies of the seen and the unseen ; and in it, as an unspotted mirror, we behold the image of God's goodness ; light is revelation. Sometimes a hidden revelation ! What is it that enables mighty engines unweariedly to traverse iron roads, and ocean steamers to visit far-off lands? It is light—concealed and buried in the earth for thousands of years, light—absorbed by plants as they built up themselves in strength, and then were changed, fields of vegetation becoming fields of coal. So the latent light of Scripture—that not visible even to prophets and apostles—is shining in these latter days. Men of science digging deep to the very centre of things are gladdened. The earth is revealed as a palace of marvels, the Bible manifests a long-hidden splendour.

It is time for all who would live the higher life, to learn that contemptuous negation of Scripture—the Revelation of God in man's realm of thought, and in the literature of the world—is not wise nor safe. Men of faith are supplementing faith by knowledge. Men of science must add faith to know-

ledge. Before fighting as to the colour of a shield, both should regard the other side. The two hemispheres of faith and knowledge unite in the full orb of a perfect life. The faith that listens and obeys, ennobles the science that greatly achieves. The physicist, as physicist, can know nothing concerning the true doctrine of Holy Trinity; nor can the chemist, as chemist, solve the salutary doctrine of redemption; these sacred verities are the other side, the spiritual view of things, which the natural man cannot discern so long as he will only see the near and physical. The perfect man possesses that scientific mind and that religious mind which, as two eyes of the soul, view both aspects of the universe. As an accurate thinker of widest range, his piety chastened by actual knowledge of Nature, his science elevated by more and more discernment of the spiritual in the secular, he is prepared to dwell in everlasting mansions with Him whose visible garment is the beautiful life and glowing splendour of many worlds.

Shall we, whom religion and science unite to teach that creation is extending dominion over chaos, use light only to photograph Egyptian sepulchres? Shall we, while carrying it into subterranean depths, forget that spiritual phenomena are also a definite part of the organic manifestation? Are all high things explained by the lower? or, rather, shall the lower find true meaning in the higher? Space exists for matter, matter for life, life for spirit; is there no existence, no life, apart from matter? May there not be intelligences existing neither in space, nor out of space, but with eternity as home? Are not space and time two sides of the ladder, whose rungs are those grades of marvellous organisms, those ascents of life, those elevations of human soul, by which intelligence travels up to heaven, and above heaven to God? Holy Scripture speaks of angels, of archangels, of bright abodes for the spirits of just men made perfect. Why not believe it all? Some maligners of Scripture seem to have lost all receptiveness of that Divine magnetism by which the good and true are drawn heavenward? Are we, who possess it, to deny the blessed influence? If the internal structure of an atheist's mind, by continual denial of the Divine Spirit,

becomes unspiritual and sensual ; shall we account the churl liberal, the unbeliever devout, and declare that we also are nothing but atomic arrangements containing certain mixed gases ? Some critics call Shakespeare a wild genius without arrangement. Truer critics find that he is an artist of first order and accuracy ; ever rising to that height which, as he cannot be followed by the feeble, nor the ascent be seen by the dim, is by them counted mystic and unreal. These are the men who find the Bible a common book, and complain of every part. What matter ? despite wit and malice, perversion of learning and wickedness of unbelief, those sacred pages guide the intellect and cheer the heart of the greatest and purest of our race. They are the light of truth sent out by the Almighty to lead us to His holy hill.

“ Fainting soul, arise and sing ;  
Mount, but be sober on the wing ;  
Mount up, for Heaven is won by prayer ;  
Be sober, for thou art not there.

Thy God hath said, ‘ ’Tis good for thee  
To walk by faith and not by sight ; ’  
Take it on trust a little while.  
Soon shalt thou read the mystery right  
In the full sunshine of His smile.”

*Keble.*

## STUDY IX.

### DAY II.—“GOD MADE THE FIRMAMENT.”

“ Was wär' ein Gott der nur von aussen stiesse,  
Im kreis das all am F'inger laufen liesse !  
Ihm ziemts', die Welt im Innern zu bewegen,  
Natur in sich, sich in Natur, zu hegen.  
So dass was in Ihm lebt und webt und ist  
Nie seine Kraft, nie seinen Geist vermisst.”

GOETHE.

“Thus saith the high and lofty One that inhabiteth eternity, whose name is Holy : I dwell in the high and holy place, with him also that is of a contrite and humble spirit, to revive the spirit of the humble, and to revive the heart of the contrite ones.”—ISAIAH.

THE second day's work was not praised for being good. We know not why, unless the work, being imperfect as to the earth until the third day, and not complete as to heaven till the fourth day, the blessing waited for the delicately formed plant and the cheerful sun, when it would be well seen that God filled the earth with the fruit of His works, and covered Himself with light as with a garment.

The sacred narrative of the earth's early state would naturally have that meaning applied to it by early and unscientific men, which the appearance of things suggested. Being told of a firmament dividing the waters above from the waters below, they possibly thought of a transparent floor in the skies, on which the upper waters rested, and may have pictured “the earth standing in the centre of a hollow crystal sphere, in which the stars were fixed like golden nails ;” but observation and reason soon showed that rain could not descend through such a floor, and that the waters above the firmament were, as St. Augustine thought, in a state of

vapour. Even a rustic would not think that the sky was a solid vault, nor call the stars bright nails fixed in to hold it up. The Hebrew people saw birds soar aloft, and the moon cross the sky; the intelligent knew of the connection between cloud and rain; none but the dullest would imagine that the sky was solid.

The phrases "windows of heaven" (Gen. vii. 11), "foundations" (2 Sam. xxii. 8), "pillars" (Job xxvi. 11), "doors" (Ps. lxxviii. 23), have led unpoetic persons to imagine that Moses and the Hebrews really did think of the firmament as a solid vault in which fowls fly and winds blow. The ancient sages were not so simple. These poetic expressions, and others like that of Job (xxxvii. 18), "The sky, which is strong and as a molten looking-glass," are sometimes a contrast, sometimes a comparison. Job meant that the sky, though rare, fine, and spread out, is established and strong as metal. Ancient worthies had a better understanding of things than our modern conceit gives them credit for. They knew that the earth was hung upon nothing (Job xxvi. 7), and when they spoke of it as firm and not to be moved, it was in the sense of being sustained by the Almighty. They knew of the sea as a fountain to water the whole earth (Amos ix. 6); of the rivers returning to it again (Eccl. i. 7); of the firmament as an expanse; of light existing apart from the sun; and of stars innumerable, or, as an astronomer would say—"Like grains of sand on the sea-shore." They accounted the present as but a momentary space in the interval between two eternities, earning blessings or cursings for ever according to man's efforts to do good and hate evil. They thought of the future as a home of rest from evil, a place of everlasting beauty, in which the whole creation should praise God. They saw living things and men in a vast procession, not urged by blind force, but guided by Divine Intelligence to higher activities and more glorious spheres.

The knowledge of ancient sages was indeed wonderful. We are beginning to be conscious of it. For some time before the age of Sir Isaac Newton, the physical system commonly accepted was the Ptolemaic; but Newton proved that it was erroneous, and demonstrated the truth of the

Copernican, which had been propounded by Pythagoras, two thousand years before. According to that system, the sun is the centre around which the planets and satellites revolve. This one example, chosen from many that might be given, is proof that those who lived in the early days of mankind possessed wisdom that often pierced the outward form and natural aspect of things to discern inner meaning and power. Inspired men regarded God as the One who bound up the thick clouds with strength, that the waters might not rend them (Job xxvi. 8); who apportioned the atmosphere, made a balance for the winds, a decree for the rain, and a path for the lightning (Job xxviii. 24-27). Solomon, or whosoever it was that wrote in his name, had understanding of the wind going toward the south, the turning about unto the north, and why the fulness of the sea was not over-fulness (Eccl. i. 6, 7). Science, since those old-world days, has weighed the wind, traced its path whirling in continual currents. We know that an atmospheric pressure of fifteen tons is on every man, and that, if it were not so, our lungs could not well use the air. It is a physical fact, that the air of the firmament, by a secret process, raises and suspends water, eight hundred times heavier than itself; and in quantity so vast that if it descended at once upon the earth, the world would be deluged; and by ascent so graduated that the earth is not unduly parched, nor animal nor vegetable destroyed. Those ancients were not fools, and, great as is the advance of modern science, no man has exceeded Solomon in wisdom, or Job in philosophy, or convinced Moses of folly for saying, "God made the firmament, and divided the waters which were under the firmament from the waters which were above the firmament."

The genius of ancient worthies was not less marvellous than their knowledge. There were gleams of spirit and touches of genius which remind us of the best and purest portions of the classic page, which indeed they surpass. As a literary production, there is nothing in any ancient or modern book equal in simplicity, or beauty, or grandeur, to the account by Moses of creation, which seems purposely written for our own time. The Book of Job cannot be styled less than perfect, the Psalms are matchless, Isaiah sublime. The

whole Bible remains ever fresh by the life that is in it ; creates new interest in men of every age, not only by the letter, but specially by the spirit. It is adapted to the various stages of history, and illustrates the great principles of moral government. It possesses a wider influence than when originally spoken, and delights us with the charm of novelty, as were it newly found. It is rendered more romantic than the romance thrown into it by Divinity of origin, through the sacred subduing sadness which pervades it, and by the high art of embalming the spirit, the thought, the laws, the life of a whole nation. The words of graceful imagery with which patriarchs and prophets describe God and His works, the ruin of beauty and glory by sin, are in the power of true world-poets. Sometimes the form of language is child-like, and the figures express our commonest notions ; but that child-like body is of excellent form, takes hold of our life, wins homage and love from the purest and wisest of mankind. The representation of perfection and beauty in Divinity is entrancing, and our delight deepens into awe. Sacred anger is aroused as, before our very eyes, a malignant hand, by a few wickedly skilful dark strokes, turns favour into disfavour ; that the purpose of God and the image of man may be distorted and defaced. The two hemispheres of representation—Divine holiness and Satanic iniquity—are then separated by a firmament of mercy. Beneath that firmament are forgiveness and sanctification ; above that firmament, ascending to the height, are promises of regeneration to the earth, of glorification to men, the likeness of a throne, and upon the throne the appearance of a man (Ezek. i. 26).

“ Aye, gloriously thou standest there,  
Beautiful, boundless firmament !  
That swelling wide o'er earth and air,  
And round the horizon bent,  
With thy bright vault and sapphire wall,  
Dost overhang and circle all.”

*William Cullen Bryant.*

Beware of regarding the primeval waters as existing in their present state. They were full of mineral and earthy ingredients, surcharged with gaseous elements ; rather a molten

mass of fluid and gaseous condition than water, as seen now, cooled down and formed by the chemical affinity of oxygen and hydrogen. Thick steam, arising from this heated water and the other matters held in solution, rendered the circumference of the earth moist and cloudy. By some inscrutable operation, vapours and gaseous elements were more and more separated and differentiated from mineral parts—made to rise out of the water, and expanded to become constituents of the present life-sustaining atmosphere. Whatever it was, there seems to have been a power which decomposed the fluid matter or water, and formed the atmosphere which evaporated the surplus vapour,—a power of attraction and contraction on one hand, a power of repulsion and expansion on the other. This power, by a peculiar law, the diffusion principle, abstracted the elements of the firmament from submission to the universal law of gravity, enabled the watery vapour to penetrate it with perfect freedom, and to become a well-spring of life in the atmospheric streams surrounding our earth.

The words—"Let there be a firmament in the midst of the waters, and let it divide the waters from the waters," express the relative degrees of expansion. Those under the firmament are of less expansive principle; those above the firmament, being of more subtile or higher expansive principle, incline to ascend. Thus a division, ever varying in extent and degree, is established by means of the atmosphere.

In speaking of the dew-point temperature, we mean the temperature of the air at which the invisible vapour of water existing in it at the time would saturate it if the air were cooled down. The higher the temperature of the air, the greater the quantity of invisible vapour of water it will hold. The amount of vapour which the air will hold increases in a greater ratio than the temperature. Air at  $80^{\circ}$  will hold more than double the amount of vapour it would hold at  $40^{\circ}$ . If anything cools down the air below dew-point, part of the vapour is condensed, changed into water, becomes visible as mist or cloud. When a glass of cold water is brought into a room, we often see dew deposited upon the surface of the glass; this is caused by the water in the glass (and, as a consequence, the glass itself) being below the temperature of the

dew-point of the air in the room. All contrivances to find the dew-point really mean to get at the neutral point, or exact temperature when no dew will be deposited upon the glass, and no evaporation take place from the surface of the water. The dew-point temperature, even in this country, is sometimes  $30^{\circ}$  to  $40^{\circ}$  below the temperature of the air.

If the sun was so far conditioned as to shine out beyond his own vapours, the hypothesis is that earth-clouds excluded the light from our own planet, and covered the surface of the deep with gloomy obscurity, like that of evening and early morn. Our earth, with this robe of vapour, and earlier separated from the original mass than were Venus and Mercury, would probably, to a distant beholder, seem to have fleecy shifting, dissolving bands, dense masses of clouds driven of winds and tossed, such as we now behold by telescopic examination of the planet Jupiter. This vast planet is encircled by similar great cloud-belts, such as the sun is incompetent to raise. Cloud-layer upon cloud-layer cover the seething surface of that far-off world, which appears to be passing through those stages which marked the earth's early course; and, small as is the visible sun there, the skies seem in formation by the establishment of a firmament like our own, to divide the waters which are under the firmament from the waters which are above the firmament.

This may be expressed in another form. The firmament is not strictly the air itself, still less a solid vault, falsely conceived to exist, but that visible hemisphere of sky which encloses the earth and sea. We ought never to depart from the optical view in explaining the sacred narrative, but that view must be explained and enlarged by an instructed intellect. Intellect tells us—"Were the matter of the universe cast in cold detached fragments into space, and there abandoned to the mutual gravitation of its own parts, the collision of the fragments would in the end produce the fires of the stars."<sup>1</sup> This separating of materials, then the gathering of meteoric masses into centres of conflagration, give us one star differing from another star, and the firmamental expanse. Further, we are told that "the planets exterior to Mars,

<sup>1</sup> "The Constitution of Nature : " Prof. Tyndall.

Jupiter, Saturn, especially the best known of them, appear to be spheres of water and of aqueous vapour, combined, it may be, with atmospheric air. . . . It was agreeable to the general scheme that the excess of water and vapour should be packed into rotating masses, such as are Jupiter and Saturn, Uranus and Neptune. . . . Thus the vapour which otherwise would have wandered loose about the atmosphere, was neatly wound into balls, which again were kept in their due place by being made to revolve in nearly circular orbits about the sun."<sup>1</sup> The scientific theory is, and it can be no more than theory, that for our earth, with a robe of vapour around, seems to have been formed a sensible expanse, or middle region of clearer atmosphere, separating the waters depositing below from those drawn upward; and transferring, yet containing the sea of mist, by passing it into pure invisible vapour. Scripture states—the Lord bound up the waters in the thick cloud (Job xxvi. 8), in His discretion stretched out the heavens (Jer. x. 12), caused the vapours to ascend from the ends of the earth, made lightnings for the rain, and brought the wind out of His treasures (Ps. cxxxv. 7).

"Divide the waters from the waters." "The clouds are, in Scripture metaphor, the bottles of heaven. They are the instruments by which, when the windows of heaven are opened, some of the waters above the firmament are transferred from their celestial reservoir, and descend in showers to rejoin, by the springs and rivers, the gathering of the waters in seas below the firmament."<sup>2</sup> Mists and clouds were said to be formed of a multitude of hollow vesicles with exceedingly thin covering. These vesicles vary from 1'4222 to 1'2620 of an inch in diameter. This theory—that water in the clouds is in the state of small vesicles, or bladders, containing air—is not now received. The particles of water are so small and so light in weight that they float in the atmosphere, the air being as an elastic cushion beneath them. The aerial body of the atmosphere is of distinct and separate character from the vaporous portion contained within its

<sup>1</sup> "Theory of the Solar System:" Dr. Whewell.

<sup>2</sup> "The Bible and Modern Thought:" Notes, Rev. T. R. Birks.

interstices. By the formation of clouds, their elevation into the air, their easy and rapid movement by means of the atmosphere, the earth is refreshed with dew and moistened with water; while, by pressure of the very atmosphere into which moisture is raised, the too quick evaporation of liquids and the dispersion of many solids are prevented. It has been ever the same during historic time, for the air contained in a jar, buried at the destruction of Pompeii, was like that now covering the earth; the breezes of Africa, wind on the lofty Alps, the atmosphere of England, are of uniform constitution. Bearing the breath of life to animals, and nourishment to plants, it is a faithful conservatory of blessings—

“The earth waxed proud withal  
For sweet dews that on it fall.”

*Chaucer.*

If, in popular conception of the firmament, we take it as the sensible limit between the visible and invisible; then all water visible to the senses, whether in the seas or in the clouds, is described as under the firmament; and all that which is invisible or concealed from the senses is stated to be above the firmament. Out of this state of invisibility the rain appears to fertilise the earth. This is opening the windows of heaven, pouring out of the bottles, the descent of the waters from above the firmament to mingle with those below. If we stand and look into the azure of the sky when the clouds seem to give out their evaporation, or consider the rain descending through bands of light, we discern a fulness in the words—“God made the firmament, and divided the waters,” to which modern art cannot add.

The operations which formed the firmament, gathered the waters, upheaved the dry land, prove that the sun was already in existence, and exerting those mighty energies by which, in conjunction with earth-powers, land, sea, air, became beautiful abodes of life.

We may now ascend from these arrangements, by means of which sunlight pierced to the earth and became beneficial, to the phenomena of light as affecting our firmament.

Tracing up light as high as we can to its source, we arrive at particles of matter vibrating as the particles of a tuning-

fork vibrate to produce sound. The waves differ in size, form, energy. All larger than the red, all smaller than the violet, are incompetent to excite vision. Of those exciting vision, the largest may be of ten thousand-fold more energy than those of the smallest; and of all the waves, visual and non-visual, a million-fold. They meet different degrees of hindrance on passing into refracting substances, indeed are actually pulled asunder when sent through a refracting prism, and pure unsifted white light separates into an infinity of colours; but our sight is limited to seven, called prismatic—red, orange, yellow, green, blue, indigo, violet.

The waves, impinging on ordinary clouds, are divided into a reflected part and a transmitted part; when they pass from light air into dense, or from dense air into light, a portion of the wave-motion is always reflected, and the reflected light is the light of our firmament. This light is blue, because the blue is reflected; the orange and red are transmitted, or break through, being more forcible; the others are scattered, and blue is the chief colour of scattered light. The transmitted light, that which comes to us, appears yellowish when short distances are traversed; but, as the sun descends toward the horizon, the atmospheric distance increases, and violet, indigo, blue, and a portion of the green, are abstracted in succession; and the firmament colours from yellow to orange, and through orange to red. Thus we have, at noon, deep azure; and, at sunset, the warm crimson glow hung as a curtain between our earth and the black height of infinite space.

We can generate artificial skies by means of vapours. These vapours are aggregates of molecules of matter, and every molecule is an aggregate of atoms; a molecule of aqueous vapour being two atoms of hydrogen and one of oxygen; a molecule of sulphurous acid being one atom of sulphur and two of oxygen; a molecule of ammonia being three atoms of hydrogen and one of nitrogen. They have motions of their own as wholes, and the atoms have motions of their own as parts, and the atoms approach one another or recede, as the separating forces are overcome, cease to act, or acquire force. They cannot altogether part company

because, besides the repulsive, there is an attractive force ; and the position of equilibrium is that point at which attraction and repulsion are equal to one another. Take a glass tube filled with sulphurous acid gas, place it in a dark room, send through it a powerful beam of light ; the vessel seems empty as a vacuum, but soon a beautiful sky-blue colour is seen along the track of the beam. Various other colourless substances, of the most different properties, optical and chemical, may be experimented upon to produce the blue of the sky, luminous clouds, and splendid iridescences.

These colours are called forth in the sky by the shining of light upon matter ; and minute spheres of water, and minute crystals of ice, give the grain to the blue vault. Space, traversed by rays from all suns and stars, is itself unseen ; and the æther which fills that space, and by its motions lights up the universe, is invisible. "Colour depends solely upon the rate of the oscillations of the particles of the luminous body, red light being produced by one rate, blue light by a much quicker rate, the colours between red and blue by the intermediate rates."<sup>1</sup> Take a tube containing air and amyl vapour. They are both invisible. Converge the rays of an electric lamp to a focus in the middle of the tube. For an instant it is dark, but quickly the beam darts through a luminous white cloud, the molecules of the nitrite of amyl are shaken asunder, there is a shower of liquid particles, and the flash is like "a solid luminous spear." This separation, or breaking up, is effected by exciting differential motions among the atoms, and the motions are introduced by the shock of light-waves from the lamp. The waves most effectual in shaking asunder compound molecules are not the red and the ultra-red, but those of least mechanical power, the violet and ultra-violet. They are probably millions of times less than the ultra-red waves, yet the great are powerless and the less are potent. Sky-matter, or matter in the skyey condition, which we are now acquainted with, the basis of light, consists of particles so infinitesimal that the bewildering vastness of the distances in stellar space has here to be reversed ; by no possible exertion of our present faculties can we picture

<sup>1</sup> "Chemical Rays and the Structure and Light of the Sky : " Prof. Tyndall.

the ultimate atom. Sir John Herschel calculated that the matter composing the tail of a comet 100,000,000 miles in length and 50,000 miles in diameter, would do little more than fill a wheelbarrow; and, as to all the matter in our firmament, Professor Tyndall says—"I have sometimes thought that a lady's portmanteau would contain it all. I have thought that even a gentleman's portmanteau—possibly his snuff-box—might take it in."

Æther-waves untie the bond of chemical affinity by striking against and breaking up gaseous and other molecules; in some cases yield up their motion to these molecules, in others glide round them, or pass through the inter-molecular spaces without apparent hindrance. Those waves of æther are copiously absorbed which synchronise with the periods of the molecules amongst which they pass, and those are most copiously transmitted which do not synchronise. Transparency is due to inability to absorb luminous rays. Snow and ice are not dissolved by sunshine, but by the warm dark rays which are not luminous at all. The gases, oxygen, hydrogen, nitrogen, and the mixture of atmospheric air, are practical vacua to the waves of heat.

The experiments on gases have been extended to the vapours of volatile liquids, which also possess different powers of intercepting calorific rays. Perfumes, diffused in the air, though their attenuation is almost infinite, produce a similar effect. Patchouly scent takes up thirty times the quantity of heat intercepted by the atmospheric air which carries it. Patchouly acts more feebly on radiant heat than does any other perfume yet examined. These perfumes of Scripture absorb most: cassia, 109 times; spikenard, 355; aniseed, 372. The vapour of water is the most powerful absorber of radiant heat hitherto discovered. This vapour is almost infinitesimal in amount,  $99\frac{1}{2}$  out of every 100 parts of the atmosphere consisting of oxygen and nitrogen; yet this vapour exerts from 100 to 200 times the action of the whole body of air as a heat-absorber, and is of the utmost consequence to the life of the world. It takes up the heat-waves, becomes warm, then enwraps the earth as with a garment to maintain warmth, and, at the same time, to exclude scorching heat. The radiant heat

of the earth not being of power equal to that of the sun, is unable to pierce this vapour and escape into space ; so that, in consequence of this difference in action, the mean temperature of our planet is higher than is due to its distance from the sun : nor is that all. The waves of æther, acting upon the molecules of matter in the firmament, break them up by giving their own motions to the component atoms—that is, these atoms, or some of them, begin to synchronise with the vibrations of the infringing æther, and the rates of motion being made to vary, the molecules are decomposed. By this operation, carbonic acid gas, contained in the air, is fitted to become food for the vegetable world. The leaves of plants absorb the gas, and, when in the internal cells of the leaves, the incipient loosening of the molecules by the action of light enables the plant to seize upon and appropriate the carbon while the oxygen is discharged into the atmosphere.

It is evident that the firmament contains a marvellous and harmonious co-operation of phenomena, but of so vast a nature that we cannot unravel the whole mystery. Facts are at hand to a certain extent, but the possibility of encircling them with a perfect theory is beyond our power. Because we cannot do so—and how should we, seeing that creative design must extend to the whole of Nature?—our assertion that wherever we find marks of purpose and contrivance, there must be corresponding will and design, is met by the humorous reply—“If there be pepper in the soup, there must be pepper in the cook who made it, since otherwise the pepper would be without a cause.” Mr. J. S. Mill was, we think, the author of this combination of salt, pepper, and soup, to puzzle our intellectual co-ordination of experiences. When, by a play upon words, we are required to assume that God must be partly of iron and partly of clay, seeing that these materials are in the universe ; otherwise we have no right to say, “the Supreme is wise,” because there are marks of will and contrivance in the world ; the ingenuity of our opponents must be pushed to the furthest limits. Surely motion is a manifestation of energy ; the causes of visible appearances are not the appearances themselves ; nor is law an agent or agency by which substances are coerced, but an abstract expression

of the series of positions which substances assume under given conditions. We refuse to allow that the Eternal Power, of whom the web of phenomena is a visible garment, may be degraded into a necessary order, or fate, or physical property, or mere strand in the web of phenomena. He is the Infinite and Inscrutable God; not a circumscribed intelligence adapting its own internal processes to other processes going on externally, but a Spirit to whom we as correctly attribute the wisdom as we do the energy displayed in the universe.

The arguments generally used to divest the Infinite and Eternal of wisdom and will, do, when applied in a like manner, strip volition and intelligence from human conduct. For example, take the President of the British Association for the Advancement of Science, at Belfast, in the year 1874, as a reasonable being. Why? For no other reason, though some doubt, than that he behaved *as if* he were reasonable. (The president of 1874 used the playful illustration in reference to the president of 1870.) Even suppose, taking his address, we cannot go further than the *as if*, still, there is no other known method of accounting for his conduct than by saying, he had some portion of intelligence.

If a man is insensible to the mystery of the universe; if the soul is that of an animal—unvisited by gleams of any brighter life, dead to the stirring sacred impulses of piety—how can we make him feel that of which his nature is incapable? Happily, no such man exists; and only men of souls most shrivelled, with narrow vision of life's realities and the world's vastness, can entertain the notion that our human organism is limited to material mechanism. Encompassed by mysteries; subjected to influences of awe, tenderness, sympathy, which no words can express, no theories fully explain; possessing moral and æsthetic instincts inclining us to the good, the pure, the beautiful; visited with convictions that there is a larger life than the visible firmament contains; all these, physically exhibiting themselves in actions and reactions of the organism, we are compelled to regard as memorials of the Supreme, and tokens that we are centres toward which much of the intelligible universe converges, and from which it radiates.

As we advance in science, the world enlarges with our knowledge; shall we, instead of growing with the world, allow an atheistic system to separate us from the universal existence by a quibbling statement—"There is no bridge," and thus lose our good portion in that glorious realm which is deeper and higher than all visible phenomena? Are we to stop as men already at the finality of existence, though always having fresh experiences? Were it not better to hope that we shall, ere long, possess the keys which unlock mysteries, and reveal what is and will be? If a man say—"We have no organs for apprehension of the Supernatural;" then we answer—We cannot think of an effect without a cause, or of creation without a creator, is not that a manifestation which makes our heart forbode a mystery? If we cannot obtain from matter anything that was not contained in the original atom, we rightly regard our intellectual and moral nature, our thoughts of God, as essential parts of human nature, as true, as revelations of the supernatural, a kind of bridge for experiences of Divinity. All holy men, by faithful use of these powers, bring into view, and within the circle of spiritual knowledge, that which before was unknown.

"Hold thou the good, define it well,  
For fear Divine philosophy  
Should push beyond her mark and be  
Procuress to the Lords of Hell."

*In Memoriam.*

## STUDY X.

### DAY III.—THE HABITATION OF LIFE.

“Thou, O Spirit, that dost prefer,  
Before all temples, the upright heart and pure,  
Instruct me—for Thou knowest. Thou from the first  
Wast present, and with mighty wings outspread,  
Dove-like sat'st brooding on the vast abyss,  
And made it pregnant. What in me is dark,  
Illumine ; what is low, raise and support ;  
That to the height of this great argument  
I may assert eternal Providence,  
And justify the ways of God to men.”

*Paradise Lost.*

By sacred geology we understand that the formation of the earth was by the Almighty. He did not labour as an artificer who shapes every work by handicraft. We do not conceive that every species of rhinoceros, and every species of hyæna, or the long succession of forms from earliest to present time, was separately constructed out of the dust. Nor did God create by intellectual or physical exercise, such as we are capable of, but by means of incomprehensible operations, defined as natural order or law, He furnished space as the star-domed city of the great King ; and now, through every star, through every grass-blade, but most through every living soul, beams the glory of an ever-present God ;—natural law being the formula of Divine action, and all dynamic phenomena the multiform revelation of the Omniscient and Omnipresent.

By various orders of experience we may imagine human-wise the creative process. The passage of invisibles into visibles, as gas into light ; the coming of the unseen vapour of water into the seen ; are one step. We may think of germs growing into animals ; of plants, great or small, developing in such minute progression that at no moment can it be said,

“now the seed ceases, now the tree exists.” We then observe that the origin of plants, animals, men, separated by wide intervals of time, is analogous to epochs in the formation of stars and planets. The earth may so change in the course of hundreds of thousands of years that none of the present forms of life shall exist. In other starry worlds have been, are, and will be lifeless ages, living durations, death periods. Within our intellectual conceptions we may hasten or retard the operation, show the vast reach of organic phenomena, render them intelligible, and obtain as clear a view of creation as we can of evolution; indeed, evolution, rightly understood, is creation. We may reverently regard the production now of every child, and flower, and tree, as a special creation: for the perpetual origination of countless individuals throughout the world, from hour to hour, is to the devout mind the more miraculous because so ordinary.

Thought may take another turn: a straight line and a circle are not much alike—let the straight line be continued as a figure of infinity, and the circle be conceived vast as the universe. The one encloses a space; the other, though continued for ever, will not enclose a space. The one is limited, the other may be unlimited; but if the straight line be bent so slightly that no eye—no, not even aided by a rule—can appreciate it, you may get an immensely elongated form; and, if you go on, may acquire the peculiar properties and special equations of the hyperbola, parabola, ellipse, circle. The first and last, being quite opposite, are nevertheless made members of a series which you produce by insensible modifications. Such a mode of representation has been used to figure evolution; it may well and fairly be used as a symbol of that line and universe which He stretched and fashioned who went forth, by His will and power, to make all things in continuance. In continuance, for no one supposes that the oak, ready formed within the acorn, lies there in miniature. The oak is quite as much in the earth and air, not really in any one, but formed from all. In like manner, when the eye was created, the means may have been the action of light on a suitable sensitive surface; then this eye being brought into due relation with external objects,

there would be visual perception. We may also picture to ourselves the forms of sense and the forms of thought, being created and developed in us, as the stem, branches, and foliage of the oak, are evolved from the acorn. It matters little what name we give to the process; the great desire of our age is for a doctrine which shall arrange our knowledge, guide our researches, shape our lives, so that right conduct shall be the result of true faith.

Scientific geology treats of what materials the earth is composed, and in what manner they are arranged. It reveals that the earth, some long time ago, was in a viscous or even perfectly liquid state. Cooling rapidly at the surface, the crust became denser than the liquid below; and, when broken by pressure from within, portions sank down, and solidification began on the newly exposed liquid surface. From volcanic phenomena we learn that at no very great depth under the surface, there may be portions of the originally liquid mass at temperatures equivalent to red, or even white heat, but under great pressure. Sir William Thomson has shown, by means of arguments on the rate of precession, and on the amount of land-tide, that the whole mass of the earth is now more rigid than if it were glass throughout, nearly as rigid as a solid mass of steel. Scientific geology, not limited to the mineral kingdom, nor to the various rocks and soils, relates the history of animals and plants; investigates all the changes which have taken place in the former state of the earth's surface and interior.

Science, thus ascertaining the manner and means by which the works of Nature are wrought, is beneficent priestess of the physical universe, and we reverently receive her instructions. She describes and fairly well maps out the nearer portion of the pathway on which our earth has travelled, her varied period of existence as a revolving globe, the production of rocks, the gathering of seas, the depths out of which dry land was raised, and the emptiness of land and sea until both became many-chambered habitations of life. It is proved that man had a beginning, that the animals had a beginning, that the earth's surface was rearranged again and again. Mountains were formed, raised, worn down, or sunk; valleys

have been excavated, filled up, and again dug out; sea became dry land, land became sea; yet, throughout all revolutions and the accompanying vicissitudes of climate, animal and vegetable life was sustained—a continual modification fitting it for the different ages and stages of the world. A close analogy is shown to exist between extinct and recent species, and the continuance of the same organic laws is thus evidenced: ancient lakes in the Upper Miocene had round their borders belts of poplars and willows and shrubs. Leaves resembling those of the tamarind, with a ripe seed-vessel, have been found; and, on the same slab, a winged ant. We learn from this that the seed was ripened in summer, at which season alone ants have their wings fully developed and make their flight.

In venturing upon a short sketch of chemical geology, or of what may be termed the cosmogenetic era in the history of our globe; and then explaining some of the phenomena of the great changes from that early period down to the present time; principles, rather than details of chemical action, will be dealt with.

Exact knowledge shows that mere fire and water are not the only great agents; the geologist must take into consideration the effects which are wrought by chemical action, heat, light, electricity, mechanical force. It is known that mechanical force may be converted, directly or indirectly, not only into heat, but into chemical action in the metamorphic alteration of rock masses. The Plutonic, Neptunic, Quiescent, Cataclysmic schools of thought, reveal principles which have had a share in Nature's operations; and an independent observer finds that the same identical phenomena are at times the result of agencies totally different from those which at other times produced them. For example:—

Take crystallised silica, or quartz; it appears—

As an igneous product in recent volcanic lavas;

As an aqueous product, by crystallisation and deposition from solution;

As a gasolytic product, in tubes from deposition of its compounds with fluorine.

Sulphur is seen—

- As an igneous product from volcanoes ;
- As an aqueous product from hot springs ;
- As a product of decomposition of sulphides.

Numerous other examples might be given.

In applying chemical principles in explanation of the changes wrought in our globe, we shall not touch upon the asserted early gasiform condition as a nebula in space, nor inquire whether the elements then were in a state of chemical indifference to one another, but deal with the earth in its heated condition of complete liquidity. There would be bodies of two different characters—solid and gasiform ; these, by their situation and rotation, would bring about the formation of a molten sphere surrounded by an intensely heated gasiform atmosphere. The affinity of bodies would be different, and their mutual chemical reactions vary considerably, from what takes place at ordinary temperatures ; so that our conclusions, in great part hypothetical, are as follows :—

The molten substances and their atmosphere would obey the laws of gravity ; and arrange themselves in strata, or zones, according to their respective density.

The molten mass would arrange into three grand zones, probably with sub-zones : i. An external crust of highly acid silicates, and probably much free quartz ; the bases of silicates being chiefly alumina and potash, with some soda, lime, magnesia, etc. ii. A zone of silicates of more basic character and greater density ; the bases being lime, magnesia, alumina, oxide of iron, soda, with minor quantities of potash and other substances. iii. A far denser nucleus, containing most of the densest metallic elements ; in part, at least, combined with sulphur, arsenic, etc.<sup>1</sup> These zones, formed in the earth, would be of somewhat stable character ; those in the atmosphere the reverse ; but, at first, the atmosphere, next the earth, would be composed of a dense vapour of compounds volatile only at high temperature—chloride of sodium, probably, one of the most prominent. Above this, carbonic acid ; then oxygen and nitrogen ; vapour of water still higher. Afterwards, this

<sup>1</sup> See Lecture, in *Journal of the Chemical Society*, 20th February, 1868, by David Forbes.

arrangement would be gradually obliterated by diffusion ; but it is imagined that, before diffusion, this arrangement had considerable influence.

The cooling of such an atmosphere would condense the vapour of salt, and other chlorides, etc., and cover the solid crust of the earth with a solid layer sufficient to clothe the entire sphere with a coating of some ten feet in thickness. Then the condensed steam would fall in rain, which, dissolving the greater part of the salt, would form the ocean. The atmosphere would now contain much less oxygen ; and the carbon, in form of carbonic acid, would probably not greatly differ in composition from what it is now. The exact action and extent of reaction, the amount of any one element entering into any particular state of combination, cannot be defined. We may say, however, because the earth is so little flattened, it must have been rotating, when it became solid, at nearly the same rate as it is now. As the rate of rotation is undoubtedly becoming slower, it became solid not many millions of years since ; otherwise, it would certainly have solidified into a flatter shape ; we cannot allow geologists a greater possible period than about ten or fifteen millions of years.

There are arguments against these views ; we will not advance them. Refer for their refutation to the lecture on chemical geology, by the late David Forbes, delivered before the Fellows of the Chemical Society, 20th February, 1868, and to be found in the *Journal of the Society for 1868*, p. 213.

The mean specific gravity of the earth is 5.45 ; leaving out the water, the mean density of the exterior is not higher than 2.75 or 3 ; it follows that the interior is immensely more dense than the exterior. The crust, at first, might present a somewhat even contour ; but soon would be crossed by cracks and fissures caused by contraction of the mass, and portions of the crust would fall in ; then protrusions of molten matter formed dykes on the surface. The sides of the cracks being more or less dislocated, lines of faults would interrupt the previously regular contour, and form the first elevations or mountains. From that time till the present all the changes have been wrought by agencies similar to those now in opera-

tion. The crust, split and broken, would be further broken and pulverised by the mechanical action of water; assisted by the disintegrating and decomposing action of carbonic acid, excessively present in the primeval atmosphere. In process of time, the actions of rivers and seas arranged the comminuted particles in sedimentary beds of varying density and character.

The development of organic life, at first of the lowest type, originated another character of deposits. Vegetation, assimilating the carbonic acid of the atmosphere, introduced beds of carbonaceous substance; and animals and plants, by joint operation, built up the limestones and calcareous strata. The formation of these strata did not proceed uninterruptedly: outbursts of igneous matter disturbed and broke the surface, forming dykes, ramifications, bosses, and sometimes intercalations between the beds. Showers of ashes were also sent forth from time to time. Human intelligence can assign a relative age for the igneous, aqueous, organic rocks, and state when the plains and mountains were formed. The various strata are not necessarily separated by vast intervals of time; some were of great horizontal extent, some were formed synchronously.

For illustration of the history as to rocks, take up a piece of granite—you discover that it was once molten within the earth under enormous pressure. Find a sandstone, it teaches you that small pieces of matter were worn out of pre-existent rocks, then compressed together and hardened. If we have a lump of chalk, and gently grate or knead it down in water, we see that it consists partly of microscopic chambered shells belonging to animals of simple form and life—Protozoa. This chalk, with all other rocks containing relics, whether of vegetable or animal existence, belongs to what are called "Organic Rocks." Coal is so much vegetation pressed together, and gradually chemically changed into the black substance now used as fuel. In the deep parts of the Atlantic Ocean millions and millions of little shells, called foraminifera, are being deposited, with remains of star-fish and other creatures. If they continue undisturbed, a vast mass of rock will be formed out of these dead. The hills and dales of Derbyshire

and Yorkshire are chiefly formed of limestone : the crowded remains of little animals which peopled the waters of the sea. These fossils, or relics, generally enable us to know the origin and age of the various and wonderfully arranged strata which form the crust of the earth.

Geologists define the lifetime of the earth as Eozoic, dawn of life ; Palæozoic, old life ; Mesozoic, middle life ; Neozoic, new or modern life. They are apportioned into ages and eras of stratific formation.

The Eozoic time is supposed to represent that very period during which the first land was cooled and solidified from the fiery mass. Its rocks are the deepest and oldest, crumpled and folded in a remarkable manner, and the folds appear to have been formed before the deposit of the rocks next in age. There is inferential evidence of vegetable life derived from the limestones, graphite carbon, and iron ore ; as there are undoubted remains of animal life ; but the mystery of the origin of living things, and the secret of the changes which they underwent, remain hidden. The deepest and oldest known rock or formation, the Laurentian gneiss, is made up out of the waste of previous existing rocks, but of those pre-existing rocks we know nothing. The Laurentide Hills, north of the river St. Laurence, are the largest known exposure of this ancient formation. They are more than 30,000 feet in thickness, and occupy an area of about 200,000 square miles. It was formerly thought that the lowest rocks, called Azoic, contained no vestiges of life, and that the ocean then existing was lifeless ; but the Laurentian contains a gigantic representative of the earliest known life on earth, the *Eozoön Canadense*, the grandest of its class ; flashing upon the scene, like Melchisedec, without father, mother, or descent of days ; the modern representatives being poor indeed. We may possibly discover plants yet earlier, or an Eophyte period preceding the Eozoön.

The Palæozoic, old life, has its own ages and variety of strata : Laurentian, pre-Cambrian, Cambrian, Silurian, Devonian, Carboniferous, Permian. The lower two present few traces of living beings, but the upper are crowded with fossils,

no longer mere Protozoa, but representative of five orders of life. The sixth also, the Vertebrate, appears in fishes and amphibians. New forms of life come in continually: some, without previous representation, appear at once as kings; some, continuing but a little while, find a grave and are no more seen. These meaner Enochs and Elijahs were not supernaturally removed, for others supernaturally to come; they simply indicate that the natural plan works by continual change. There are kinds which resemble the young of modern animals, but distorted and exaggerated as if they had outgrown themselves. The coal measures present remains of vegetables, insects, land-snails, fishes, amphibians—small and large, prophecies of things to come. In course of this vast time land rose above and subsided beneath the waters several times. There is something grand and awful in the thought of a world of vegetable and animal life—living, dying, slowly carried beneath the waters and gradually raised again, mineralised. In the vast Palæozoic duration, if we reckon thickness, nearly nine-tenths of all the known rocks were formed in the earth's crust. A definite plan, even in these early ages, seems to have associated life with physical and organic change.

The Mesozoic, middle life, was occupied by myriads and myriads of organisms. On the rocks formed during this and the Tertiary time, exist the most populous and civilised assemblages of mankind. The movements of the water and action of the elements rendered the earth favourable for that kind of vegetation and animal life which man requires. All the classes of animal existence were present; birds swam on the surface of the deep, waded in the shallows, left their foot-prints on the land, perched on the trees, flew in the air. There was abundance of a particular group of plants, still represented in the tropics and Austràlia; and the great forests of the later Mesozoic, gay with flowers, beautiful in foliage, swarmed with insect life. Gigantic lizards were remarkable, exhibiting a more generalised type of reptile organisation than any now existing. Pterodactyles, somewhat like great bats in shape, wheeled and screamed in the air, pouncing on smaller creatures of their kind, and perhaps diving into the sea for

fish. It was the age of reptiles, of mighty and terrible creatures in sea and on land. Not continuing till our day, not waiting for man to war against them, they perished in the great Cretaceous subsidence. Apportioning this time into the Trias, Lias, Oolite, Cretaceous formations, it does not seem to have occupied, so far as we can judge by measurement of the deposits, one-third, or one-fourth, some say one-fifth or sixth, of the time taken up in the Palæozoic period.

The Neozoic time, the great age of mammals, is subdivided into Eocene, Oligocene, Miocene, Pliocene, Pleistocene periods—every one of which witnessed the production of a formation—were so named in consequence of their containing different percentages of species which still exist. In the Eocene the percentage is least, in the Pliocene the greatest. Fossils of the Eocene deposits are numerous. Plants, in the main, are closely allied to existing tropical and sub-tropical forms. Nummulites are remarkable, and bony fishes, reptiles, birds, mammals, represent many of the modern orders. The Oligocene formation, between the Eocene and Miocene, is slightly developed in the south of England, and vastly in the north-east of Italy. There were vast coral-reefs in the period, and the varied nature of strata is remarkable for intermediate fauna. The Miocene was, in some respects, a better age than the present. The Northern hemisphere possessed a mild and equable climate, a vast surface of land, a rich varied vegetation, noble forms of animals. The Pliocene abounded in species of elephant, rhinoceros, hippopotamus, and horse, now extinct. There are abundant traces of oxen, deer, carnivora. It is considered that from the Eocene to the Miocene was a time of rapid introduction of new species, but from the Pliocene to the post-Pliocene and to the modern there seems to have been a diminution. The Pleistocene is remarkable for the advent of man. He seems to have had his first dwelling in the East—a pleasant land, where flesh food was not strictly necessary for him.

The history of the earth is wonderful. The consecutive formation of continents, deep oceans, mountain ranges, indicates repeated upheavals, subsidences, curvings, caused by

crust-contraction resulting from the dissipation of heat. The extent and rapidity of these changes, the wear and tear of Nature, were great in the earlier periods; and, apparently irregular in their course—one wave interfering with another. It is not necessary to believe in many destructions and repeated new creations; an economy of internal and external parts—a continuous connection between the distribution of living things over the globe, their variation and modification, the relations of land and sea—were not fortuitous; but, with the wonderful art in Nature seen in form, ornament, physiology, are the sum of the action of mysterious Energy on matter, and part of a great philosophy. Every one being the complex of so many relations, a conjuncture of so many events, a synthesis of so many energies, that to know one event thoroughly is not possible, except by an intuition embracing the whole universe. Unity everywhere as expression of will, and varieties not unbounded, but in definite lines, show that law is not fate—things becoming different when the conditions of their existence change. The origin of life was by interference of a Power exceeding all that is mechanical in matter: the formation of a new state from a previous state by means of a process which we cannot investigate, and of which we know nothing; nevertheless we can affirm—Life is not a functional product, but that by which function is possible and actual. When vegetation appeared, the inorganic was subjected; when animals came, the vegetable was subordinated; when man entered, life-energies advanced to mental and moral manifestations. The complication seems like a vast ocean-swell. On the surface large billows roll, themselves bearing smaller waves and wavelets roughened by ripples, the accumulated momentum disappearing only to reappear. Every commencement having origin in some pre-existing source of power, this power being the manifestation of a principle, active in every form of matter and path of motion, impressing our thought with the conviction that beyond all, and containing all, is the Infinite and Eternal.

When men tell us that their mechanics are the highest phenomenal conception which can be formed to represent the Ineffable Reality, or rashly assert that humanity is the most

perfect type of existence in the universe, they are like minnows mistaking their native rivulet for the outlying ocean. True men know that these rivulets have their origin in water-threads drawn from the mountain-side. They ascend the mountain, guided by the thread, till finally they arrive at the vast snow-fields of the summit. There, where earth ceases, they stand perplexed, thrilled, awed—they worship; worship the great God who makes the thread of light, the cloud of spray, the leaping cataract, the flowing river, the sea-wave, the floating mist, the snow-flake, to be embodied histories.

Of the innumerable combinations of matter in infinite space, and of the progressions of energy, we know but little. To assert that "yonder hundred million spheres" contain no forms of existence transcending manhood—as manhood transcends life in the rain-drop, that our intelligent will is not a sparklet of the Intelligent Will, is not so much a height of unwarrantable assumption as an abyss of folly. We are sure that there is a vast outlying invisible World. No merely ideal production, though beyond the range of actual presentation. The domain of the senses is almost infinitely small in comparison with the vast regions which can be traversed by the intellect. Some of these regions are in strict accordance with the visible, and may be dealt with in confidence; or they may be disengaged from conformity with any rubric of the known, because—though affording a base-line for some proximate measurement of the parallax of the inaccessible—they yield only indistinct views of a spirit-world. A spirit-world not ceasing to be spiritual because it has means of passage to, and modes of action on, our intellectual and moral nature, even as refined and immaterial existences freely pervade the grosser. Our range of possible knowledge is practically infinite, nor must we allow Materialists to deprive us of those vast and glorious operations which belong to intelligence, nor to shut us within the bars of that which we touch, taste, see, hear, smell.

Further—The constant change by which the pole of our earth revolves round the pole of the ecliptic, so that the pole-star of to-day will not be the pole-star 3000 years hence, is a regulated process extending to all things, even to those which

seem lawless. The two hundred and seventy or more volcanoes constantly or intermittently throwing out steam, hot ashes, lava ; the story of the submergence of an ancient continent, whether fabulous or true ; the Atlantis of Plato, even if but a myth ; may be accounted for by law. Law, infinite in variety of operation, making of the sea a continent, and of the continent a Polynesia ; interspersing catastrophes with uniform operations, so that no catastrophe is too great or too sudden to be theoretically inconsistent with the reign of law ; variations in flora and fauna being wrought by some continuous influence acting for ages ; or, it may be, at some special moment starting out on a new line ; or a comparatively swift energy stamping old forms with a new type. One germ is microscopic, but it develops into a highly organised animal. Another germ is also microscopic, in no wise distinguishable from the other, but it becomes an animal altogether different. These changes are all governed by a deep and wide-reaching law, but we are absolutely ignorant of it. Must we say, because of that ignorance—"Law is Fate?" Certainly not. The world, in some respects, is inscrutable ; but we know that our will avails something in it ; know of God, and that His will avails much more. To say that the Supreme must not be accounted Intelligent because all our notions of intelligence are limited, is equal to the absurdity of declaring that there cannot be one infinite space, because space, however extended, must lie within another space.

It has been well said—"The undevout astronomer is mad." Why mad? Because he knows—no one better—that the worlds in space are manifestations of a Power to which no limits can be assigned, either in time or space. This is the scientific, fundamental truth as to Godhead, and the man of science knows that "the heavens declare the glory of God."

To tell us we must not worship God because His essence, His energy, His infinity, His eternity, His omnipresence, are incomprehensible, draws forth the reply—"When our intelligence is baffled, when the Infinite confronts us, we worship : " were He less, He would not be great enough for our faith and too little for our heart.

“Great God, our littleness takes heart to play  
Beneath the shadow of Thy state ;  
The only comfort of our littleness  
Is that Thou art so great.”

*Faber.*

Not ignorantly, not measuring the Creator by the creature, we adore Him as that highest absolute Being in whom all possibilities of existence are comprehended. We consecrate memories of the illustrious dead—those who, under God, have made us what we are. We rejoice in that communion of saints, unseen yet real, whose heroic sufferings rise to heaven as a sacred prayer—whose heroic actions are a psalm of praise ; and our enthusiasm grows into devotion, reverence, majestic grandeur, when assembled myriads worship.

We take facts as we find them. Butler said—“Things are what they are, and the consequences of them will be what they will be ; why, then, should we desire to be deceived ?” The facts are evidence of a far-extending purpose ; every part seems worked with much art, and assigned to appropriate place. Blind necessity must always and everywhere be the same unreasoning thing, cannot be more than inert dead equilibrium, cannot produce complex exquisite beauty and order. “If men of piety were also men of science, and if men of science were to read the Scriptures, there would be more faith on the earth and more philosophy.”<sup>1</sup> We should be led in a more direct and simple way to the feet of our wise and loving Father. A true foundation would be laid by knowledge, love, obedience, for happiness in every individual life, and for rendering beneficent the growing complications of human society ; while our study of Nature would be rendered more honourable by possessing the dignity of an inquiry into the ways of God.

The duration of life on our globe is but a single pulsation of the mighty life of the universe. Nay, the duration of the planetary system itself is scarcely more. Life, then, is a very small matter ; yet, for life the whole scheme seems planned. Countless other systems, unless science is utterly at fault passed through their processes and died out, that our sun and his family might be formed of their nebulæ ; and countless

<sup>1</sup> Hamilton, “Royal Preacher.”

others will be built when our habitation of life has fallen to ruin. The infinite universe is, and must be, so far as we can understand, without beginning and without end. The centre is everywhere, the circumference nowhere. Not suns only, but systems of suns, and galaxies of systems, are passing to higher and higher orders—connected with time intervals infinitely great and infinitesimally small. Infinitesimally small as compared with eternity in which they are lost. Infinitely great in comparison with the duration of our earth, and the yet smaller span of its existence as a dwelling for life. Nevertheless, it is at the least "probable that every member of every order—planet, sun, galaxy, and so onward to higher and higher orders endlessly—has been, is now, or will hereafter be, life-supporting 'after its kind.'"<sup>1</sup> It is, therefore, utter unwisdom to suppose that our earth is the only inhabited orb of the universe. Though, when we scan the sky, millions of lifeless worlds are found for every life-sustaining star; and though the life-sustaining condition of stars and suns and galaxies is a period short indeed as compared with their duration; yet, that life-period is their flower and fruit time.

It seems, indeed, as if the support of life was Nature's great purpose. Land, water, air, teem with life. In the bitter cold of Arctic regions, with strange alternations of long summer day and long winter night, frozen seas, perennial ice, life has a hundred forms. The torrid zone, blazing with heat, parched with drought, fierce raging hurricanes driving away oppressive calms, contains myriads of living things. Mountain summits, depths of valleys, mid-ocean, arid desert, warm and salt springs, are all inhabited. So, likewise, in past ages there was abundant life. No trace remains of millions and millions of the primitive living creatures in the earliest eras; yet, from the remains of other eras we know that life abounded in the sea—forming strata after strata; and that multitudes fed on the land.

This incalculable multiplication of life on earth is greatly due to solar agency; and physical laws, like those ruling our planet, are traced everywhere; the unbounded diffusion of sun and star light warrants our faith that there is life in many

<sup>1</sup> "Life in Other Worlds:" Richard A. Proctor.

worlds. The same physical laws operate, so far as our science extends, wherever matter is ; and we reasonably conclude that the same moral power exists in every abode of mind. Why may not the universe be aglow with the lamplight and hearth-light of many happy homes ? The suns are not mere gilded shows, nor blazing points. They are sources whence flows the physical power by which advances are made through low grades of being to high corporeity. The material universe is a palace of the King, vast in extent and duration, rich with varied existences of intelligent creatures. Our own home is only a hamlet on the side of a great mountain range ; but the magnificent bodies of light, scattered over infinite fields of space, worlds and worlds suspended in heights and depths, are palaces lit up with splendour. We cannot but think that Intelligence, at the very heart of things, is conducting many families in the paths of love. Life is not a continual struggle with brute irresistible force, but a process whose work is the survival of the best. Our thoughts, when gone, are not dead ; or if dead and buried in forgetfulness, recollection, the angel of memory, raises them and they live again. Shall not all the dead be raised ? Are we not as lasting on the spiritual as on the physical side of our nature ?

“ My heart is renewed within me when I think  
Of the great miracle that still goes on  
In silence round me—the perpetual work  
Of Thy creation, finished, yet renewed  
For ever.”

*William Cullen Bryant.*

## STUDY XI.

### DAY III.—CREATION OF PLANTS.

“ Flower in the crannied wall,  
I pluck you out of the crannies ;  
Hold you here, root and all, in my hand,  
Little flower—but if I could understand  
What you are, root and all, and all in all,  
I should know what God and man is.”

TENNYSON.

STUDY the Divine statement—“ Let the earth bring forth grass, the herb yielding seed, and the fruit tree yielding fruit after his kind, whose seed is in itself, upon the earth.”

Plants are organised living beings, void of feeling and voluntary motion. All living organisms are continually receiving additions to their substances, and so long as these exceed in quantity the parts removed, they grow. Growth is the power to receive nutritive matter, and add it to the structure : that is, integrating the surrounding elements with itself. The growth of a plant depends on the abundance and size of the masses of nutriment which it is able to appropriate. Growth has limits, but they are wide apart. At one extreme may be invisible organisms, for certainly there are monads so minute as to be but imperfectly visible even with microscopes of the highest power ; at the other extreme are trees of more than four hundred feet in stature. High organisation is not always endowed with great size, nor is the ultimate maximum determined by the initial bulk, but the possible extent of growth, other things equal, depends on the organisation. “ Who would believe that, did not he every day see it ; who can conceive how, although he seeth it, from a little, dry, ill-favoured, insipid seed thrown into the earth, there would rise so goodly a plant, endued with so exact figure, so fragrant smell, so delicate taste, so lively colour ? By what engines it

attracteth, by what discretion it culleth out, by what hands it mouldeth, its proper aliment ; by what artifice it doth elaborate the same so curiously, and incorporate it with itself!"<sup>1</sup> This act of growth, not explainable on any known mechanical principles, is called "vital;" and the origin is thus stated in Scripture—"God causeth the grass to grow for the cattle, and herb for the service of man" (Ps. civ. 14).

Food is necessary for this development : carbonic acid taken in by the leaves *pari passu* with the decomposition of  $\text{CO}_2$ ,  $\text{CO}_2 + \text{H}_2\text{O} = \text{COH}_2 + \text{O}_2$ . From  $\text{COH}_2$ , the various carbohydrates are built up ; while the proteids, which nourish protoplasm, are probably constructed by the plant from a carbohydrate and ammonia, much work is done by means of the root. Carbonic acid is dissolved by the rain in passing through the atmosphere, is also produced by the slow decomposition of mould—the carbon of which unites with the oxygen of the air held in solution by the water. A little nitric acid may be formed by the direct oxidation of the air during storms. The ammonia is a product of decay. Carbon is to be specially distinguished : it combines with other elements in manifold relations of number and weight, and with oxygen, hydrogen, specially nitrogen, forms that protein matter which is the staff of all life.

The organised substances, formed in the plants, are generally ternary compounds of carbon, hydrogen, oxygen. Carbonic acid, ammonia, soluble phosphates, sulphates, supply most of their materials. The alkaline bases, which play an important part in vegetation, reside in the rocks—which must be decomposed and become soil for nourishment.

All living things respire, *i.e.* give off carbonic acid as the result of the wear and tear of tissues. The process is *masked* in plants by the taking in of a greater quantity of carbonic acid, and by its decomposition. Fungi are, in some respects, like animals : they live on organic food, inhale oxygen and give out carbonic acid. The roots and leaves of the higher plants are widely different in their functions : the roots absorb water and mineral substances, the leaves take in and decompose carbonic acid. The excretion of plants is chiefly by

<sup>1</sup> "A Defence of the Blessed Trinity : " Isaac Barrow, D.D.

the roots, but also by the leaves, glands, bark. Thus, to perform the nutritive functions of their life, plants absorb, breathe, assimilate, perspire, excrete: nor is this all—they sleep by night, awake by day, and some are of different sexes.

“Let us, in imagination, peer into the ultimate particles of the living, active, moving matter, and consider what we should probably discover. Were it possible to see things so very small, I think we should discover spherules of extreme minuteness, each being composed of still smaller spherules, and these spherules infinitely minute. Such spherules would have upon their surface a small quantity of matter differing in properties from that in the interior, but so soft and different that the particles might come into very close proximity. In each little spherule the matter would be in active movement, and new minute spherules would be springing into being in its central part. Those spherules already formed would be making their way outwards, so as to give place to new ones which continually rise in the centre of every one of those animated particles. . . . The change which occurs in the living centre is probably sudden and abrupt. The life flashes, as it were, into the inanimate particles, and they live.”<sup>1</sup> This is a scientific conception of the manner in which the work was done when God said—“Let the earth bring forth grass.”

It is really a very nice question whether we can trace any difference between the ultimate plant and the ultimate animal. Corals, long taken for vegetables, are, after all, animals. There are certain minute fresh-water animals which may be cut to pieces and multiplied exactly as plants are multiplied by cuttings. Cuvier, in the first volume of his great work, “*Le Règne Animal*,” says, an animal has power of locomotion, an internal reservoir in which to carry its food, a digestive cavity, and an alimentary canal. He further states that an animal must possess muscles, nerves, and all that apparatus by which locomotion is brought about; must have a more complicated structure than a plant—for while a plant is composed of oxygen, hydrogen, carbon, an animal possesses also nitrogen. He claimed, as an essential feature in animals, that they take in oxygen, and give out carbonic acid; while

<sup>1</sup> Dr. Beale's “*Protoplasm*,” 3rd ed. p. 277.

plants take in carbonic acid, and give out oxygen. Now, as matter of fact, very few of these diagnostic marks stood the test of further inquiry. There are innumerable lower organisms which feed as animals, but have no permanent digestive cavity. They are soft masses which take in food at any point of their circumference, and get rid of it in the same way. As to an animal being of a more complicated structure, we find, by means of the high-powered microscope, that animal and plant start from one common point; all the diverse tissues issuing from a transparent, structureless, colourless, semi-fluid liquid; the cell of a plant being developed in the same way as a scale of the epidermis in man. The starting point, both in plant and man, is in living matter, which increases in size, divides and subdivides into a mass of similar nucleated cells. As to chemical composition, recent investigations show that all living matter contains nitrogen. As to the statement that animals take in oxygen, and give out carbonic acid; while plants take in carbonic acid, and give out oxygen; it is now shown that, when the sun ceases to shine, the plant exhales carbonic acid just the same as an animal; and that colourless plants and fungi exist like animals—taking in oxygen, and giving off carbonic acid. The mobility of some plants is now also well established. Multitudes of plants are all their life in active motion, and no clear line can be drawn between the contractility of plants and animals. Considering the insectivorous plants, it is almost impossible to distinguish, by any visible character, a difference in the reflex action existing in plants and that existing in animals; so that no one can say whether plants have or have not a nervous system, except by not distinguishing what we call nerve in the plant. It is true, however, a plant is able to make its bodily substance out of inorganic chemical substances; which an animal cannot do. A bean will grow in a nitrate of ammonia and saline solution, and the resulting substance of the bean contains matters of which there is no trace in the solution. An animal can only break down and appropriate the protein compounds furnished by other animals or plants. "He is the aristocrat, and the plant is the ideal *prolétaire* of the living world." The Bacteria,

generated in vegetable and animal infusions by means of germs which float in the air, are vegetable; but that other busy little body generated in the same infusion, which Professor Huxley calls "*Heteromita lens*," may be animal; there is a border territory between the two kingdoms, a sort of neutral land, the inhabitants of which cannot be separated with any certainty, or brought to their proper allegiance in either kingdom. We cannot as yet say—"Here the line between the animal and the plant must be drawn."

Tournefort's system of vegetation contains twenty-two classes; that of Linnæus, twenty-four; the natural method by Jussieu, the basis of a complete scientific tabulation, comprises fifteen classes, one hundred natural orders, and about one thousand seven hundred and forty genera. The sequence of orders now generally adopted is that proposed by De Candolle.<sup>1</sup> The result of all the various schemes establishes two primary divisions of all plants:—

*a.* Phænogams, or Flowering Plants.

*b.* Cryptogams, or Flowerless Plants.

*a.* The Phænogams subdivide into—

1. Dicotyledons—plants with two seed lobes;

2. Monocotyledons—plants with one seed lobe.

*b.* The Cryptogams subdivide into—

3. Acrogens—vascular plants for the most part;

4. Thallogens—purely cellular plants.

"Beyond this, except in the case of Cryptogams, it is difficult to establish any subdivisions higher than that of Orders; and of the Phænogamous Orders themselves, it is astonishing how few are absolutely limited."<sup>2</sup>

To assert that Moses has given, in his brief account of the formation of plants, a prophecy of scientific classification would be unwarrantable; but it is, to say the least, remarkable that his "*Grass*," "*Herb*," "*Plant*" (Gen. ii. 5), "*Tree*," should happen to be that number of which scientific men say—"It is difficult to establish any subdivisions higher than that of Orders." "In the popular mind, plants are still classed under the heads of trees, shrubs, and herbs; and this serial

<sup>1</sup> "*Descriptive and Analytical Botany*," p. 165: arranged by Sir Joseph Dalton Hooker.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.* p. 591.

classing, according to the simple attribute of magnitude, swayed the earliest observers."<sup>1</sup> The utter indefiniteness of ancient sacred description, wanting even the rudiments of scientific form, may fairly and safely be taken as a commendation: for as to Phænogams, the first and chiefest of the Botanical kingdom, "a large proportion either are connected with one or more others by a series of interminable genera, or contain genera which present so many of the characters of other orders, that it is altogether uncertain in which of them they shall be placed."<sup>2</sup> Nor is it to be forgotten, that the roots of the Hebrew words themselves yield a more correct and scientific meaning, if such be required; but it is more akin to the spirit of the Divine narrative to take the Scriptural simple and popular compendium—grass, herb, plant, tree—which men generally look upon as including all vegetation. Had Moses endeavoured to give us some idea of the results of evolution, so far as they are now accurately known, he could not better have described them than "by seizing the successive salient points in a continuous history of myriads of years—projecting them on the mind like a succession of dissolving views, which gather into distinctness or fade away into nothingness, like the dawning and the parting of the day."<sup>3</sup>

No hard and fast lines can be drawn. We have remarked already that of the two hundred and seventy-eight of the Phænogamous, or flowering orders, described by Dr. Hooker, "Descriptive and Analytical Botany," excluding those containing only one or two genera, it is astonishing how few are absolutely limited. With flowerless plants, or Cryptogams, the case is different; but even these can only be strictly limited, if it be limitation, by making them very comprehensive. The same fact extends through all natural history. There are whole classes of organisms to which it is impossible, even with the widest reservations, to apply the old idea of species, with its immutability of essential characteristics.<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> "Principles of Biology," vol. i. p. 295: Herbert Spencer.

<sup>2</sup> "Descriptive and Analytical Botany:" arranged by Sir Joseph Dalton Hooker.

<sup>3</sup> Rev. T. G. Bonney, F. R. S., "University Sermon:" Cambridge, April 29, 1877.

<sup>4</sup> "The Doctrine of Descent:" Prof. Oscar Schmidt.

Botanical and other systems are but superficial, they rest upon forms which are in an extreme grade of mutability, and it is not a little wonderful that Scripture should give a general formula which substantially contains the present scientific classification.

It may be said of the creative narrative—Only those vegetable productions are meant which are useful to man ; and that trees and plants of this character were of later appearance on the earth, and only just preceded man.

The best reply to such an objection is utter denial. One must not be tempted into argument that the families of vegetables and animals were probably introduced according to the order in which naturalists have of late classed the flora and fauna. It is better to rely on the general and comprehensive character of Scripture ; it were needless to seek scientific and technical accuracy ; for, really, the objection confirms the ancient narrative. Grass, herb, tree, fruit tree, are simple comprehensive words, which of old, and even now, popularly sum up all vegetable life. Vegetation grew from the simpler to more complex forms. The earliest plants which are known in the fossil condition to geologists are fucoids, and they were probably true seaweeds, or algæ. In fossil shells of the Silurian age, traces of the presence of microscopic fungi, such as *Achlya penetrans* (Duncan), have been found. Some of the higher Cryptogams, closely allied in their construction to those now existing, have been got out in the fossil condition from the Devonian and Carboniferous strata, associated with Calamites and Lepidodendron. The earliest plants were marine. Then came land forms of simple and more complex construction, but still belonging to the lower orders. Conifers, or Gymnospermous Exogens, were with these and other plants in the Carboniferous age ; there was structural variety in those remote days. Flowerless plants, with fronds, were succeeded by those possessing stems and leaves. The early plants could contribute little, if at all, to the support of high animal life ; nevertheless, grass and herb are of ancient origin, their early existence may certainly be inferred from the presence of various insects in the Lias and Tertiaries. Dicotyledons, of Angiospermous kinds, abounded in the Cretaceous strata of

America and Europe. Probably, preceding all these, a microscopic vegetation universally existed. It is a beauty, and not defect, that the simple formula of words given in the Bible contains and describes the lowest and highest products, the earliest and latest vegetable life.

Who will say that the modern scientific classification—

Phænogams, or Flowering Plants,	{	1. Plants with one seed lobe.
		2. Plants with two seed lobes.
Cryptogams, or Flowerless Plants,	{	3. Vascular plants for the most part.
		4. Purely cellular plants.

is simpler, more comprehensive, intelligible, and beautiful, for ordinary people, than the ancient words, roughly translated, grass, herb, plant, tree?

We now summarise, in briefest possible manner, the succession of vegetable life on the earth.

The groups did not come into existence at once; in the main, the lower groups appeared first, and the higher last, substantially in accord with the Scriptural statement.

The earliest known vegetation "consisted principally of the lowly organised Cryptogamous, or flowerless plants. The Mesozoic formations, up to the Chalk, are especially characterised by the naked-seeded flowering plants—the Conifers and the Cycads; while the higher groups of the Angiospermous Exogens and Monocotyledons characterise the Upper Cretaceous and Tertiary rocks."<sup>1</sup>

The process was slow and gradual, and, for the most part, without sudden breaks, proceeding to a greater or less extent, by way of evolution; so that many existing species are the modified descendants of fossil forms, even as those were derived from pre-existent forms. At the same time, there are facts which prove the existence of some law of a deep and far-reaching character, by which alone can be explained the constant introduction, throughout geological time, of new forms of life; for example, the wonderful Dicotyledonous flora of the Upper Cretaceous period burst into view without any prophetic announcement from the older Jurassic.<sup>2</sup> This is yet more specially the case with animal life. So far as we

<sup>1</sup> "The Ancient Life History of the Earth," p. 371: H. Alleyne Nicholson.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.* 373.

know, the Graptolites and Trilobites had no predecessors, and have no successors. Insects appear suddenly in the Devonian, and the Arachnides and Myriapods in the Carboniferous strata, under "well-differentiated and highly specialised types."<sup>1</sup> Nor is this all: there are various groups, and some of them highly organised, which continue almost unchanged, and certainly unprogressive, throughout geological time. They indicate that under given conditions, at present unknown, a life-form may subsist for an almost indefinite period without any modification in its structure.

One cannot but admire, in connection with this continuance of work "by some orderly and constantly acting law of modification and evolution,"<sup>2</sup> and in connection with "the constant introduction throughout geological time of new forms of life," which "have no known predecessors, and have no successors,"<sup>3</sup> the Scriptural use of the word "day." Day, in its minuteness, reduces the initiation of living things to exceeding brevity of time; and day, in its expansiveness, comprehends innumerable ages; so that whether we think of the constant introduction of new forms, or of the continuous operation by which old forms are modified, both are wrought in the Day of God.

Pursue the inquiry:—

i. Is it possible that plants were produced under a denser, cloudier, moister, and more disturbed atmosphere than the present?

ii. Did plants precede animals?

iii. Were plants of Divine origination?

i. As to the origination of plants without sunlight, we admit that it is simply impossible for the cooled earth to have been without the sun as luminary, and without alternate day and night. Tidal marks are found in the lowest rocks (Azoic), and thus we know, comparatively early, of the moon. It is also to be taken as a fact that the sun, like the earth, was formerly hotter than at present. "We can imagine that one effect of its heat was to throw off from its surface such enormous clouds

<sup>1</sup> "The Ancient Life History of the Earth," p. 373: H. Alleyne Nicholson.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.* p. 372.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.* p. 373.

of absorbing vapour, which cooled as they left the surface, that the effective amount of radiation reaching the earth might not have been greater than at present. So it is possible to conceive a uniformitarian state of radiation from the sun, accounting for it by saying that when the sun was hottest and was radiating the most, it was simultaneously raising the greatest amount of obstructions to the propagation of radiations from its surface. A similar argument might, of course, be devised with reference to the greater amount of vapour which increased solar radiation would raise to be condensed in the earth's atmosphere."<sup>1</sup> Hence it is at least not improbable that the photosphere might be partially obscured by non-luminous matter, and that a dense cloudy atmosphere surrounded the earth. In any case, the earth long ago was an incandescent mass, itself as a sun; and only as the earth cooled and darkened, the clouds became less dense and the atmosphere clearer, would the sun and moon be revealed as rulers of day and night.

Plant tissues contain less nitrogen than animal, but mainly because they contain less protoplasm. Plants are greatly dependent on solar rays for their vital activities; but there is, at least, one marked exception. Of a considerable group, the Fungi, many members, if not all, can live and grow in the dark. Moreover, in great depths of the sea unpierced by light, in dark caves, and in many places of gloomy obscurity, there is vegetable life. The life, however initiated, is maintained by transformation of heat from the sun and from the earth. The seed of a plant, buried in the damp earth, grows by the integration of adjacent nutritive materials; the energy effecting the union is, or is by, the undulations caused by warmth of the soil. Diminish the warmth, as in winter, and the seed will not grow. As to the sun's action, the slower undulations, dark waves not seen, penetrate the soil, set in motion the atoms of the rootlet, and enable them to perform vital acts.

This helps us to conceive the nature of the earliest vegetation: rudimentary sporules, with neither radicle nor plumule, possessing some resemblance to imperfect plants that are counted of recent formation.

<sup>1</sup> "Recent Advances in Physical Science," p. 174: P. G. Tait, M.A.

So soon as plants with delicate green stalks tipped with leaflets are to be formed, there must be those rapid waves of the sunbeam, known as light and actinism. These enable the leaflets to decompose the carbonic acid of the atmosphere, by communicating motor energy to the atoms of chlorophyll, so that the chlorophyll can dislodge adjacent atoms of carbon from the carbonic acid in which they are suspended: this plants destitute of chlorophyll cannot do.

Hence, whether viewed popularly or scientifically, we have a great truth: the Energy preparing those germs, developed in the earliest manifestations of vegetative force, was in operation even when the sun and earth abode in cloudy tabernacles. We can well understand that Moses might have a moral purpose in view, that to check the idolatry of sun-worshippers he would wish to state that life was of God in its origination, not by the sun, but before the sun; yet that his, so-called, rough unscientific account should agree with the latest scientific verity—that life-energy, indeed all energy, is a product and transformation of pre-existent energy—can by no means be owing to his wisdom; it must be attributed to that mysterious influence which we name “Divine Inspiration.”

ii. Did plants precede animals?

Relics of animals are found in the oldest organic rocks, with the lowest and earliest known vegetable forms. It is possible, barely probable, that the primal forms of life have been preserved in some primitive fossils. From the layers of crystalline charcoal (graphite) found in the metamorphic rocks, we conclude that vegetable and animal life existed side by side in earlier times. Certainly, animal life did not wait till vegetation was perfected; the lower forms soon appeared, and grew contemporaneously with plants, both advancing till land and sea were replenished.

Plants, as a class, exhaling oxygen—as an incident in their nutrition, and animals respiring carbonic acid, are necessary to one another; nor can the highest forms of either exist without the presence of both in the earth: plants building up themselves with the carbonic acid given out by animals, and animals inspiring the oxygen which plants exhale. The balance of the gases and elements is thus beneficially main-

tained by the antagonistic compensating actions of the two kingdoms, whose continuous adjustment of internal to external relations necessitates and comprehends all the activities of vegetable and animal life.

As we find relics of both in the oldest organic rocks, and know that both are needed for the highest forms of either to exist; and that, viewed in their earliest stages, the animal arises as the plant; we might conclude their nature to be the same. Nevertheless, as great groups, they have not the same birthday, do not live after the same manner, nor upon the same substance. The following twofold fact proves that, after a certain point, animals and plants are essentially distinct and wide apart. Plants can form protoplasm—that is, support themselves by means of inorganic substances; animals cannot. Carbon and oxygen unite to form carbonic acid, hydrogen and oxygen produce water, nitrogen and hydrogen give rise to ammonia. These are all lifeless; on these a plant lives and thrives, but an animal famishes and dies. The animal's highest feat of constructive chemistry is to raise dead protoplasm to a higher form of living protoplasm; but plants form protoplasm of that which is not protoplasm, even from carbonic acid, water, and ammonia. They, and they alone, build up that matter of life which is the vital substance of the universe. We can hardly think that Moses was accurately acquainted with the discoveries of modern chemical science; nevertheless, he records the great fact that plants preceded animals.

iii. Were plants of Divine origination?

The Power by which matter organises itself, grows into shape, and assumes definite forms in obedience to the definite actions of energy, is a manifestation of that great Unknown whom all phenomena reveal; otherwise, the molecules themselves are creators, and we have no end of little gods. The celebrated Robert Boyle regarded the universe as a machine—but then a machine should be defined as an organism with life and direction from outside. Thomas Carlyle prefers regarding it as a tree—a tree may be defined as an organism with life and direction within. We, in a degree, may adopt both conceptions, for both imply the interdependence and harmonious interaction of parts, and the subordination of

organisms to some universal plan. The elements do not spontaneously convert themselves now into iron or wood; now into the oak, or into a giant tree on the shores of the Senegal; now into the delicate petals of an evanescent flower, or into human brain. If the ruling constructive power is not Spirit, all things are material, and there is no guiding Mind; but all things are not material. We have the "imponderables"—things of old supposed to be matter—such as heat, light, etc., now known to be but varieties of Energy. These are not matter, but have real and objective existence as any portion of matter. How is it, moreover, that we, material organisms, feel, think, remember, will, and discharge the functions proper to mind? If, in us, matter has manifestations of mind, why not in the universe at large? It is but strife of words to contend whether the powers be of mind or matter; in either case, organism generates intelligence, or is by intelligence generated. That organism does not generate but manifest life and intelligence seems certain from the fact that life and intelligence are powers, and rule; but Nature cannot create power, therefore life and intelligence are from a higher source.

We may safely admit the natural agency which science has discovered—"All the energy which we derive from plants and animals is drawn from the sun, . . . the energies which we have been accustomed to call vital . . . may have a proximately mechanical origin."<sup>1</sup> Very well, there is not the least objection to a mechanical formula for what belongs to mechanics; nevertheless, bear in mind—We look at the matter of the living plant and animal; we see this transparent, colourless, structureless, semi-fluid stuff move; it moves in any and every direction of its own accord; but how it moves, grows, forms, divides, no man knoweth; if there is structure or mechanism, it is utterly invisible. When God said—"Let the earth bring forth," the earth brought forth by its own God-given power; and mechanical power, vital power, moral power, spiritual power, are all emanations of Divine energy. "The reason why the old fable speaks of the spontaneous life of men is, that in those days God Himself was their Shepherd,

<sup>1</sup> "Vitality:" Prof. Tyndall.

and ruled over them, just as man, who is by comparison a Divine being, still rules over the animals."<sup>1</sup>

When God placed sun, moon, stars, in the firmament, to lighten this and other worlds, He endued them with seasonable and prolific influence. It may be audacious and startling, but not new to say—"We are all children of the sun." "It is of little moment whether we express the phenomena of matter in terms of spirit, or the phenomena of spirit in terms of matter,"<sup>2</sup> if we allow that matter is not a brutal and malignant thing, but that good servant of God by whom wonderful works are done, and with whom beautiful shapes are wrought. Moses had anticipated scientific theories when he wrote of "precious fruits brought forth by the sun" (Deut. xxxiii. 14); and he warns us against both ancient and modern sun-worshippers by recording the fact that God can and does make these things according to His own will.

The scientific hypothesis is that life began in simple primordial organisms. The Bible account in no way contradicts the microscopic statement, but builds up all life from the ground; and the hypothetical monads, or bioplasts, or whatever they may ultimately be called, of grass, herb, plant, tree, which were caused to have in themselves the power of reproduction, are as wonderful and complicate in their origination and development as would be the instantaneous appearance of trees already loaded with fruit. Worlds within worlds were contained in those early organisms. They enclosed, potentially, the beauty, power, and life of grass, herb, tree. Milton wrote:—

"One first matter all,  
Endued with various forms, various degrees  
Of substance, and in things that live, of life;  
But more refined, more spirituous and pure,  
As nearer to Him placed or nearer tending;  
Each in their several active spheres assigned;  
Till body up to spirit work in bounds  
Proportioned in each kind."

*Paradise Lost.*

---

<sup>1</sup> "Plato's Dialogues—Statesmen," p. 271: Jowett's translation.

<sup>2</sup> "Physical Basis of Life:" Prof. Huxley.

Richter conveys a lesson good and true—"I picked up in the choir a faded rose leaf, that lay under the feet of the boys. Great God! what had I in my hand but a small leaf with a little dust upon it; and upon the small fugitive thing fancy built a whole paradise of joy, a whole summer dwelt upon this leaf. I thought of the beautiful day when the boy held this flower in his hand; and when, through the church window, he saw the heaven, and the clouds wandering over it; when every place in the cool vault was full of sunlight, and reminded him of the shadows on the grass from the overflying clouds. Great God! Thou scatterest satisfaction everywhere, and givest to every one joys to impart again. Not merely dost Thou invite us to rest and exciting pleasures, Thou givest to the smallest an exciting perfume."

No psychologist will deny that plant life affords glimpses of the transcendental. It combines many principles, brings into concert many powers; and the delicacy of its parts, the complexity of its construction, the special and elaborate adaptation of function to function, denote high art in form and colour; and are, in some respects, an epitome of all being. We have in plants a mirror of the adaptation of the general properties and affinities of the inorganic world to the purposes of life. They oppose the outward rush of force from our system, arrest a part, fix it as potential energy; and, hindering the process of dissipation, accumulate subsistence and permanence that man may have time to acquire dominion over the visible universe, and be prepared for nobler part in that which is as yet unseen.

In the several members, organs, functions of plants, we possess the first lodgment of the spirit of life wrought into Nature by the creative energy of the Eternal. Plants are endowed with life, not self-living. The general spirit of life is in them, but no soul; not even that brute-soul which is attributed to beasts. The psychological fact, for symbolical refraction, is—that in every human soul is first formed a tree of life, rooted in the heart, attaining summit or crown in the spirit. "Thus, as by the tree of life, the kingdom of plants is represented in the soul. There are formed in it also, by

strong spiritual operation, lifeless forms, more strongly or more weakly stamped as animal, which encamp around our heart ; and these, even though they have no life of their own, are stirred at the heaving of the passions."<sup>1</sup>

The thought, even though it be visionary or poetical, is worth enlarging, and in another direction. Try to conceive of a spirit, in its initial period, secluded from contact with the material universe, acquainted only with mind. Such a spirit, awaking to consciousness of the properties of matter, would become, so to speak, new born ; and take possession of another nature. He would find the various substances which are furnished by the soil, compounded, by modes transcendental, into other specific substances. The mechanical adjustment of parts, root, stem, leaves ; in absorbing, respiring, expiring ; in secreting, accreting, excreting ; contain, in a mystery, the animal system—that harmony of a thousand elements. Taught by this material knowledge, that spirit would begin to reflect upon its own nature. Thus the genesis of matter, and the introduction of natural life, possibly enlarged the knowledge and power of the spirit-world. Consciousness of the natural world may impart to spirits an experience somewhat akin, yet diverse, to that which spirit imparts to the human soul. Passing things more recondite, there would be the fact of solid extension, the mechanical properties of hardness, softness, roughness, weight ; the chemical properties in their varieties of pungencies, flavours, perfumes ; and the vibrations of sound in melody and harmony ; so refined, numerous, complicated, as to double all former powers of enjoyment. The boundary is not yet attained of sensitive existence : more light would break in, and the universe stand revealed in all its beauties and glories. The great contriving Mind would be viewed, ever and ever starting from and to a higher point ; not only in effecting delicate and complicated mechanism, but in so adapting the elements of the material and spiritual systems that eternity calls time to walk in Nature's wonderful avenue. More mysterious still, spirit enters flesh ; then, wonder of wonders ! in fulness of time, the Infinite and Eternal, who incomprehensibly manifests

<sup>1</sup> "System of Biblical Psychology : " Prof. F. Delitzsch.

Himself in space and time by all phenomena, dwells in that holy human form, Jesus.

Language fails in utterance of thought. Who can put into words the deep truths which underlie our consciousness of Nature, and of those vast substantial spiritual realities on which are based the glorious things of Revelation? The commonest facts which lie ready to our hand, in their essence, have relations with infinity; nor can we understand how moments of time are linked by consciousness into the chain of our life; but still, though with darkling rather than glimmering knowledge as to possible instruction of angels by the creation of our own world, the symbols used may be fairly taken as indications that our own knowledge and faculties of enjoyment will enlarge in the future according to the measure of Divine things attained in this life; and that these seeds of wisdom will not only grow into flowers of thought, but yield glorious fruit in some paradise of God.

## STUDY XII.

### DAY IV.—THE SUN.

"There are men who, seeing the great power this sun hath, are secretly enticed in their heart ; and with their mouth have kissed their hand to him."—JOB xxxi. 26, 27, freely rendered.

TWO dangers are to be guarded against in handling any science touching Holy Scripture : (1) an unwise adoption and adaptation of discoveries which seem to confirm the sacred statements ; (2) an unworthy fear that any truly scientific result can be adverse.

These dangers may be turned into deliverances. It is not long since the sciences were mere aggregations of empirical knowledge. Astronomy could hardly be called a science in the days of Hipparchos, seeing that physics did not begin, as a science, till Galileo discovered the law of falling bodies. Chemistry began two hundred and seventy years later, when Lavoisier, discovering the true principles of combustion, overthrew the doctrine of phlogiston. At the end of the eighteenth century biology began, Bichat pointing out the relations between the functions of organs and the properties of tissues. Sociology is not yet a science. Scientific religion will not be completed until the whole physical and psychical nature of man, physics and metaphysics, history and revelation, the natural and preternatural, are regarded from the highest point attainable by human nature. Meanwhile, assured as we are by the co-ordination of all our faculties that the religious sentiment will find as great, or even greater satisfaction in the future than it has in the past, and because the recognition of a Power which is beyond humanity, and upon which humanity rests, will become, by the advance of science, a scientific verity ; it is well to remind the fearful that religion is not "a polity *de novo*," but built on the concrete facts of past ages.

It views the individual in his relation to the Supreme, who is manifested in creation, revelation, providence, history. It sanctions, sanctifies, and renders possible, the true morality which ought to govern men in relation to their fellow-creatures. Religion and morality condemn whatever hinders or mars physical and spiritual completion of life; give the aspiration—the noblest we can entertain—for complete fulness of life; and yield philosophic explanation of the marvellous range of human sympathy, and of our irrepressible yearnings after the Divine. The divines and sages of the past were neither knaves, nor the dupes of knaves, but genuine philosophers; they not only made the best use of such implements of research as they possessed, but embodied in the spiritual organisation of creeds that which alone, of all the things in the world, was found capable of holding society together in troublous times, or of giving consolation to men in their affliction. The divines and sages of our own time are preserved from hasty and unwise use—even as they have no servile dread of scientific discovery. They have faith in a guiding and beneficent God, who inaugurates and maintains a better state of society here, as preparation for a more glorious future, by effecting not merely change of opinions, but improvement of heart.

St. Augustine cried in amazement, "Wondrous depths of Thy words! whose surface, behold, is before us inviting to little ones; yet are they a wondrous depth."<sup>1</sup> The amazement of Christians is not less in these days: the Book grows more venerable in antiquity, becomes more reverend in authority. The consideration of physical truths proves that Moses—living in what some account barbaric time, as to science—was certainly wise; and that the message which he claims to have received from God is undoubtedly true. Scientific difficulties, far from casting doubt on the faith in which we were nurtured, confirm, in their explanation, its Divinity. If the science of one age could fathom all depths, the Book, revealing those depths, might be wholly of man—a production of the land of Egypt and house of bondage; but knowledge opening new domains for wisdom to possess, finds new meaning. The

<sup>1</sup> Conf. lib. xii.

old words, the old thoughts, remain ineffaceable ; but the child of the flesh is also a child of the Spirit—God's witness to the human heart. Moses dwelt in a land of sun-worshippers, and could not forget the sun ; amongst men who laid stress on the letter of Nature's book, and rendered every symbol of the Divine a myth of some special divinity—a god of day and light, a god of night and darkness, a god of water and a god of fire, a god of good and a god of evil, god warred against god ; nevertheless, Moses restored our knowledge of One true God. In laying the foundations of this higher knowledge, he advanced from Nature to Nature's God, from the seen to the unseen, entered that which the poet can only look upon from afar—

" All experience is an arch wherethro'  
Gleams that untravelled world, whose margin fades  
For ever and for ever when I move."

Impartial men will allow, that if Moses wrote such an account of creation as can stand the investigation of accurate modern science, he was the most wonderful of men.

Christians claim more for the account : assert that the formula of Creation does not instruct men in science, yet contains even all which it revealeth not : is a formula, with mystery of deep within deep, for the profound ; but to the simple-hearted as a clear lake wherein the face answering to their face is the Human Face Divine. A formula, wherein the problem to be solved is the equation of all things and nothing, the finite and Infinite, time and Eternity, must be a Divine product. No other intelligence, not even that of the highest archangel, knew or saw the primal generation ; and no creature can understand or describe that genesis by which worlds—relatively eternal and infinite, both as to the past and the future—begin, continue, end—the end issuing in the birth of new worlds evermore.

This formula, being for men, is to be regarded in human fashion. It reveals a process in which God, everywhere and in all things, everlastingly calls forth successive existences to live, move, have being in Him. To high intelligence, the process stands out in complete result, somewhat as it is in

presence of the Eternal, absolutely apart from time. Between these conceptions of creation—one of infinite extent and eternal duration, the other a gathering of all into one comprehensive "Now"—intervenes all that variety of representation ranging from a glance—as by instantaneous flash revealing a vast panorama, to that display which we possess in Genesis when, enlarged by scientific conception and knowledge, we discern—

" Our destiny, our being's heart and home,  
Are with Infinity, and only there."

Thus searching the Divine Narrative, we find that events are as the rise and fall of a curtain, day and night cast light and shadow, voices and commands order the process, the formless takes shape, a long-hidden beginning is revealed and developed, the Spirit of God shines on the face of a great deep, and chaos passes into Creation. There are shinings—light; openings—firmamental expanse; gatherings and flowings—the great deep; rising as from watery womb—the new land; life germinating—afterwards to grow in power beneath sunny beams. We conceive that this whole process might pass before the spirit of Moses in a series of days—a thousand of years to a day, or a day as a moment. The element of time is index, not computation: every day being yesterday's child and tomorrow's parent. The creations of God in plant and fish, in bird and mammal, appear not so much near or wide apart, as standing out with distinctness.

We are bound by the same analogy to regard the order or progress as not necessarily in a straight line; but, possibly, that described by those complex curves in which are contained the progress yet continual return of the heavenly bodies in their vast career. Expositors of the Divine Procedure do not bind Scriptural narrative in those cords of exact order and sequence which science imposes on her own small essays and experiments. Revelation states why God made the world, science endeavours to find how God made it. Revelation is for moral purpose, science for physical investigation. At a time when men worshipped the sun as Lord of Life—as did the Egyptians, and as do some Materialists now—that moral purpose is best served, and men are best instructed, by decla-

ration that they live not by sun-power, but by God-power. On this moral ground we vindicate the insertion of life as precedent to acknowledgment of the sun as ruler. Should our scientific argument fail to convince, the Divine Act stands by its own integrity.

Try the scientific investigation.

Time has surprises and revenges. We have seen how light shone out of darkness, now we shall find that the sun is not a naked and terrible wilderness of tempestuous combustion; but affords in its consideration a well-spring of intellectual delight.

The Sun's Origin.

Till of late it was tacitly assumed that the sun did during the past, and will through the future, emit an unfailing amount of light and heat. All that is now abandoned. In whatever shape energy manifests itself in the world, it must have existed previously under another shape. Solar radiations are the changed form of some other energy: possibly that by which the matter of the sun, once diffused in space, was drawn to his centre of gravity from a distance extending far beyond the outermost planet. A mass of coal, the size of the sun, would only suffice to give so large an amount of heat for five thousand years. The hypothesis of the falling together, from widely scattered distribution in space, of the matter which now forms the various suns and planets, is generally accepted. As the mass of our sun aggregated and condensed, heat grew with the force of impact, and the luminous atmosphere was of gradual formation.

According to another theory, possibly the rarefied gaseous condition was caused by excessive temperature, and condensation began with the cooling and contraction of the mass. If we unite both theories, then the solar system was evolved by the processes of contraction and accretion; and, according to the theory of Laplace, the planets were fashioned in the order of their distances from the sun, the remoter being first formed. In the drawing of cosmical matters to the sun, the vaster the distances the more violent the impact. "The rush of matter which we now recognise affords, perhaps, but the faintest indications of the amazing conflicts in which our

system had its birth. Tracing back the history of that system, we seem to recognise a time when the sun's supremacy was still incomplete, when the planets struggled with him for the continually intruding materials from which his substance as well as theirs was to be recruited. We see him clearing, by the mighty energy of his attraction, a wide space around him of all save such relatively tiny orbs as Venus and the Earth, Mars, Mercury, and the asteroids. With more distant planets the struggle was less unequal. The masses which flowed in towards the centre of the scheme swept with comparatively slow motion past its outer bounds, so that the subordinate centres there forming were able to grasp a goodly proportion of material to increase their own mass or to form subordinate systems around them. And so the planets, Jupiter and Saturn, Uranus and distant Neptune, grew to their giant dimensions, and became records at once of the sun's might as a ruler—for without his overruling attraction the material which formed these planets would never have approached the system—and of the richness of the chaos of matter from which his bulk and theirs was alike derived. Nor is the consideration without a mysterious attraction, that in thus looking back at the past history of our system, we have passed, after all, but a step towards that primal state whence the conflict of matter arose. We are looking into a vast abyss, and, as we look, fancy we recognise strange movements and signs, as if the depths were shaping themselves into definite forms. But in truth those movements show only the vastness of the abyss; those depths speak to us of far mightier depths, within which they are taking shape. 'Lo! these are but a portion of His ways; they utter but a whisper of His glory.'<sup>1</sup>

Truth is stranger than fiction and excels romance. Many ages back, in the immeasurable swoop of the past, an enormous moving mass existed and collided at and around the place now occupied by the solar system. This mass, obtaining swift and vehement rotation, assumed a somewhat globular shape. Huge rings of matter were integrated during successive ages of spinning and revolving—so were the planets formed. These again broke into portions—so are satellites

<sup>1</sup> "The Sun;" R. A. Proctor.

accounted for—while certain whiffs or puffs gave birth to some of the eccentric comets. Many of the meteorite systems still visit us, although they belong to the great primary mass. The array of sun and planets, the pomp of all material worlds, are a procession and gathering from the unseen to the seen, out of infinite to finite space. Their duration, compared with eternity, is as the flight of birds into our horizon—to pass out again and be no more seen.

#### The Sun's Age.

“It has never been maintained that the matter of the sun was created or even organised on the fourth day.”<sup>1</sup> Theologians hold that the development of the solar system includes all terrestrial arrangements. The formation and operation of the sun and of the earth were co-ordinate and partly contemporaneous. The sun, the earth, and other planets, being for one another, their whole substance formed part of that universal cosmical arrangement which is described Genesis i. 1. Dr. Buckland, p. 27, “*Bridgewater Treatise*,” observes—“We are not told that the substance of the sun and moon was first called into existence on the fourth day. The text may equally imply that those bodies were then prepared and appointed to certain offices of high importance to mankind, to give light upon the earth, and to rule over the day and over the night, to be for signs, and for seasons, and for days, and for years. The fact of their creation had been stated before in the first verse.”

Against this it may be urged—“The text says the sun was made on the fourth day, not made to appear. Just as God made the firmament, made the beast of the earth, made man, so did He make two great lights and the stars. There is an end of all ingenuousness in interpreting Scripture, if we foist in one of these examples a meaning not borne in any of the others.” The reply is simple and convincing—The word “made” is not to be strained in the least, and when we say it means, not the making of globular and opaque masses in the depths of space, but the making of visible lights as they appear moving in the sky, that meaning is correct and natural. If, moreover, our science is correct as to the progressive con-

<sup>1</sup> “Genesis,” p. 151: Prof. Lange.

condensation of the sun, the luminous atmosphere would be cleared gradually during the sun's process of integration as a revolving light. The development of the earth is an analogue of the development of suns and stars. As the earth condensed, so the sun condenses. One theory supposes the condensation of the sun and planets from a nebulous mass, whatever that may mean; and the condensation of the sun from the original mass can be calculated. Professor Helmholtz gives a formula.<sup>1</sup> Work of condensation =  $\frac{3}{8} \frac{r^3 M^2}{R m} g$ . The mass of the sun is  $M$ , the mass of the earth is  $m$ ; the sun's radius is  $R$ , the earth's radius is  $r$ . Taking  $M = 4230 \times 10^{27}$  lbs.,  $m = 11,920$  lbs.,  $R = 2,328,500,000$  feet, and  $r = 20,889,272$  feet, we have for the total work performed by gravitation in foot-pounds—

$$\text{Work} = \frac{3}{8} \frac{(20,889,272)^3 \times (4230 \times 10^{27})^2}{2,328,500,000 \times 11,920 \times 10^{21}} = 168,790 \times 10^{30} \text{ foot-pounds.}$$

The heat, thus produced, would suffice for 20,237,500 years; and the quantity of heat given out, which previously existed as original temperature, was 49,850,000 years' heat; making in all 70,087,500 years' heat. This represents the total amount of heat given out since the mass began to condense. Mr. Croll says—"Let us assume that by the time that the mass of the sun had condensed to within the space encircled by the orbit of the planet Mercury (that is, to a space having, say, a radius of 18,000,000 miles) the earth's crust began to form; and let this be the time when the geological history of our globe dates its commencement. The total amount of heat generated by the condensation of the sun's mass from a sphere of this size to its present volume would equal 19,740,000 years' sun-heat. The amount of original heat given out during that time would equal 48,625,000 years' sun-heat, thus giving a total of 68,365,000 years' sun-heat enjoyed by our globe since that period."<sup>2</sup> If the sun's gravity is greatly increased at the centre, the quantity will be considerably more; but there is no warrant for anything like the

<sup>1</sup> "Phil. Mag." sect. 4, vol. xi. p. 76 (1856). Also in "Climate and Time," p. 348: James Croll.

<sup>2</sup> "Climate and Time," p. 352: James Croll.

period demanded by some geologists, and the general conclusion arrived at by measurement of the sun's heat is that one hundred millions of years amply suffice for condensation of the nebulous mass into the present form.

A process of condensation has not only taken place in the sun, but in all members of the solar system. There has been advance, if the generally received hypothesis be true, in every one from the gaseous to the liquid, from the liquid to the solid state, to be followed by extinction of their light. There was a time when the sun did not give light in the manner now given; a time when the earth, even if light were given, could not behold it; a time when all the visible glory was invisible; a time when Nature, as now known, was not; in a Source beyond Nature is Nature's origin to be found. Worlds precede worlds in time, worlds lie beyond worlds in space.

Turn to the account—"God made two great lights; the greater light to rule the day, and the lesser light to rule the night: He made the stars also. And God set them in the firmament of the heaven to give light upon the earth." The stars seem mentioned lest they should be accounted uncreated. Sun, moon, stars, are classed according to their apparent magnitude and importance. The word "made" is more formative than the word "create." It is used for "dressing," "arranging," "making ready." The calf was *dressed* for Abraham's mysterious visitors, and the cakes were *made* of meal (Gen. xviii. 6, 7). The same Hebrew word, used for "dressing," "making," "crowning," informs us that the sun was dressed, made, crowned ruler, to give light on the earth. By the time earth and water were separated, and dense vaporous clouds rarefied, the earth's mass attained a measure of consolidation, and began to exhibit vital power in lowest forms of vegetable organisms; the sun, clearing the photosphere, sent rays of light and heat through the vast pressure of his own vapours, and became lord of the day.

The Sun's Physical Constitution.

The actual density is about one-fourth that of the earth, or a little greater than the density of water.<sup>1</sup> The tremendous

<sup>1</sup> The sun is 1,260,000 times larger than the earth, and 882,000 miles in diameter. More than 1,200,000 earths would be required to form the substance

heat, whatever pressure the gases and vapours are subject to, renders a solid nucleus improbable ; and we must regard the sun as, in the main, a gaseous body. Around it is no permanent or solid crust, but an envelope continually pierced by blasts and jets from within. This great mass, swaying our system, is compressed towards the centre, but hardly any definite theories can be adopted concerning any other than its gaseous condition. The attractive and repulsive forces are such, and the elements exist in forms and quantities with which we are so nearly unacquainted, that when one difficulty is removed from our understanding it gives place to another. The sun's envelope cannot, in any ordinary sense, be counted a crust at all ; but as the vaporous globe is in the presence of the cold of space, there is necessarily a process on the outer surface corresponding to the formation of clouds in our skies. The vapours composing them are chiefly metallic elements, which condensing may descend in sheets of fire, and form a nearly continuous envelope, through which the central imprisoned gases are erupted with great violence. Mr. Proctor states—"The sun is a gigantic bubble whose walls are gradually thickening, and its diameter diminishing, at a rate determined by its loss of heat. It differs, however, from ordinary bubbles in the fact that its skin is continually penetrated by blasts and jets from within."<sup>1</sup>

Sir W. Herschel viewed the sun as a solid globe, around which lies an atmosphere of complex nature. He thought that the real body of the sun was neither illuminated nor heated very greatly. "Whatever fanciful poets may say in making the sun the abode of blessed spirits, or angry moralists devise in pointing it out as a fit place for the punishment of

of one sun, and the weight or mass is 300,000 times greater than that of the earth. Our sun is not a large star compared with others, for Sirius is equal in bulk to more than 4000 suns. The surface of the sun is about 2,284,000,000,000 square miles, there are 3,097,600 square yards in every square mile, and on every square yard a heat is produced equal to that which would be caused by burning on it six tons of coal an hour. The impact of matter falling into the sun merely from the earth's distance, would give 6000 times the amount of energy which would be produced by mere burning. The sun travels at the rate of 154,185,000 miles the year. His mean distance from the earth is 91,430,000 miles ; rotation on the axis occupies about 25.38 days.

<sup>1</sup> "The Sun a Bubble : " R. A. Proctor.

the wicked, it does not appear that they had any other foundations than mere opinion and vain surmise; but now I think myself authorised, upon astronomical principles, to propose the sun as an inhabitable world." Sir John Herschel, the son, took a wholly different view as to the coolness of the sun; and, incredible though it seem, regarded certain bright objects, shaped like willow leaves, lying athwart and across each other, as the immediate sources of the solar light and heat. He says—"We cannot refuse to regard them as organisms of some peculiar and amazing kind; and though it may appear too daring to speak of such organisations as partaking of the nature of life, yet we do know that vital action is competent to develop at once heat and life and electricity."

The sun's surface has not only spots which have a central part and a fringe less dark; but also contains certain bright streaks, by some called *faculæ*, in the neighbourhood of the spots. "The sun-spots are really hollows or cavities in the solar atmosphere where the temperature of the glowing gases has been reduced."<sup>1</sup> The spots are said to be confined to two definite zones, extending about 35° on each side of the equator: a scene of solar tornadoes of white-hot hydrogen, which blow with such fierceness that, compared with these, our most destructive storms are summer breezes. The spots are certainly depressions of greater or less depth, and the light received from the umbra of a spot shines through absorbing vapours. "A great difficulty lies in the fact that we have no clear evidence to show whether the sun-spots are formed by forces acting from without or from within, . . . whether the seat of that action which leads to the formation of a spot lies below or above the level of the photosphere. . . . As to the prominences, it seems to be demonstrated that some are mere clouds in the upper regions of the solar atmosphere, while others are due to some form of eruption, and only assume the cloud form after the eruption which gave them birth has ceased."<sup>2</sup> There are bridges, arcs, stalks, leaves, and veils of clouds, most intricate in structure. The wildest and most fantastic variations take place, renewals of fresh forces with

<sup>1</sup> "Spectrum Analysis," p. 263: Henry E. Roscoe.

<sup>2</sup> "The Sun," pp. 438, 439: R. A. Proctor.

scenes of tremendous tornadoes, swift rushes of glowing vapours and cyclonic motions. The least spot, perceived with the most powerful telescope, has an area of fifty thousand miles; those visible to the unaided eye are enormous. The largest spot recorded had a greater breadth than 143,500 miles. The spots sometimes burst in pieces, like a piece of ice dashed on a frozen pool, and disappear in a moment.

The eruptions, which occur at all times, are vast explosions, seeming to come from some twenty thousand miles below the edge of the sun's disc, and extend many thousands of miles in every direction. There are brilliant, silver, copper, and ruby-coloured coruscations. The velocity has been known to exceed two hundred and fifty miles a second. They are of glowing hydrogen, and other vaporous elements, through an atmosphere of hydrogen.

Coloured prominences consist of glowing gas of various tints and forms—their origin is still a mystery. The sierra, or rugged line of projections, is made up of ranges of red and other coloured flames, now called the chromosphere. The whole disc of the sun is much marked with roughness like an orange, and some of the lower parts of the inequalities are blackish. The faculæ are ridges of elevation above the rough surface, and sometimes, next to a spot, will be a protuberant lump of shining matter.

Many metals exist in the sun, more than thirty have been found of the fifty-one known on earth. The sun is made chiefly of metals; in our earth metals form the minority.

The surface of the sun is exceedingly complex. Analysis of spots shows three envelopes within the photosphere: the penumbral fringe, the dark umbra, the so-called black nucleus about ten thousand miles below the photosphere. The photosphere is a fourth solar level. The fifth is a shallow atmosphere discovered by Young, extending three or four hundred miles above the photosphere. Sixth, the sierra, about eight or ten thousand miles. Seventh, the prominence region, extending to a height of thirty or forty thousand miles, with occasional extension to more than a hundred thousand miles. Eighth, the inner brighter corona, from two to three hundred thousand miles, expanding in places to four

or five hundred thousand miles. Ninth, the outer radiated corona, jagged in outline and extending fully a million of miles from the visible glowing surface of the sun. All these envelopes are themselves multiple; and the outer corona is but the inner part of a solar envelope, or appendage, with outermost limits lying altogether out of ken. What a complex subject of research lies before our astronomers!

The sun has almost a counterpart in the planet Saturn, whose splendid architecture displays the fashioning power of the great laws of the universe. The beauty of the system, the marvellous gigantic rings, the delicate varieties of colours in the rings and in the planet, the singular problems suggested by their magnificent size, fascinate the observer. If the vast belts are not cloud-masses formed by the sun, their real origin must be in some action of the planet's own mass. The heat of his surface may cause currents of vapour to rise continually; on attaining the upper regions of his atmosphere, they are condensed in the form of a cloud. "A similar peculiarity exists in the case of the sun. Indeed, a somewhat surprising resemblance exists between Saturn and the sun, as regards many important characteristics. The planet, like the sun, is of low specific gravity—very far lower than the earth's; as the sun has eight primary attendants, so Saturn has eight satellites; and as the sun has his attendant disc of minute bodies (seen in the Zodiacal light), so Saturn has his ring system, in all probability, of multitudes of minute satellites travelling in independent orbits around him. Is it not possible that the relation necessary to make the analogy complete may be actually fulfilled, and that Saturn is a source whence heat is supplied to the orbs which circle around him?"<sup>1</sup>

The analogy may be added to by a further fact—Jupiter, with his dark bands, seems now to be in the same state as was our earth. His cloudy shifting streaks; and the appearance, at times, as of mountains or openings; may be inaugurating new days and nights in that far-off mighty planet.

It is not necessary, for those who believe that all things are of God, to adopt any scientific theory as final. Mayer and Thomson maintained that the sun's heat, compared with

<sup>1</sup> "Essays on Astronomy," p. 99: R. A. Proctor.

which the fiercest fire of a mass of white-hot iron is cold as ice, is sustained by the continual infall of cosmical bodies. Helmholtz supposes that gradual contraction of the solar orb is the mainspring of solar energies. Secchi believed that the fund of force lies in the union of the sun's own elements in chemical combinations. Sir John Herschel said, that mayhap the vital energies of monstrous creatures are the source of the luminary's might. The facts are so wonderful that even a sober explanation must appear wild, discovered realities are more sublime than any fictions that were ever addressed to the imagination.

#### The Sun's Rule.

He draws to himself all such cosmical matter and bodies as come under his exclusive influence, either by leaving the domain of some other star, or on account of his own motion through space. These do not all remain with him ; but, after paying their respects, return to the sidereal depths to be attendants on other suns and stars, to perform functions in many worlds. Around him are millions of millions of bodies of varying velocities in different directions ; clouds of cosmical atoms shifting and changing, aggregating here, segregating there ; but, as a clustering solar appendage, permanent—an aureola of tremendous dimensions and startling magnificence. The meteors encountered by our earth every year are upwards of 2,700,000 visible to the naked eye ; including shooting stars, only seen by telescopic aid, the hypothetical sum is 146,000,000,000. The space between the earth's orbit and the sun cannot be less rich ; in fact, there must be an increasing aggregation of meteoric matter as the solar globe is approached.

By the exercise of his mighty attractive influence, he controls the force which would drive planets and meteors far out into space from the influence of his lighting, heating, actinic influence. So perfect his government, that the processes of slow change take place within limits, and the continual variations produce permanence in paths ever varying around him. By slowly exerted influence, he changes the eccentricity of our earth's orbit, causes the terrestrial equinoxes to circuit the ecliptic in their grand precession of 25,868 solar years ;

continents become oceans, and seas dry land ; one hemisphere and then another supplies fruitful fields ; activity follows rest, and rest activity ; during many ages, the globe has been, and will continue to be, a fit abode of life and beauty.

In one sense the sun's sphere of influence includes all space, but for practical purposes we regard it as limited and definite. His power is 315,000 times greater than the earth's. It might be supposed that a very vast increase of velocity is needed to change our periodic revolution ; but if the earth's speed were raised from its actual rate, 18·2 to 19 miles the second, to about 25·7 miles the second, we should be carried thenceforth further and further away from light and life. Still rotating, day and night still succeeding, the orderly sequence of the seasons would be displaced by continual diminution of solar light and heat ; a cold more intense than that of the bitterest Arctic winter would bind all things in everlasting frost. So true is it, the lights in heaven are for signs and seasons, for seed-time and harvest, for summer and winter.

The sun rules all the vapour of our atmosphere, lifting it up, then casting it down as rain or snow. The mechanical power of every river in the world, the energy of the winds, the growth of trees and vegetables, the support of animal life, are all from him. The blood in our veins—that oil of the lamp of life, the work of our muscles, the oxidation which supports the heart's action—without which it would be utterly consumed by its own action in eight days, prove that we are children of the sun. In tracing out all these powers to their source, we come to one power—the sun. He is the natural agent, and it is as easy for men to see the Providence of God in the natural ordering of the world, as in startling and miraculous occurrences.

For many æons the sun and our earth were "a fluid haze of light ;" then again, for other æons, our earth, like the sun, was a globe instinct with fiery heat in which no life could live after the manner of life now known. The potential germs of life might have been present in the midst of the fire, but only after periods infinite to our conception could life, such as we know it, or in the remotest degree like it, begin to exist. It is probable, however, from the fact that seeds, in order to

germinate, must be placed in darkness—this being the case even with those plants which cannot flower and fruit until they receive the solar beams and power—that the living principle began to germinate ere solar beams shone with great light on the earth. The sun was hotter formerly than now, but the Zodiacal light and corona may have had particles not luminous which hindered the shining forth of great light. It may be that when the sun was giving forth most heat he was simultaneously raising the greatest amount of obstruction to the propagation of radiations from his surface.

This throws light on the Divine Narrative. Grass, herb, tree, are representative words for all vegetation; and grass comprises that low order, called Cryptogams, or flowerless plants. The earliest may have been like those fungi which are found in mines, quarries, and gloomy or dark places. Herb and tree stand for that growth of flowering plants, including modern cereals, fruit and forest trees, which now adorn the earth; but probably did not exist until required for the nourishment of animal life. We may reasonably conclude that, lord of earthly life as is the sun, creative energy waited not for his manifestation on the fourth day; but that in the water and on the land, even before the sun's face was cleared from the battle and smoke of early cosmical struggles, life became rooted in the ground and floated in the waters; and when, with clear face, the monarch surveyed the earth, many other forms of life sprang up gladdened with his smile.

#### The Sun's Path through Space.

As knowledge and piety extend the horizon of view, the world enlarges to our contemplation; we travel beyond the sphere of sun, moon, earth, planets, and enter new firmaments to behold other suns and stars of greater and lesser splendour. The vast system, of which we are members, is hastening, with meteors, comets, satellites, asteroids, planets, sun, from the southern rich region of stars—the neighbourhood of Canis Major, Columba, and Lepus, to the northern rich region—where the chiefest splendour is gathered in Cygnus. We speed along a relatively barren path, from a rich past to a glorious future, at a rate of one hundred and fifty-four millions one hundred and eighty-five thousand miles the year. We

circle a centre in the direction of Alcyone, a star of the Pleiades, of which Job (xxxviii. 31) said long ago—"Canst thou bind the sweet influence of Pleiades?" Round some central sun, or central void without any preponderate mass, or in a great vortex-ring, we move as parts in a scheme too wonderful and complicate to be as yet interpreted, and we complete the course in about eighteen million two hundred thousand years.

As the earth and other planets are carried on, their orbits continually advance; the earth, beheld from the sun, is but a dust-mote in his beams; and the actual path, year by year, is through fresh space. Viewing the sun, as among other suns, and the planetary orbits, as seen from the fixed stars, those orbits are little more than a point, and the sun is invisible. What lines of gigantic boundary fix the order and place of every constellation! What unknown possibilities lie in that measureless extension of space where worlds are sprinkled as dust of gold for the display of intellectual and moral life! Our sun and his fellow-suns are connected with groups of minor suns, with clusters of star-dust, with masses of star-mist, with whorls and convolutions of nebulous matter, sometimes combined in vast spherical gatherings of worlds. There are orbs lying in such close order that we think great brilliancy is in those heavens; but, after stricter examination, they are found wide apart as the inconceivable distance between our sun and his nearest fellow. Further off, are stars whose rays take thousands, perhaps millions, of years to reach the earth. The arrangement is of striking order, and the possibility of it having sprung up by chance is so ridiculously small that Quetelet calculates it is as nothing. There is a multiplicity of worlds in infinite space, and a countless succession of worlds in infinite time, with point or base of gravity regulated by the weight and motion of all. Great and glorious is the Garden of God. The suns are planted in flowering beds of many splendid colours. The planets interweave in sparkling germination, various foliage, blooming fecundity of borders. Dark suns, weird places, cavernous chaotic regions, shadow forth the desolation of eternal wintry fields. There are ridges and clusters, rows and shelvings, spirals and streams, in celestial

depths where are signs of as yet unthought of laws. "I shall maintain it all my life, whoever says in his heart there is no God, and makes use of a different language, is either a liar or a madman."<sup>1</sup>

Scripture holds closely to mundane affairs, yet the very ground on which religion and morality are based, is that we move in a wider circle than the physical; that spiritual beings, good and evil, enter our firmament, concern themselves with the destiny of our race; and that we, after a rational service in duty and trial, shall enter a vast congregation of pure spirits who are further within the circle of Divine Power, and nearer to the manifestation of Divine Glory. Meanwhile, God guides us by His hand, and in His heart has sympathy. Life's trials cast down, but not destroy; lightning may rend the firmament, yet awake no fear; and sickness, touching our body with premonition of the grave, brings conviction that we shall live again. Like the suns and stars, kindled into splendour from previous worlds, our restored spirits, with frames purified and refashioned, will evermore live on, and find starry pathway to the Eternal Throne.

Thoughtful men studying the Sun's Path through Space, Rule, Physical Constitution, Age, Origin, receive a deep impression that the Divine account, the simplest in the world is not vague nor indefinite; but startling, grand, abrupt. The appearance corresponds to our limited aspect of Nature, words and times agree with our ignorance and mortality, but possess an inner spirit revealing powers of the world to come.

Marvellously strange! The pomp of heaven is made a plea for clothing the earth with poor garments, and the Father's boundless wealth a reason that we should expect nothing. Forgetting that if a narrative, like that of Scripture, bristling with apparent contradictions, startling and bold in a sturdy contempt of confidence in human will and wisdom, is found to agree with accurate science, the Book must be of God; an attempt is made to turn God's greatness against us. We are asked—"Of what consequence can men, their pleasures or their pains, be to Him in whose sight all the worlds our

<sup>1</sup> Rousseau, "Emilius," vol. ii. p. 230.

eye can see are less than a speck in infinite space?" Those who charge the Bible with narrowness pervert the splendour of God into a plea that He is too great to love mankind. The Being whom they profess to hallow is made less wise, less good, less wonderful, by the assertion that He cannot and will not visit us. Why should our reason be less firm in structure, or analogy concerning this be entitled to less confidence, than when we consider smaller things? If the incalculable multiplication of worlds, and the necessities of a rule that is infinite, hinder not the fashioning of a moth's wing so that it possess a very firmament of beauty; why should not the All-good and Holy devise a plan for rendering us good and holy, in a manner far exceeding human thought as the elaborate many-chambered houses for tiny and invisible life transcend our comprehension?

The philosopher delights to show that a grain of sand on the shore of a sea, and a thought in the mind of a child, are bound by a law which cannot be broken, with a past that is infinite and a future that is eternal. The Christian rejoices to know that God has a plan for every man—that the provision for a soul's salvation is infinite, connected with worlds and times, transactions and interests, surpassing knowledge. To God, in a human sense, is no such thing as absolute size; relative greatness and smallness—nothing more. To us things appear small when scarcely seen by the naked eye; very small when a powerful microscope barely suffices to render them visible; and the space between us and a fixed star is enormous as compared with that between the earth and sun; but there is absolutely nothing to show that a portion of matter, which even in our most powerful microscopes is hopelessly minute for investigation, may not be complex as the stars that exceed our sun in magnitude.

Continue and enlarge the thought. The whole truth, whether as to great or small, is transcendental. The universe in grandeur, in extent, in variety of mighty orbs circling mightier suns; those suns themselves glittering attendants of other centres, stupendously wonderful, whose circuit it may be that no created intelligence is able to measure; leads to the conclusion—confirmed by astronomy—that the spectacle

revealed by the telescope, though too vast for human conception, is but a sparklet of the whole that infinity and eternity contain.

A similar exercise of scientific imagination, but intensified, reveals worlds of life within a rain-drop sphere; discerns existences to which the needle-point is a vast plain; and these, again, are lords of worlds extending inward for ever and for ever.

Such intellectual recreations prove, to minds capable of them, that an invisible point may present infinite internal capacities for Divine operation; and that on every such point, throughout all space, may be arranged worlds and worlds of mystery and skill not less wonderful than those which demand infinitude of space for their display; for, indeed, it is true that God can make the small to be great, and the great to be small. Our own littleness contains very wonderful greatness though we have put away the arrogant notion that human existence is the central era of time, as we have laid aside the error that our solar system is central within the universe. There seems no centre, nor are there limits; rather, the centre is everywhere, the circumference nowhere; and the human period is scarcely a ripple on the ocean of time. God, nevertheless, has so elaborated our thought that we think as if He thought but of us, and made our destiny His only care. This is not, on our part, wholly erroneous; for, to us, we and our world are indeed a centre whence radiates infinity. By creation, and more wonderfully by the Plan of Salvation, we are connected with a system that, materially and spiritually, arrays around it height and depth, length and breadth, the infinite past and the infinite future. Actual discoveries of science make possible, if not probable, all that comes within the compass of analogy. We only look at the dial-plate of Nature—the forms and semblances of things; but even our present faculties enlarged would be able to inspect the wheel-work and springs; hence belief is warranted that the seed of power within us, our intuitions—which already somewhat penetrate mysteries seeming impenetrable—may be capable of enjoying vastly more of the Infinite (1 Cor. ii. 9-15). If so, our earth is a centre of wonders, and on the hinge of life

revolves a surpassing destiny. The universe is all aglow with the lamp-light and hearth-light of our Father's House. Life seems to many as the bubble of a solitary pool come up to look at the sun,—bubble clothed about with tender fibre of mortal hue, to float over the glowing ripple, hither and thither, who knows? But the bubble bursts; it has come in contact with some weed or spray, and the crystal sparklet flies. Whither? We say—"To be re-formed, to be enlarged, to become a glorious sphere, filled with new life from God through Jesus Christ our Lord." Believe

"That nothing walks with aimless feet;  
That not one life shall be destroy'd  
Or cast as rubbish to the void,  
When God hath made the pile complete.

"That not a worm is cloven in vain;  
That not a moth with vain desire  
Is shrivel'd in a fruitless fire,  
Or but subserves another's gain."

*Tennyson, In Memoriam, liv.*

Στενή ἡ πόλις οὐχ ἡ πόλις.

Via longa et arcta, sed urbs ampla.

## STUDY XIII.

### DAY V.—FISHES, REPTILES, BIRDS.

“The natural and moral constitution and government of the world are so connected as to make up together but one scheme: and it is highly probable, that the first is formed and carried on merely in subordination to the latter, as the vegetable world is for the animal, and organised bodies for minds.”—BUTLER'S *Analogy*.

IF we stood in space, far off from the solar system, we should see the worlds as a distant gleam. If then, standing not so far off, we beheld the light and motion of the planets and satellites, we might think that all matter was alike, all motion of one kind, and that both existed according to some simple mechanical and chemical laws. On nearer approach, seeing the world's living things, we might conclude, in the absence of evidence to the contrary, that some law of invariable causation was absolutely universal. Alighting on the earth, among men, we should discover that Nature spoke to all, and separately to each; that what every man heard he set down in feeling and thought, so that the symbols of his own experience represented the order, arrangement, fulness, reality in Nature, even as a page of algebraic figures can be read off into thoughts concerning the variety and splendour of light. If to this personal equation, to these qualities for physical and metaphysical research, bringing tidings that the circle of the known is surrounded by an ocean from whose depths arise other lands of beauty, were added a greeting of the spirit encouraging contemplation of the Unknown—the Great Cause of all: our conclusion would be that infinite space existed for matter, much less than space; that matter existed for life, much less than matter; that life existed for mind, least of all, yet greater than all—ruler of all.

Regard this world of matter, of life, of mind, as a mechanism driven by blind energy; such energy, unless continually

restrained by mind giving it law, would break up the universe. We can think this out. The transfer of energy into things necessary for the existence of life, and to effect physical changes in the universe, "is on the whole a passing from higher to lower forms; and, therefore, the possibility of transformation is becoming smaller and smaller; so that after the lapse of sufficient time, all higher forms of energy must have passed from the physical universe; and we can imagine nothing as remaining, except those lower forms which are incapable, so far as we yet know, of any further transformation. The low form to which all transformations with which we are at present acquainted seem inevitably to tend, is that of uniformly diffused heat. . . . Now, when all the energy of the universe has taken the final form of universally diffused heat, it will obviously be impossible to make use of this heat for further transformation."<sup>1</sup> The worlds will be dark—dead—cold. This process, leading to chaos, enables us distinctly to say—"That the present order of things has not been evolved during the infinite past by the agency of laws now at work, but must have had a distinctive beginning."<sup>2</sup> This beginning must have been by other than the now visibly acting causes. The only way out of the difficulty is to regard mind, matter, energy, as alike real existences. We know of mind by organism, does organism generate mind? The reply is—Organism does not even generate life, life certainly generates organism; organism therefore cannot generate mind which is the highest attribute of life; consequently, we regard all physical, vital, mental phenomena, as transformations of energy from the Unknown—the Eternal Source of energy, of life, of mind.

The vitality of plant, of fish, of reptile, of bird, may seem no great thing; but if we consider that every little part of these organisms has its own store of energy constantly emptied and replenished; that the internal and external sources draw upon, and are drawn upon, by the whole arrangement of the world for harmonious working; the mechanism becomes very wonderful. Nor is that all—every

<sup>1</sup> "Recent Advances in Physical Science," p. 20; P. G. Tait, M.A.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.* p. 22.

portion is microscopically constructed, even the excessively minute parts are in exquisite harmony with the grand plan of the universe ; and we cannot but conclude, that if to destroy one atom of dead matter the intervention of Deity is requisite, there must have been at the initiation of life an actual and a special interference of creative power ; for life is not the servant of matter, but ruler ; subordinating, guiding, moulding.

Plato, one of the most thoughtful of ancient heathen, thus reasoned—"Was the world, I say, always in existence and without beginning? or created and having a beginning? Created, I reply, being visible and tangible and having a body, and therefore sensible ; and all sensible things which are apprehended by opinion and sense are in process of creation and created. Now that which is created must of necessity be created by a cause. . . . He put intelligence in soul, and soul in body, and framed the universe to be the best and fairest work in the order of Nature."<sup>1</sup> Coming to our own day, Charles Darwin says—"To my mind it accords better with what we know of the laws impressed on matter by the Creator, that the production and extinction of the past and present inhabitants of the world should have been due to secondary causes like those determining the birth and death of an individual."<sup>2</sup> Very well, then, the natural had its origin in the supernatural, life and death are traced through secondary causes to Divine Will. Even the simplest living beings can be produced only from germs originating in other previously living organisms ; Life is to science an ultimate fact, for which it can only conjecturally account. Another student writes, that he may lead us "to the power of apprehending the unity which underlies the diversity of animal structures ; to show in those structures the evidence of a predetermining will ; producing them in reference to final purpose ; and to indicate the direction and degrees in which organisation, in subserving such will, rises from the general to the particular."<sup>3</sup> Here we have the initial fact—production, and the design of it : the initial fact rendered law possible,

<sup>1</sup> "Timæus : " translated by Rev. B. Jowett.

<sup>2</sup> "Origin of Species."

<sup>3</sup> "Anatomy of Vertebrates," vol. i. p. v. Introd. : Owen.

the design bound that law as an elastic band round the universe, making Providence to be general and particular.

As to the specific nature and continuance of life, the best arguments are facts given by accurate observers :—"It has been deemed no mean result of comparative anatomy to have pointed out the analogy between the shark's skeleton and the human embryo, in their histological conditions; and no doubt it is a very interesting one."<sup>1</sup> This analogy is not inconsistent with the observed tendency of offspring to differ from the parent; nor with the stranger fact—"This tendency and its results are independent of internal volition and external influence."<sup>2</sup> Thus we are led to the great truth—"Every species is such *ab initio*, and takes its own course to the full manifestation of its specific characters agreeable with the nature originally impressed upon the germ. A perch, a newt, a dog, a man, do not begin to be such only when the embryologist discerns the dawns of respective specific characters. The embryo derived its nature, and the potency of self-development according to the specific pattern, from the moment of impregnation; and each step of development moves to that consummation as its end and aim."<sup>3</sup> "An orderly succession according to law, and also progressive or in the ascending course, is evident from actual knowledge of extinct species;"<sup>4</sup> but none can say why circulation in the embryo of lizard, of fowl, of beast, is like a fish in its simplicity, but far from being identical. "It is proved that no germ, animal or vegetal, contains the slightest rudiment, trace, or indication of the future organism—since the microscope has shown us that the first process set up in every fertilised germ is a process of repeated spontaneous fissions, ending in the production of a mass of cells, not one of which exhibits any special character; there seems no alternative but to conclude that the partial organisation at any moment subsisting in a growing embryo, is transformed by the agencies acting on it into the succeeding phase of organisation, and this into the next, until, through ever-increasing complexities, the ultimate form is reached."<sup>5</sup>

<sup>1</sup> "Anatomy of Vertebrates," vol. i. p. 245 : Owen.    <sup>2</sup> *Ibid.* Introd. p. xxxv.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.* Introd. p. xxi.

<sup>4</sup> *Ibid.* Introd. p. xxxvi.

<sup>5</sup> "First Principles," pp. 443, 444 : Herbert Spencer.

The fact is established, the operation of derivative secondary causes is due to a great master Principle : by whose will and power the waters teem with swarms of living things, and birds fly above the earth :—

“ Young fresh blood . . .  
Keeps ever circulating still  
In water, in the earth, in air,  
In wet, dry warm, cold, everywhere  
Germs without number are unfurl'd.”

*Faust.*

Living beings possess at least six leading characteristics.

1. Assimilation—the power of taking in external materials and converting them into substances for building up fresh tissue and repairing waste. By this a living body grows.

2. Alteration—certain periodic changes, in definite order, by which they lose portions of their substance and die : partial death is the accompaniment of all life.

3. Reproduction—Living bodies have, directly or indirectly, the power of giving origin to germs which develop into the parent's likeness.

4. Motion—Every living body is the seat of energy, by which the inertia of matter is overcome ; is master of physical forces ; and this power in man, wielded by intelligence, brings the dead matter of the universe into obedience to his will.

5. The life of all living beings seems to reside in a substance termed “protoplasm,” or “bioplasm,” differentiated more or less, which bears to it about the same relation that a conductor does to the electric current ; but in no way possesses life as an inherent property.

6. The great majority of all living beings are organised—that is, possess organs or parts which perform functions. Do not live because they are organised, but are organised and have structure because they live. There is something in the action and nature of vital energies different from anything observed in physical : it is not organism which gives life, but life which causes organism.

As there are six leading characteristics of life, so are there six different types of animal structure. At first sight we suppose that every kind of animal has its own peculiar plan ; we

do not imagine that a lobster and a butterfly are built upon the same type, yet they really are : all known animals spring from this unity ; and, in spite of their great and many outward differences, are arranged into six kingdoms.

1. PROTOZOA (*πρῶτος*, first ; *ζωή*, life).

Are generally of a very minute size, composed of a nearly structureless, jelly-like substance. Infusoria, rhizopods, and sponges. They are not definitely segmented, have no nervous system, no digestive apparatus—beyond, occasionally a passage in the midst of their protoplasm. The simplest, called Monera, are small living corpuscles ; nothing more than shapeless, mobile, little lumps of protoplasm. Take a rhizopod : from the outside of this creature, which has no limiting membrane, numerous thread-like processes protrude. Originating from any point of the surface, each may contract again and disappear ; or touching some fragment of nutriment, draw it, when contracting, into the general mass—thus serving as hand and mouth. This structureless body may join and become confluent with its fellow bodies ; and, in brief, is at once all stomach, all skin, all mouth, all limb, all lung.

2. CŒLENERATA (*κοῖλος*, hollow ; *ἔντερον*, intestine).

Sea-anemones, corals, sea-jellies, sea-pens. They rise considerably above the Protozoa in organisation. They have a body-wall composed of two principal layers, an intestinal cavity, and a mouth leading into it. They have no organs of circulation ; but a rudimentary nervous system ; the mouth is surrounded by tentacles arranged in a star-like manner. The common hydra is generally taken as a type of the lowest division. It can live when the duties of skin and stomach have been interchanged by turning it inside out.

3. ANNULOIDA (*annulus*, a ring ; *εἶδος*, form).

Sea-urchins, star-fishes, sand-stars, some internal parasites as the tape-worm, with some minute aquatic creatures. The digestive canal is completely shut off from the cavity of the body ; there is a distinct nervous system ; a system of branched water-vessels, usually communicating with the interior ; the body of the adult, often "radiate," is never composed of a succession of definite rings.

4. ANNULOSA and Molluscoida.

Animals with bodies composed of numerous segments, or rings; and nervous system, forming a knotted cord, along the lower surface of the body. Worms, leeches, crabs, lobsters, spiders, scorpions, centipedes, insects.

5. MOLLUSCA (*mollis*, soft).

Shell-fish, snails, cuttle-fish, nautilus. Soft bodies, hard shells; no distinct segmentation of the body; and a nervous system of scattered masses.

6. VERTEBRATA.

Animals with a vertebral column. The body composed of definite segments—each composed of two tubes: a dorsal containing the neural axis, and a ventral containing the viscera, blood-vessels, etc.—arranged longitudinally one behind the other. The main masses of the nervous system are placed dorsally. The limbs are never more than four in number. Fishes, amphibians, reptiles, birds, mammals.

These modern classifications, with man at their head, are very simply arranged in the Divine account of the genealogical tree. Moving creatures in the water, creeping things on land, animals of length, birds, beasts, cattle, man. Marine life, first created, is represented by the earliest fossils; and in the order of creation—plant, fish, bird, mammal: one generation hands a lamp of higher life to the next. To mark off the groups simply as beasts, birds, fishes, creeping things, is to make their differences of appearance, modes of life, and relative importance conspicuous. Creative energy, we may be sure, did not act by breach of natural law, but with power put forth diversely: plant, fish, bird, mammal, were introduced not collectively or simultaneously, but at different periods in the day of life. The earliest possessed characters in combination such as we, nowadays, find separately developed in different groups of animals.

It is pleasant to have the kinship of all things authoritatively stated: the water brought forth, the earth brought forth; the vegetable had seed in itself, the animal possessed life after his kind. Not only are all living animals reducible to five or six fundamental plans of structure; but amongst the vast and varied series of fossil forms not one has yet been found with peculiarities entitling it to be placed in a new sub-

kingdom. The animals belonging to the sub-kingdoms are framed upon the same fundamental plan of structure, forming a few leading types, which are further arranged in a series of subordinate groups. All the shell-fish, for example, are built upon a common plan—a plan representing the ideal mollusc.

In the kinship is individuality, in the unity diversity; kind after its kind being so constituted as to vary greatly in progress of geological time. Every life possesses its own life, and is a mystery great as that of the chemical elements. The primordial germs are essentially different, and tend toward the vegetable, or toward the animal, by such different lines that no plant becomes animal, no coral turns star-fish, no worm grows into leech, no cockle transforms into cuttle-fish. There are organisms with vital action not more lively than that of drops of oil fusing themselves together when they meet, and they attain no higher existence: fuse millions together, yet no other animal is formed.

#### Trace the Process of Life.

All organisms arise out of structureless albumenoid living matter, which in the primal state was not living at all. The essential principles of every change, or the active moving part, no one knows whence nor how they come, enter, and reside in the matter itself; and work, for the most part, from within. The masses of protoplasm, sarcode, bioplasm—call them what you will—when they reach a certain size, generally less than  $\frac{1}{1000}$ th of an inch in diameter, undergo division. The definite size being obtained, which varies in different creatures and textures, but is constant for the same, portions move away; and, at length, detach themselves. The earliest stages of organisms possess the greatest number of similarities. Somewhat further on, the characters are those belonging to a smaller number of organisms. At every advance, traits are acquired which successively distinguish group from group, and are finally narrowed into the highest species of finished structure. Thus were produced, if the scientific hypothesis is correct, many varieties or species: creatures being modified by circumstances for circumstances: heredity and adaptation being the two great agents in influencing the mystery and variety of the living world of forms. In the finished structure

of most advanced life we still find the same original or rudimentary matter out of which all organisms were fashioned, and with which all are now built. Not only so, the screws, fastening the parts; the levers, raising them to a higher state; the pulleys, drawing them together; and the joints, knitting several limbs into one body; are constructed on common patterns. This fact, proving unity in the diverse operations of underlying energy, is a sparkle of the great truth that rules the universe: for example, the hydrogen atoms in the sun and planets vibrating in unison with those on our planet, are like two tuning-forks set at concert pitch; and, awaking human response, we say—"The mighty synthesis is proof that God is One."

The fact is capable of further development. From inorganic world-elements arise all organisms, and every process of initial life is the prophecy of an advanced life. A germ of life, even before it is large enough to be seen, contains in itself a special endowment—the invisible constructive potentiality of every organ. The first steps of life are in a path common to all, but quickly turn aside; and every living creature, by way of its own, arrives at a peculiar destination. In plants we have production and reproduction; in animals, self-perception, self-control, motion; in man, self-consciousness, will, moral power; the whole wrought by a deeper and more far-reaching energy than science can find any satisfactory explanation of: all the vital actions being, as the oscillations of a magnetic needle, moved by unseen influences from within and without.

The bringing forth of kind after its kind, that process by means of which new individuals are produced, and perpetuation of the species is ensured, presents many marvels. Some of the lowest and smallest animals are of both sexes—hermaphrodite. Others are non-sexual, and the young are produced by gemmation or fission.

Hermaphrodites are double-sexed individuals. Many plants, garden-snails, leeches, earth-worms, various other worms, are of this order.

Gemmation (*gemma*, a bud) is the production of young by a bud or buds, usually on the outside, but sometimes on the inside of an animal. Thus new life is formed, which may

either be completely separated from the parent, or remain connected with it, to form a stock or colony.

Fission (*findo*, I cleave) is the production of new beings by the cleavage or division of a primitive zoöid into two or more parts. This fission, occurring frequently, reproduces by tolerably rapid multiplication. An internal fission, or swarming, causes the death of the parent, and produces a vastly multiplied offspring.

In all high kinds of life, and in the Vertebrata, reproduction is always sexual, and the sexes are in different individuals. Most are oviparous, producing eggs from which the young are developed; but the highest vertebrates bring forth their young alive.

Until recent times it was thought that in every species the successive generations were alike—this is called homogenesis. It is now proved that in many plants, and in numerous animals, the successive generations are not alike—this is called heterogenesis. The progeny, differing from the parents, produce others, like themselves, or like their parents, or like neither; but eventually the original form reappears. There is no scientific explanation: we can only ascertain the varying order as seen in different creatures.

In all cases of sexual production, or gamogenesis, there is reason to think that, even among the lowest Protozoa, a fusion of two individualities is the process from which results the germ of a new series of individuals. In humblest forms, which have no differentiation of sexes, the union is not of sperm-cells and germ-cells of the same individual, but union between those of different individuals.

The power is mysterious, and the more so that the cells, or cradles of life, are not greatly specialised in mechanism, rather seem unspecialised; yet, if there is no special arrangement to secure peculiar conditions of existence for different modes of multiplication, it is certain that arrangements which secure these special ends do continually establish themselves. No visible or mechanical property explains the profound distinction between the male and female reproductive elements; but in the union of these begins, at once, or on the arrival of favourable conditions, a new series of developmental changes;

a process of cell-multiplication is set up, and the resulting cells aggregate into the rudiment of a new organism. The force by which two adjacent atoms attract or repel each other, their mode of exercise and law of variation, are incomprehensible. Every effort to understand the essence and origin of life leading to the Great Unknown from whom all life has sprung, according to the patristic interpretation—*ὁ γέγονεν ἐν αὐτῷ ζῶν ἦν* (John i. 3, 4).

We may now briefly summarise some of the principal results to be deduced as to the succession of life on the earth. The creation of marine animals was first, and the first living creature that we know of is the Eozoön. It is not unworthy of consideration whether primal life did not exist when the waters were very warm. Even now the coral luxuriates in the equatorial temperature of 86° and more. There are Infusoria and Crustacea which flourish in warm springs, and the life of a germ cannot be destroyed by simple boiling. "The waters swarmed a swarm," not that the causality was in the waters, but in the creative energy or word—"Let the waters bring forth abundantly the moving creature that hath life (*es sollen wimmeln die Wasser vom Gewimmel*)."  
This life is and has been so abundant that some of the earliest limestones of the globe teem with the evidence of former minute organisms, and this is the case with limestones down to those now forming in the abyss of the ocean. Coral animals were introduced, and since have been found efficient workers; but the deep seas of old, and the depths of modern oceans, both assert that the first workers are pre-eminent. This dawn of life was by a long slow process; nevertheless, sponges, corals, crinoids, trilobites, sea-worms, lingulæ, with many other creatures representing five of the great subdivisions of animals—Protozoa, Cœlenterata, Annuloida, Annulosa, Mollusca—are found in the very old rocks.

These old rocks have rain indentations, ripple-marks, shrinkage cracks, which prove that the actions of rain, of tide, of sun, were the same then as now. The causes which distributed light, heat, moisture, were much the same as those now in operation. "Were there no land animals to prowl along the low tidal flats in search of food? Were there no

herbs nor trees to drink in the rains and flourish in the sunshine? If there were, no bone nor footprint on the shore, no drifted leaf nor branch, has yet revealed their existence to the eyes of geologists."<sup>1</sup> We may, however, be sure that the creative process was not stayed on the land for full development of life in the sea, but that birds and animals lived much earlier than the earliest known fossils indicate. "It is even possible that in a warm and humid condition of the atmosphere . . . when dense 'mists ascended from the earth and watered the whole surface of the ground,' vegetation may have attained to a profusion and grandeur unequalled in the periods whose flora is known to us."<sup>2</sup>

In the Upper Silurian period we find fishes, not of large size, nor abundant, of two separate types. Ganoids, represented at the present day by the sturgeons, the gar-pikes of North America, and a few other less familiar forms; Placoids, or shark-like fishes. These two groups are both distinct and highly organised. Ordinary bony fishes were not introduced until comparatively recent time. In the Devonian era was a vast increase, and it became pre-eminently the age of fishes. New lands were upheaved, with extended muddy and sandy flats around them; shoals of fishes, some very remarkable, swarmed in shallow seas and estuaries. Among the most ancient and curious, appearing also in the Upper Silurian, are the Pteraspis, a tribe of mailed fishes, akin to the Cephalaspis, or buckle-head; its broad flat head being rounded in front, and prolonged at the sides into two great spines. Another group of small fishes, represented by the Pterichthys, had two strong bony fins at the sides, which served for swimming, for defence, for creeping on and shovelling up the mud at the bottom of the sea. There were great fishes with strong cutting double-rowed teeth; with wrinkle-scale, bone-scale, and star-scale; and the huge Dinichthys, having head more than three feet long and eighteen inches broad, two long sabre-shaped tusks, each a foot long, and a body about thirty feet in length. The Carboniferous fish were numerous—great Ganoids, with sharp bony scales and sharp-edged or conical

<sup>1</sup> "The Story of the Earth and Man," p. 32: J. W. Dawson, LL.D.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.* p. 32.

teeth, haunted the creeks and ponds of the coral swamps. Multitudes of sharks, with sharp-edged trenchant teeth ; and one species allied to the existing Port Jackson sharks, their mouths paved with flat teeth for crushing shells, sought prey near shell-banks and coral-reefs. The broad-snouted, plate-covered, mud-burrowing crustaceans, the trilobites, are lost in this period. In the Cretaceous period are found the first examples of the great group of Bony Fishes, or Teleosteans, comprising the great majority of forms now existing. The main forms of fishes characterising the Eocene are like those which predominate in existing seas. Those of the Miocene were abundant, and some of the species attained gigantic dimensions.

The amphibious part of creation is the link which joins land animals and fish through the reptiles ; and it is difficult to classify some aquatic forms either as amphibia or as fish. There are fish which have the habit of leaving the water for a forage on land. Let their fins be lengthened and moderately altered in shape, the tail modified, and we shall have some of our amphibious animals almost to the life.

In the Carboniferous formation the Amphibia were well developed, and Labyrinthodonts, with exquisite teeth, and the Archegosaura, with large heads, short necks, feeble limbs, and strong tails for swimming, were common. They were of higher order than fish, in possessing lungs and feet. Small vertebrates were in the coal forests named Dendropteron and Hylonomus, very reptilian in some points, and probably amphibia in their true nature. "Imagine a little animal, six or seven inches long, with small short head, not so flat as those of most lizards, but with a raised forehead, giving it an aspect of some intelligence. Its general form is that of a lizard, but with the hind feet somewhat large, to aid it in leaping and standing erect, and long flexible toes. Its belly is covered with long scales, its sides with bright and probably coloured scale armour of horny consistency, and its neck and back adorned with horny crests, tubercles, and pendants. It runs, leaps, and glides through the herbage of the coal forests, its eye glancing and its bright scales shining in the sun."<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> "The Story of the Earth and Man : " J. W. Dawson LL.D.

This is a picture of the as yet earliest known lizard, the *Hylonomus*, the oldest animal which has a fair claim to be called reptile. In these rocks are highly organised reptiles, like lizards, with two spinous processes to their vertebræ, with socketed teeth, well-developed limbs, long tails, and biconcave vertebræ. They connect the Carboniferous with the great reptiles of the Mesozoic age. This age was their special time. Some were gigantic, others small; browsers on plants, and terrible renders of living flesh; some had a resemblance or prophecy of birds, and not a few prefigured future mammals. There were the *Iguanodon*, or his relative *Hadrosaurus*, with small head and teeth for munching leaves and fruit of trees; and the terrible *Megalosaurus*, a vast lizard, with some bird-like foreshadowings. The short deep jaws and heads of some others made them like the carnivorous mammals of later times. The *Cetiosaurus*, huge monster, was not less than ten feet in height and fifty in length. There were sea-monsters, with heads eight feet long, and conical teeth a foot in length; but, perhaps, no creatures set before us so fully the stretched-out reptiles of the fifth day creation, as the *Mosasaurus* and *Elasmosaurus* by their enormous length and terrible powers of assertion in the world.

Animals of the water are cold, stiff, mute, in contrast with birds, which are warm, free, and full of melody; yet they are spoken of as created on the same day; and accurate knowledge finds that they are closely allied. The advance to birds was through the lizard: "God created every living creature that moveth, which the waters brought forth abundantly, after their kind, and every winged fowl after his kind." The contrast is between the water and the air; fish in the one, birds flying in the other.

The affinities of fish as to higher creatures may be thus stated—

1. Fishes crawl upon the ground like Reptiles—the Eel.
2. Fishes climb trees like Reptiles, as the *Anabas*, or Climbing Perch.
3. Fishes imitate Birds in using their pectoral fins for flying, as the *Flying-fish*.
4. Fishes imitate Amphibia in using the swim-bladder as a lung—the *Lepidosiren*, or *Mud-fish*.

5. Fishes imitate Reptiles in hatching their eggs internally, as the ovoviviparous Shark.

6. Fishes imitate Birds in building a nest, as the Stickle-back.

7. Fishes imitate Birds in incubating their eggs. This is done by the male Arius, by carrying them in the mouth.

8. Fishes imitate Marsupial Mammals by having a pouch in which are placed the eggs, and into which the young retire for safety. This is done by the Hippocampus, or Sea-horse, and by some species of Pipe-fish.

9. Fishes imitate Mammals in producing viviparous young, as the Ditrema, and the Viviparous-Blenny.

10. Both the Viviparous and Ovoviviparous Fishes imitate the higher classes of animals, in that the male has coition with the female.

11. Fishes endeavour to change their fins into limbs, as the Lepidosiren, or Mud-fish. The Basking-Shark, and some of the members of the order Elasmobranchii, convert their ventral fins into claspers.

The way in which the interval between fish and fowl is spanned, may not be apparent to the unlearned in such mysteries; but to the student, who has studied their inner structure, no insurmountable difficulty presents itself. Let any one notice that the form of the fish glides into that of the amphibian, and that into the lizard; then let him compare the lizard with the bird. Even in the higher crocodilia there are points in the anatomy of the head, of the vertebral column, and of internal organs, which foreshadow the bird. The Plesiosaurus is not very unlike a swan, and yet it is in reality a gigantic reptile. Almost startling is the ease with which, by modifying or developing certain parts, a lizard may be turned into a bird. Hence that which puzzled one in childhood, becomes clear when we inquire into the reason of things. We behold the transformation in those reptile-bats, Pterodactyles, of the Mesozoic ages, which were lizards of a high order. One species had twenty feet of expanse in its wings, the skulls show a good capacity of brain, the skeletons were light yet strong, the hollow bones having pores for the introduction of air. "Imagine such a creature, a flying dragon,

with vast skinny wings, its body perhaps covered with scales, both wings and feet armed with strong claws, and with long jaws furnished with sharp teeth. Nothing can be conceived more strange and frightful. Some of them had the hind legs long, like wading birds. Some had short legs, adapted perhaps for perching. They could probably fold up their wings and walk on all fours." <sup>1</sup> In this old-world time, lizards had wings; and birds had tails and hands like lizards. In the same Mesozoic ages, birds existed resembling those of our own day; and almost at the same time some weak small mammals, forerunners of those higher types which were to possess the world. Most probably the earliest birds were sea-fowls; some were waders, equal in size to the ostrich, stalking through the shallows; birds with teeth probably preceded those with plain beaks.

The following is the latest scientific classification of Birds:—

Three main groups or sub-classes—

1. *Saururæ*—all extinct birds with an elongated tail, on which are arranged tail-quills featherwise. Fossil in the Secondary formation.

2. *Ratitæ*—birds with no keel to the breast-bone, such as the extinct birds of New Zealand—*Dinornis*, and the existing birds of the Ostrich tribe, viz., *Apteryx*, *Emu*, *Cassowary*, *Ostrich*, *Rhea*. These are nearly all wingless and do not fly; consequently the wing-muscles require no great keel on the breast-bone for their attachment. Amongst them are the extinct water-birds with teeth, in the Cretaceous age, such as the *Hesperornis*. The remainder of the birds are called—

3. *Carinatæ*, having a keel to their breast-bone, and most of them having the power of flight. Some of these lived in the Cretaceous age.

The previous investigation, sufficiently minute and adequately comprehensive, evidences that the Scriptural account of animal life beginning in the water with the fish, extending to the land, and from the reptile, rising into birds, is a surprisingly correct statement; and that it agrees with the ascertained facts of modern positive science concerning the succession of life.

<sup>1</sup> "The Story of the Earth and Man:" J. W. Dawson, LL.D.

A natural and laudable curiosity now leads to the inquiry—What did the wisest of the uninspired ancients think concerning the world's origin? A brief summary of the Bible statement may well be compared with one by a man whose genius is of universal renown.

The Bible statement—(1) The origin and existence of many worlds were from the beginning. (2) Light was called into existence to be, what it is now known to be, the great conditioner of all things. (3) There was a separation by which mingled elements acquired what may be called individuality; for, at first, as Plato says—"All things were without reason and measure, . . . this, I say, being their nature, God fashioned them by form and number, . . . and out of them He constructed the universe:"<sup>1</sup> the elements being grouped in gases, liquids, solids; or, as Scripture calls them, air, water, earth. (4) In the water, on the land, and in the air, manifold forms of life appeared; first in the water, thence extending to the land, afterwards rising into the air, until the world was replenished.

Now, take from Plato, who represents Socrates, the following statements—"God desired that all things should be good and nothing bad as far as this could be accomplished. Wherefore also finding the whole sphere not at rest, but moving in an irregular and disorderly manner, out of disorder He brought order, considering that this was far better than the other."<sup>2</sup> . . . Now the creation took up each of the four elements; for the Creator compounded the world out of all the fire, and all the water, and all the air, and all the earth, leaving no part of any of them outside.<sup>3</sup> . . . The Creator of the universe spoke as follows:—Gods and sons of Gods, who are My works, and of whom I am the Artificer and Father, My creations are indissoluble, if so I will. . . . Three tribes of mortal beings remain to be created—without them the universe will be incomplete, for it will not have in it every kind of animal which a perfect world ought to have. On the other hand, if they were created and received life from Me, they would be on an equality with the gods. In order then that there may be mortals, and that

<sup>1</sup> "Timæus," translation by Rev. B. Jowett.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.* p. 525, sect. 30.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.* p. 527, sect. 32.

this universe may be truly universal, do ye, according to your natures, betake yourselves to the formation of animals, imitating the power which I showed in creating you.<sup>1</sup> . . . They imitating Him, received from Him the immortal principle of the soul ; and around this they fashioned a mortal body, and made the whole body to be a vehicle of the soul, and constructed within a soul of another nature which was mortal, subject to terrible and irresistible affections.<sup>2</sup> . . . A brief mention may be made of the generation of other animals, but there is no need to dwell upon them at length. . . . Of the men who came into the world, those who are cowards or have led unjust lives, may be fairly supposed to change into the nature of women in the second generation. . . . Thus were created women and the female sex in general. But the race of birds was created out of innocent, light-minded men, who, although their thoughts were directed towards heaven, imagined, in their simplicity, that the clearest demonstration of the things above was to be obtained by sight ; these were turned into birds, and they grew feathers instead of hair. The race of wild pedestrian animals again came from those who had no philosophy in all their thoughts, and never considered at all about the nature of the heavens. In consequence of these habits of theirs they had their fore legs and heads trailing upon the earth to which they were akin ; and they had also the crown of their heads oblong, and in all sorts of curious shapes, in which the courses of the soul were compressed by reason of disuse. And this was the reason why quadrupeds and polypods were created. . . . And the most foolish of them who trailed their bodies entirely upon the ground and have no longer any need of feet, He made without feet to crawl upon the earth. The fourth class were the inhabitants of the water : these were made out of the most entirely ignorant and senseless of beings, whom the transformers did not think any longer worthy of pure respiration, because they possessed a soul which was made impure by all sorts of transgression, . . . hence arose the race of fishes and oysters, and other aquatic animals, which have received the

<sup>1</sup> "Timæus," pp. 534, 535, sect. 42.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.* p. 563, sect. 70.

most remote habitations as a punishment of their extreme ignorance."<sup>1</sup>

We have not taken that which Mr. Jowett rightly calls "obscure and repulsive," but the simplest and best. If any man can find in Plato or Aristotle, amongst Greeks or Romans, in old Egyptian or Sanscrit literature, any account of creation worthy to be compared with the Scriptural narrative; brief, yet comprehensive; accurate, yet general; simple, yet growing in meaning and power with the development of science; there may be a show of argument that Moses was wholly taught of other men: but, until that is done, Christians rightly maintain that Moses wrote the Sacred Narrative of creation by Inspiration of God. In any case, a true science existed, which could not have been acquired by any of the modern accurate experimental processes; the existence of this science renders possible the knowledge of many other things, the source of which we cannot trace.

Faith not merely begins where science ends, but must accompany science every day in the conduct of life. The death-watch may say of the clock he lives in, "Tick, tick, tick, it is all tick: that is its final cause and purpose;" but we are not content with beetle philosophy; nor do we count the screws, levers, pulleys of the world, equivalents of existence. There is a "line between that which is physical and that which is utterly beyond physics. . . . Man has been left to the resources of his intellect for the discovery not merely of physical laws, but of how far he is capable of comprehending them. . . . A revelation of anything which we can discover for ourselves, by studying the ordinary course of Nature, would be an absurdity."<sup>2</sup> Truly so, but a revelation of that which, otherwise, would remain for ever unknown, is a benefit indeed; and when we find that the philosophical systems of Germany, apart from Scripture, though wonderful efforts of human reason, have not added one tittle to our positive religious knowledge; no, not even by saying—"There is a God;" we thank God for the Bible.

Men who purpose henceforth to do without God tell us—

<sup>1</sup> "Timæus," pp. 584, 585, sect. 90, 91, 92, Jowett's translation.

<sup>2</sup> "Recent Advances in Physical Science," p. 25: P. G. Tait, M.A.

"Those who can read the signs of the times read in them that the kingdom of man is at hand."<sup>1</sup> We have a parable for these readers—An ancient king, like-minded, said—"I saw a tree in the midst of the earth . . . the tree grew, and was strong, and the height thereof reached unto heaven, and the sight thereof to the end of all the earth : the leaves thereof were fair, and the fruit thereof much, and in it was meat for all : the beasts of the field had shadow under it, and the fowls of the heaven dwelt in the boughs thereof, and all flesh was fed of it." The tree was a symbol of the king. He thought, like some modern men, that a human throne, a kingdom of man, would be established ; and said to himself—"My greatness is grown, it reacheth unto heaven, and my dominion to the end of the earth." What happened ? A holy one came down from heaven, and cried aloud—"Hew down the tree, and cut off his branches, shake off his leaves, and scatter his fruit : let the beasts get away from under it, and the fowls from his branches." What is the interpretation ? At the end of twelve months that king lost his reason, went from among men, and dwelt with the beasts of the field, till his hair grew like eagles' feathers, and his nails like birds' claws (Dan. iv. 10-34). The mystery has further interpretation : when men, to fill up the chasm between civilised and savage man, cast in their religion ; and, endeavouring to bridge the abyss separating savage from brute, sink human emotion and intellect to the appetite and instinct—their language and conduct to the howling and herding of beasts ; the holy watcher comes among them with the decree of heaven that high intellectual power, the greeting of the spirit, depart from them ; and that they be as the beast of the field, until they know that the Most High ruleth in the kingdom of men.

A true kingdom of man is coming, long foreseen, long prepared for : dominion and glory, the union of all nations under one everlasting sway (Dan. vii. 13, 14). We have evidence of it in the spirit which knits our mind and body into personal identity ; in the spirit running, like a thread of continuity, through all our chequered life ; and in the song of the herald angels—"Glory to God in the highest, and on earth peace to men of good will."

<sup>1</sup> Prof. W. K. Clifford, *Nineteenth Century*, October, 1877.

We are not hindered in our faith by those who say—"Does the song of the herald angels . . . express the exaltation and yearning of a human soul, or does it describe an optical and acoustical fact—a visible host and audible song? If the former, the exaltation and the yearning are man's imperishable possession—a ferment long confined to individuals, but which may by-and-by become the leaven of the earth. If the latter, then belief in the entire transaction is wrecked by non-fulfilment. Look at the East at the present moment as a comment on the promise of peace on earth and good will toward men."<sup>1</sup> The objector does not understand the real meaning of the passage, nor see that the binding up and embalming of all the struggles and searchings of human life, so that—

"Our deeds still travel with us from afar,  
And what we have been makes us what we are,"

afford more marvellous and mysterious indications of life above and beyond that of fishes, reptiles, birds, than do the angel host and heavenly song: that they give the ground of possibility, and furnish evidence as to reality of the angels and their melody. If the exaltation and the yearning are indeed man's imperishable possession, are actions arising out of our inner core, and are real as the life-grouping of particles in creatures of water, earth, sky; then, why doubt concerning those revelations which are as the convex to the concave of human experience, and yield glimpses of that splendid existence, and that peaceful state, which will be a renewal of the earth and an establishment of a Divinely Human dominion?

"There are buds that fold within them,  
Closed and covered from our sight,  
Many a richly tinted petal,  
Never looked on by the light;  
Fain to see their shrouded faces,  
Sun and dew are long at strife,  
Till at length the sweet buds open—  
Such a bud is life.  
\* \* \* \* \*  
What it shows and what it teaches  
Are not things wherewith to part."

*Jean Ingelow.*

<sup>1</sup> Prof. Tyndall, Address as President of the Midland Institute, Birmingham. Reported in the *Times*, 2nd October, 1877.

## STUDY XIV.

### DAY VI.—CREEPING THING, BEAST, CATTLE.

“A little philosophy inclineth men’s minds to atheism ; but depth in philosophy bringeth men’s minds about to religion.”—LORD BACON.

“Revelation is no theory. Its truth or certainty, as a fact, can only be estimated historically in the same way as other matters of fact.”—*Introduction to the Science of Religion* : PROFESSOR MAX MÜLLER.

WE are required by opponents of Scripture to reconcile the erroneous interpretations of friends and the assertions of enemies with the sacred text, to justify unscientific theories of instantaneous creation, and to prove that everything was done without use of means, or of natural laws. We reply—The Divine account reveals an orderly plan and a continuous operation. Physical laws are not an invariable necessity, Supreme Will is behind them. Laws are the expression of that Will : not a capricious intervention, but a wise multiform adjustment of all things in due relation. No reasonable person, unless prepossessed by a theory, after carefully reading the first chapter of Genesis with the light of modern science, can think that elemental atoms were brought into existence by mere command ; and, so soon as commanded, flashed into living tissues. No well-informed believer imagines that every plant and animal was separately formed, as by hand-fashioning, out of the dust, or out of nothing, as by magical power. We stand by the statement—“God said, Let the earth bring forth the living creature.”

When Mr. Herbert Spencer<sup>1</sup> states—“No one ever saw a special creation : no one ever found proof of an indirect kind that a special creation had taken place”—he ought to know that creation need not be instantaneous, but may be

<sup>1</sup> “Principles of Biology,” vol. i. p. 336.

effected by natural processes, as are modifications of the created by influences from within and without. As to seeing a creation, whoever saw an evolution? Embryology, and the passage of invisibles through the visible into the invisible, are as much symbols and illustrations of creation as they are of evolution. No one can solve the ultimate mystery of the universe. If the evolutionist thinks that he has settled it by declaring—"The egg was before the bird, not the bird before the egg;" we answer—Whence the egg? However many and separate acts, different in degree and kind, may or may not precede the flash of life, the old truth remains firm as ever—"Out of the ground made the Lord God to grow every plant; and out of the ground the Lord God formed every beast of the field."

We would know how matter, if created, was created—unless by Deity; and, if not created, how the eternity of its existence is more comprehensible than the Christian's belief—that matter, and all other phenomena, are manifestations of the Great Unknown. If the many thousand impulses of energy do not proceed from Hidden Energy, science belies its own teaching.

Mr. Herbert Spencer asks<sup>1</sup>—"Why should not omnipotence have been proved by the supernatural production of plants and animals everywhere throughout the world from hour to hour?" We reply—It is proved. The inquirer knows very well that Nature is a splendid miracle, that plants and animals are produced everywhere throughout the world from hour to hour by omnipotence. The inquirer has stated again and again—"All phenomena are manifestations of the Unknown." Suppose, however, that the proof came otherwise, or by quicker process; that men did see, day by day, light flash out of darkness, the living rise up out of the dead, and things wholly unlike grow from like things; so that every kindled fire, every dawn of day, every oak from the acorn, every man from a scarcely visible ovule, appealed to them; would they believe? Would they not rather exclaim that man was a sudden evolution, that the oak grew naturally very quickly, that fire was the result or act of combustion, and that the

<sup>1</sup> "Principles of Biology," vol. i. p. 339.

sun rose according to mechanical law? What proof can be given that wilful men will not misinterpret? Could we devise any procedure that might not be explained away? If full-grown men fell from the clouds, is it not likely that a theory—as of aerolites, would explain their fall as a natural event? Is the life of every individual now, and the present continuance of species; the growth of every harvest, and production from hour to hour of plants by natural succession; less wonderful than was the beginning of these things? Go back to the ultimate—Did protoplasm make itself and evolve the energy of life? Does the accounting everything self-produced, or, which is the same, produced by Nature's own power, explain the difficulty? Why, denying miracles, it asserts a really incredible marvel; puts the Spirit of Divinity into stocks and stones; makes men like those Fetish-worshippers who adored the spirit of steam in the engine, and prayed to the cranks and joints!

There is an inquiry on the page already referred to—"To what purpose were the millions of these demonstrations which took place on the earth when there were no intelligent beings to contemplate them? Did the Unknowable thus demonstrate His power to Himself?" Surely, philosophers do not imagine that they only are to be cared for; fondly dream that beings like themselves are the greatest things in heaven and earth? that there is no God beside them? that Nature and God, Space and Matter, Time and Energy, are superfluous; unless men look on and admire? If they want that mental range which touches other beings—other worlds; if they are so small, that they judge all Nature from her feet of clay; and are without the will to lift their eyes and see her godlike head; we are sorry for them.

Creation does not, necessarily, imply an abrupt appearance; but, simply, a Divine work. Any and every type of life may have begun with imperfect, and attained highest state after many ages of existence. We know that organic form, whether of vegetable or animal, continues the same only so long as inward conditions and outward circumstances remain unchanged; it was so in the past, it will be so in the future; anything otherwise, except by Divine Power, would

be impossible. If it were not, the jest and mad freak of Mephistopheles might be true—

“ Wine grapes of the vine are born,  
 Front of he-goat sprouts with horn,  
 Wine is juice, and wine-stocks wood,  
 Wooden boards yield wine as good !  
 There is truth for him that sees  
 Into Nature's mysteries.”

*Faust.*

Opponents of the Supernatural seem to forget that is it not enough for the auditory and optical nerves to have a sensation, the intellect must reflect. The material ear and eye give work for the mental ear and eye. Everything visible conducts to the invisible. Not only so, it is impossible for any man to know all sciences, he cannot know one, cannot know one thing perfectly in any one science; every science, and everything in every science, speedily passes beyond knowledge, and is lost in the unknown. That the universe possesses a due correlative and complement in the unseen is a conclusion more and more forced upon physicists by the grand doctrine of the conservation of energy. It is gross presumption to bring up from the depths of ignorance the assertion—“All life, motion, intelligence in the world, are mechanical—as Vaucanson's duck which ate and digested its food; or as the flute-player of the same artist.” Why, those mechanisms were the work of mind, and maintained by mind. Even so, the beautiful arrangements of Nature, in their uniformity and variety, in that which we understand and in that whereof we are ignorant, bring us to the acknowledgment of Mind. The modes of action according to natural law cannot be arranged in scientific form, have no ultimate explanation, until represented to our mind as the work of Intelligence. We naturally seek for, and are not satisfied till we find, tokens of Intelligence, like, but infinitely greater than our own, in the moving power. If our argument is badly worked—

“ Though you see a Churchman ill,  
 In the Church continue still.”

To obtain a conception as to order and will in creation; try, by scientific imagination, to get a view of their reality in

a triple truth concerning Vitality: 1. Unity of Power, 2. of Form, 3. of Substance.

### 1. Unity of Power.

All the physical activities of vitality are for maintenance of the body, for changes in its positions and parts, for continuance of the species. If we add activities of consciousness, intellect, volition, the scheme embraces the highest forms of life, and covers those of the lowest creatures. The activities are propagated and maintained by a rhythm of motion. Light consists of undulations. The rays of heat, the movements of electricity, the motions of projectiles, are rhythmical. The rhythm is compound; there are solar, planetary, terrestrial rhythms; but the most numerous are in the phenomena of life. There are rhythms in muscular action, in blood circulation, in contraction and expansion of the lungs, in the periodic need of food and repose, in the increase and decrease of life, in the successive changes of organic forms. Indeed, the whole life of plants and animals, in so far as it is physical, exhibits rhythmical transformations of energy. The rhythm of poetry and music are the outcome of rhythm in sensation, intelligence, emotion. This energy, so far as the earth and our physical life are concerned, centres in the sun; and from the sun, mechanically and chemically, come that aptitude and power by which atoms of salt crystallise, and amorphous fragments arrange and rearrange themselves into special structures; by which atoms of albumen, fibrine, gelatine, or the hypothetical protein-substance take specific shapes.

### 2. Unity of Form.

If a drop of human blood be taken, kept warm, examined under high microscopic power, there will be seen structureless corpuscles in marvellous activity, capable of change as to form and individual movement—they are minute portions of undifferentiated protoplasm. Not of the same shape or size in the human organism, as in beast or fowl, in reptile and fish, in worm and plant, but there is a general likeness in the peculiarity: "Traced back to its earliest state or form, the nettle arises as man does, in a particle of colourless protoplasm."<sup>1</sup> So arising, life diverges into the different vital

<sup>1</sup> "Physical Basis of Life:" Prof. Huxley.

activities, balancing of functions, changes of condition, growth, adaptation, individuality, morphological and physiological development. Not by the development of individuality from the germ, as if the germ contained the perfect organism in miniature ; but by that persistence of rhythmical force acting upon the living particles, and developing the intrinsic aptitude, or polarity, into the plant or animal by what may be called special endowment. How strong the action is may be exemplified by the *Bignonia*. A fragment of the leaf, small as a hundredth-part of the whole, placed in fit soil and kept at suitable temperature, will become a complete plant. Other organisms have like power ; a common polype may be cut into very small pieces, from every piece will grow a perfect animal.

This process in development of form is subject to continual change, but within definite limits ; for, as no natural process works any, even the slightest, difference in the properties of any molecule ; this unchangeableness of the molecule tends to bring about that balancing of function which causes a return from variabilities to the original form or stock. "Further, the progress of Nature being mainly in the direction of differentiation of functions once combined, it has a limit backward in the most general forms and conditions, and forward in the most specialised. This is the history of the individual, and probably also of the type, of the world itself and of the universe ; and for this reason material nature necessarily lacks the eternity of its Author."<sup>1</sup> Any living body, having diverged from the normal course, will, so soon as the accidental causes of deviation have expended their force, return to equilibrium by that power which physicians call "*vis mediatrix naturæ*." The increase and decrease of species, their range and degree of perfection in likeness and unlikeness, are not by metamorphoses of confusion, but by a world-wide process giving unity of form, improvement, and advance.

The process may be partially explained—"The first centre of sarcode, or indifferenced organic matter, however originated, yet with certain definite tendencies to formal character and course of growth (as in a *Foraminifer*, *e.g.*), buds forth a second

<sup>1</sup> "The Origin of the World," p. 342 : J. W. Dawson, LL.D., F.R.S.

centre of identical nature ; this a third, and so on . . . such repetitions of a primal complexly organised whole . . . are suggestive of operance akin to that of inorganic polar growths, as in a group of crystals, wherein each exemplifies the characters of the mineral or crystalline species, but is subject, like vital growths, to occasional malformation. . . . Growth by repetition of parts rapidly gives place to the higher mode of development by their differentiation and correlation for definite acts and complex functions."<sup>1</sup> Hence, all organic matter has certain definite tendencies to formal character and development, which seem to be the impress of eternal fundamental energy. The endowment is there, whatever it may be ; and, because of this endowment, proceeds, from primordial germs, in no respect distinguishable, the whole variety of life. This startling fact disposes of the crystallisation doctrine of evolution, by taking the essential and distinctive facts of life far beyond the region that any theory is able at present to approach. We conclude, therefore, that the popular statement of Scripture covers accurate scientific reality : from primary "indifferenced" organic matter, proceeded undulations or rhythms, which progressing along straight or in circular or in other various complex lines, culminated in life. Every organism being a complex system of forces, and the higher organisms in almost infinite complication as compared with our powers of analysis.

### 3. Unity of Substance.

All the forms of protoplasm which have hitherto been examined contain, when dead, the four elements : carbon, hydrogen, oxygen, nitrogen, and some sulphur. The flower of the field, and the blood which courses through our veins, the dense resisting mass of oak, and that transparent jelly which pulsates in the waters of a calm sea, are bound by one common tie, and are akin : " In wisdom God made them all " (Ps. civ. 24). The significance of this cannot be exaggerated ; the occult subtle influences, making an essential distinction and difference where man finds none, are wonderful ! When we think that the microscopic fungus, and the great Finner whale ; all that wealth of foliage lying between the lowest

<sup>1</sup> "Anatomy of Vertebrates," Pref. p. ix., x. : Richard Owen, F.R.S.

plant, and those trees which endure while nations and empires rise and fall ; that Shakespeare, the genius, and midges, evoked by the sun ; are all knit together by unity of substance ; and have community of faculty through one Divinely fashioned material ; we stand in awe of that varied interaction which makes Nature beautiful as the robe of the Almighty.

Life-energy inspires this unity of substance, of form, of power, with variety in mechanical, chemical, vital operation ; plying the tongue with exquisite movements to modulate the voice ; using the nerves and muscles to send forth volitions ; and, by the intellent, conversing with those invisible things of which the world is full. It introduces new objects and powers, overmasters recurring cycles of physical law, blending the welfare of sentient creatures with a plan going through all ages. Life, moreover, continually calls our moral sense and our intellect to new functions ; and, by use of memory, as to the past, carries hope forward to the future ; rendering by-gone stages of existence platforms for that which is to come ; so that we trace benign skill, stand in the presence of the Creator, and rejoice in words spoken long ago—"My substance was not hid from Thee, when I was made in secret, and curiously wrought in the lowest parts of the earth. Thine eyes did see my substance, yet being imperfect ; and in Thy book all my members were written, which in continuance were fashioned, when as yet there was none of them" (Ps. cxxxix. 15, 16).

We now advance from unity of principle to the process of variety :—

"Let the earth bring forth creeping thing."

Insects were in the Devonian forests. Ancestors of our modern dragon-flies flitted with broad-veined wings, and their larvæ dwelt in the stagnant waters. One marvellous Orthoptera had netted wings attaining an expanse of seven inches. A kind of grasshopper, with a cricket-like chirp, raised the first insect music known. Cockroaches are of an old family, being found in the Carboniferous age with insects belonging to three of the orders into which modern insects are arranged. Shad-flies, weevils, millipedes, scorpions, spiders, are also of

the Carboniferous age. The compound faceted eyes of insects were as perfectly developed then as now. Of the two oldest land-snails—one is elongated, the other rounded. In this age or earlier, they emerged from the waters, moved on the land, and breathed air. The oldest known fossil butterfly seems to have relationship with some of the living butterflies of tropical America. In the Neozoic ages appear nearly all the orders of insects. They are of later origin, as Scripture declares, than the moving things of the waters. There is a scientific hypothesis that their progenitors were crustacea.

The origin, division, and development of life, appear to have been in this order of progress—Plants reduced special elements, existing in gaseous and watery combination, to a solid form. Animals, deriving their forces directly or indirectly from plants, carried the transformation a step further. All the structural and functional motions of every organism being an advance from the motions of simple molecules, to those of compound molecules, and from these to those of masses. For example: all sea-snails are united by well-nigh numberless intermediate forms, and seem to have been the progenitors of fresh-water and land snails. The celebrated and various snails of the Stuben Valley, near Steinheim, in Würtemberg, whose snow-white shells constitute more than half the mass of the Tertiary limestone hills, exceed twenty different species; but the extreme forms are linked by so many which are intermediate, lying regularly above and beside one another, that their pedigree is easily traced.

The historical succession is generally indicated: (1) in the palæontological history of organisms, furnished by fossils in their adaptation to those various changes in the earth, of which increase or decrease of temperature was the master fact affecting climate, food, land, and sea level; (2) in the history of individual organisms; (3) in the comparative anatomy of kindred organisms. These are the three main facts which prove that a marvellous process of adaptation has been in operation from the very beginning. For example, the Nummulites, whose shells, the size of a lentil, form nearly whole mountains in the Alpine system of Europe, and deposit thousands of feet in thickness in Africa and Asia, possess

a house with many little chambers artistically ordered. The Polythalamia have shell-chambers wound round one another in a spiral line and great variety of exquisite forms. These little palaces of beauty, regular structure, elegant execution, are the product of a slimy, formless, living mass; and various, as their products, are the builders themselves. The differences, imperceptible in their chemical composition and physical construction, are brought plainly into view by the variety of their constructed habitations.

As the chasm between creeping thing of the land and swarming thing of the sea is bridged by intermediate forms; so, between fish and animal of the land, come those amphibia of which ancient days afforded gigantic examples. Are we then to conclude that the land was colonised from the water? We may smile at those who assert that every foot comes from a fin, and that fish by gaping developed lungs; but as twice a day, in the rise and fall of the tide, some plants and animals have a twofold kind of life; those only touched by the highest tides, and those never uncovered but at lowest ebb, having intervals varying both in frequency and duration; it is easy to think of an advance of life from the sea to possess and replenish the land. Heredity from the water might be so acted upon through adaptation by land, that at last animals could wholly forsake the one for the other. The mud-fish is an example of transition into amphibia, and the tailed forms of amphibia are the most ancient. Tritons are amphibious animals, akin to frogs; and, like them, in an early stage, possess gills, by means of which they live and breathe the air that is dissolved in the water. At a later stage, like frogs, they leave the water, lose their gills, and are able to breathe with their lungs; but if, by being shut up in a tank, they cannot leave the water, they retain their gills. The gilled salamander, Axolotl (*Siredon pisciformis*), generally remains all its life in the water; but at the Zoological Garden, in Paris, not long ago, a small number crept out of the water, from the many hundreds of their fellows, on the dry land, lost their gills, and became gill-less salamanders—breathing only through their lungs. Salt-water crustacea and fish also live in the great fresh-water lakes of the world.

This subjection to circumstances causes structural changes in the properties of already formed parts ; but, within any assigned time, these changes fall within narrow limits ; and so soon as the normal state is re-established, the organ and organism fall back to their original condition. Structure, handed down by heredity, is indeed liable to variations of considerable magnitude ; in part by the individual, and in part by involved influences producing functional adaptations ; but only power from without, acting within, can produce what is not inherent in the organism ; and in no other way can we find a satisfactory explanation for the continual introduction throughout all geological time of those new forms of life, which do not appear to have been preceded by pre-existent allied types. There exists some other deeper, wider-reaching law than evolution as commonly taught. As to artificial acquirements, plants and animals when neglected relapse to their original wild forms ; and mutilations of the body—though continued from generation to generation, as nose and ear piercings, misshapings of the foot—as among the Chinese, and circumcision—as by the Jews, are not transmitted. However much the lower forms of life mingle ; and the outward grades of fish and amphibia, marsupial and mammal, approach one another ; distinct provinces of marine and terrestrial life are always maintained.

The marsupial form, so akin to the reptile and amphibian, preceded the other mammalia in time. Of the Mesozoic species all are marsupial, small, of low grade, and allied to the monotremata in their lowest structures ; but not lower than some now existing. Their low position may be associated with the habit of limiting the exercise of active-life faculties to the period of night's obscurity. The mother nurses her young in a tegumentary pouch, where they remain suspended to the teats, and are safely carried for a period nearly answering to that of uterine life in the higher mammals. Where great want of water exists ; and, in dry seasons, rivers are converted into pools few and far between ; in such a climate, at such a time, an ordinary non-marsupial animal like the wild cat or fox, having deposited her young, would travel far to quench her thirst. " Before she could return her

blind and helpless litter would have perished. By the marsupial modification the mother is enabled to carry her offspring with her in the long migrations necessitated by the scarcity of water."<sup>1</sup> Mr. Owen adds—"These correlated modifications of maternal and foetal structures, designed with special reference to the peculiar conditions of both mother and offspring, afford, as it seems to me, irrefragable evidence of creative foresight." A difficulty attends this theory: the pouch is not possessed by all marsupials.

The great class of mammals had a small beginning, and made little or no advance during the vast Mesozoic time. In the Neozoic time existed that higher group which now has pre-eminence. Animals related to tapirs, bears, racoons, are among the oldest. The Miocene was the culminating age of mammalia: they were then largest and most numerous. The Deinother was as much larger than our elephant as the elephant exceeds an ox; the skull, including snout, was five or six feet long; two large tusks grew out of the end of the lower jaw and pointed downwards. The most ancient beasts of prey are the feline, then the canidæ, latest the ursidæ. Relics of their predecessors we do not possess. The beast of the earth and cattle are the freely roving vegetable and flesh eating wild animals of the land, creatures of the marsh, the field, the forest, the plain. The Eocene and Miocene strata of North America are crowded with carnivora, ruminantia, pachydermata, rodentia, and non-ruminating creatures of the horse, rhinoceros, pig, tribes.

Heredity, or inheritance of the parents' nature, seems to be the natural cause of stability; and Adaptation one of the causes of modification or change in organisms. Structure and function being exposed to countless actions and reactions, from generation to generation, of ever-varying circumstances, the wonder is that we have not greater varieties, and that they are not mingled in utter confusion. There must be some deep and far-reaching law marvellously adjusting stability and instability, multiplication and extinction, that due equilibrium may be preserved. In every species, animal or vegetable, the

<sup>1</sup> "Classification and Geographical Distribution of the Mammalia:" Richard Owen, F.R.S.

individuals are never quite alike ; and in every species, even in every individual, there is a greater or less tendency to produce varieties. Some unknown energy sets bounds to these changes ; and we are amazed that the simple egg-cell of the maternal organism, and a single paternal sperm-thread, transfer to the young the minutest bodily and mental peculiarities of both parents. The germ from which most mammals are produced is the 120th part of an inch in diameter, the same size as in man.

Doubtless, we may say of life—*vires acquirit eundo*. The original forms of it, whether few or many, were capable of development, and received it. Every new natural principle was to the preceding as a miracle, the animal a miracle to the vegetable, and man a miracle to the beast of the field. We have a right from science to infer that there is a law which provides for the origination of species, *de novo*, from unorganised matter, which is called into action by conditions and in a manner wholly unknown to us and inimitable. Life did not flow in an organic circle ; some forms, for reasons unknown, being retarded ; and other forms, ascending in many lines of development, brought in new existences. Every species seems to come into being at a certain definite time, and to disappear at another definite time ; though there are few, if indeed any instances, in which we can safely fix the time for entrance or exit. This bringing in or creating of new things is our general notion of a miracle ; and foretelling the new is our general idea of prophecy. All past variety of growth and development of power were figures of future advance, or allegory of forms to come ; every low grade reappearing in the higher, as initial, subservient and supporting substance. On natural life is grafted intellectual life ; on intellectual life, the spiritual and moral ; on spiritual and moral, future life. Life, ascending in many various paths, is everywhere subjected to spirit ; and life subjects and connects matter, as the crystallographer connects imponderable forces and polarity ; the coarse or outside substance becoming, so to speak, the precipitate of inner and finer formations. There are worlds within worlds ; infinity contains space, space comprehends matter, matter embraces life, life enfolds intelligence, intelligence is the breath of spirit.

Life-forms are classed according to the differences in structure. Heredity tends to conservation; and power of Adaptation, by circumstances to circumstances, tends to variety. Hence, offspring resemble their parents; but are never wholly alike either in form or in structure. The likeness preserves the identity of species, unlikeness tends to variety. Sometimes the variety arises in full force *per saltum*; but in every case there are determining causes, external, or internal, or both. Even a variety which approaches the nature of a monstrosity strives, Caliban-like, to reproduce itself; much more those which are better fitted to maintain the struggle for existence. Natural causes, acting through long ages of time, brought into existence from pre-existing life-forms all the varieties of life now on our globe; there is the constant introduction, throughout geological time, of new forms of life which do not appear to have been preceded by pre-existent allied types;<sup>1</sup> the weaker, perishing; those excelling in strength, skill, agility, and best fitted to surrounding conditions, surviving. As a rule, the animals of lowest and simplest organisation have the longest range of time; the additional possession of minute dimensions is also in favour of their continuance. Large and highly organised animals, though long lived as individuals, rarely live long specifically.

The formation, according to law, of varieties and species from the common type of animal structure, is called "the Natural Origin of Species." The dying of unfavourable and the continuance of favourable specimens are designated "Natural Selection." So far, every breeder of sheep and pigeon fancier agrees with the philosopher. The argument may be carried into the domain of plants and flowers. Leaves become sepals and petals; sepals and petals grow into stamens, nectaries, ovaries, as is known to every practical florist and seedsman. Of the nature of the forces evoked we know nothing, nor can we account for the constant introduction of new life-forms, age after age, more and more like those now in existence. There is, however, a limit to varieties: as to those which are strictly species—"Each of them always

<sup>1</sup> For examples, see H. Alleyne Nicholson's "Life History of the Earth," p. 373.

remains separated from the others by an interval which Nature cannot overstep."<sup>1</sup> "It is one of the clearest facts in the animal as in the vegetable world; all races gradually reproduce and perpetuate themselves without mingling or confounding one with the other."<sup>2</sup> It is put yet more forcibly—"No race will amalgamate with another: they die out, or seem slowly to be becoming extinct."<sup>3</sup> Professor Huxley states—"To sum up our knowledge of the ethnological past of man; so far as the light is bright, it shows him substantially the same as now, and when it grows dim, it permits us to see no sign that he was other than he is now."<sup>4</sup> In the same address he says—"Admit that Negroes and Australians, Negritoes and Mongols are distinct species, a distinct genus, if you will, and you may yet, with perfect consistency, be the strictest of monogenists, and even believe in Adam and Eve as the primeval parents of all mankind." So we may say with Sir Charles Lyell—"There is no valid objection to the doctrine of the human race springing from a single pair."<sup>5</sup>

Goethe was the first, Professor Helmholtz says,<sup>6</sup> who laid down with precision and confidence, that all differences in the structure of animals must be looked upon as variations of a single primitive type, induced by the coalescence, the alteration, the increase, the diminution, or even the complete removal of single parts of the structure; the very principle, in fact, which has become the leading idea of comparative anatomy in its present stage. Dr. Darwin thinks "there is grandeur in this view of life, with its several powers, having been originally breathed by the Creator into a few forms or into one."<sup>7</sup> Professor Huxley says—"All existing species are the result of the modification of pre-existing species, and those of their predecessors; and it is probable, though not a necessary consequence of this hypothesis, that all living creatures have arisen from a single stock. . . . The vast series of extinct animals is not divisible, as it was once supposed to be, into

<sup>1</sup> Isidore Geoffrey Saint-Hilaire, "Historie Naturelle Generale," iii. p. 210.

<sup>2</sup> Prichard, "Natural History of Man," i. p. 17.

<sup>3</sup> *Ethnological Journal*, p. 98.

<sup>4</sup> "Method and Results of Ethnology."

<sup>5</sup> "Antiquity of Man," xx. p. 385.

<sup>6</sup> Goethe's "Scientific Researches."

<sup>7</sup> "Origin of Species," Edit. 4, p. 576.

distinct groups, separated by sharply marked boundaries. There are no great gulfs between epochs and formations—no successive periods marked by the appearance of plants, of water animals, and of land animals *en masse*.”<sup>1</sup> It is conceivable, though no case is certainly known of any animal or plant assuming the characters of a new species; and species may have been so constructed that, after a certain number of generations, they undergo either abrupt or gradual changes somewhat similar to those in embryological growth.

The theory of Lamarck groups organic matter under simple forms. Their first outlines, altered by time and circumstances, successively give birth to radiated creatures, to the inferior molluscs, to articulate animals, to the lowest fishes, then to man. “Exercising an organ gains development and extension which insensibly change it, until it becomes wholly different. On the contrary, the faulty use of an organ impoverishes it gradually, and ends by destroying it.”<sup>2</sup> Birds, ceasing to fly, lose the power of flight. “This atrophy reaches its climax in the snakes, . . . by the ribs and intercostal muscles having undertaken the work of the limbs.”<sup>3</sup> Mr. Owen writes—“I am constrained by evidence to affirm that in the vertebrate, as in the invertebrate series, there is manifested a principle of development through polar relations, working by repetition of act, and by multiplication of life-parts, controlled by an opposite tendency to diversify the construction, and enrich it with all possible forms, proportions, and modifications of parts, conducive to the fulfilment of a pre-ordained purpose and a final aim; these opposite yet reciprocally complementary factors co-operating to the ultimate result, with different degrees of disturbance, yet without destruction of the evidence of the typical unity.”<sup>4</sup> Evidence may be multiplied to any extent. “Every cell, like every individual plant or animal, is the product of a previous organism of the same kind.”<sup>5</sup> “Unity of plan everywhere lies hidden under the mask of diversity of structure.” In plainer words—“To study the succession of

<sup>1</sup> “Criticism on the Origin of Species.”    <sup>2</sup> “Organisation des Corps vivants.”

<sup>3</sup> “The Doctrine of Descent and Darwinism:” Oscar Schmidt.

<sup>4</sup> “Anatomy of Vertebrates,” Introd. p. xxi. : Richard Owen, M.A., F.R.S.

<sup>5</sup> “Comparative Physiology,” p. 347: Dr. Carpenter.

animals in time, and their distribution in space, is to become acquainted with the ideas of God Himself." <sup>1</sup> "There is," says Dr. George Combe, "scarcely a single page in my three physiological works in which God was not present to my mind. I regard the whole laws of animal economy, and of the universe, as the direct dictates of the Deity; and in urging compliance with them, it is with the earnestness and reverence due to a Divine command that I do it. I almost lose the consciousness of self in the anxiety to attain the end, and when I see clearly a law of God in our own nature I rely upon its efficacy for good, with a faith and peace which no storm can shake."

The facts on which we may rely are the following:—Life was evolved from no life—God evolved it; organisms from inorganic matter. Distinct natural history provinces existed from the very earliest times; and we are unable to explain why such vast numbers of highly organised species simultaneously struggle into existence in one age and disappear in another. Whatever alterations arose, whether in fauna or flora, seem to have been due to many concurrent forces, and determinations of force, to geographical and climatal conditions; not to automatism, but to that energy of which all phenomena are manifestations. In some organisms there has been little or no change. The Globigerinæ, little builders of the vast chalk formations, were the same as those now found in the depths of the Atlantic Ocean; in some varieties time has effected no change, many new varieties have, however, sprung up. Some of the lizards of to-day are no better than some of those of the Permian period. The Labyrinthodonts were more majestic than the higher and more specialised types of the living salamander and triton. The Devonian ganoids are near akin to Polypterus and to Lepidosiren. We are not warranted in asserting that all the earlier types, so far as known, were more degraded or embryonic in structure than their modern representatives. A long-winged bird will sometimes hatch a longer-winged; a changing climate and variable conditions produce adaptations; where there is dry land not many aquatic creatures will be found; and those mechanical

<sup>1</sup> "Prin. Zool.," c. xiv.: Agassiz.

instruments, the hands of the ape, the hoofs of the horse, the fins of the whale, the trowels of the mole, the wings of the bat, must obey the behests of animal will in their different elements; but that rumination will come to an animal through long sitting, or that wings, trowels, fins, hoof, hands, are common property and interchangeable by animal will, is not credible. Every life conditions its own form; and the power of adaptation, from within and from without, has reflex forcible action: but the so-called persistent types, both of animals and plants, have sustained very little apparent change from their first appearance to the present time. In those which are not persistent, there is a resemblance of arrangement, as also of order and character, in the succession. The wonder is that the changes have been so small; not that they have been so great. No merely physical theory can embrace the whole plan. The visible universe is a vast machine for use and dissipation of energy which comes from the Unseen. The invisible universe is where all that exists originated, and whither its energy is ever returning.

Professor Huxley states that science fails to show positively "any sort of progressive modification towards a less embryonic, or less generalised type, in a great many groups of animals of long-continued geological existence. In these groups there is abundant evidence of variation—none of what is understood as progression; and, if the well-known geological record is to be regarded as even any considerable fragment of the whole, it is inconceivable that any theory of a necessarily progressive development can stand, for the numerous orders and families cited afford no trace of such a process."<sup>1</sup> An impartial survey of ascertained truths negatives those doctrines of universal progressive modification which suppose a necessary progress from more to less embryonic forms, or from more to less generalised types: there have been periods of rapid production and of quick decay—"If the earliest fossiliferous rocks now known are coeval with the commencement of life, and if their contents give us any just conception of the nature and the extent of the earliest fauna and flora, the insignificant amount of modification which can be demonstrated to have taken place in any

<sup>1</sup> "Persistent Types of Life:" Prof. Huxley.

group of animals or plants, 'is quite incompatible with the hypothesis that all living forms are the results of a necessary process of progressive development ; entirely comprised within the time represented by the fossiliferous rocks. Contrariwise, any admissible hypothesis of progressive modification must be compatible with persistence without progression, through infinite periods."<sup>1</sup>

With regard to the length of time claimed for development of the higher organisms : no great length is needed. The high and complicate human organism arises from a simple cellular state through many transformations ; from a seed, like a plant, into structure and condition like some of the lower fishes, thence into amphibious kind. All is done in a very short time. Then it passes at once into the mammalian type, and shows itself to be human when half an inch in length. The embryonic development is a rapid succession, in general outlines, of different and advancing forms ; but there is not such exactness that the embryonic man is a plant or a fish, he is neither. These leading characteristics are said to require myriads of ages in the plant, and in the fish ; but the assertion that myriads of ages are required for the production of man through many bestial conditions, of beast through vegetable stages, and of the higher through lower vegetable organisation, is unwarranted.

Similarity of number, structure, and parts in organisms, and like phases in the embryonic state, are not proof of the universal evolution of higher from lower forms. Physical and organic changes are so correlated and adjusted that, whether abrupt or gradual, all tend to an elevating special purpose, culminating in man himself ; who, in his own frame, contains in a higher and complicate form all the elements and essence of former life ; the lower organisms are living figures of his every part and state : but only figures. As for animal and vegetable characteristics, they so intermingle that in the lowest forms no separation seems to exist ; nevertheless, an invisible essential difference does exist. In those organisms, the *Monera*, *Amœba*, etc., which change their form, we are as little able to point out a definite fundamental form,

<sup>1</sup> "Persistent Types of Life : " Prof. Huxley.

as we are to find it in shapeless, formless anorgana, such as non-crystallised stones : nevertheless, though we cannot find any essential difference in the external forms or the inner structure of these living, or of those dead : there is this essential difference—one is living, the other is dead ; and every living thing has its own path of life, its own labour working to an end.

The energy imparting life to inorganic matter advances from various centres, in definite lines and times, through various grades of organisation to the highest varieties of dicotyledons and vertebrata. This progress and variety are not wholly of adaptation, and by the changing incidence of conditions. Variations appear even when parents are the same, and their constitutional states the same. Plants grown from the seeds of one pod are not alike. In a litter of pigs, or of kittens, there is seldom uniformity of marking. Like organisms are not universally, nor even generally, found in like habitats ; nor very unlike organisms in unlike habitats. Horses, cows, sheep, dogs, afford many examples of variety and improvement ; and, but for this capability of improvement, the arts of the breeder and cultivator would be in vain ; nevertheless, one cannot be improved into the other. The rabbit is born naked and blind ; the hare is born covered with hair, eyes wide open, ready to run for its life. "The unity underlying the differences of the hand, the paw, the fin, the hoof, great as it is, no more makes a man a dog or an ape, than it makes him an elephant or a seal."<sup>1</sup> A young chimpanzee and an infant child are somewhat similar, but the child grows into a man, and the chimpanzee becomes more bestial. "The higher a monkey goes, the more he shows his tail." The chimpanzee is limited to an intertropical climate, and requires an assemblage of certain trees producing certain fruits ; but man is a denizen of all lands, from the torrid to the arctic zones. The letters and words of man's book of life are cast from the substances used in God's press for various other publications ; but those other publications are no more a part of man, than is a scurrilous libel part of Milton's "Paradise Lost."

<sup>1</sup> Cuvier, "Leçons d'Anat. Comparée," vol. i., 1799.

## Rudimentary Organs.

A Doctrine, Dysteology, the uselessness or purposelessness of organs, is attracting the attention of scientific men. Almost every animal and plant, besides the obviously useful arrangements, has organs or rudimentary parts, for which there is no purpose. Eyes which do not see are possessed by animals living in the dark, in caves, or under ground. The eyes are good, but covered with a membrane so that no ray of light enters. Rats found in the caves of Styria and Kentucky, may have become blind through so many generations living in the dark. We do wrong to think that natural selection preserved the blind, and destroyed the seeing; because those having sight might be liable to "inflammation of the nictitating membrane;" for the eyes of these blind rats are subject to the objectionable inflammation. There is more in all this than our science has laid hold of. Blind rats (*Aspalax typhlus*) and the proteus (*Salamander*) have a skin-covering of the minute eye which is not larger than a poppy seed. The equally small eye of the mole (*Talpa Europæa*) is provided with a small circular eyelid, which is hidden under the fur. There are rudimentary limbs in fish, in serpents, and the slow-worm has a shoulder apparatus. In plants sometimes the stamen, sometimes the pistil, is abortive. Sometimes only one of the lungs is developed in snakes, and in all birds only the left ovary is developed to yield eggs. The mammary glands on the breast of all mammals are active only in the female; there are front teeth in the young of many ruminants, as in the calf, which are not developed. Most of the higher animals possess muscles that are never employed; some birds and insects have wings which are not intended for flight. In the profound depths of the ocean are crustaceæ with eyes, and others with rudimentary eyes; the former could see were there light, the latter are incapable of seeing.

If some of these organs are in a state of atrophy through disuse, the difficulty is partly explained. If others are progressing in life, is this progress voluntary on the animal's part? If so, explain it. If it is the natural process, by what arrangement is it natural? The theory of natural selection does not unravel the mystery: for rudimentary organs, and some stages

in the slow process of change, are hindrances to the animal, losses—not gains. They are not as germs, so that if we amputate a leg a new one buds out; nor do they possess power to form a limb or tail, where was no tail nor limb. A portion of the alimentary canal in birds is enlarged and indurated for trituration of food, and we think to explain it by saying—"The gizzard is simply an exaggeration of certain structures and actions which characterise stomachs in general," but over-eating will not form a receptacle for the surplus, nor quick and ravenous devouring lead to the production of an internal grinding apparatus. Did the liver, pancreas, and smaller glands, grow up by the desire to eat, and was there then a co-operation to localise the excretions? Did the lungs expand themselves out of a hollow bud, and become an air-chamber—simple or compound; and, in fish, form the swim-bladder? To call them an integration or summing up of past adaptive processes, by which modifications were slowly acquired through many generations, is first to assume those modifications, and then to explain the lesser difficulty by a greater. If we say—"The rudimentary limbs were the prophecies of quadrupeds, and that serpents with rudimentary limbs are aborted quadrupeds; these are evidence of atrophy, those a potentiality of advance"—why do the same things so greatly differ? Probably, they are marks of unity in all variety; a link between progress and retrogression; a mingling of potentiality and weakness, of natural adaptation with that ordination of general laws by which there shall be the utmost possible development of varied forms.

Many human emotions, probably all the sensual feelings, are found in the beast, and it is asserted, with some humour and much rashness, that the highest faculties of emotion and intellect are mere outgrowths from lower animal life. For example—the mother sense of all senses is touch, and the parrot is the most sensible of birds because of its tactual power; but we may just as well say—"The parrot has great tactual power because it is one of the most sensible birds, and by the same intelligence evokes speech from otherwise discordant tones." A hawk, a raven, a canary, may sometimes equal the parrot in intelligence. The elephant multiplies

experience through the tactual range and skill of his trunk ; but the dog, with less tactual power, is sagacious enough to be the friend of man. Feline animals are said to be more sagacious, because of their paws, than hoofed animals ; but the horse, though hoofed, excels all the feline animals in the world. If prehensile lips are the cause of sagacity, the cow ought to excel, for she has prehensile lips and a cloven hoof. No warrant, moreover, exists for believing that parrot, elephant, horse, dog, or cow, can educate itself to the surpassing of Nature, and extend brute powers into the domain of human reason. Men, however, who lose the knowledge of God, can and do go down into a low animal substratum of being, and suffer loss. Not distinguishing the nobler organs and functions, they use them as if only of animal species ; but God knows the difference, and holds men responsible for use of that difference. He expects them to regard one another as rudimentary angels, rather than progressive beasts : for an angel may be called man incorporeal, and man an angel corporeal. He is animal in so far as he partakes of precedent forms ; and in so far as an animal is a plant, and a plant is inorganic ; but, as a reasonable creature clothed with body, and formed in the image of God, he is but little lower than the angel.<sup>1</sup>

The whole of Nature, thus viewed, is in every part interpenetrated by the Supernatural ; or the Supernatural is Natural : for all things blend in one splendid unity. God is not imprisoned in the laws of Nature, nor are they the grave of His omnipotent free will. That which we call miraculous may be the working of a law so fine, yet wide and intermittent, that only highest wisdom can comprehend and use it. We trace back animals, plants, and others which preceded them ; our continents and mountain ranges, the solid rocks of which they are composed ; aye, the very fabric of the solar system

<sup>1</sup> Comenius said the same thing long ago—"Homo dici potest angelus eo sensu, quo homo ipse animal, animal planta, planta concretum, etc., dicitur id est. propter inclusam præcedentis formam, nova solum superaddita perfectione. Homo enim creatura est rationalis ad imaginem Dei condita, immortalis ; est et angelus, sed majoris perfectionis ergo a corpore liber. Nihil igitur aliud est angelus quam homo a corpore nudus, nihil aliud homo, quam angelus corpore vestitus."—John Amos Comenius, *Physicæ ad Lumen Divinum Reformandæ Synopsis*.

itself ; to their own several origins at distinct points of time—so can maintain that since our earth began no succeeding year saw it precisely as it was the year before, yet all the variety blended in unity. The discoveries of science are true revelations of the Divine presence and work, are an explanation of God's usual way of doing things, are a psalmody in praise of Wisdom and Might. Our life, rooted in the Divine Life, is a mystery, a holy thing, part of a moral spiritual system. Mere animal minds die, human minds are immortal ; this, their grandeur, ever growing into wider range, subordinates intellectual to moral perfection. Cosmical life, brought out like lower animal life, from simple elements by the Almighty, is springing, through strange interaction with things around, to complex powers ; we are becoming involved, deeper and deeper, with great principles of moral government—with a future wherein holiness will be vindicated.

## STUDY XV.

### COMPARISON OF THE TWO DIVINE ACCOUNTS.

“Umbra in Lege; imago in Evangelio; veritas in Cœlo.”—ST. AMBROSE.

“In the spiritual childhood of the world, outward signs were needed to make known God's power and rule. The secret springs of the machinery were displayed; but, when the fulness of time was come, men were no longer to walk by sight, but by faith.”—*Memorials of a Quiet Life.*

THE world is that theatre on which the drama of our life is played. Possibly we should not trouble ourselves with what goes on behind the scenes, unless fresh influxes from the region beyond our own experience, and beyond our ancestors' experience, came in upon us as from an ocean surrounding our island world. Reflection on the nature of things also discloses that there are two modes of existence, and on two different planes: Real existence, which we feel or perceive; and Ideal, that which is imaged in our consciousness, or of which we have intellectual and emotional conception. Conscious, in this manner, of existence, of co-existence, of pre-existence; the necessary movement of thought is with the flow of things, and we carry, so to speak, a universe within, and a measure for the universe without.

Deeply convinced as to the reality of a world behind the field of phenomena, we are astonished by statements that it stands in no relation to us, nor have we faculties by which to know it. We utterly deny that there is any truth in the statements. The educated man knows that the universe is a great machine worked by unseen energy. It is possible to reduce all phenomena to one cause, to see the many in the One, and the One in the many. The first law of all science is order, the second—everything serves an end. The ablest metaphysicians say—“The phenomena we deal with are bi-polar, on the one side objective, on the other subjective, and these are the twofold aspects of reality:” a double-sided-

ness which enforces the conviction that to the positive equation of the world must be added the subjective equation—the united meaning explains the whole. To say—the consciousness we possess of God, of Sin, of Responsibility, of Eternity, are creations out of nothing, utter fictions, is equivalent to supposing that the human race issued from Adam and the sons of Adam, without the co-operation of Eve and her daughters. We know these things not only through heredity, by revival in successive generations of our race's experience in former ages, but by our own fresh experiences of consciousness; and as all the parts of Nature are analogous, we learn that the world within man and the world without man are alike manifestations of realities.

This knowledge is by means of a faculty which, though restricted within the sphere of experience, is able to apprehend, though not comprehend, concerning the supra-sensible and supernatural: a faculty which, by means of successive reaches in symbolical procedure, as in mathematics, enables gifted men so to enlarge and elevate sensible experiences, that they attain a prevision in spiritual things like the astonishing previsions of exact science. The truth of this may be discerned in the character and works of Moses, and in the narratives of creation.

There are two separate accounts of creative work, which, through want of sufficient critical skill, have been wrongly considered as varying and erring records by two different writers. The former account (Gen. i.-ii. 3) is a brief summary or symbol of creative acts. The latter account (Gen. ii. 4-22), after reference, in verse 4, to the creation of the world, describes the planting of Paradise, and particularises the fashioning, temptation, fall of man. The former, in which the Divine name is Elohim, אֱלֹהִים, shows God's relation to all things as the Creator, Owner, Lord of the universe. The latter, where we find the name or names, יְהוָה אֱלֹהִים, Jehovah Elohim, represents the Lord, the eternal and infinitely powerful: the Father—God in His own Essence, Source and Foundation of all; the Son—Mediating Principle, Deliverer, Saviour; the Spirit—the active Principle effectuating holiness in the redeemed creation; all included in Jehovah Elohim.

The first chapter being Elohistic, and the second Jehovistic, or Jahvistic, affords no conclusive evidence that the two accounts are not by the same author. In the Pentateuch, Histories, Psalms, one and the same writer will be found to use both names. An occasional appearance and disappearance of the sacred name, Jehovah, accords with the intense reverence in which it was held. Not only so, Elohim, "Mighties," is a more suitable word in describing creation; even as the name Jehovah gives a more touching character to redemption and represents the Divine Personality.

The evident contrariety of statement, both as to matter and manner, is proof of difference in the writer's aim. The proof can be given in detail:—

In the first chapter, six days form distinct and separate periods or eras of creative operation. In the second chapter, as if to show that the works of God are one work, and the days of God are one day—all the days become one—"the day that the Lord God made the earth and the heavens."

The first chapter, after stating that God is the Creator of all things, describes the use of means in development of the earth. The Spirit moves upon the waters—the chaotic fluidity was not water, such as we are now acquainted with, which could not collect until after the appearance of light, nor until the glowing earth began to cool on its surface. Light may be regarded as that means of effectual operation by Divine energy when will was enunciated, as figuratively expressed, by word. The firmamental expanse was cleared, the waters were gathered into seas, continents and islands were formed. Afterwards, the earth put forth vegetal power by which sea and land were replenished; the earth being that fruitful mother, able, by endued energy, to give birth to plant and to animal, as we now say, "by natural power"—all being done according to law. By law is meant that order and sequence, of varying intensity and rapidity, called natural. This chapter, we are told, "contains no error as to cosmical science."<sup>1</sup>

In the second chapter, the admirable mechanism and the

<sup>1</sup> "Notes on the Earlier Hebrew Scriptures:" Sir G. B. Airy, K.C.B.

work which was wrought by it are specially ascribed to a personal God. As if the notion of Democritus had been foreseen and corrected—"All life and change are due to the combination and separation of molecules;" as if the thought of Lucretius was anticipated and reprov'd—"Nature is seen to do all things spontaneously of herself;" and, as if the error of materialists had been prophesied of and condemned—"Matter is the universal mother;" we are plainly told—"The Lord God made the earth and the heavens, and every plant of the field before it was in the earth, and every herb of the field before it grew: for the Lord God had not caused it to rain upon the earth, and there was not a man to till the ground." Not from man was the pleasant pasture; nor did the mechanism and beauty of herb and flower proceed from the earth; nor is the exquisite structure of animals due to the ground—the Lord God made them all.

The word תולדות, "generations," heading the second narrative—"These are the generations of the heavens and of the earth when they were created, in the day that the Lord God made the earth and the heavens"—is not to be understood as giving an account of the original beginning, but taken in the sense of one thing proceeding from another, as (Gen. v. 1)—"This is the book of the generations of Adam;" and (Gen. x. 1)—"These are the generations of the sons of Noah."

The growth or advance speedily assumes an intense mystical signification. The Garden has to be dressed and kept, not merely to be kept from running wild; the meaning of dressing and keeping is deeper than that of trimming flowers. The Tree of Knowledge and the Tree of Life are mystical tokens of development: the command not to eat contains a warning against evil; and the entrance of a Tempter shows the need of these teachings, warnings, premonitions, concerning human duty, responsibility, and peril. The service and disservice, the submission and rebellion, the temptation, fall, death of man, are those things, proceeding from one another, of which this chapter records the generation.

The generations are connected with a change in the name of God. He is not simply אלהים, God, as He stands to matter, and to unintelligent life as the Divine energy,

but יהוה אלהים, Jehovah Elohim, God known to Man, the Personal, the Covenant God, to whom obedience is due, the Promiser and Restorer.

“God had not caused it to rain”—is not a denial of previous rain, but an assertion of the Divine origination of plants and animals. Paradise may have been a rainless, not treeless locality; but we do not understand, if so, why the dense warm vapour did not condense into rain. The statement signifies—Things did not exist of themselves, nor merely by the fertilising influence of rain. In the mind or wisdom of God every plant was created before it existed. The ideal first, after that the reality. The whole was conceived and spiritually wrought out before there was any rain. We may also take it thus—“God had not caused it to rain;” there was no new or special creation for rain, but there went up a mist from the earth. That rain did fall is certain. The Divinely ordered constitution of Nature required it. Rain-drops fell on sand, mud, soft clay, and left their marks on the sea-shores of the ancient world; and the rocky legend proves, by the shape of these little indentations, that long before man appeared the meteorologic state of the earth as to rain, wind, cloud, electricity, was the same as now.

“There went up a mist from the earth, and watered the whole face of the ground”—may be limited to Paradise. The dew is plentiful and rain is scanty in those parts where God's Garden is supposed to have been planted. We prefer this interpretation—The plant and herb were not created by growth-power of the earth, nor by the fertilising influence of rain, nor had man to do with them; they were God-made. The argument is—There was no rain, nor any power in rain, to form of themselves the exquisite and marvellous herb; nor was there any co-operation of man; God formed it, and with dew refreshed it. The mist going up from the earth returned in water to refresh the whole face of the ground. The origin was in that energy, above and beyond Nature, which comes down into Nature.

The view stated above, as to the distinct and separate purposes for which both accounts are given, is confirmed by one from whom we little expected confirmation. He writes of

the first—"None but a professed mystifier of the school of Philo could see anything but a plain statement of facts;" but "the circumstances related in the second narrative of creation are indeed such as to give at least some ground for the supposition that a mystical interpretation was intended to be given to it."<sup>1</sup> It would have been well had the writer sought out this mystical meaning; he might have found the true interpretation of the second narrative, and been preserved from the error of counting it a mere repetition of the former, and by a feebler hand. The chief purpose of the mystery, we venture to suggest, is to give in concrete form, so far as the nature of the thing and human capacity allow, an account of man's departure from the Almighty. The reality under the figure, and the figure with underlying reality, are that awful spectacle, the growth and consequences of spiritual depravity, which no man, with unveiled face, can safely look upon.

The fact, moreover, of the second narrative being mystical affords matter for study to those who say—"Your belief and our science are not possible in the same mind. Why the stupendous miracle of no rain on that spot of spots, Paradise—so beautiful in verdure—so rich in animal life? Rain must have fallen, even before the sea collected in mass: the existence of continent, of island, of river, necessitated the action of rain and denudation." We ourselves also, as men of science and of faith, must be at one with ourselves—intellect and emotion be duly content. Making, therefore, no attempt to explain the miracle—if miracle there was—not insisting even that Eden was a rainless locality—we have shown that probably it was not—regard the garden and the planting, the Trees of Life and of Knowledge, the formation of the woman, the visible appearance of the serpent and audible speech, as symbolical statements and embodiments to give simplicity and clearness to common understandings concerning spiritual transactions. Not the less but more real because spiritual; not weakened in truth because the whole may be recorded in allegorical form; not losing intensity of power, of meaning, of sacredness, but living with more life, and of motion supremely

<sup>1</sup> "Essays and Reviews"—*Mosaic Cosmogony*: C. W. Goodwin, M.A.

beautiful, because God arranged the Divine Plan as a landscape, and placed His own and human doings in Paradise. While thus putting the whole, so far as possible, in a form acceptable to scientific minds, we do well to remember our Lord's words—"Thomas, because thou hast seen Me, thou hast believed: blessed are they that have not seen, and yet have believed" (John xx. 29).

Further, that the two accounts were written for distinct and separate purposes appears plain from—(1) Facts left out, (2) The enlarged and varied arrangement of facts, in the second narrative.

#### 1.—FACTS LEFT OUT.

There is no mention of the earth being originally without form and void, nor of darkness upon the deep, nor of the command, "Let there be light." The fact of creation is simply stated. The moving of the Spirit, the ordination of day and night, the formation and operation of the firmament, are not spoken of; nor the gathering of water into seas, nor the appearing of dry land. Sun, moon, stars, are not even named, whether as lights or rulers. Creation of fish in the water, and the image of God in man, are passed by; nor is there any mention of the Sabbath.

#### 2.—THE ENLARGED AND VARIED ARRANGEMENT OF FACTS.

There is no separation of days, they are all one day. Chronology is not thought of. Birds brought forth by the water (ch. i. 20) are placed (ch. ii. 19) with animals, and formed out of the ground. The latter statement is not incorrect, for though science affirms that fish were the progenitors of birds, not immediately, but through the reptile, they may be said to come from the ground as mother of all things. Animals are placed after man, and woman is formed of man, not with man from the ground. Woman is produced from man by means of fission, not known to us as a natural possibility except in some low orders of life.<sup>1</sup> The special mention of woman, and the words—"Therefore shall a man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his wife," are undoubtedly to sanctify marriage, and to make the position

<sup>1</sup> "The Origin of the World," J. W. Dawson, LL.D., F.R.S.

of woman one of purity and safety as to her husband. It is hard, indeed, to resist the conviction that the whole is a *proemium* to the narrative of temptation and ruin, and of redemption from ruin. Adam and Paradise, temptation and transgression, ruin and redemption, are the central objects. Geologist, astronomer, theologian, who attempts to explain the Hebrew narrative, is bound to take it with all belonging to it.

Consider somewhat more deeply the nature and meaning of the second narrative.

Man is "a living soul," *נֶפֶשׁ חַיָּה*: the living or efficient soul in the flesh—body and soul being one man. Sometimes, as the soul is the efficient or chief, it is taken as title for the dead (Lev. xix. 28). The soul is not an exile from happier existence, and placed in the body to do penance for formerly committed sins, but that which the self-movement of God Himself called into being by effectual interference when He made man. We rightly say—the cause was God. The material of the outer body was earth. The inner spiritual ground or consciousness was fashioned into the Divine form, image, likeness, by Inspiration. The effected object was a human form, of flesh subsisting, with inner Divinely embodied spirit. If there was any man before this, he was not a true man, but a psychical man, not having the *pneuma*, spirit.

The peculiarity separating the real man from animals and angels is, that animals have a nature which is wholly used up in the necessary expenditure of life; but man, being spiritual, is not expended in natural use; angels are in the image of God, being sons (Job i. 6, xxxviii. 7), personal, not corporeal; but man, the earthly one in God's likeness, has a bodily form. This—which leads some of us erroneously to regard God as man-like, because we, in a sense, are God-like—means that the spirit-embodied man, being exalted above the material world, yet not purely spiritual, stands between the impersonal bodily world and the personal bodiless spirits as the connecting link of all created beings (Ps. viii. 5, 6). Not only so, man being a law unto himself, while God was shining forth in his spirit, his life was in very deed the vision of God. This light was quenched in the Fall, and life became a dead life; but the

living spirit, though in moulded dust, subsisted; that by restoration in Christ we may be transformed again and assimilated to God. Thus viewed, man is God-man; and when laid in the grave, is that grain of wheat out of which springs, by Divine energy, perfect and glorified humanity. In Christ's life, death, resurrection, there is a manifest oneness with our own. In the Scriptural sense, we live and die in Christ; in and with Christ are buried; in, by, and with Christ we rise from the tomb, ascend to heaven, dwell with God.

Cattle, reptiles, beasts of the earth, are called "living souls;" but there was no embrace of love, no breath, no special moulding in their creation. They grew, every one after his sort, having life from God—nutritive life, sensuous life, but all by means of the earth. There was no in-breathing, whatever that may mean, nor spirit from Jehovah, whatever that may convey. As to man, there was creation of body, enduing with life, inspiration of soul.

Scripture traces man no further back than to Adam from whom we all proceed. Adam is placed in Paradise to dress and keep it. Through some strange influence, a brute becomes an intelligent speaking creature, a means of temptation, and a power by which man, who was to subdue evil, is himself overcome by evil. If the whole be counted an allegory, the underlying truth is not the less intense or real. The world, in consequence of evil, seems a mingling of wrath and love—but love has supremacy; and Satan, who had been banished into narrower dominion (2 Pet. ii. 4), setting himself to war against man (Ephes. vi. 12), is to find that man whom he abused—man who began with lower powers, made yet lower by sin—shall attain to high, even glorious state (Heb. ii. 10, 11).

Man is called "Adam," אָדָם, "earth," because of the earth was formed that body which became a vessel to contain the soul wherein resides the spirit, which is the image of God. Adam is the earthly one, in contrast with that second Adam who is the Heavenly One. The former was a living soul, the latter a quickening spirit (1 Cor. xv. 45). One is the likeness of God in an earthen vessel, the other is the likeness of God (Phil. ii. 6) in brightness of glory (2 Cor. iv. 6, 7; Heb. i. 3).

Adam, and we in him, are earthly living souls, and, having a spirit, are in the form of God. It is characteristic that, being in the form of God, our natural life is transformed and raised into the participation of spiritual living. The matter may be seen in fact ; for Christ, by generation, is God-man ; and we, through Christ, by regeneration, are God-men. This confirms our kinship with the whole earth, and the promise of our elevation above the earth into the "house not made with hands." Man is as other earthly things, yet above other earthly things. He lives in twofold relation : first, to all natural and physical life by special operation ; and secondly, in Divine kinship and communion by inspiration, regeneration, sanctification.

If we draw a little nearer, the truth appears in this form : the entire life of Nature, in reciprocal action and varied powers has unity and purpose in and from the great Architect. The vegetative life is subordinated to the animal life, and the animal to the spiritual. The human body contains all the substance and powers of previously existing life ; and these, being combined by special operation, constitute that organic individuality into which the Lord breathed the breath of life : not making man a part of Godhead, but creating a spirit of moral and intellectual power in likeness to the Godhead. At our death this created spirit is separated from the mortal, and at our resurrection is joined to the immortal body. The soul is the body of the spirit, the flesh is the body of the soul ; so far as soul is animal, it is the informing part of that which is corruptible ; in so far as it is spiritual, or the vessel containing the spirit, it is the inner man.

The narrative is the simplest story ever told, suited for the childhood of our race, and for children now, yet the grandest ever written, the most mysterious ever conceived. We have in it "truths that perish never," requiring thousands of years for fulness of growth. Many a discovery in science died, like a thing born out of due time, and lived not again till ages had passed away. These living things never die. They are a song of strangest, sweetest melody which saddened yet gladdened the purest spirits of our race ; God's psalm of life, giving glorious ideas, making deeps where was no depth nor inwardness.

No argument as to the verity of these two narratives—the former in historical reality, and the latter as containing symbols of mysterious and spiritual, yet actual events—will be deemed conclusive without the evidence derived from the cuneiform inscriptions, or “Chaldean Account of Genesis.” The discovered tablets are fragmentary, and in a mutilated condition; not one is complete, and only a general view of the whole subject can be obtained. The inscriptions agree with the Scriptural account of Creation, and of the Fall; and it is conjectured that every creative day had its own tablet. Taking the best known arrangement of the fragments according to subjects,<sup>1</sup> we have—

1. An account of chaos and the generation of the gods.
2. A fragment, perhaps of the second tablet, on the foundation of the deep.
3. The creation of land.
4. Part of the fifth tablet, giving the creation of the heavenly bodies.
5. Fragments of the seventh tablet, giving the creation of land animals.
6. Fragments of three tablets on the Creation and Fall of man.
7. Fragments of tablets relating to the war between gods and evil spirits.

The translation of the fragments of the first tablet is:—

1. “When above, were not raised the heavens;
2. and below on the earth a plant had not grown up;
3. the abyss also had not broken open their boundaries;
4. the chaos (or water) Tiamat (the sea) was the producing-mother of the whole of them.
5. Those waters at the beginning were ordained; but
6. a tree had not grown, a flower had not unfolded.”<sup>2</sup>

The other translated portions—except 8, “a plant had not grown, and order did not exist”—refer to the creating of gods.

“The three next tablets in the creation series are absent, there being only two doubtful fragments of this part of the

<sup>1</sup> “The Chaldean Account of Genesis,” pp. 62-100: George Smith.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.* pp. 62, 63.

story."<sup>1</sup> It is conjectured that they contained an account of the bringing forth of light, of the firmament, of dry land, of plants.

The fifth tablet narrates the creation of the heavenly bodies as contained in Genesis under the fourth day; and a subsequent tablet, probably the seventh, records the creation on the sixth day. This double example leads to the inference that every day's work was recorded on a separate tablet, and in the Genesis order of the days. A tablet, thought to be the eighth, appears to state the Creation and Fall of man. There are several other tablets, but very mutilated; and no number can be positively proved beyond the fifth tablet. The moon is created before the sun.<sup>2</sup> As to the fragments regarding man, one fragment might belong to the purest system of religion, but mutilations render the sense uncertain. On another fragment is an account of the curse after the Fall.<sup>3</sup> "The obverse of the tablet giving the Creation of man, when it breaks off leaves him in a state of purity, and where it recommences on the reverse man has already fallen."<sup>4</sup> "The word 'Adam,' is not used as a proper name, but for all mankind. The Tree of Life seems referred to as the grove or forest of the gods. The dragon of the sea, answering to the serpent in Genesis, is connected with the Fall, bringing it about, and sharing the curse."<sup>5</sup> He is conceived of as a spirit of evil, self-existent, eternal, belonging to the original chaos, opposed to and older than the gods. "He is 'the intelligent guide,' or, according to another interpretation, 'the intelligent fish,' 'the teacher of mankind,' 'the lord of understanding.' One of his emblems is the 'wedge' or 'arrow-head,' the essential element of cuneiform writing, which seems to be assigned to him as the inventor, or at least the patron, of the Chaldean alphabet. Another emblem is the serpent, which occupies so conspicuous a place among the symbols of the gods on the black stones recording benefactions, and which sometimes appears upon the cylinders. This symbol, here as elsewhere, is emblematic of superhuman knowledge—a record of the primeval belief

<sup>1</sup> "The Chaldean Account of Genesis," p. 67: George Smith.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.* p. 75.    <sup>3</sup> *Ibid.* pp. 82-85.    <sup>4</sup> *Ibid.* p. 86.    <sup>5</sup> *Ibid.* p. 90.

that 'the serpent was more subtle than any beast of the field.'<sup>1</sup>

The Assyrians, who made these tablets, acknowledge that they borrowed from Babylonian sources; the greater part being copied in the age of Assurbanipal, B.C. 670.<sup>2</sup> It is certain that the Babylonians, in the period about B.C. 2000 to 1500, believed in a story similar to that in Genesis.<sup>3</sup> We may, therefore, regard it as settled for ever that the Bible account of the Divine Creation of Man, of his Temptation and Fall by means of an evil spirit or serpent, are not modern inventions. It follows that the doctrine of redemption recorded by Moses (Gen. iii. 15) in connection with the Transgression and Fall, disposes of the error as to Christianity having been evolved from human consciousness, apart from Divine or Supernatural influence. The essentials of our faith are all fore-shadowed in the primeval record.

The superiority of the Mosaic record may be seen by reading, as specimen, a fine passage from fragments of the fifth tablet, an account of the fourth day of creation."<sup>4</sup>

Obverse—

1. "It was delightful, all that was fixed by the great gods.
2. Stars their appearance (in figures) of animals he arranged.
3. To fix the year through the observation of their constellations,
4. twelve months (or signs) of stars in three rows he arranged,
5. from the day when the year commences unto the close.
6. He marked the position of the wandering stars (planets) to shine in their courses,
7. that they may not do injury, and may not trouble any one,
8. the positions of the gods Bel and Hea he fixed with him.

<sup>1</sup> "The Five Great Monarchies of the Eastern World," vol. i. p. 154: George Rawlinson, M.A.

<sup>2</sup> "The Chaldean Account of Genesis," pp. 22, 28: George Smith.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.* p. 100.

<sup>4</sup> *Ibid.* p. 69.

9. And he opened the great gates in the darkness shrouded
10. the fastenings were strong on the left and right.
11. In the mass (*i.e.* the lower chaos) he made a boiling,
12. the god Uru (the moon) he caused to rise out, the night he overshadowed,
13. to fix it also for the light of the night, until the shining of the day,
14. that the month might not be broken, and in its amount be regular.
15. At the beginning of the month, at the rising of the night,
16. his horns are breaking through to shine on the heaven.
17. On the seventh day to a circle he begins to swell,
18. and stretches towards the dawn further.
19. When the good Shamas (the sun) in the horizon of heaven, in the east,
20. . . . formed beautifully and . . . . .
21. . . . . to the orbit Shamas was perfected
22. . . . . the dawn Shamas should change
23. . . . . going on its path.
24. . . . . giving judgment.
25. . . . . to tame
26. . . . . a second time
27. . . . .

Now read from the Bible, Gen. i. 14-19—"God said, Let there be lights in the firmament of the heaven to divide the day from the night ; and let them be for signs, and for seasons, and for days, and years : And let them be for lights in the firmament of the heaven to give light upon the earth : and it was so. And God made two great lights ; the greater light to rule the day, and the lesser light to rule the night : He made the stars also. And God set them in the firmament of the heaven to give light upon the earth, and to rule over the day and over the night, and to divide the light from the darkness : and God saw that it was good. And the evening and the morning were the fourth day."

It seems hardly credible that the determined resolve to be rid of miracles, inspiration, prophecy, everything supernatural,

should lead any man to regard Moses as having obtained his theology and cosmology from a jumble of serpent-worship, devil-worship, and Babylonian myth; yet, "some have gone so far as to argue that the Mosaic account was derived from it. Others, who reject this notion, suggest that a certain 'old Chaldee tradition' was 'the basis of them both.' If we drop out the word 'Chaldee' from the statement, it may be regarded as fairly expressing the truth. The Babylonian legend embodies a primeval tradition, common to all mankind, of which an inspired author has given us the true groundwork in the first and second chapters of Genesis."<sup>1</sup>

There are a few persons who say—"Theologians retain the Genesis account to prop up the theory of the Fall and of Satan's personality—retain it against reason; and if the book of any other religion gave an account of a speaking serpent, and of woman formed from the side of man, the whole would be counted an absurdity." Doubtless, but these marvels, even if regarded as allegorical, are certainly true in their deep meaning; really live in moral and physical events now operating. They are written in a manner so as to be understood by children, yet with depths for profoundest minds; are related in a Book which holds and will hold the world in awe; are connected with a scheme wonderfully comprehensive and mysterious; are the only accepted narrative which sufficiently explains the sin, the misery, the past and future of mankind. If you take away the ancient narrative, deny the recorded events, refuse the essential meaning, assert that there is no record of the universe having received damage, what then? You are without any explanation of that in man which leads to devil-worship, and of those almost universal traditions which relate of sin entering by means of an evil principle. Nor do you get rid of marvels; the gradual growth of the universal mind of humanity, as asserted by some philosophers, and the redemption and sanctification affirmed with better authority by Christians, are nobler works, more lustrous in beauty and goodness, greater marvels, than any old wonder. These

<sup>1</sup> "The Five Great Monarchies of the Eastern World," vol. i. p. 182: George Rawlinson, M.A.

supernatural works have stimulated the mind of Europe to all its highest efforts. They go home to the hearts of men in all ranks of society, in all countries. The most practical men that the world has ever seen maintain that the knowledge of those old mysterious transactions was handed down to Moses through a tradition which had become the almost exclusive possession of the few who retained their faith in the primitive religion; the tradition being confirmed and probably enlarged to him by new revelation.

In full confidence we retain our faith, revere the narratives, the ceremonies, the symbols in which it is embodied. Our confidence is further warranted because the verity and reality of both narratives are foundation of the whole spiritual building which Scripture erects.

The first narrative is full of spiritual reality and instruction, extending from the fact that God did frame the worlds (Heb. xi. 3), until it arrives at the startling statement that this frame encloses a spectacle of such vast import that angels learn the manifold wisdom of God (Ephes. iii. 10).

The reality underlying the second narrative manifests itself not only in the symbolistic and allegorising exegesis of patristic theology, but especially in the doctrines of Holy Scripture. The creation of heaven and earth is the fact on which rests the declaration that we shall see a new heaven and a new earth (Rev. xxi. 1). The beginning of all things is treated as the beginning of manifestation concerning the mystery of the Divine nature (John i. 1). The Spirit brooding over the waters and bringing forth life, prefigures the continual operation of God in our souls (John iii. 5). The springing up of light is an analogue of the glory and the light in the city of God (Rev. xxi. 23). The birth of land from the sea (Gen. i. 9) reminds us of all things being made new, and of there being no more troublous things like the sea (Rev. xxi. 1). The springing up of plants (Gen. i. 11) is a figure of the tree with food for all nations (Rev. xxii. 2). The sun, the moon, the stars, are a witness of mystery not yet fully known (Rev. xii. 1, xxi. 23). The Sabbath rest is symbol of the rest that remaineth (Heb. iv. 9, 10). Who will forego the hope which is set forth in the fact of paradise? (Luke xxiii. 43). From the

ground, out of which we were formed, we shall again arise, re-formed, other than this body, of a higher essence: our personal identity residing within the inner man, not the earthly outside (1 Cor. xv. 24-44). In material substance we are like all flesh, yet all flesh is not the same flesh, even as the stars are not all suns (ver. 39, 40). The rivers of paradise flow into one river of life. The tree of death, by the tremendous death on Calvary, has become a veritable Tree of Knowledge; and we have access unto the Tree of Life with twelve manner of fruits. Not once, but a hundred times, are the actual facts, in their reality and their doctrinal truth, recorded in the Pentateuch, the Psalms, the Prophets, the Gospels. All these fruitful interpretations would be unfruitful and no interpretation, did they not grow out of the real actual germ—God made the world and all things that are therein. The physical is alphabet of the spiritual. All the works of the Most High are two and two, one against another (Ecclus. xxxiii. 15). "Novum Testamentum in Vetere latet; Vetus Testamentum in Novo patet."

The whole becomes more wonderful when compared with Auguste Comte's famous but erroneous law of scientific progress. Every science, he says, passes to perfection by three stages—the theological, the metaphysical, the positive. Biblical science is the very reverse of this, and founded on the most positive and simple statements which it is possible to make. The whole race of man, and afterwards Israel in particular, were dealt with in the directest, most real, and positive manner. Those were the true days of sacred positivism. The Lord is declared to be One God, Nature is a work of creation and order, a living expression of the might and omnipresence of the Deity. The visible world is not self-dependent, but in relation and subjection to higher spiritual power. He who doubts may compare the simplicity and reality of Genesis with the myths, poems, rhapsodies, of all other nations. From that positive was a transition into the metaphysical: the prophets are witnesses. Then appeared Jesus who, with perfect truth, established the world's theological school. His piety rested on true wisdom, and that wisdom was based on positive fact. Our knowledge of it is like a view in a glass

—yet not a view in a glass ; it brightens and elevates the human mind into a likeness of the Divine Mind. Man's duty, high and lifted up above the mists of human error, has the body of heaven in its clearness. Faith ascends to God—Creator, Redeemer, Sanctifier. Our will, if we are not unbelieving and rebellious, is becoming conformed to His Will ; our thoughts are being fashioned by His Mind. When perfect in Christ, we shall be one with God, and He one with us (John xvii. 21-23).

“ Oh, my friend,  
That thy faith were as mine ; that thou couldst see  
Death still producing life ! And evil still  
Working its own destruction—couldst behold  
The strifes and tumults of this troubled world,  
With the strong eye that sees the promised day  
Dawn through this night of tempest ; all things then  
Would minister to joy ; then should thine heart  
Be healed and harmonised, and thou wouldst feel  
God always, everywhere, and all in all ! ”

*Southey.*

## STUDY XVI.

### THE PRE-ADAMITE WORLD.

" Christian, try to solve the problems  
Which life's mystery surround.  
Why God made thee? Why He loves thee?  
Where thou art, and whither bound?"

*The Three Bibles (Unpublished).*

Hæredi æternitatis Adam vixit heri.

THE account of creation, if a true account, is proved by that truthfulness to be Divinely inspired. Early unscientific thought could not, of itself, know or invent those deeply hidden facts of which accurate science has but lately obtained possession; however clear the mind's eye of ancient contemplative genius, it could not, without Divine aid, see how the world was framed. A revelation, therefore, of the fact that God did create the world is vastly important, and establishes the kingdom of God in the universe of matter; as the moral history and salvation of man establish it in the world of spirits.

It is not a picture of the Divine action drawn by an ancient geologist, though there is agreement with the discoveries of geological science, as regards the antiquity of the earth, and as to the process of its formation; nor was it depicted by man's imagination trying, in its own way, to account for Nature's origin and phenomena. Imagination was used, but only as the faculty through which God made a revelation of Himself. There was knowledge, but, so far as we can judge, not scientifically obtained as is our modern conception of the universe. "It is the production of a writer who seems to possess an acquaintance with natural history, and might almost be suspected of knowing some facts of geology;"<sup>1</sup> yet this acquaintance he could not possess. The simplicity of the

<sup>1</sup> "Notes on the Earlier Hebrew Scriptures," p. 14: Sir G. B. Airy, K.C.B.

words and deep accurate meaning agreeing with latest attainments of science ; the painting of things which men could not have seen, and description of works which man could have no knowledge of ; are from a human mind mysteriously acquainted with the deep things of God.

The heavens were undoubtedly in existence when our earth was formed. The heavens are not the firmament, which was created the second day ; nor are they simply the sun, moon, and stars, spoken of in the fourth day. Heavens may mean all these and many more. The Apostolic word (Ephes. iii. 10) declares that the manifold wisdom of God is made known by the earthly Church to angelic powers of heaven ; as if to show that God's eternal world-plan did not begin with the earth, even as it will not end with the earth. Science tells us that star-formation is yet in progress ; and Scripture states that the Lord is even now preparing mansions (John xiv. 2). It is not needful to inquire whether heaven may be a spiritual world which enters, encloses, extends far beyond, all material existence. The Scriptural doctrine is—"Long before the earth was fashioned for man, there were heavens, morning stars, angels, regions more glorious than the earth, heavens more ancient than the firmament, heavenly inhabitants who excel in strength."<sup>1</sup>

Consequently, there have been wonderful and startling acts of which we possess but few incidents, whether as to physical creation, or the origin and fall of spirits (Job xxxviii. 12, 13 ; Isai. xiv. 12 ; Luke x. 18 ; John viii. 44 ; 2 Pet. ii. 4 ; Jude 6 ; 1 John iii. 8). The fall of angels, as connected with our own early history, may be thus briefly stated :—Man was placed in Paradise to dress and keep it. The secret meaning of this service becomes apparent in the fact that a tempter became the cause of ruin. There was evil for man to overcome : evil outside of him, not human—but angelic or spiritual.

How far demoniacal malignity introduced or magnified suffering in the early animal world, Scripture does not reveal ; unless the "wasteness or emptiness," spoken of in the second verse of Gen. i. mean, as some think, a caused or wasting

<sup>1</sup> "Mosaic Record of Creation : " A. M'Caul, D.D.

desolation. In Jer. iv. 23, the words are used of destruction wrought as punishment for sin. In Isai. xxxiv. 11, they mean an after-destruction of that which once had been beautiful. In Rom. viii. 20-22, we are told that the creation was made subject to vanity, not willingly, but in hope. Nevertheless, we need not take the wasteness as having been caused maliciously, for the Scripture statement—"God did not make the earth to be waste"—is verified by the six days' process. The earth was wasteness and emptiness, or, as translated, "without form and void," because it had not yet been shaped, nor fitted for living creatures. *אֵינֶנּוּ*, "wasteness," is sometimes used as synonymous with *אֵינֶנּוּ*, "non-existence," and *אֵינֶנּוּ* for "nothingness." It is certain that all good operation, all healthful and orderly production, proceed from the Will of God; and that the Divine plan, working by a conditioning influence, renders even wasteness and desolateness receptive of Divine energy. The disorder, in its degrees of evil, though made a means of discipline, is attributed to the agency, direct or indirect, of the devil and his angels; who, having fallen from their allegiance to God, sought to mar His good work. Hence we know why wrath seems mingled with love; why there is pain, strife, death; why providence is that entangled maze which only a faithful, wise, loving heart can understand aright.

The fall of angels, and their evil influence on men, must not be put away as poetical and figurative; there is meaning, and that of a most awful character. What it is, as to the earth, we are painfully conscious of in the sin of our race, in the continual conflict of flesh and spirit, and in the dread of judgment to come. The record is a true history of real acts, not a mythological account of natural disturbances, nor a personifying of processes and laws by which God worked. There is certainly a magnetism of attraction and repulsion pervading all things. Subtle universal influences vibrate through all classes of organic and inorganic substance. It is not a shallow but deep philosophy that finds, in the bad passions and moral diseases of intelligent creatures, something that corrupts, or may corrupt, the whole course of Nature (Rom. viii. 20-22), even as a whole history of sorrow may be read in the accents of some peculiarly plaintive voice.

"Specially remarkable, miraculous it really seems to be, is that character of reserve which leaves open to reason all that reason may be able to attain. The meaning seems always to be ahead of science, not because it anticipates the results of science, but because it is independent of them, and runs, as it were, round the outer margin of all possible discovery."<sup>1</sup> The numerous passages of Scripture which affirm or imply human responsibility, the existence and agency of extra-human and superhuman orders, are connected with a vast scheme. Accurate study will give consistency to this evidence, dissipate many difficulties, and expand our knowledge of those mysterious beings with whom our own destinies are so marvellously involved.

The pre-Adamite world, occupying innumerable ages, answers the request of geologists for vast duration; and allows, if need be, for pre-Adamite men. If such precursors existed of the Adam-man, as the Adam-man preceded the Christ-man, they were brute men, in whom was no breath of God; but, at best, only life yearning for more life. It is just possible, that as plant and animal had their order; the more primitive of each being more simple, and those following, for the most part, more highly organised; there may have been rudimentary men formed, as Scripture says, out of the ground. These may possibly have lived on for many generations until, in fulness of time, they were regenerated or recreated as the Adam, our forefather. There are thoughtful men who accept this as not unscriptural, and as explanatory of a scientific difficulty. They are quite prepared to admit that the psychic man may have come from some lower form of life; but they see in the pneumatic man something that the theory of evolution cannot account for. We will not say, as Delitzsch—"The man who, in the ape, greets his brother only a little left behind, must needs have first substantially brutalised himself, or he would rather shudder at this counterpart of his own degradation."<sup>2</sup> It is better to allow those who think that our structural resemblances to the nearest allied quadrumana are of a character indicating that both man and ape are derived from

<sup>1</sup> "Primeval Man," p. 367: Duke of Argyle.

<sup>2</sup> "Biblical Psychology," part ii. sect. 1.

some earlier common stock, to state their opinion. There is no harm done when they say—"The body being formed by a perfectly natural process, and existing so that—

" 'The soul did but mean the breath,  
It knew no more ;'

then came the Divine gift of immortality by means of endowing the (σάρξ) flesh, with (πνεύμα) the spirit ; thus the (σώμα) body, dwelt in by the (ψυχή) life, became, through (πνεύμα) the spirit, a Divine man." Hence, though descended from the brute, man is immortal by the birth of a spirit in him which bridged the gulf between meanness and majesty. Since which time it has ever been—

" More upward, working out the beast ;  
Letting the ape and tiger die."

As for ourselves, we are in no hurry to solve every difficulty. All the sciences, even those professing most accuracy, are surrounded by many and great mysteries. Theology is one of the sciences. Every root of study is lost in the unknown, and every height of knowledge enters a transcendental expanse. All scientific men, in the course of life, change their opinions as to the mysterious agencies and complex mechanism of the world. It is well to accept as part of our discipline, and an exercise of faith, that we must watch and wait. We are imperfect but progressive beings, and Revelation not only promotes the study of Nature, but renders it honourable as an inquiry into the ways of God. The exact point of time in which it pleased the Eternal to create man cannot be determined, but if man had existed very many thousand years on the earth, whether in brute form or rational image, he must have left memorials ; yet not a vestige is found of that assumed ancient life—not a relic of old bestial condition. All flint instruments are accounted for by a reasonable antiquity ; and the savage forms of life, however degraded, were not brutal ; the so-called Palæolithic men possessed great cerebral development ; and probably were not in a more degraded condition than the aborigines of Cape York.<sup>2</sup> The hypothetical advance of our race through stone, bronze, iron ages,

<sup>2</sup> See Moseley, "Notes of the Challenger Expedition."

does not fairly illustrate the advance of art ; certainly not the growth of mind, nor " progression from blind force to conscious intellect and will." There is accumulated evidence showing that the earliest historical races excelled in many processes of art and in many kinds of culture. All primitive traditions commence life about the same era, and the oldest reliable historical record is the Hebrew, the right interpretation of which gives high antiquity to the genesis of man.

Savagery, moreover, is a condition much further advanced from brute life than is the cultured man from the savage; therefore, savagery and civilisation must be taken as lower and higher stages of the same formation. To assume the development of brute into savage, and to endow the brutal original with all those elements which culture develops into the faith and science of a Christian philosopher, take for granted and natural that which is without one example in the whole course of history. The best applied scientific treatment, however extended and systematic, cannot develop a brute into a human being ; nor, when we have the savage human being, can we always civilise him—he generally perishes under the operation ; nor, having civilised him, can we choose our individuals, and by higher culture develop Homers, Miltons, Shakespeares, Newtons. The Divine narrative, that man was created with mental and spiritual capacities, contains fewer elements of real difficulty than those which cumber the brute hypothesis.

Some ancient records tell of our ancestors in caves, clothed with skins, eating raw vegetables. The teeth in old skulls never exhibit caries. They are worn down flat, and therefore roots may have been as often eaten as flesh. We need not go to Lucretius for a large-boned, hardy, lawless race ; nor to poetic traces of culture beginning outside and ending inside the range of human memory ; Scripture records that a child-like condition was the earliest stage ; but the children soon became men. Prior to the classical age, the civilisation of Egypt culminated ; behind it lay the progress of the pyramid kings ; and, yet earlier, Scripture record shows considerable culture of that kind which belongs to a primitive people. Even if we assume, with those who support the savage theory,

that man found out, unaided, all that he knows ; it is fatal to the savage theory : for discoverers of the use of fire, of the use of grasses now known as corn, were, as regards their value, the most splendid of men. It were strange indeed if the most useful arts, and the grandest moral truths, were not only discovered in primeval times, but by men only a little removed from savagery.

Advancing art, if piety is lost, corrupts simplicity. All historical civilisations are, indeed, notorious for the separation of worldly intelligence from piety ; so that the true theory of mankind is that both development and degradation have their place in history ; but against the brutal or even savage condition of the primitive race exists the fact—"No example can be brought forward of an actually savage people having independently become civilised ;"<sup>1</sup> and the result of European intercourse, during the last three or four centuries, has been the destruction rather than the development of barbarous tribes.

If we ask the counter question—"Is there any recorded instance of a civilised people falling into a savage state?" the answer is—"Egyptians, Hindoos, Chinese, tracing civilisation back to a period more than five thousand years in the past, testify of a culture better than that now possessed." It is well known that impurity tends to degradation, and causes the loss of more than was gained by artificial culture. Ancient Grecian genius slumbers, and no cry can awake it. The modern Italian has long lost the proud state and place of the old Roman. The Hebrideans were for ages under the influence of comparatively high civilisation, yet they lost it. The ancient Irish had a better style than that described by Fynes Morgan, about A.D. 1600. The lords of the wild, or "meere" Irish, dwell in poor clay houses, or cabins of boughs covered with turf. In many parts, both men and women have but a linen rag about the loins, and a woollen mantle on their bodies. "It turns a man's stomach before breakfast to see an old woman in the morning." There are instances of civilised men taking to wild life in outlying districts of the world ; and degeneration acts more destructively on lower

<sup>1</sup> "Romische Geschichte," part I. p. 88 : Niebuhr.

than on higher culture. The small knowledge and the few appliances of savage hordes render them peculiarly susceptible of degrading influences, and incapable of the efforts necessary to attain and maintain high physical and mental state. The colossal figures of hewn stone in Easter Island were shaped by ancestors of men now incapable of such gigantic works. Ancient Negro kingdoms of extended political organisation preceded the existing small communities of blacks which possess little or no tradition of their previous greatness. The Red Indians were surpassed by the Mount-Builders, those former inhabitants of the Mississippi Valley. The Chinese and rude Indian, appealing to the authority of ancestors against modern civilisation and science, testify of a good time that is past. The degradation of Arabians and Spaniards is historic.

If it be said—"All these have fallen, but none became savage," the reply is crushing—"The miserable Digger Indians of North America, the Bushmen of South Africa—persecuted remnants of tribes who have seen better days—are degraded into savage life. The Algonquin Indians look back to golden days, when life was less bitter and manners less rude.<sup>1</sup> The rough Kamchadal counts that the world has grown worse and is growing worse.<sup>2</sup> The western coast of Greenland has been for ages familiar to seamen and men of science: to civilise the Eskimo is as impossible as to cultivate the country he inhabits. He is an example of degeneracy from a comparatively civilised to an almost savage state. He has fallen into that state which philosophers who explain human progress by evolution have pronounced to be impossible and almost inconceivable. There is, indeed, abundant evidence of degradation and fall amongst nations. The splendid days of Augustine and Trajan were speedily darkened by clouds of ignorance when barbarians subverted Roman laws and palaces; even as now savages, without the dignity of savages, in the great cities of Europe, are a danger to vaunted refinement. There is proof of degeneration, but

<sup>1</sup> "Schoolcraft *Algie Res.*," vol. i. p. 50; quoted in "Primitive Culture," vol. i. p. 43, E. B. Tylor.

<sup>2</sup> "Steller *Kamtschatka*," p. 272; ditto, ditto.

not one example of any nation advancing from savagery to civilisation. If, moreover, modern savages are direct descendants of the primitive race—no man of science regarding them as a late development from brutes—they must be a degeneration from the old race.”

Sir Charles Lyell, in his “Antiquity of Man” (cap. xix.), argues that, if the original stock had been endowed with superior powers, inspired knowledge, and the improvable nature of their posterity, we should now, instead of digging up rudest pottery and flint implements, find sculptured forms surpassing in beauty the masterpieces of Phidias or Praxiteles, lines of buried railway and electric telegraphs, with astronomical instruments and microscopes, examples of perfection in art and science. He forgot that Scripture states the high condition was lost, and that men were degraded by iniquity. He forgot that history reveals, and relics from buried cities bring to light, a grand and very ancient civilisation; a civilisation of such splendour and power that we are apt to think the old builders were giants—the modern pigmies.

Those who prefer evolution as a more satisfactory explanation of man’s origin, thinking thereby to avoid everything miraculous, do not get rid of mystery, nor of Divine interference; they, indeed, establish mystery and render interference perpetual: for as matter cannot create more matter, nor unintelligence create intelligence, it is equally certain that vegetable life cannot of itself create animal life; nor can brutes, by any effort of their own, acquire the intellectual and moral powers of human beings. This is all that Christians contend for: not that men were created mechanics, astronomers, philosophers; but, though having common sense, were childlike and of no experience. The laws of mind were the same in the days of Abraham’s fathers as they are now. There was a making of men, and a marring of men, as they did good or evil—the evil tending to degeneration, the good advancing to civilisation. If civilisation became separated from faith and purity the people perished. We need to realise this, and that man was not necessarily low because he had no temples and no machinery. Nature is higher than fine art. In contemplating Nature, in seeking after God, man

had highest teachers. Indeed, highest culture enables us now to see that the primitive refinement was very good.

The argument seems conclusive, but we will view it somewhat differently.

There is definite progress not only in the genesis of the earth, but in the genesis of life. The advance is from darkness and chaos to light and beauty; from low forms of vegetation to the higher; from the life that swarms in water to the fish, the reptile, the bird; from the living creatures on land to those of increased definite complexity in structure and function; until, in man, we have intellectual and emotional changes. It would be in the highest degree unscriptural and unscientific to deny that the progress from the less special to the more specialised may have been wrought by means of natural orderly causes during a long course of time, and by well-nigh insensible gradation. So far, therefore, evolution may be that long creative process of organic advance, by minute increments, which tends to perfection.

Concerning this organic advance, experience shows that out of the general web of existence special threads are drawn and woven into new and peculiar patterns. The elements of new organisms, however differently arranged, are the same as those contained in the original mass; nevertheless, by new grouping surprisingly novel phenomena emerge. We do not think, when the physical motions of molecules are rearranged in chemical actions, that any addition is made to the primitive energies; nor do biologists generally suppose, when physical and chemical actions are specially grouped and vital phenomena emerge, that any essential addition is made beyond that of the new grouping of old material and of old energy; so in the emergence or creation of man, and afterwards in the development of social life, there is no casting away of the old threads, they are rewoven into more beautiful patterns. As the flower which comes into existence and grows by energy imparted by the sun, is but a reproduction in new form of that which was imparted; so sentient organisms reproduce all that produced them; and—this is the mystery—something more in every advance: for without this something more there could be no evolution from low to higher degree, from vegetable to

mammal, from mammal to man. How long the process, how slow and gradual the development, science can only guess.

Scripture defines all these advances, wrought by means of Nature, as essentially a Divine process—a work of High Art. When, despite the evident differences presented by light, heat, sound—as quantitative phenomena ; they were, by a triumph of analysis, identified under one common form—undulation ; it was a beautiful greeting of the spirit : so when Moses laid aside idolatry, gave up Nature-worship, identified all things as possessing Divinity in their origin and progress, there was that triumph of genius, that greeting of the spirit, which devout men and scientific men are alike bound to revere.

Undulations, however manipulated, will only yield undulations : nevertheless, out of things with limited and peculiar range are brought those varied aspects and real existences which are impossible to uniformity and irreducible to one another. For example—our notion of light can never be resolved into that of heat, nor into that of sound, though all three are reducible to undulations. Noises are the irregular mingling of vibrations, and tones are that regular recurrence of vibrations out of which music is constructed : so, between radiant heat and light there is only quantitative difference ; nevertheless æther, of luminous rapidity, beats in vain on the skin-nerves—no light is felt or seen ; nor do transverse vibrations, of whatever rapidity, produce heat through the retina. Hence, essential differences grow out of original unity, and as this is impossible, for things equal in themselves are equal to one another, something must come in from without. Behind this complexity of visible and invisible facts is the whole universe ; nor is any explanation possible without that greeting of the spirit, seen in the genius and piety of Moses, by which we are conscious that there is the Weaver's side of the tapestry. All flesh is not the same flesh, nor all life the same life, beasts are not low men, nor are their sensations capable of being prolonged into human intelligence and emotion.

These facts are ground for a new argument—Man, being man by God's creative energy acting according to law upon matter, fashioning it into life and inspiring it with spirit, is that Adam, the tree of humanity of whom we are branches,

and is that living soul by whose soul our souls are kindled as light at a light. Was this man the first man? We may argue, indeed it is seriously maintained by some, that אָדָם, Adam, is the word for Adamites; and אָדָם, "man," is the word for men, mankind, not Adamites. This will not hold as establishing two races: for Adam uses the feminine of the latter for Eve (Gen. iii. 12); and Eve uses אָדָם, "man"—"I have gotten a man" (Gen. iv. 1)—in speaking of Cain, her first-born. The two words are often used in contrast (Ps. xlix. 1, 2, lxii. 9; Isai. ii. 9, v. 15), but never as of separate races. "The daughters of men" (Gen. vi. 2) were certainly daughters of Adam, not of a savage pre-Adamite race. On the other hand, "the sons of God" cannot be children of brutal ancestry; for such to marry Adam's daughters would be an elevation, but God's anger was moved at the inter-marriage as a degradation. We are shut up to one of these conclusions: either the pious sons of Adam married the daughters of Cain, the murderer; or, in some mysterious way, there was unholy communion by angels—this latter interpretation, which some considered to be favoured by Jude 6, is almost universally given up.

The following has been asserted with some confidence—Cain, having done a dark deed, was not slain, but branded for preservation and execration. He went forth, married, built a city. A city required men to build it, and his going forth to be a fugitive and vagabond among men who might kill him, seems to show that there were other people, and that from them he took a wife. If it were so,

"The shrewd  
Contriver, who first sweated at the forge,  
And forced the blunt and yet unblooded steel  
To a keen edge, and made it bright for war,"

had not a pleasant pedigree in murderous father, and mother little removed from the brute: but to reply soberly—Cain married a sister, as Seth did. The building a city would be of lowly beginning—of one hut, cottage, or house; great gaps in the Scripture record are acknowledged, and the children of Cain called the slowly built city by his name.

If any race, moreover, could be proved of brute ancestry,

say the Negro, there would be an argument for slavery founded on natural and essential inferiority ; for the fact of God making men of "one blood" does not prove all mankind descended from one pair of ancestors ; but may be taken to mean that there is one flesh of men, another flesh of beasts, another of fishes, another of birds (1 Cor. xv. 39). The argument, however, falls to the ground when we consider the whole force of the statement—We are all the offspring of God (Acts xvii. 26–28). The unity of men is further evidenced by death and redemption—"In Adam all die, in Christ all are made alive" (Rom. v. 12–14 ; 1 Cor. xv. 22, 49). If there are other men than the Adamite, not having his image, they have not his redemption, nor any heavenly image. To say that the Mongol and Negro partake of redemption, just as four-footed beasts, and wild beasts, and creeping things were presented to St. Peter (Acts x. 11–15), is to misconceive the whole thing. The Mongol and Negro, if pre-Adamite, did not sin in Adam, are not of his race, nor possessors of the blessing of redemption.

We conclude, from all the arguments accessible at present to our reason, that the Adam of Scripture was the first man ; and admitting, on Scriptural and scientific grounds, that the human frame is that structure which crowned the long process of organic life on the earth, firmly maintain that the first man, Adam, not only manifested a great and marked difference and improvement in structure, excelling all other creatures ; but, in the essence of his nature, in personal consciousness, intellect, emotion, excelled them in an immeasurable and practically infinite degree. That which so differenced him from the animal, which the science of physics cannot hope to detect, barely hope to conjecture, was a spirit uniting the fleshy organism and the rational animal life into an immortal personality.

If, notwithstanding, as some assert, we must be prepared to admit that the psychical man may have proceeded from some lower form of life ; then we can regard the pneumatic man as a grand step, surprise, leap—such as Nature presents examples of. Even the Fuegian has an instrument of thought nearly as perfect as that possessed by the highest forms of the highest human family. The earliest human remains are those of

perfect men. If, very long ago, some lower nature received a marvellous impulse by which higher life, higher thought, higher emotion, became so shrined in flesh as to become an image of that we rightly account Divine, our faith in Holy Scripture is not weakened, but rather strengthened, by the fact that Adam was of such high personality.

In connection with this personality, and the gift of responsibility, appeared an evil of most appalling character—Sin. Sin is a wilful violation of law, is an act or a course of conduct voluntarily pursued to the damage of physical or moral completeness of life. Law is disclosed in every throb of the mighty rhythmic life of the universe, law is implicated in every action of our life, obedience to it is our only guarantee of purity and happiness. Man, in pure personality, had conscious possession of God's love; and his own love to God, occupying will, thought, feeling, determined the sanctity of his whole being. By entrance of sin that personality became impure, and unity with God was dissolved: for evil will make Divine will appear loveless. We cannot fully understand this, there is some great secret reserved to be made known hereafter to holy men; but we know that the effect of lawlessness was to raise strife in the soul, so that spirit and flesh became contrary (Gal. v. 7)—strife issuing in separation from God.

We must not forget that death reigned in the world before Adam either lived or sinned. From the very earliest times our earth has been an arena of conflict; hence we are led to think that evil originated in a preceding existence and amongst other beings. "The opening chapters of Genesis unquestionably set us down, not at the earliest but in a subsequent—the middle—stage of the mighty action, which it is the purpose of Scripture to unroll. Far away in the unfathomed depths of the earliest times, and pre-hexameral period, lies the beginning of the story; far onward in the future lies its consummation; indeed, in some sense, if we regard the design and the result, the narrative stretches from one eternity to another."<sup>1</sup> This complexity and continuance—affecting body and soul, and contaminating both with guilt

<sup>1</sup> "Science and Scripture:" Rev. Philip Freeman.

—shroud Adam's death with mysterious horrors of woeful anticipation, and make it a death which had not previously existed—a death entering by sin (Rom. v. 12).

It is natural to wonder that one wail of sorrow should mingle with the wide chorus of thanksgiving to God ; and when we contemplate the past horrors desolating every land, and the possible future unimaginable eternal anguish to be endured by rebels against the Almighty, our amazement becomes an awful dread of some dire reality and calamity which even Infinite Love, Divine Wisdom, Almightyness, may not be able to prevent without violating the purity of moral government. We can, however, conceive that Omniscience may have foreseen that the gift of freedom would render it impossible for the whole universe of spirits to be preserved. So far as man is concerned, we can also see that linking the inevitable danger with a type to show its reality and the unreasonable folly of transgression ; and the giving a simple, earnest warning, joined with dread penalty, would be the best and only restrictions which purely moral rule could allow. Our feeble nature, moreover, can form a true conception of Omnipotence in Creation, of Wisdom in Providence, of Love in Redemption. By Creation, God calls into existence all the worlds—occupying them with manifold forms of beauty, and giving them for abodes to living creatures, small as a point of matter, grand as a seraph before the Throne. By Providence, the world of matter is subjected to the physical law of God, and the world of spirit or intelligence to the moral order of God, spreading the profusion of Divine bounty and executing Divine decrees. By Redemption is supplied guidance for the erring, strength for the weak, moral suasion, motives, spirit-power, pardon for the sinner ; that every fallen being who wills it may be rescued from degradation and elevated to life and honour. Thus, in some degree, we realise that freedom of the creature involves the possibility and thereby an actuality of evil, which even the Supreme may not be able to prevent, except by departure from the principle of moral rule.

“ Te fecit liberum non nobilem ; quia impossibile est post libertatem.”

*Ludovicus Pius.*

Evil is so intense, that sometimes we would that it were

put an end to at once. We say—"Let present misery and future anguish in no wise be permitted." We must not be rash in decision. The malignant influences, painfully felt by us, and our spiritual dangers, "as tenants of this haunted planet," we may be sure, tend to some good end. They are so wrought into the physical and moral plan of the universe that they cannot be regarded as a surprise on the Almighty, or as an unforeseen calamity. The mighty tempter of man, whom we believe to be a subtle fallen archangel, manifested by that temptation how great a degradation had come upon him by wickedness. That archangel chose evil for his good. The fact of choice proves freedom, brings in responsibility, casts out necessity. Freedom in its very essence includes power of choice, and thereby capacity to bring in evil. Man possesses powers of the same nature, but less in degree. If we set before us the essential contrast of light and darkness, of good and evil; that good becomes a higher good by trial, evil a greater evil by refusal of good; that truth must be manifested as separate from a lie, and righteousness must be displayed as opposed to unrighteousness; that through eternal ages the height and depth of truth and right may be seen; we shall begin to know that the mystery of iniquity is a necessary mystery; that a parenthesis of misery must, some time or other, be brought within the Divine rule. If you say—"But for sin I might be happy as a glorious seraph, enjoy an overflow of blessing, have deep insight of Divine goodness; and why should this good not be given at once instead of having to be wrought out by slow process and the misery of millions?" We reply—"The highest and best gift to created beings is freedom: freedom involves choice, responsibility, the possibility of transgression. Shall no free existences be created? nothing to love God? nothing able by choice to say—'Lord, we are Thine and Thou art ours!' why, this would be sin's most awful triumph! fatal in the casting down of moral perfection and goodness! perverse in turning liberty, which is guided by motive and reason, into supremacy of blind and inevitable fate!" For God not to create because free beings must necessarily have power to abuse His bounty were folly indeed. "How can we conceive a more awful

triumph of evil, than that its dark and hateful spectre, while yet unborn, should tie up the hands of the Almighty from the noblest exercise of His creative wisdom, and imprison His infinite riches of goodness within His own bosom; so that matter should never exist, because it might issue in a soulless and infinite chaos; and no reasonable souls ever spring to life, to love and adore their Creator, lest the dark power of evil should seize upon them, in spite of all His perfection, and drag them down into an abyss of ruin. To deny life to infinite numbers of holy and happy beings, whom His power could create and His wisdom govern, and in whom His goodness might delight itself for ever, through the fear of the victory of evil, in the abuse of His own gifts—what were this but for the Supremely Good to play the coward and the murderer, and thus to deny His own being, and renounce His Godhead, lest the abusers of His free bounty should suffer the just punishment of their crimes?"<sup>1</sup>

There may be mercy even in the condemnation. Punishment may be Divine medicine, the alone effectual, for sin of the soul. Every stroke of God, as a rectifier, may not only be against hatred and all evil, but much more for the enlargement of love, wisdom, and joy. We may be sure that when we have attained that point whence we can view the Divine plan as a whole, we shall find the power of God has not gone beyond His wisdom, nor wisdom exceeded goodness.

Allowing that wisdom permits the entrance of evil, and forbids the exercise of physical power in its destruction; that evil is the abuse of freedom granted to angels and men; evil is not an arbitrary thing on God's part. We are not to think that Divine Omnipotence means the power of dispensing with moral growth, the voluntary exercise of mental power and obedience, or of condensing into a single moment, without the free creature's intelligent and loving co-operation, the great results of the revealed plan of mercy. Granting that evil is a veiling to some, and a casting down to others, it is an unveiling to many more, and the disciplinary means to every creature of receiving power to ascend beyond the former height. Trials, which strand or sink the careless and ill-found, are as

<sup>1</sup> "Difficulties of Belief," pp. 66, 67: Prof. Thomas Rawson Birks.

those tempests on the sea, which purify the whole earth, and make mariners skilfully bold. Men are not victims to "the ruffian violence of an impure reprobate ethereal race." The poet may write—

"Video meliora proboque,  
Deteriora sequor,"

and the saint exclaim—"The good that I would, I do not, but the evil which I would not, that I do;" nevertheless, God gives victory to the valiant; and the ruin of those that perish must be ascribed wholly to their own sin, not to the denial, on God's part, of grace. Moreover, who can tell what may happen "when their irremovable sorrow finds beneath it a still lower depth of Divine compassion, and the sinful creature, in its most forlorn estate, and in its utter shame, encounters the amazing vision of tender, condescending, infinite love?"<sup>1</sup>

It may be seen from such reflections that the origin of sin by abuse of freedom, in the fact of provision against its existence, and provision for its destruction, drives out chance and fate from the world. We men are highly endowed intelligent creatures, connected from the very beginning with transactions which concern many worlds. The living God has ordered that we shall have the power of life in ourselves, and be free. We are free: not a man lives but knows that his freedom counts for something in the world, and freedom includes the possibility of disorder, and the only thing able to banish it is knowledge of the direful consequences. Our state of painful probation appears to be a process to render evil impossible hereafter. Even the present physical struggle is not so much pitiless and embittered, as an adjustment of endless variety, and a display of power exercised with skill. Satan, circumstances, motives, may persuade: not compel. The body loaded with chains so that we move not; a seal on our lips, we speak not; yet, in our conscience, with every moral power, we resent the insult—not as by a new power of freedom, but by the gift that conveyed it of old to the first man. God, who made him free, foreseeing the peril of that freedom, not only rendered the peril conspicuous by

<sup>1</sup> "Difficulties of Belief," p. 239: Prof. Thomas Rawson Birks.

type, by warning, by threat, excluding sin on the one side and defining it on the other; but did also meet and rectify the inexcusable abuse of freedom by preparing celestial machinery, spiritual power to work repentance, to effect a moral change, and convert ungodliness into a righteousness that leads up to fulness of peace and joy. Thus, the transgression of the first man, transmitted to us by natural inheritance, is made the ground of advance into higher knowledge and life. The son dies not for the father's sin, but being warned, and sowing to the spirit, reaps life everlasting. Sin, however, and here no mistake must be made, is always sin, and the wages of sin is death; yet if a man say—"I have erred, but mean to err no more," the door is opened to that man. God Himself helps, comforts, saves. Jesus has greater power for moral good than the great archangel possesses for evil. Salvation does more than walk side by side with destruction. The second Adam outruns the old Adam to tell us that the malice of him who assailed our race, and the weakness of him who betrayed our race, are but the small dark cloud that specks the firmament. The miseries of time, the career of sin within a sphere of limited extent and duration, are as nothing in comparison with the infinite and eternal sway wherein, evil being overcome, holiness and bliss are supreme. Even now the tears of Nature glow with a beautiful bow of promise of powers unrevealed, of wisdom unfathomed, of love inexhaustible, by whose beneficent influence the Adamite and pre-Adamite fault will be made to display the wisdom of universal Providence, and establish the government of a righteous King.

"Lord, grant me grace to cling to Thee,  
In this presumptuous time,  
When reason, by distorting, mars  
Thy mysteries sublime,  
When none will creep along the ground,  
But all must soar or climb."

*Poor Man's Quarterly Review.*

"Non est ad astra mollis a terris via."

"Afflictiones flores sunt, quibus nectitur tua corona cœlestis."

## STUDY XVII.

### MAN : ORIGIN, NATURE, LANGUAGE, CIVILISATION.

"I cannot but believe, that, if we would so regard the ills and sufferings of man as to endeavour to assuage them, we must deliver ourselves from notions, however plausible, and from theories no matter how clever, which reduce him to the level of the beasts that perish."—*Address in British Medical Association, Norwich, 1874.*  
J. RUSSELL REYNOLDS, M.D., F.R.S.

"Beata vita nisi amatur, non habetur."

THERE was an old superstition which saw in Nature the action of capricious deities ; there is a modern superstition which sees nothing but the action of invariable law ; both being regardless, or ignorant, that everything done in Nature manifests a knowing how to do it.

Ancient seers ascribed even the gentlest, most constant, as also the mightiest works of Nature, to the operation of God. "The Lord by wisdom hath founded the earth ; by understanding hath He established the heavens. By His knowledge the depths are broken up, and the clouds drop down the dew" (Prov. iii. 19, 20). "God created man in His own image, in the image of God created He him ; male and female created He them" (Gen. i. 27). We do not, nor did the wise ancients, think that a likeness was moulded in plastic clay of the spiritual and invisible God. Ancient and modern thought regards the words and act as symbols expressive of some special operation in the creation of man, and of his separateness from all other creatures.

We have been curiously fashioned by natural forces into animal life ; and by mysterious influence, of external operation and interior assimilation, enabled to bridge the gulf which separated earth-life from consciousness of Divinity. There is something very tender in the words—"God breathed into man's nostrils the breath of life." They endue the ideal image with vitality, and awake it into consciousness by a kiss of

love. They are the poetic simile of a Divine process, a loving symbol of Divine action, a contrast of God and man, spirit and flesh, soul and body, the sweet summing up, *τέλος*, of all things. The fact may sustain the superstructure of various thoughts.

Our never being able of ourselves to *originate* any form of mental activity; no one ever acquiring the creative power of genius, or *making himself* a great artist, or a great poet, or *gaining by practice* that peculiar insight which characterises the original discoverer; shows that these are mental instincts or spiritual intuitions.<sup>1</sup> What we can do is—call upon our will by "*purposive selection*," by *attention*, by *direction*, to train, utilise, and perfect natural gifts; therefore, spirit is placed within the body, and subjected to the internal mechanism of thought and feeling for discipline of the whole man.

Thus separated psychically and pneumatically from the brutes, we are enabled to pass from the Fiji, who delights in the shrieks of his human victim, to that higher kind of self-pleasing which leads a man to risk his life in rescuing even an enemy from drowning, and to consecrate his body and soul to God. This action of sympathy and love and reverence is not selfish, though sacredly self-pleasing, any more than the workings of Shakespeare's genius are, but reflex actions of that, whatever it be, which forms the groundwork of canine cleverness. Not only so, as human emotion and intellect have their roots in the past, indeed are partly animal, partly human, running down into the earth out of which we were taken, and by upward growth soaring toward Heaven; there is reason to think that our powers not beginning with the present conscious existence will not end with it. Every man's consciousness, both for good and evil, not being the product of one body, but an effect wrought by human progress during the past—the inference is that our end, whether as to soul or body, is not by-and-by. The leaves of our life-book contain writings of former ages, the present issue, or edition, does not complete the series; there will be a further reprint, a quickening of intelligence and extension of memory, by mysteriously regulated advance, to higher correspondence with the Eternal Spirit of

<sup>1</sup> "Mental Physiology," p. 25: Dr. W. B. Carpenter.

the universe. Memory may possibly be plenary, no longer a place of sepulture for the remains of many generations, but a habitation of thought endowed with the power of endless life (1 Cor. xiii. 12).

This "*Plenary Memory*"<sup>1</sup> will lead to higher processes of life, the measure of which will be our capability and fitness. Unclouded by fumes of laboratories, untainted by sensual appetite, unhindered by life's ills and weaknesses, we may presume that we shall not travel by the present methods of logical reasoning, but be nourished and grow up in truth by a sort of mental assimilation. The process being somewhat akin to the present work of the Holy Ghost (John xvi. 13). The soul, combining with itself every element of knowledge, always moving on, not wasting organic force, will advance into the continuous power of knowing more and more. The spiritual faculty, discerning all the links of the great chain which binds diversity of operation into unity of wisdom, will gather every luxury of love and knowledge.

Accepting "Development" as a fact, we hold that "Adam is the *princeps*, and so the ideal *prins* of the creaturely world."<sup>2</sup> Using the idea of "Natural Selection," so far as it conceives an intelligent work in the world, the conversion of the lower into the higher by heredity, adaptation, variation, distribution, we maintain that man is something more than a material organism. His structure, wonderful as it is, does not even approximately represent his essential nature. With a certain difference in structure, between the lower apes and the gorilla, we find a moderate and measurable difference of nature; but, with a less marked difference of structure between the gorilla and man, we have an immeasurable and practically infinite divergence of nature.<sup>3</sup> Man's chamber of consciousness is the meeting-place of the material and the spiritual, he forms antithetical conceptions of both, correlates their energies, and in part understands the meaning of the wonderful machinery of which he is a portion.

Now change and enlarge the view—Man, as the highest

<sup>1</sup> "The Physical Theory of Another Life," p. 79 : Isaac Taylor.

<sup>2</sup> "Lange on Genesis," p. 211. English translation.

<sup>3</sup> "Evidence as to Man's Place in Nature," p. 103 : Prof. Huxley.

animal, is an actual microcosm, represents the whole of life in the world. Represents it as being of the earth, and taken from the ground; yet excels it not only by possession of superior mechanism, but in the use of mental and moral faculties. Considering his mechanism, we find that it is an improvement of all that had gone before; but the organism in many respects nearest to him, the Anthropoid Ape, the Gibbon in particular rather than the Gorilla, is not a diminution of that which would otherwise have become human; but a formation by lateral and diverging operation which, however long continued, could never arrive at man. "The two series, ape and man, diverge from one another . . . the youthful individuals are more alike than the older ones . . . the ape, as he grows, becomes more bestial; man more human."<sup>1</sup>

The moral and spiritual powers, summed up in one word, Soul, cannot be explained by the material properties of protoplasm, nor find an equivalent in mechanical adjustment, nor is the soul made up of psychical bits which have passed through the life and mind of lower animals. The dog possesses attention, abstraction, imagination, judgment, desire, grief—indeed, a share of many intellectual faculties and emotional passions. "The dog, the cat, the parrot, return love for our love, and hatred for our hatred; they are capable of shame and sorrow; and, though they may have no logic nor conscious ratiocination, no one who has watched their ways can doubt that they possess that power of rational cerebration which evolves reasonable acts from the premises furnished by the senses—a process which takes fully as large a share as conscious reason in human activity."<sup>2</sup> The soul is very much more than this. When we can conceive the nature of matter apart from its properties, when we know the embodiment of the inner man, when we know our spirit as a habitation of the Living God, then we may begin to investigate the nature of the soul; at present we have neither power to understand it nor words to describe it.

The withering conclusions of atheists as to the mortality of

<sup>1</sup> "Doctrine of Descent and Darwinism:" Prof. Schmidt.

<sup>2</sup> "Antiquity of Man," p. 495: Sir Charles Lyell.

the soul are unwarrantable and unscientific; if matter cannot be annihilated, it appears highly unscientific to assert that the spirit in man, which subdues and rules matter, is of less enduring nature. Moreover, the principle of the conservation of energy is antagonistic to the utter loss of that great mental energy which subjects to itself the physical world. The cause of these effects cannot be annihilated. We pity that flippancy which contemns this high spiritual gift; and pray not only for the unwise who would refuse, but for the rash who despise the glorious distinction. It is a mystery, and the small vessel of our human reason, able to receive it as a gift, is utterly unable to comprehend its nature.

" It cometh from afar—  
Not in entire forgetfulness,  
And not in utter nakedness,  
But trailing clouds of glory do we come  
From God, who is our Home."

*William Wordsworth.*

We are rudely aroused from our joy in this perpetual benediction of Heaven, and degraded by grovelling hypothesis to bestial fellowship. We are as some scion of a noble house suddenly told—"You are not of honourable birth, you lie down with a dog-twist, your laugh is taken from the hyæna, your song from the mocking-bird, your tears from the crocodile, and your speech from the rudiments of animal cries. You are not a child of God, morally and intellectually endowed; you crawled into existence through many brutal shapes"—

"Quum prope serunt primis animalia terris."

*Horace, Sat. i. 3. 99.*

"When men first crept out of the earth, a dumb and filthy herd, they fought for acorns and lurking-places with their nails and fists; and, then, with clubs; and, at last, with arms which, taught by experience, they had forged. Then they invented names for things, and words to express their thoughts, after which they began to desist from war, and to fortify cities and to enact laws."

We will not multiply classical quotations, writers of our own

day state—"Men, originally brutes, attained nobleness of mind. Before and during the transition they were not men, but creatures without the spiritual part of our being; nor endowed with the awful attribute of immortality." It may be put more definitely—there was a common point from which the present apes and men were derived. No greater difference exists between a man and a brute, than between one brute and another brute. Some animals are very upright, and some men are very hairy. "The soul of a new-born infant is, in its manifestations, no way different from that of the young animal."<sup>1</sup> Negroes and Indians are a low sort of men, but not so low as the Australian and Papuan; all these have not got on, and are left behind the average individuals of our race. Hence the fear of Mephistopheles lest men should be alarmed at finding themselves too much like God, is now changed into the dread of being too much like sheep. The course of transformations, we are gravely assured, was along the vertebral column; indeed, we have only to look at the first vertebra of a sheep's neck and the last tail-bone to see our identity established, and the gradual transition exemplified. The ape struck out a disastrous path, persisting in a brain of small volume, and a large air-sac in his throat; but man selected a high conformation of well-formed plastic cranium and aborted the sac. Young monkeys and calves are still like us, they have not the bony skull and horns which are afterwards developed.

One rather likes the humour; clever men are evidently making fun for us. The monkey has been given up, and now we are all sheep of an improved breed. The change is rather too sudden; and if it is hard to see how from the monkey's foot, which has extra muscles, rendering it a foot-hand for climbing and grasping, could have been evolved the flat treading and walking human foot; it is yet harder to have got it from anything which became a sheep's trotter. Moreover, when did man get rid of his throat-sacs and of his intermediate wrist-bone? and when did he obtain the glutei and the muscles of his leg calf?

As to reason, we are told man cannot be widely separated

<sup>1</sup> "The Doctrine of Descent:" Prof. Schmidt.

from the lower creatures ; for little children do not manifest great intelligence. Human progress is regulated by speech ; and dogs talk, and are confessedly more civilised and intelligent than the wolf and stupid jackal ; " who can question that they, like men, have raised themselves mentally far above their ancestry ? " Who can " doubt that the honey bee, as it gradually attained bodily advantages and peculiarities, developed likewise the higher mental powers, corresponding with the more minute and complex organism of the brain ? " Even tame seals come like dogs at the call of their keeper.

" As to man's free will, little," we are told, " can be said for that ; the individual mostly acts upon the will of the tribe—I might say of the herd." " The astonishing premeditation with which some few happily organised individuals, of some few species, turn circumstances to account with apparently complete free will," disposes of our conceit as to human freedom. As to conscience, there are very conscientious dogs, and some animals dream. " That highly interesting dwarf people, the Niam Niam of Central Africa, have no word for God, and therefore, it must be supposed not the idea." As to progress in art, science, agriculture, architecture, the tactual sense common to every creature, is mother of it all. With regard to languages, they have been developed. When there were races and no nations, man was a speechless animal. All languages have progressed : first the root, then the stem, after that a determinative element. In the root state, articulate sounds grew into words ; in the stem stage, the words stuck together, and formed the agglutinated languages ; finally the whole stood complete with inflexions in the speech of many nations.

Those who talk thus conclude that, " from the irrational primordial state, man-like beings gradually became human ; while with language, the work of many years, reason made its appearance." Some complete this sketch of ourselves by imagining a miserable ape, crossed in love, or pining with cold, conceiving in its poor addled pate, " the dread of evil to come : " so he became the father of morality and theology, the very patriarch of the old worthies. " Fortunately for mankind

no actual legislators have ever been quite so foolish as some philosophers."<sup>1</sup>

" Dieu me garde d'être savant  
D'une science si profonde.  
Les plus doctes, le plus souvent,  
Sont les plus sottes gens du monde."

There are three centres around which the Animal-Theory Arguments cluster :

- i. Man was originally a brute.
- ii. Human Language was developed from animal cries.
- iii. The Process of Development was by Civilisation.

i. Man was originally a Brute.

For a long time we counted ourselves of ancient and honourable family ; but now, because the beaver builds—architects are beavers ; the ladies who sing in our drawing-rooms have been taught by the birds, and their sighing swains are descendants of grotesque creatures anciently crossed in love. Probably the Australian and Papuan are the stuff of which future men must be built ; even as the present high races originated from the lower. These statements, which shock our best feelings, are so far true that some people have an uneasy feeling that scientific discovery is at war with religious convictions, is removing God from the world, and primeval inspiration from the circle of facts. A brief, yet sufficiently accurate inquiry, as to the whole subject, will probably dissipate that fear.

We know from the Divine Narrative, that man, other animals, fishes, plants, were created of the Earth. We know from science, that all forms of life, animal and plant, complex or simple, high or low, are a marvellous variation, adaptation, and extension of one universal plan. These facts, of Scripture and science, are confirmed by particular examination of every individual : nevertheless, anatomy of the embryonic vesicle in higher plants and of ova in animals reveals a difference. The unicellular plants and animals are from small masses of protoplasm, and probably each has a nucleus—extreme simplicity being found only in the lowest forms. The germs proceed from pre-existent living creatures ; every germ so alike

<sup>1</sup> "The Reign of Law," Duke of Argyle.

that the microscope detects little difference ; every germ so essentially unlike that one becomes a fungus, another a lizard, another a bird, another a man, no one knowing why. There is no advance into man through the fungus, lizard, bird, as if human life were a series of Chinese boxes, completely but differently shaped in every feature, shut up one within another. Man's embryo does not advance to perfection through invertebrate stages : so soon as formed it is manifestly vertebrate, and then passes very rapidly through an ordinary mammalian stage to that which is evidently human.

Forgetting the fact that all living things proceed from other living things, find whether the ranks of the living may be recruited from the not living.

All existing organisms, it is inductively proved, arise from other organisms ; but there was a time when life must have begun in an assemblage of unorganised materials. That an organism which is to any extent specialised in structure could arise directly from a union of unorganised elements is ruled out of court. We are to think as if we saw, by chemical experiments, specks of living protoplasm precipitated from a solution containing the not-living ingredients of protoplasm ; and we may regard this initial life as the effect, of which the assignable cause is the chemical affinity exerted between the enormously complex molecules which go to make up protoplasm. This process helps us to imagine how Nature long ago, by Divinity of process, gave beginning to life. Then, we further suppose, that from those specks proceeded the first or unancestral organisms ; and that these unancestral organisms became ancestors, and did, in some way or other, transmit ancestral peculiarities ; so that out of no definite tendency came definite structure exquisitely adapted to function. The origin of protoplasm, thus guessed at, leaves the association of vital properties with protoplasm unexplained, and organic construction remains an insoluble mystery.

The man of science, trying to show how life may have originated, contents in some degree the curiosity of the religious man who knows, from Scripture, why life was originated. The supposed initial germ was multiplied and magnified by natural operation into the manifold series and gradations of

terrestrial existence ; and the whole process is exemplified and accomplished in every case of individual human progression.

Hitherto we have travelled on safe ground. The unity of all physical life is a fact. We come now to matters on which men are not agreed. To account for the maintenance of life during the infancy of primeval existences, to be rid of the imagined difficulty as to untold millions of organic molecules rushing together at some appointed instant to form adult organisms, and to show that no new energies have appeared at any period of the earth's history, the perverted doctrine of evolution affirms that quick progression in the individual was not realised until somewhat analogous progression had been accomplished in and during the evolution of a long series of species, from lower life to the brute, from brute to man. In the brute the process was chiefly by physical changes ; but, so soon as sufficient intelligence was acquired to chip a stone into a tool and hurl a weapon, growth of intelligence being of more use than variations in physical structure, intellectual and emotional powers developed with greater comparative rapidity. This, we are told, explains why there is so little difference in general physical structure between man and the gibbon.

Testing such a statement by common experience, we find that the theory of evolution explains many things, but there is no more ground for supposing that man grew out of brute in old time than that he does now. The definite order and progress in creation by which not-living matter became that vital substance with which mysterious power constructed all living things and bound them together ; not making porcupine father to pig, nor monkey parent of man, but presenting in every organism an exemplification of similarity in construction with essential variety ; confirms the teaching of Scripture—  
“Out of the ground made the Lord God to grow every tree.  
. . . God made the beast of the earth after his kind . . .  
and the Lord God formed man out of the dust.”

Further, there appears to be no essential advantage in the gratuitous assumption of an infinite series of developments during incalculable time ; seeing that a real development is

exemplified and completed in the course of one individual's existence. Take the caterpillar, the chrysalis, the moth, every change is a marvel which human science cannot explain, yet ordinary intelligence reads and enlarges the parable. Man at first was of the earth—of this we are sure, there was a change—this we also know, then came the spirit by which he soared to God—this we cannot doubt. Science affirms the asserted progress, but of its essential nature knows nothing; Scripture states the progress—"God formed man . . . breathed into his nostrils the breath of life . . . man became a living soul" (Gen. ii. 7). Science and Scripture agree. Every educated man knows that in all natural advances there was the coming in of novel states, the entering of novel relations, and so often as these came would non-existent and even impossible laws become possible and necessary. There was something fresh in the first formation of crystals, in the first vegetable, in the first quadruped, in the first man. However slowly you bring in a new thing, you do bring it in, and it is new. The combination of inorganic substances into the basis of a living organism was by an appearance of energy in guise of a new force—force of life.

Passing from the phenomena of life to those of mind, the region is still more profoundly mysterious; and, whether as to consciousness or volition, we have absolutely no reason, however vague, for classifying either under the head of physics. Physical energies represent a closed curve or cycle continually returning upon itself; the introduction of organic energy carries the line into infinitude, and the curve is as incapable of closure as a parabolic projection. It is also to be observed, as to physical energies, that some are of higher order than others; and from the higher we can obtain the lower; but the reverse is attended by extraordinary difficulties—

. . . "facilis descensus Averno;  
noctes atque dies patet atri janua Ditis;  
sed revocare gradum, superasque evadere ad auras,  
hoc opus, hic labor . . ."

It is, therefore, unwise and unscientific to endue all matter with the mysteries, qualities, occult powers of mind; and we may count it an evidence of incapacity and scientific impurity

to endow the physical atom with "the promise and potency of all terrestrial life."

Those are not less blamable who, knowing that the sacred account is figurative, use their science not for explanation but misrepresentation. Take example—"The Hebrew writer presents us with a concrete picture of the creation of man, according to which a homogeneous clay model of the human form is, in some inconceivable way, at once transmuted into the wonderfully heterogeneous combination of organs and tissues, with all their definite and highly specialised aptitudes, of which actually living man is made up. But I suppose there are few scientific writers at the present day who would be found willing to risk their reputation for common sense by attempting to defend such a conception."<sup>1</sup> It is really puerile to charge Moses with the folly of the Negro, who thought that God made a clay model, leaned it against a tree to dry, and then breathed life into it. Why not say that Moses attributed sex to God? for he says—"God created man in His own image, in the image of God created He him; male and female created He them."

If we give to the sacred writer's "concrete picture" scientific explanation, the meaning will be generally accepted—"Supposing the molecules of the human body, instead of replacing others and thus renewing a preceding form, to be gathered first hand from Nature and put together in the same relative positions as those which they occupy in the body; that they have the selfsame forces and distribution of forces, the selfsame motions and distribution of motions—would this organised concourse of molecules stand before us as a sentient thinking being? There seems no valid reason to believe that it would not."<sup>2</sup> True science fights false science.

Irreligious persons generally impute their own shallow and erroneous views of Scripture to the sacred writers; but advanced scholars who, with piety and prudence, ascertain all that can be ascertained of the way in which man was created, are conscious that true interpretation of the ancient words reveals divinity of meaning.

<sup>1</sup> "Cosmic Philosophy," vol. i. p. 440: John Fiske.

<sup>2</sup> "Vitality:" Prof. Tyndall.

As to low races of men, ancient and modern, they are the withered foliage of a degenerate stock. Inclemency of climate, barrenness of land, which made existence an exhaustive and losing fight, may have worn out the frame, left neither time nor will for intellectual advance, and rendered the brain of a savage what it is—nearly thirty per cent. less than the brain of an Anglo-Saxon. Dark nations count the white skin superior, and destined to rule. The legends of some savages assert that their ancestors were white people; and the Fetish images of the Congo natives have broad foreheads, white complexions, and hooked noses. Degeneracy lowers both the moral and physical state; as a rule, the worst men are of the worst colour. Malte Brun says—"Our body depends on our intelligence." M. Maire says—"The more the organisation of the animal is perfected, the more the spiritual element produced by the action of the various functions is itself perfected." If we take history and experience, apart from sheer hypothesis, it is more probable that brute men are not a generation advancing to higher life, but a degeneration from life.

The marvellously gifted Attic race were the cleverest and most beautiful of men; but, becoming impure, they degenerated. In fact, the corruption of one generation suffices to effect a degeneracy which ends in moral death—mental death—material death. This accounts for the low intelligence of persons long addicted to immorality, the almost impossibility—when any one has put away thought, love, knowledge of God—of quickening sacred reverence in him. The vicious and godless, becoming spiritless and sensual, cease to have a true conception of Divinity. They are the violent, criminal, dangerous classes in our cities, amongst whom the shrewd sharp demagogue is supreme, and to whom the atheist, with the arrogance of a god, asserts—"There is nothing better or greater than myself." To them belong the roughs who inhumanly abuse defenceless women, and from them proceed the hopeless and helpless weaklings who are born paupers, are bred paupers, and die paupers. The greatness of degeneracy receives horrible illustration by this statement of a scientist—"The difference in weight of brain between the

highest and lowest men is far greater, both relatively and absolutely, than that between the lowest man and the highest ape."<sup>1</sup> The assertion is too sensational, and must be corrected: man cannot utterly lose his nature and become a mere brute. The average weight of man's brain is 1400 grammes, of woman's 1250 grammes. Owen found the weight of a gorilla's brain to be 425.19 grammes (15 ozs.). Huxley thinks that the latter may reach 567 grammes. Cuvier's brain weighed 1830 grammes—this is one of the largest known. One of the smallest was that of a Bojes-woman, which only weighed 872 grammes—more than twice that of a gorilla. It is another fact, that savage men, so far from growing up into higher intelligence by means of continual effort to increase their brain-power, actually possess about one-third more brain-power than they use. Their mental property is an inheritance larger than they occupy, and not an acquisition laboriously gained in the past, and so fully used in the present as to win enlargement in the future.

To credit low forms of humanity with being the fathers of all that is great and good, ignores the fact that there is "hardly a single point of excellence belonging to the human character, which is not decidedly repugnant to the untutored feelings of human nature." Courage, cleanliness, disinterestedness, self-control, truthfulness, justice, are all a conquest over some natural impulse. Henry More says—"Of a truth, vile epicureanism and sensuality will make the soul of man so degenerate and blind, that he will not only be content to slide into brutish immorality, but please himself in this very opinion that he is a real brute already, an ape, satyr, or baboon; and that the best of men are no better, save that the civilising of them and industrious education have made them appear in a more refined state. . . . But as many as are thus sottish, let them enjoy their own wildness and ignorance; it is sufficient for a good man that he is conscious unto himself, better bred and born."<sup>2</sup>

Even those who are better born and bred know that it is

<sup>1</sup> "Man's Place in Nature:" Prof. Huxley.

<sup>2</sup> "Conjectura Cabbalistica:" A.D. 1662, p. 175.

easier to lose than increase the good. In the Australian bush, and in the backwoods of America, individuals of the Anglo-Saxon race, possessing the highest feelings and noblest instincts, rapidly fall into comparative barbarism. No Australian language counts beyond four—are Australians the future mathematicians? Some wild tribes live together in herds, do not know the use of fire, every attempt to introduce civilisation has failed, it rather accelerates their destruction. The Austrian missionary, Morlang, who long laboured among the negro tribes on the Upper Nile, says—"Any mission to such savages is absolutely useless . . . these brutal natives are utterly incapable of any feeling of gratitude." He must be hopeful indeed who can believe that this is a generation tending to life. No teacher, no system of culture, has ever raised an ignoble race to the fore-front of human progress. There are no facts on which to base a theory of humanity grounded on brutality planting a paradise.

Another argument has been lately put forth—"The sense of original sin would show, according to my theory, not that man has fallen from a high state, but that he was rising in moral culture with more rapidity than the nature of his race could follow."<sup>1</sup> The theory is rather marvellous: we have been growing and growing, for millions and millions of years, very very slowly, and yet we have grown too fast—have outgrown our clothes. After all, we are a new race; and, translated into new conditions, our nature and instinct fail us; new men, made rich, we know not how to behave. Very few will accept the theory that we are too good already, and are rising in moral culture with more rapidity than our nature can follow.

The Chinaman has for thousands of years been under "a system of examination notoriously strict and far-reaching; boys of promise are passed on from step to step until they have reached the highest level of which they are capable."<sup>2</sup> "Chuan Yuan, the senior classic and senior wrangler thrown into one,"<sup>3</sup> the best man out of four hundred millions, is so finished and polished that he remains for ever unruffled by any emotion or conviction that anything he does is immoral

<sup>1</sup> Galton's "Hereditary Genius."    <sup>2</sup> Ibid.    <sup>3</sup> Ibid.

or wrong. He ought long ago to have outgrown his clothing, but he has not the least sense of having gone too far for the nature of his race, or too rapidly grown in purity. The conscience of a poor negro is much more readily aroused than the conscience of a Chuan Yuan.

The statement—"History is not wide enough, nor any recorded time sufficient, to take in the ages during which brute-man grew into human-man," surrenders the argument as to quick growth. There is truth in Schiller's words—"Es wachst der Mensch mit seinen grössern zwecken," man grows as grow his greater aims; but, going back to the utmost limit of geological eras, there is no absolutely satisfactory evidence that any inferior animal grew into a superior animal, or one creature into another creature, or that the nature of any surpassed that nature. During the historic thousands of years no creature regenerated itself, nor took one step thitherward; are we to believe, against all experience, in asserted transformations during times beyond our experience? Ancient seeds, found in Egypt and Switzerland; the frescoed likeness on ancient walls of olden animals; are of the same form and size as those now existing. Variations are narrowly limited, and if the laws of Nature are unchangeable, no time, however extended, would suffice to make plant become animal, or brute grow into man. We firmly retain and maintain the faith in which we were nurtured—"God created man in His own image, in the image of God created He him; male and female created He them."

ii. It is asserted that Human Language was developed from Animal Cries.

The improbability is felt at once: nevertheless, a fact of great value may be gathered from the assertion. All the sounds produced by animals and birds, all notes evoked by the wind, the mysterious noises of the forest, the strains of musical instruments, have their representatives in the human voice. No wonder, therefore, that some resemblance to human language should be found in utterances of the beast; yet those utterances were no more the guiding principle in the formation of language, than the perpetually rolling ocean, in its motion rhythmically repeated, can be said to have taught

the human artist, in the outflow of his own emotion—now gently gliding, now gracefully leaping, now violently stirred—to pour forth a stream of sound which brings to our mind mysterious moods, and lifts up our soul to the regions of everlasting harmony and repose.

William Humboldt said—"Man is man only by means of speech, but in order to invent speech he must be already man. . . . According to my fullest conviction language must be regarded as naturally inherent in man, for it is altogether inexplicable as a work of his understanding in its simple consciousness. . . . There could be no invention of language, unless its type already existed in the human understanding."

Co-ordination of many groups of muscles is necessary for speech, and the nervous arrangement of the brain is *en rapport* with the complexity of the function. Idiots never speak well, yet it is as natural for man to speak as for bears and birds to brum and twitter; whereas the large air-sacs of the gorilla, and most anthropoid apes, are incompatible with speech. There is no trace in man of these remarkable structures.<sup>1</sup>

It is impossible to trace up all words to imitative and exclamatory sounds; for we frequently come upon roots of fixed form and general meaning which are unexplainable in themselves; and, as to explaining the existence of these roots, science stands helpless. There is no record, nor reliable tradition, that any race invented a language.

Languages do not greatly enlarge their capital, they mingle and change as men themselves do; but their path, amongst all modern nations, is rather to directness and simplicity than to maintain, amplify, and complicate the old elaborate texture. It is certain that all modern speech, however varied and adapted, has been derived from ancient, the cognate roots strike into a depth of common structure. The educated man of to-day uses substantially the method of the savage—only expanded and improved in the working out of details. All languages represent mainly the same intellectual art, no new central principles are discovered, changes being wrought by addition and improvement in detail; even the American languages seem rather the work of philosophers than savages.

<sup>1</sup> "Caswell's Natural History;" see Gorilla; P. Martin Duncan, F.R.S.

It is impossible to believe that the highly complicate and accurate ancient tongues, Sanscrit, Greek, Latin, were the workmanship of creatures not far removed from the brute: nor is it credible, judging from experience as to the little or no progress made in language by the most cultured modern races, that any time, however vast, could have sufficed to enable unaided mute creatures to invent, develop, and perfect the languages now in existence. There seems to be language because there is reason, and but for language reason would speedily be degraded.

It was asserted by travellers, when language was seen to be the frontier line between man and beast, that human beings existed without religious ideas and without language. We were told, again and again, that the Veddahs in Ceylon have no language. Sir Emerson Tennant wrote—"They mutually make themselves understood by signs, grimaces, and guttural sounds, which have little resemblance to definite words and language in general." In reply to this, Professor Max Müller<sup>1</sup> states that more than half of the words used by the Veddahs are, like Singhalese itself, mere corruptions of Sanscrit; their very name is the Sanscrit word for "hunter," *voddh*, or as Mr. Childers supposes, *vyādha*. If they now stand low in the scale of humanity they once stood higher; they may possibly prove, in language if not in blood, the distant cousins of Plato, Newton, Goethe.

The dwarf Negrito race, an early if not primitive type of humanity, as we are assured by Professor Owen, like those of some prehistoric races in Europe, have "a quadrumanous unconsciousness of nakedness," yet possess a language. Language seems a necessity of our race, and the direct consequences of intuition changing into idea;<sup>2</sup> the capital act of language is the wish to speak.<sup>3</sup>

Low orders of men have poor languages, and little or no distinct sense of large numbers; some, as the natives of Kamchatka, possess numerals, say to 100, but can only count to twenty by means of fingers and toes. Will it be said of

<sup>1</sup> "Address." International Congress of Orientalists, 1874.

<sup>2</sup> "De l'Origine du Langage:" M. Renan.

<sup>3</sup> "Discours de la Connaissance des Bêtes:" Father Pardies.

these low orders—they are the latest evolutions from animals ; their language is the most akin to brutal voice, an invention growing with the growth of their culture from low to high degree? We think not. What we actually find is—"From the highest to the lowest, all men speak ; all are able to interchange such thoughts as they have. Language, then, appears clearly 'natural' to man ; such are his endowments, such his circumstances, such his history—one or all of these—that it is his invariable possession"<sup>1</sup>—given to him for purpose of speech—as hands are bestowed for labour, a means of communicating and receiving thought.

Language, far from uniting man and beast, places a vast and deep interval, incapable of being crossed by the lower animals, eternally separating their nature and power from our own. He is a coward who, fearing for his supremacy, or from want of faith in Scripture, would forbid scientific investigation. The essential capacities and tendencies of man led him universally and inevitably to speech, worked out a foreseen and intended result. He has not risen from a brute-condition by the product of speech ; for he could never have produced language had he not been endued, at the outset, with those powers, both of body and mind, which constitute man. He was mainly what he is now when the first beginnings of speech came forth ; as lion was lion when he began to roar.

Wilhelm von Humboldt says language is an "organism," and "man does not so much form language, as discern with a kind of joyous wonder its developments coming forth of themselves." It accords with this, that philology refers the original forms of language to the primitive stage of the ancient human race. All men speak, their power of brain and capacity of thought are enlarged by speech, but no such differences are wrought as those which separate one animal species from another : all men, however differently they speak, are of one species. "Linguistic principles are actually worked out with as much originality, and more extensively if not more profitably, among savages than among cultured men."<sup>2</sup> Examples are found in the Algonquin system of compounding

<sup>1</sup> "Life and Growth of Language," p. 2 : Wm. Dwight Whitney.

<sup>2</sup> "Primitive Culture," vol. i. p. 216 : Edward B. Tylor.

words, and in the Esquimaux—a scheme of grammatical inflexion. Metaphor and syntax also belong to the infancy of human expression. Indeed, language, in many respects, is by a sort of rough-and-ready ingenuity, having more to do with the rule of thumb, Mr. Tylor says, than with “systematic arrangement and scientific classification.” The “old barbaric engine” is better, more precise, comprehensive, beautiful, in many of the ancient tongues, than in any or all of the patched and tinkered modern speech. Professor Max Müller says—“Nothing necessitates the admission of different independent beginnings for the material elements of the Turanian, Semitic, and Aryan branches of speech; nay, it is possible even now to point out radicals which, under various changes and disguises, have been current in those three branches ever since their first separation.” This accords with the Divine account concerning the beginning of human existence; and whether it results from the psychical unity of the human race, or is a proof of the historical derivation of language from one root, is not so material as the fact of unity.

We now, for variety of thought, treat language as the product of art, a contrivance, and regard human thought and conduct generally as organic and working under fixed laws.

If language is the product of thought in union with capable organism, and used as an instrument for imparting and receiving thought, it is due to the power of intelligence adapting means to ends. This is a highly complicate and intricate capacity. The psychic energies underlying the faculty and exercise of speech, bringing it into conscious exercise—themselves trained and developed by it—belong to those fundamental principles of religion, art, science, which make man what he is. Inner consciousness was externalised by language to be the revelation and interpretation of the acts of the soul. Common sounds were imitated, self-expressive or emotional tones were uttered with varying emphasis, force, and speed, gestures and motions of the features were used; this being possible by the possession of those various faculties and capacities which led inevitably to the production of speech. So far, therefore, we may say, no man is born a speaker, an artist, or an engineer; a lone man would not

speak, and every child learns the language in which he talks; but the child, the lone man, engineer, artist, speaker, are born with the enabling faculties.

Carry the investigation somewhat further.

Every division of the human race has been long enough in existence to form its speech-capacity into language. Should we, if a new race came into being, by whatever means, find it gifted with speech? Or would speech have to be wrought out in the manner work-tools are invented and improved? In one or the other of these ways must language have come. How is it with the lower animals? Not one of them originates civilisation, or culture—whether linguistic or artistic. Their utmost capacity only enabling them to receive training by a higher race in activities, which they themselves have no power to evoke; and the imitative gesture, or grimace, or tone, is never human, but parrot-like. Inward power fails, whatever the outward occasion, but man possesses inward power and outward opportunity.

A lone man, science says—"would not speak, nor initiate culture"—we do not admit either as more than hypothesis; but are certain that man would seek his like and find woman. This would be by cogitation of the individual, involving self-knowledge or personality; then by consciousness of other and separate existences; then by desire seeking for another ego. This process of instruction and education is visible behind the veil of Scripture words. The impelling energy leading man from solitude, where he might possibly have remained speechless as the lower animals, to pour himself forth in human intercourse and in Divine communion. It is easy to imagine how Adam's language grew out of the spiritual ground of his heart. Thoughts and emotions being rooted then, as now, in the spirit; planted there by manifold sensations, quickened in vivid and branched into distinct perceptions; bloomed and ripened into the flowers and fruits of words. Thus we have the basis of speech in the powers of man, the impelling cause in the soul of man—leading to consciousness of himself and of others, and the necessity for speech in the various wants of human nature.

We are told—"That is no acceptable explanation to a

scientific man which calls for a special force at the beginning, to act like a *deus ex machina*, and then retire to act no more." Keep the marvellous out of view, then, and say—"Man began as a learner, and continued a learner;" but before the training and shaping process, a mental equipment, however small, was necessary; those animals which are nearest to man in structural arrangement do not speak; only creatures, such as parrots, in whose vocal organs it is not easy to trace the cause of the power. For a man to see as if trees are walking, there must be a little vision; and the apparatus of speech would be of no use unless, in connection with consciousness, a definite reach and power of reflection grasped, handled, shaped, signs of conceptions and their relations in the different departments of mental action. In fact, the active and creative force of language resided in man as a marked and distinctive characteristic: possessing the physical and mental instrumentality, the need of expression produced speech.

It is not needful to adopt any theory as to the consonantal triple roots and internal inflexion of the Semitic speech or as to monosyllabic roots; nor to decide whether the first words were nouns or verbs; nor yet to account for the fact that clever people, like the Chinese, have a language which, in many respects, is structurally the lowest, and in resource the poorest; nor is any dogmatic statement warranted either as to unity or separateness at the beginning. Science inclines to take "formless roots" as the origin of all language, but what those roots precisely were can hardly be traced out. It may fairly be thought, that as a calf will run about and help itself even on the day of birth; so man, having the organs of speech, when the opportunity came would use them; application and development necessarily follows, not with words as parts of speech, to be put together in sentences, for no man though capable as Homer and Demosthenes, can speak any language until he has learned it; but possibly with comprehensive utterances, one word conveying a whole statement. Demonstration, one way or other, is impossible.

Take words to pieces, or put them together; compare modern with ancient, and rich languages with poor; yet neither philologically nor historically is there any warrant for saying that

former men worked on any other linguistic base than that now used. This is the more interesting, because there is not in any known language a word which can be said to exist, φύσει, by nature. The cry of animals is instinctive, but human speech is conventional; and every word stands in its accepted use, θέσει, by an act of attribution, determined by men's circumstances, habits, and references.<sup>1</sup> It is impossible to trace language even to human natural cries, brutal are out of the question, though many words in some languages are imitations—"cuckoo," for example; and no uttered sound, nor any combination of articulations come or came into existence as the natural sign of an intellectual conception.<sup>2</sup> We may as hopefully look to the beasts for our language, as for the particular and definite beginnings of the arts which develop our clothes, our instruments, our buildings.<sup>3</sup> The voice has been given to us for speech, but only as the hands are given to write with, and it is simply because they are most effective for speech and written word that they are the universal agents.

We may trace many languages to one parent language; take the sentences, words, letters to pieces, dissolve them by crucial analysis into primitive forms, natural sounds, voluntary expressions; but what of that? We cannot by any possible synthesis form the primitive speech. Man, to be sure, is an imitative animal, but not unreasonably, nor instinctively, nor in a mechanical way; he imitates because he has the capacity, just as he is an artist. Take a mechanism to pieces; separate the brass, the iron, the wood, the leather, fuse and burn them; but, apart from the human intelligence adapting and constructing the materials, they are not the equivalent nor explanation of the machine. Animals make noises which men fashion into speech; birds have notes which men attune to song; in the woods and on the sea are heard those rustlings, breathings, roarings, which men combine in orchestral harmonies. Man is naturally that intelligent creature whose material frame and inward spirit, possessing many and various faculties and capacities, led inevitably to the production of speech, and to elaboration of language. These capacities and

<sup>1</sup> "Life and Growth of Language," p. 282: Prof. Wm. Dwight Whitney.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.* p. 288.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.* p. 289.

tendencies universally and inevitably worked out the Creator's foreseen and intended result ; language becoming, in an especial manner, the incorporation of the acts of the soul—a living, breathing revelation of man to man, and of man to God.

“Comparative Philology has now succeeded in assigning the dialects of mankind, with more or less precision, to three families of speech ; the Turanian, the Semitic, and Aryan.”<sup>1</sup> The ancient languages are the most scientific, complex, and perfect in their structure ; therefore, it is argued—“the forms and laws of structure, involved in the most perfect condition of language, were endowments of primeval man.”<sup>2</sup> Knowledge grew, the seeds of thought were sown, the experiences of individuals and of races became registered, the intelligence stored up in the brain obtained further expression in writing. Revelation was made permanent, Divine Truth was written in the Sacred Book, so soon as spiritual efficacy began language had birth. In the very threshold of our self-consciousness, when the external world was copied into the soul by psychical forms of perception, the representative images and ideas became efficient and were translated into speech—the effluent in which mind and matter reciprocate their respective properties. It is mind that imparts to modulations of sound their hundred thousand distinctions. When they rise to full utterance of soul they are a swelling harmony of many thoughts, of many desires, translating the heights and depths of human passions, the fervour of devotion, the refinements of metaphysical abstractions, into symbols of intellectual and moral wealth for augmentation of wisdom and virtue in the mass of mankind.

The vocabulary of a highly civilised people, as Greeks or Romans, English, German, French, or Italian, comprises many thousands of words, with various inflections, technical terms, proper names. “What proof is this of the grasp, of the elasticity of mind, that it can, with a sovereign ease, and just as a man lays down one tool and takes up another, so lay down and take up at pleasure this or that voluminous machinery of signs !”<sup>3</sup> This wonderful apparatus, however,

<sup>1</sup> Prof. Max Müller.

<sup>2</sup> “Prehistoric Man,” Daniel Wilson, LL.D.

<sup>3</sup> “Physical Theory of Another Life :” Isaac Taylor.

is but a material machinery; found scanty, inexact, feeble, and in no wise commensurate with mind. The mind, or *νοῦς*, receives impulses from a world of thoughts which, for want of determination and fit symbols, are never born to augment the wisdom of man. Of what may the same mind be capable if furnished with a means of communication "homogeneous with itself; plastic in quality, and commensurate with its faculties!"<sup>1</sup> If the light and power of sanctified minds could pervade us as sunlight the day, so that innermost thought and emotion were truly reflected; we should possess summative unity in speech, and that true reflection and communion of personal consciousness, whereby pure minds reciprocally satisfy and are satisfied. We may rationally expect that language will acquire greater depth and power than we are now wont to perceive or use; enabling the willing to reveal all their emotional and intellectual wealth; to express, in symmetry with the range of their mind, wonderful things concerning creation, and glorious truths as to the power, the wisdom, the love of God.

iii. Human Development was wrought by a process of Civilisation.

True—but only in part. Real civilisation is not more a means of growth than proof of growth, and the benefits of civilisation are not unmixed with evil. The introduction of civilisation amongst a savage race generally proves their destruction, and manifests that progress is not something necessary and universal, but in an eminent degree contingent and partial. We say of all barbarian tribes—"They have no history;" that is, have made no appreciable progress. Moreover, as an unnatural parent, civilisation often destroys its own children: Egypt, Babylon, Nineveh, Athens, Rome, where are they? Was it not softness of manners, sensuality of life, want of high purpose, that slew them; rather than barbaric force? Or, if barbaric force, how came that to be the stronger? Those brilliant empires, so great in material attainments, have been swept away: only a few gigantic foundations, a few vast fragments of past grandeur, tell of their existence.

<sup>1</sup> "Physical Theory of Another Life:" Isaac Taylor.

Old Athens possessed a social life in which the ablest men delighted. Men of high culture found there, and nowhere else, a companionship of genius and knowledge. They were a race unrivalled in intellect, and in bodily form matchless.

Other ancient civilisations, Babylon, Nineveh, Palmyra, must have been very splendid—of architecture almost superhuman ; rats and mice were not the builders. That ancient statue of Chephren, the Phra, or Pharaoh of the fourth dynasty, who built the second of the great pyramids at Ghizeh, is cut out of the beautiful but intractable stone—"Diorite." The features are refined and intellectual as those of a modern European. Its age may be thirty-seven centuries earlier than the artist—Phidias, the king lived B.C. 4200. There are no signs of brutal origin in this image of early historical civilisation ; but the civilisation was not prolonged, it wrought no permanent deliverance. It neither made, nor wholly marred men ; for sometimes, even now, near the ruins of a sumptuous Eastern palace, is found a man, princely in body and mind, amongst a horde of degenerate race : a reappearance of kingly type in a place, and amongst a people, whence and from whom the crown is gone.

It is distressing to witness the draggled, drudged, mean look of the masses, specially the women, not only in the poor streets of London, but in all the great cities of Europe and America. Civilisation seems too hard for their constitutions ; the present conditions of life and social arrangements of property, are fast crushing them into degeneracy. Are we in "a series of cycles ; every one, perhaps, beginning and ending in a little change not in advance of its predecessor ; every one closing in catastrophic relapse, and a period of barbaric darkness ?" We call for more brains and mental stamina in our divines, statesmen, philosophers ; who, indeed, find it hard to keep pace with their work. Are they already ceasing to run well in the race, and giving way to another people ? Are the needs and vices of civilisation, the excitement of quick communication, the friction of high culture, unmanning our men and rendering women unwomanly ? Is religion ceasing to influence the most progressive intellects ? will a deluge of

unbelief carry away the foundations of civil community? sweep away the faith and work of a thousand generations into superstition—as of Spain, into subjugation—as of India, into insignificance—as of Arabia? who knows? All experience points to termination, not to indefinite prolonging of civilisation.

If our own civilisation is to last, we must not ground it on material wealth, not on intellectual power, not on moral purity, not on any one of these, but on all : it must be founded on Christian scientific principles. If skilled industry elevates the masses, gives them healthful homes and wholesome food ; if intelligence guides them to the use of wealth, and forbids the abuse ; if morality chastens selfishness into esteem and love ; that relief of man's estate will be permanent, will be for goodness and beauty, for the glory of God.

Things are as they are, and we must not shut our eyes against facts. Of the three elect or world-moving peoples—the Jews, governing religious thought ; the Greek, supreme in intellect ; the Roman, ruling in law—the modern Jew is far inferior to the ancient in high spiritual power and in true knowledge of God ; the Greek of to-day is not better, but worse than his fathers ; and we count the Italian—if a Roman, a Roman decayed. Abraham in his tent was intelligent as any ancient or modern Pharaoh of the palace ; Job could give reasons exceeding nowadays arguments ; and prophets hold their own against philosophers. The absence of mechanical art does not prove that the primitive race was barbarous. The old negro—think of Tertullian—was certainly far higher in intellect than the present African : unless the ancient civilised Africans were not of negro race. The red man of America, the Australian, the Esquimaux, are generally counted degenerate sons of a race whose glory has departed.

A remarkable instance of failure in the operation of artificial selection is furnished on a large scale by the ancient Spartans. All newly born children were carefully examined, the sickly, and those affected with any infirmity, were killed ; only the strong and perfect in form were allowed to live, to propagate the race. By this means it was thought that strength and skill would increase with every generation, until the race

became perfect in body and mind. What was the result? They had rough hard valour, strength, endurance, but their own hardness slew them. Some tribes among the Red Indians of North America vainly cultivated bodily strength and bravery by a similar selection. Modern nations have a military selection, militarism is dangerously prominent, degrading and destroying humanity.

Probably we shall not possess greater force, nor swiftness, nor agility, in the future. The grand air, elastic energy of step, resolute assurance of bearing, which Nature gives to her aristocracy—wholly distinct and apart from polish of manner and the urbane grace of high breeding—belong rather to primitive than to artificial nature. It may have been more common among the tents of patriarchs than in modern drawing-rooms, more frequently possessed by knights and barons of the Middle Ages than by the polished gentlemen of our cities. In mechanical skill, doubtless, advance will be considerable; industrial and æsthetic arts will grow with high intellectual and emotional development. If right conduct comes and continues with these, the duration of life will be increased; but the tendencies of politics, society, opinion, toward the supremacy of numbers—demoralised by recognised infidelity, or by a corrupt religion—are fatal to any present confidence in an earthly paradise. Communism, of which wholesale robbery is the commencement, sensuality the continuance, despotism the end, will not establish the reign of the saints. Actual want and misery—keen incentives to outrage and lawlessness, sometimes their justification—are not relieved by elimination of God from the world. Those who count that they possess nothing, if they have not sensual gratifications, are envious of the gold that shines, the diamond that sparkles, the plumed pomp of rank: victims long enough of sleights and tricks cunningly worked by priests and politicians, they would now grow plump and sleek with delicacies.

Despite these dangers, Christianity fills our hearts with hope and spans the horizon with a bow of promise. Christianity teaches the principle of love to God and man—while giving the motive. Christianity confirms our destiny as masters of the earth, our privilege as sons of God, our hope

as inheritors of heaven. These are the sublime characteristics with which men, men alone, are gifted! "I say gifted, for the surpassing organisation was no work of ours. 'It is He that hath made us; not we ourselves.' This frame is a temporary trust, for the uses of which we are responsible to the Maker. Oh! you who possess it in all the supple vigour of lusty youth, think well what it is that He has committed to your keeping. Waste not its energies; dull them not by sloth; spoil them not by pleasures! The supreme work of creation has been accomplished that you might possess a body—the sole erect—of all animal bodies most free—and for what? For the service of the soul. Strive to realise the conditions of the possession of this wondrous structure. Think what it may become. The Temple of the Holy Spirit! Defile it not. Seek, rather, to adorn it with all meek and becoming gifts; with fair furniture, moral and intellectual."<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> "On the Classification and Geographical Distribution of the Mammalia:" Richard Owen, F.R.S.

## STUDY XVIII.

### HUMAN LIFE.

#### *Personality, Individuality, Speciality.*

“ Between two worlds life hovers, like a star,  
’Twixt night and morn, upon the horizon’s verge :  
How little do we know that which we are !  
How less what we may be !”

BYRON.

SHALL we soil our hands with the earths, be concerned about heat, light, electricity, the precious metals, the diamond, and there stop ? Shall we condescend to that derogatory part of our nature, that offensive condition in which we acknowledge brotherhood with the sea-jelly, and animalcula of a stream or pool, and not ascend the heights of life which are specially our praise ? We are bound, if only to save endless wanderings in a wrong direction, to ascertain whether the lofty soul and god-like intellect are signs of a potential fellowship with spirits noble and glorious ; whether they are the title-deeds of a brighter world, or false lights and mocking delusions ? They can hardly be delusions. If all our priests were drowned to-day, and the Bible burned to-morrow, an irrepressible consciousness of things unseen would again call forth the prophet and consecrate the priest. Religion is not for the great events of life only, it is for the small. Bright with gladness to the pure in heart, a familiar friend in the family circle, it is very welcome. In hours of thoughtful solitude men rest in faith and give God thanks. The monitions of eternal truth, whispered in their infant ears, and pondered in after-days, are not presages of woe, but comfortable assurances concerning that life in which the weary rest and the good are happy evermore.

Our Study is of Human Life.

We are told—"Life and Mind are not substances, but the dynamical results of an organism's statical conditions. Mind is only one of the forms of life; and Life is not an entity, but an abstraction expressing the generalities of organic phenomena." The assertion is not true: organism and function are not the cause of life, but are themselves caused by life. The initial fact, without which could be no organism, is life: it is a theorem worked out by the organism.

It is asserted—"We come into the world with a heritage of organised form and definite tendencies representing ancestral experiences and adaptations. In like manner, the mind is built up of assimilated experiences: perceptions and conceptions being shaped out of pre-perceptions and pre-conceptions." The statement is not adequate. Life is something more than the synthesis of ancestral experiences—being, indeed, all that the faculty of living encloses; and mind is something more than an aggregate of past and present perceptions—we must add the potential existence of a Cognitive Faculty, without which could be no mind. Life builds up the organism, and mind mysteriously inhabits it; so, whether you call life and mind entities or not, they certainly look through the organism at the outer world, have views of an inner world, and, strangely enough, by means of these outer and inner, detect relations which are obscure to Sense, and relations inaccessible to Sense: the supra-sensible being got at analytically by analysis of analysis.

It is manifestly impossible that we can know the exact conditions in which organic life began. We do little more than guess at its nature and origin. Of this, however, we may be sure—our life is not merely sensations of colours, of sounds, of tastes, of smells: for sensations are the product or act of life, not life itself. Those who think to explain it by descending from organism to organism, quantitatively and qualitatively, going down from organic to inorganic, from masses to atoms, forget that the atoms are only the masses "writ small"—the mystery remains. The chemist analyses water into its constituent gases; then, by synthesis under certain conditions, reconstructs the water; not so with life.

nor the substance in which life is manifested. The substance, so far as we know, can only be made by life; and without it organism is not possible. Herein lies a world of mystery. Those who would degrade man to a level with the beast and slay religion, clutch at the dagger; but, like that which hovered before Macbeth's imagination, it refuses to be grasped. The "gouts of blood" upon its "blade and dudgeon" no eye but their own can see; man lives, moves, has his being in God.

Mr. Herbert Spencer, finding fault with various definitions of life, says—"Life is the definite combination of heterogeneous changes, both simultaneous and successive, in correspondence with external co-existences and sequences." It would be more correct to say—Life effects definite combinations and changes, etc.

Mr. G. H. Lewes states—"Life is the co-ordination of actions, both of structure and composition, which take place within an individual without destroying its identity." Here also it is needful to remember—life is that by which the co-ordination, correspondence, co-existence, sequences, become possible and actual.

The larger formula—"Life is the definite combination of heterogeneous changes, both simultaneous and successive, in correspondence with external co-existences and sequences"—may be approved by some. Others choose, as simpler—"Life—including intelligence as the highest known manifestation of life—is the continuous adjustment of internal relations to external relations." To render the simple definition adequate, make a small change, and read—Life, including intelligence, as the highest known manifestation of life, effects the continuous adjustment of internal relations to external relations; or, as Professor Flint states—is the cause of the direction and co-ordination of the movements or actions characteristic of bioplasmic matter.

Bearing in mind that life is the cause of organism, not itself caused by organism, and raises for itself many-chambered habitations of manifold structure and function, we may speak of it after the manner of Descartes in "*Traite de l'homme*"—The vital spirit is like a subtle fluid, or pure and vivid flame. It is ever regenerated in the heart, and ascends to the brain.

Hence it passes into the nerves, is distributed to the muscles, and causes contraction or relaxation. This spirit not only fills the cavities of the brain, it enters the pores of its substance and is the means of all motion and emotion. As in the groves and fountains of royal gardens, water issuing from the reservoir moves various machines, makes them play instruments and even pronounce words; so the vital spirit, lodged in the machine of an animal body, enthrones itself in the brain; or takes the engineer's seat to guide the mechanism; and thence increases or slackens, changes or suspends, motion and function.

Again, the body has been called an engine, of which food is the fuel, and blood the life-oil; but a body may have food in the stomach, blood in the veins, and nevertheless be dead. Living substances, when dead, can be converted into carbonic acid, water, ammonia; but it is impossible so to bring them together that they give rise to the living substance. Our organisation transmits impressions from without into sensation within; but life is not the organism, nor impression, nor sensation, it is the master principle or secret of all—"an original, specific, self-propagating endowment."<sup>1</sup>

Physical energy is correlative to vital acts, but not of identical nature. Heat, electricity, light, air, are materials and agents by which vital processes are educed; but life is not a mere aggregation or resultant of these conditions, materials, powers. The living egg may be quickened by heat, and become a growing bird; but who can hatch a dead egg? As certain bodies in solution assume definite crystal forms, every form after its kind; and metals—gold, silver, copper, possess individuality, called "life;" so other bodies—agglomerating into organic form and exhibiting the properties of life—have their own special life; yet we know not the how nor the why; nor do impressions from without, though they may determine the occurrence of sensation, reveal the secret how motion is converted into sensation. The mystery of life is still hidden, nor is all life the same life: there is one life of fish, another of bird, another of beast, another of man; and man's life is three-fold—*corporis vita*, life of the body; *mentis vita*, life of the mind; with one spirit pervading each for the safety of both.

<sup>1</sup> "Winds of Doctrine:" Charles Elam, M.D.

Speaking accurately—everything possessing consciousness, perception, voluntary motion, may possibly have an immaterial personal principle wholly distinct from animal tissues. There is in every animal not only a plant life, a system of organs used for assimilation and reproduction ; but a life by which it merits to be classed apart as an intelligence using organs. The immaterial personal principle of the beast seems to be used up in the necessary expenditure of its natural life—it goes downward. A much greater distinction exists between the natural life and personal life of the human being. Our natural life is that into which we are born, it includes body, soul, spirit : “soul is the external aspect of the spirit, spirit the internal aspect of the soul.”<sup>1</sup> Personal life is the centre or identity of our being in every stage and condition of growth. It is the ego, capable of introspection, to apprehend and comprehend the interests of our existence in self-representation, common to all men as men, and elevating us above plants and beasts.<sup>2</sup> We are not merely plants—with life indeed, but no soul ; not merely animals—with soul indeed, but no spirit ; but men—with life indeed, soul indeed, spirit indeed.

We find further evidence in the fact that mechanical adjustment, or automatism, does not explain all the actions or personality of brutes ; it is less able to define human conduct.

Some of our acts, which at first required attention and skill, become automatic. This reveals the fact that mental states have no resemblance to the physical states causing them. Life cannot be weighed in a balance, nor measured by scale, nor tested in crucible, nor seen by microscope. Our sensations, volitions, consciousness, power, are not wholly from animal organs : real sensations are often the product of mental states, and are modified by our personality. Everybody knows that brain is inseparably connected with the mechanical operation of thinking, and that the nerves are correlated to our sensations ; but thought is not explained by the hard word “cerebration ;” nor is any new light cast on sensation by calling it “an affection of sensory ganglia.” We are wholly incompetent to understand the connection between molecular processes and the phenomena of consciousness : therefore we cannot define

<sup>1</sup> “Bible Psychology,” p. 179 : Prof. Delitzsch.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.* pp. 180, 476.

one by the other. Very different kinds of emanations, vibrations, and other powerful agencies, act in and around us; tastes are brought into alliance with thoughts; sensual things are relieved, ennobled, graced, by intermixture with ideas of beauty and order; so that our bodies are a point of contact for two worlds—mind and matter: in both of which worlds our volition counts for something, and has duties to perform. Embodied, our mind is educated: its peremptory and efficacious impulses to put moral and intellectual faculties into activity spring from the corporeal constitution. This constitution commences its education in bodies terrestrial: "first that which is natural, afterward that which is spiritual:" it is a curve whose elements having been determined in a world of observation and experiment is prolonged into a future world.

Bones, muscles, nerves, come between mind and that which is outside of mind; but they are instruments only by which the molecules of the blood, or of the organism considered in the aggregate, are moulded into the peculiarity of their own type. This process of integration and reintegration, by which diffused units are arranged into special compound forms, seems akin to the polarity of crystals—a power of whose nature nothing is known. The totality of the living tissue, or zoological individual is a zoon, or person, possessing union of parts, and separateness from other objects; possessing a centre, or axis, able to carry on independently that continuous adjustment of inner to outer relations which is not life itself—but the work of life.

Life acts mechanically in every person, but, in the very act, we are conscious that our mind, which moves the mechanism of life, proves that we are more than a material machine: for if all vital action is the result of molecular energies, and there is no substantial difference between the protoplasm of lobster and that of man, then the functions of both should be identical, but the lobster is confined to intuitive motion and reproduction, while man possesses multifarious and complicated activities of intellect, emotion, will. Moreover, that function of the brain, memory, is a book of blank leaves which we continually write on, as with magnetic fluid, to ensure the survival and embodiment of our personal consciousness. The

leaves are not always open, though they are the infallible means by which we know the integrity and continuance of our personality. When the leaves are open, the characters are not all legible; nevertheless, we continually repossess our past existence; and learn, by successive states, even to project ourselves into the future. It follows, from all this, that our personal life is a real thing, that we have open doors in the palace of our dwelling, and run through them to see, to taste, to admire, to comprehend.

On the ground of Personality erect the scheme of Individuality.

The simpler forms of individuality are seen in the percipient, voluntary, reasoning principles of brutes: but as there are two corporeities in man—a natural body and a spiritual body (1 Cor. xv. 44), so are there in brutes the animal tissue and the immaterial principle; but the immaterial principle seems used up in natural expenditure of brute life. Man, animal, bird, fish, plant, are all from one source: every one in its order, every life of its kind, but man according to a Divine Pattern. Leibnitz saith—"Les perfections de Dieu sont celles de nos âmes, mais il les possède sans bornes: il est un océan, dont nous avons reçu que des gouttes."<sup>1</sup> Between the instinct of a brute, not knowing itself; and the consciousness of man, determining itself from itself; is an impassable gulf. Individuality is the peculiarity of the individual man, whereby he is distinguished from the other beings of his kind. Individual is opposed to species, and person to nature. To put it more familiarly—the Hottentot, the Australian, the black fellow, and "swinked hedger," have common personality say—with the members of the British Association; but, individually, they are as distinct and separate as is the President from the Queen of Ethiopia.

The true life of this personality and individuality is in the spirit. The body, in itself, is only sensual except as elevated by the spirit. Flesh and spirit are contraries: except as flesh becomes formed and informed by endowment with soul so as to be able to receive spirit. Flesh, *בשר*, and spirit, *רוח*, are in contrast (Gen. vi. 3; Isai. xxxi. 3; John vi. 63). Man ori-

<sup>1</sup> "Theodice"—the Preface.

ginated in a body of earth, specially fashioned and breathed into; and was thus the synthesis of two distinct elements. The outward, being more than a veil or covering for the inward, was penetrated in every part by the inner essence; indeed, the relation may be called sacramental—the body being the outward and visible sign of an inward and spiritual mind; the two uniting to form human individuality. The spirit in man was not a portion of the Divinity, but man's spirit related to the Eternal Spirit as effect to cause. It is customary, in Scripture and in conversation, to speak of man as body and soul (Gen. ii. 7; 1 Sam. i. 26; Job iii. 20, x. 1; Ps. lxii. 1; Prov. iii. 22; Matt. x. 28); but the more comprehensive expression is—body, soul, spirit (1 Thess. v. 23; Heb. iv. 12). Our fleshly life partakes of high character through the work of the spirit of life, and unites the soul with the spirit. Soul and spirit are, nevertheless, separable elements in man; yet there is no gulf between them—man has not three lives, but one life; not three persons, but one person; he is three natures in one person, a trinity in unity.

It may be said—"soul, ~~שׁוּל~~, is applied to the beast;" so it is, and means the person of the beast, not the beast as a person: and though we can only apply soul to man as person in the human body, nevertheless, the soul in beast and the soul in man are in essential diversity. The brute has soul person, or a living nature, by that cosmical life which pervades all Nature. The body of man receives soul—not by cosmical, but by Divine life (1 Cor. ii. 11). The spirit is the power of self-consciousness, the soul is the place, the whole man its object. The spirit is that which comes from God, and is of God; it is the *pneuma*, or candle of the Lord in man, the power of progressive and improvable reason; but chiefly the power of will in selecting good or evil, true or false, right or wrong. Hence, we may say—The tree of the knowledge of good and evil, which was not to tempt but to try our parents, is the real criterion between man and beast: the probation of the spiritual faculty by obedience was an indication that only by the tree of life—only by consciousness of, and willing submission to Deity—could that of knowledge be rightly approached.

Change and somewhat elevate the argument :—Man, to become conscious of himself, distinguishes himself from the outer world. Thus, becoming self-conscious, he is conscious also of others besides himself; that neither he nor they are original or self-existent, but derived and conditioned. This derived consciousness presupposes and renders essentially necessary an absolutely original unconditional self-consciousness—an eternal Self-Consciousness from which proceeds “the Divine Spark of the personal spirit into the dark stuff of naturalness, and preserves it there in still concealment until it is able to realise itself in the light-flame of human self-consciousness.”<sup>1</sup> Herein are the roots of our consciousness of God: true reflection on ourselves, breaking through the crust of mere cosmical consciousness, leads up to Him in whom we live and move and have our being.

Look at the fact naturally and experimentally.

Whole classes of products consist merely of carbon and hydrogen, yet every one has its own individuality. A chemist proves that a piece of graphite and a diamond are essentially the same, but we recognise their individuality by using the graphite to draw with, and the diamond as a jewel.

Regard the fact from a Physician's point of view.

Individual human peculiarities are special, frequent, distinct. We cannot tell why one has Addison's disease, and another suffers from ataxy; why this endures cancer, and that is plagued with writer's cramp; why ipecacuanha will make some sneeze, a grain of iodide of potassium iodise one person, a grain of grey powder salivate another, and opium produce colic in a third. Nor is that all—every stage and period of a man's life from infancy to old age has its special distinctive peculiar characters; and material and immaterial peculiarities are frequent and distinct as to light, heat, electricity, food, drugs. “We call these peculiarities, idiosyncrasies; we meet with some of them two or three or more times in twenty years, but others are so rare that a long life of varied and wide experience may have witnessed but one example. Some people are most delicate electrometers and magnetometers; and I knew one such who became blind in a thunderstorm

<sup>1</sup> “Christian Doctrine of Sin,” vol. i. p. 81: Dr. Julius Müller.

eight years ago, and whose physical frame before and since that time was always contorted by electrical and magnetical disturbances long before the former are recognised by ordinary people, and when the latter have only been displayed by perturbations of the machinery for electric telegraphy. . . . With regard to food :—One person cannot take egg, in any shape or form ; to another tea and coffee are poisons ; some cannot eat flat-fish ; others are put into cutaneous tortures by strawberries." <sup>1</sup> Such facts as these compel the recognition of the individuality, for pathological and therapeutical purposes, of every member of the human family.

Daily experience shows that there are peculiar morbid tendencies. One man will sing over ghastly toil, another weeps with the infant in trouble. We are alike yet unlike. There are things common to all, yet in the innermost recesses of every life is something that has not been seen by the most earnest gaze. Emotions and feelings are often counted hypochondriacal, hysterical, nervous, unreal : because thorax, abdomen, limbs, excretions, are nothing wrong. Having weighed the patient, electrically examined the limbs, looked at the retina, marked the beatings of the pulse, and not found him wanting ; he is told to go in peace. A deep unrest ; a failing power felt by him, not seen by the physician ; a sense or dread of impending evil in brain or heart, weakness of intellectual grasp, averseness as to physical exertion ; seem, when tested, to be delusive notions ; for he can do all things well. He is urged to disregard these warnings, does disregard them ; but they come from life's centre, and some terrible catastrophe, breaking down of the mind, heart ceasing to work, suicide, pour contempt on careful auscultation and scientific diagnosis.

The suffering man may have mistaken notions ; and the unwise physician, following them, may lose his clue ; but even morbid sensations and wrong notions are part of the disease itself, to be studied as a whole ; and are a proof to the scientific pathologist of more than mechanical mysteries in many a disordered life. This leads the physician in his own

<sup>1</sup> Dr. J. Russell Reynolds, "The Address in Medicine to the British Medical Association at Norwich," 1874.

sufferings to some one who knows him well and has known him long ; who knew his parents and their belongings ; and would "hit out some common-sense line of treatment, the result of much experience and far-seeing ; rather than commit himself to the care of the most highly trained graduate in medicine who could see his retina, trace his pulse, qualitatively and quantitatively examine his excreta, record his temperature, and bring to bear upon his case the last generalisation of the latest writer on his peculiar malady. While desiring all that the skill of the younger man might perform, he would prefer not to lose the wisdom and experience of the older friend." <sup>1</sup>

"With regard to many diseases, we are in a position that might be described as somewhat like that of the physiologist and the schoolboy in combination, when they have found two birds' nests. The one—the histologist—shall examine the contents of one of the eggs of each nest, and apply all his microscopic powers on the cells that he shall find ; he may call the chemist to his aid, and yet fail to give, after the most searching gaze and chemical analysis, even a guess as to the nature of the bird that would be developed by the simple application of warmth to another egg which he has not broken. The other—the schoolboy—looks at the shell and decides in a moment that this will become a blackbird, and that the other will produce a lark. What the relation may be between the colour and the marking of the shells and the wonderful constitution of their contents, that shall determine the development of this bird or of that, we do not know. What is the difference between those contents we do not know, but let us remember a quite specific and wide difference does exist between them, although it is far too fine for any of our processes of investigation to demonstrate its nature." <sup>2</sup>

If there is a speciality, an individuality, in the egg which escapes every process of investigation ; one egg growing into a blackbird, another into a lark, no man being able to say, without seeing the shell, which it shall be ; may we not safely conclude that man—differing from man in ten thousand

<sup>1</sup> Dr. J. Russell Reynolds, "The Address in Medicine to the British Medical Association at Norwich," 1874.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*

ways, and separated from the beast by a multiple many times more — has his own speciality, his own individuality? That his life, as all life, is one of the great facts in God's Creation?

We exist instant by instant, but know not the rate of our progress, nor can we render it equable. Our individuality, our mind, are not, like the brain, prisoned in an "attic story;" but occupants of the entire animal organisation. Endless and distinct peculiarities of bodily and mental conformation constitute recesses, or inner pavilions of being, from which other men are excluded. Therein our peculiar faculties stretch out to the full; some with inscriptions—as on a scroll; some transferred—as by the statuary to a fair and ample surface of Parian marble; some by the artist to a picture, that they may abide for ever.

A few of us can pursue certain difficult complex speculations in peace, liable to no interior disturbance; others are exposed to gust and eddy from every ravine and temptation on the way of life. We know the aspect of idiocy, but who can tell why reason is unable to hold her seat? Less terrible is it to behold the body wasted, and features sharpened by the great life-struggle; than to look on the face whence mind is gone. Such a sight is a startling shock to the materialist. We cannot express all our thoughts and emotions, they need many voices and instruments to pour forth the full meaning; but every good man confesses—The renovation of my nature when brought about, will be effected in a manner bearing upon my peculiar condition as individually accountable.

The Speciality of Human Life.

"The peak is high and flush'd  
At his highest with sunrise fire;  
The peak is high, and the stars are high,  
And the thought of a man is higher."

*Tennyson.*

Human nature, in its present form, is only the rudimentary stage of an extended and more desirable existence. The future lies so involved in our bodily and mental organisation that we discern traces of it within our inner man. This inner man makes us somewhat like those poets of grand and

comprehensive genius who unite the ideal and practical. Our mental and moral history far surpasses whatsoever may be accounted analogous in the natural instinct and material changes of the body; and exceeds everything that any combination of material forces can produce. A heathen could say—"Aperta simplexque mens, nullâ re adjunctâ quæ sentire possit, fugere intelligentiæ nostræ vim et notionem videtur."<sup>1</sup> "There stir within us yearnings irrepressible, longings unutterable, a curiosity unsatisfied and insatiable by aught we see." These appetites, passions, and affections come, not as Socrates and Plato supposed,<sup>2</sup> nor as our own poet, Wordsworth, sings, from the dim recollection of some former state of our being—

"Our birth is but a sleep and a forgetting,  
The soul that rises with us, our life's star,  
Hath had elsewhere its setting,  
And cometh from afar."

*Intimations of Immortality.*

"Still less do they come from the delusive inheritance of our progenitors. They are the indications of something within us, akin to something immeasurably beyond us; tokens of something attainable yet not hitherto attained, signs of a potential fellowship with spirits nobler and more glorious than our own; they are the title-deeds of our presumptive heirship to some brighter world than any that has yet been formed among the starry spangles of the sky."<sup>3</sup>

We may attain a similar thought by starting from a lower level:—As to the brain, Dr. Andrew Combe says—"We cannot conceive, even in the remotest manner, in what way the brain—a compound of water, albumen, fat, and phosphate salts—operates in the generating of thought." We know and feel that thinking expends force; close, earnest, continuous application of the mind to high studies is hard work, and produces bodily exhaustion; not only so, the power producing the impresses by which we derive our conceptions, runs up and is lost in the mental region; as well the faculty of knowing, as the materials of knowledge, being vastly more extensive than

<sup>1</sup> Cicero, "De Nat. Deo," lib. x. c. 11.

<sup>2</sup> See Plato's "Meno."

<sup>3</sup> "Modern Science and Natural Religion:" Rev. C. Pritchard.

they appear. The mind, which, by use of a brain—brain shut within near and limited receptacle, discerns planets by calculation, and stars and constellations incalculably remote, and foretells their future movements, warrants belief of everything concerning the future which can be proved to come within the compass of analogy.

Take a Mechanical and Chemical View.

A bowler, who imparts a velocity of 30 feet to an 8-lb. ball, consumes in the act one-tenth of a grain of carbon. A man, the weight of 150 lbs., consumes the heat of a grain of carbon in lifting his own body to the height of 8 feet. Jumping from this height the heat is, for the most part, restored. The consumption of 2 oz. 4 drs. 20 grs. of carbon would place the same man on the summit of a mountain 10,000 feet high. To maintain all this, he places food, as so much combustible matter, in his stomach. It is dissolved by chemical processes, and the nutritive fluid is poured into the blood. It comes into contact with atmospheric oxygen, admitted by the lungs, and the production supplies animal heat, nourishment, and replaces that which has been used in the wear and tear of life.

This, which is quite true of the body, as a machine ; quite true, as to physics and chemistry ; is applied to the brain ; and thence, altogether erroneously, to the mind : so much blood, so much phosphorus, so much heat, without which will be no brain, no thought. We say erroneously : for the difference is not only of degree, but of kind, that separates between the genius of Pascal and the mind of an idiot who suns himself under the wall that shelters him. The expenditure of the same heat, phosphorus, blood, will produce totally different results in the brains of Marat, of Howard, of Napoleon, of Milton. The adjustment of nutriment, qualitatively and quantitatively alike, to two brains, does not produce even the same kind of consciousness : the difference shall be as of light and darkness, as of good and evil, as of pure and impure. Hence, allowing that the physical frame is to be interpreted physically, the process utterly fails as applied to the mind.

The molecular motion of the brain, linked to consciousness,

has its own series of physical processes ; but the stirring, the thrilling, utterly fail to explain consciousness ; or why the same action, in the same parts of two different brains, shall lead in one case to murder, in another to the saving of life. Our success in life, our happiness, our moral state, cannot be measured by physical or chemical analysis, or by synthesis of the material elements composing our brain. It is impossible to explain, on mechanical principles, the speciality of that internal action by which the same physical nutriment is perverted to desperate wickedness, or used to good will, or becomes a power that makes for righteousness.

View the whole as should a Physician.

The physician must not so correlate vital and physical powers as to ignore the fact and speciality of life. Life lies in the organism, and translates physical energy into vital acts. The five senses do not reveal everything to us. It is certain that manifold agencies, of which at present we know little or nothing, add to or take from our life-force. Great is the error in treatment of disease when, in place of conserving vital force, vital action is elicited. The processes of life may be changed, seemingly for the better, but the patient is worse. Stimulants are given to help a man through his work, and he has done things that otherwise he could not, but his life has been wasted : what he required was food and rest, a nourishing of organism, a building up of tissue and restoration of energy. On the other hand, having lessened the force and frequency of vital functions that are beyond the normal range, the result is evil.

Various ailments have their speciality indicating speciality of life. The most frequent cause of their occurrence, and the most potent elements in their ætiology "lie in the working of those social, moral, and intellectual processes, which are unlike and apart from anything which can be even tortured into resemblance to the causes of disease in animals." The cares of professional life, worry, excitement, luxurious idleness, the intellectually guided epicureanism of sensual excess, the urgent pressure of family and social needs, "the fierce conflict between moral sense and religious training, on the one hand, and doubtful practices and honest and dishonest

scepticism, on the other, are the most fruitful causes of loss of rest, recourse to stimulants and narcotic drugs, failure of appetite, disturbed digestion, mal-assimilation, nervous breakdown, and all the thousand ills that flesh is heir to. I say designedly 'that flesh is heir to,' because I am now speaking of bodily ailment only, and affirm that this kind of causation of malady is peculiar to man, and that we lose sight of much it behoves us to consider if we fail to see the broad line of distinction which, in this particular, separates him from the animal kingdom to which he is allied."<sup>1</sup>

"The inferences drawn from the phenomena of diseases apparently common to animals and men have been pushed too far. The differences between the human and the animal organisation have been sometimes lost sight of."<sup>2</sup> Variola and Vaccinia afford a striking illustration of the difference between human and animal organisation. Many examples show that to infect human beings with virus from the animal world there must be the inoculation of its poison. The action of many drugs is different in animals to that which occurs in man. The furnace of human life is filled with a different fluid, heated by a different fire, moves a more complex machine, than does the furnace of brute life.

Disturbances of the higher faculties of man exhibit many forms of disease from which members of the animal kingdom are exempt. Something like the cleverness and stupidity of men may be seen in our domesticated friends—"there is a disobedience almost human;" and sailors say—"the monkey will not speak lest he should be set to work." Some monkeys are perversely brutal, and nothing can be made of them; others of the same species are kind, full of fun, like their keepers, and can be taught tricks easily. Insanity has never been observed in them, certainly not in the striking forms found by the physician who deals with human beings.

Not only should all the particulars which conduce to physical health be regarded, higher training or education requires equal or greater care. We recognise faculties in man, possessed by none other; mysterious windings of intel-

<sup>1</sup> "The Address in Medicine," by Dr. J. Russell Reynolds, forty-second meeting of the British Medical Association, held at Norwich, 1874.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*

lectual and moral being; powers, elsewhere only found in feeblest resemblance, fill him with joy, or cast into depths of despair, as he stands apart and alone in peculiar responsibility. Conscious of duty and the need of self-sacrifice, he searches for the unseen and looks to the future; not merely floats or drifts on the stream of life, but controls weariness and dissatisfaction, as to the merely temporal, by a joyful belief in the Eternal. There are two worlds, and two lives—he belongs to both, whether he will or not; he must not, cannot sink to the brute.

The science of life is evidently the highest of sciences. Obey no misdirection, make no failure. The purity of the pure is a ministering angel to every life. Dark shadows and fearful loss are the lot of some whose memory is a field of sepulture filled with carcasses of evil and only evil continually. From the dust of their corruption evil spectres will come forth to walk hereafter. The lives of wicked men project horrible wretchedness into the present life, and fearfully shadow the future. Crime is developing a Cainite race. We recognise a law by which physical and moral taint cleaves to the children of evil-doers. The unclean thought of a polluted mind, like the disease of a pestilential body, extends its defilement to those who are yet unborn.

The facts are of startling character. Few children of honest families take to theft; thieves, generally, are the descendants of thieves, hereditary paupers, vagabonds; a race with physiological and pathological distinctions; one-third are diseased in mind, or body, or in both. Examine the heads of convicts, whether in prison or in the haunt of thieves at large, they are of brutal type: foreheads low and narrow, features coarse, and skulls—not of the high Aryan shape. Their likeness to one another, their unlikeness to the honest and pure, are an awful explanation of the Second Commandment, and make known the fact—"Accumulated evil of generations has produced a low degenerate form of humanity." The clever-looking, bright, good-humoured thief? even this man is not only immoral—that is a matter of course; but often without the power of making moral distinctions. Take out those whom sudden and too great temptation has overcome, the perverted

children of honest parents, the residuum is visibly brutish and bestial.

The following details, copied from the *New York Times*, appeared in many papers:—"Six convicts, all near relatives, were confined in the prison of Ulster County. The circumstance excited the attention of the United States Commissioner of Education, and he took pains to trace back their genealogy to a single family of sisters, who had lived among the woods and fens, long ago, in that condition of squalid misery and crowded indecency in which too many young girls live in our courts and alleys. He went on to trace out the descendants of these sisters, following up the fortunes of rather more than half the entire race, and the results are given as follows:—One girl grew up, as hundreds of such children are growing up through the States, without known parents (in all probability she and her sisters were illegitimate children) without friends or education, or being reached by any religious influence. The vagrant girl grew up to a wicked womanhood, and died shortly after 1825, aged, it is believed, about sixty-five years. The family line has been carefully searched, and 834 persons are distinctly traced, but it is believed that the full number of descendants is at least 1,200 from the three sisters. The number whose fortunes are most clearly known amounts to 709—327 males, and 319 females; remainder unknown." Mentioning only 569 of these, "106 were illegitimate, 164 prostitutes, 17 keepers of houses of ill fame, 142 receiving outdoor relief, 64 paupers in almshouses, 76 criminals. The number of indictable offences committed by them is 115; the number of years' imprisonment they have suffered, 116; the number of years' individual relief, 734. Of the whole 709, only 22 ever acquired any property; and of these, 8 lost what they had gained."

In view of facts like these, it is time to cease questioning about things that profit not, and to work tenfold more for regeneration of those who are degenerate in body and in life. These degenerates are a spectacle to secularists, sensualists, positivists, atheists. The old doctrine of Original Sin is receiving awful physical and psychical proof. The evil done by a man lives in his children. Wicked thoughts, moral

pollutions, selfish, godless minds, are open sepulchres. The connection between moral and material condition is known to be a reality. The marks of sin on hands and feet, prints of vice on the face, the broken and misshapen limbs of transgression, seams and scars of lies from the scourge of villainy, the crookedness of falsehood and imposture, deform and disfigure polluted men. We can imagine the spirit set free to traverse space, but a prey to those malignant powers which an evil life has made supreme. No merciless tyrant encloses his victim more helplessly and hopelessly, by chain and dungeon, than do retributive miseries. Fierce and mocking, they grapple with and bind the self-made slave ; bear him, not from star to star, but from depth to depth of amazing woe.

Turn from this depth of amazing woe, the miseries of vice and doom of iniquity. Our lives are bad enough and sad enough, they form but ugly pictures to hang upon the walls of consciousness ; our real business is to adorn life with fairer scenes, to make our will right, and cause it to count for something in the world. We make it right by finding some supreme, some universal, some attainable good to strive for :—

“ Work, without hope, draws nectar in a sieve ;  
And life without an object cannot live.”

Hopefully striving, we shall not only rejoice in the possession of satisfying happiness, but attain the possibility of every virtue, and freedom to make our life a power.

We shall not be free in the sense that our volitions originate without a cause ; but free in the manner implied by our consciousness of responsibility ; “ *voluntas libera tanto liberior quanto sanior, quanto divinæ voluntati subjectior ;* ” the determination by motive not being casual but moral and rational ; ourselves, by inner power, giving decisive preponderance to this or to that.

These motives are the fruit of desires, aversions, habits, disposition, combined with outer circumstances calling incentives into action ; hence, volition is a moral or immoral effect—an effect which we feel that we help to produce and are responsible for ; an effect produced by that power or freedom to choose which constitutes the grandeur of our nature. On

this account, we educate ourselves, are subject to discipline, exalt the desire of right conduct, awake hatred against all iniquity, that we may use our freedom in highest and purest manner.

The difference between a bad and a good man is that the latter has an aversion to evil and desires right. Even Necessitarians possess a strong sense of right and wrong, and confess that good or evil ought to befall a man according to his conduct. We all admit that there is a difference, must be a difference. Whoever cultivates a disposition to wrong, places himself out of sympathy with his fellow-creatures, and they account it their duty to protect themselves as against a noxious beast.

Even conceding that a man is corrupt by birth, and so ill bred that he is sold to do evil; he must be kept in fear of punishment, made to feel punishment, that his will may be governed by deterrent motives. Hence, the benefit of the offender and the protection of those whom he would offend justify punishment.

We are not mere links in a chain of causation, nor mere grains in a mass of existence, nor is law an adamant barrier. Receiving impressions from Nature and intelligently reacting upon Nature, we weave, according to the fundamental property of our organisation, that which is beneficial into our life, and shun the hurtful. We know what volition is, and the causation of it. We need not think of will as an entity in itself, which it is not, but as the result of organic, physical, psychical, mental changes, in the centre of our being. Freedom consciously aiding to form the strongest motive, having power to obey that motive. Out of this arises the universal opinion that men can voluntarily determine their own actions. Whatever a man's theories may be, he practically ignores and discredits the doctrine that volition is lawless.

We are now

“ Upon the world's great altar stairs,  
That lead through darkness up to God ; ”

can see how men may form or weaken, perfect or cause to perish, the faculty and function of God-consciousness in them. If we pray, endeavour to use and enlarge our consciousness of

**God**, we attain a sense of nearness to the Master Intellect—the Oversoul—the Father of our spirit. If we never pray, nor strive, consciousness of the Supreme, even if it have been formed in us, is weakened and may become altogether dead. The sanctification of our intellect as an altar to God, the presentation thereon of our thought and emotion in sacrifice, the going up of fervent desire from the heart, are generally necessary for the descent of heavenly fire to kindle our spirit. If a man will not endeavour to obtain this fire, but allows cold mental states to misrepresent—not present God, and idols of the market or flashes of sensuality to spread their glamour, there will be no sense of Divine presence in the garden of his thoughts, no striving, as of Jacob with the angel, no talking with the Lord in the cool of the day.

We have been led by our investigation to the very boundary of our intellectual powers, and enter the region where most men fail; for it must be confessed that, though making endless advance in knowledge, we are almost at a standstill in moral goodness and spiritual-mindedness. We stand, since the days of Christ, as if again in Paradise, in presence of the Trees of Life and of Knowledge. Too many rehearse the old tragedy; whereas, the reverse of the parable of the trees should now be tried.

It is not enough to possess great knowledge, that may lie outside the centre of our being. A licentious scoffer can be very intellectual, but he cannot, while a scoffer, be spiritual. He may have a consciousness of God, not much stronger than an exercise of ideality. His soul will be a sort of romance in life, so that he says—"If you are content to make your soul a poetic rendering of a phenomenon which refuses the yoke of ordinary mechanical laws, I, for one, would not object to this exercise of ideality."<sup>1</sup> Men who thus speak of the soul—the organ of God-consciousness, are in danger, through disuse, of so far losing the Divine gift as to become incapable of true worship. There are three natures in man—the fleshly, the intellectual, the moral; and there are three degrees of sin—sins of the flesh, sins of temper and intellect, sins of

<sup>1</sup> Address, by President of the Midland Institute, at Birmingham. Reported in the *Times*, 2nd October, 1877.

spiritual wickedness. When men, like Balaam, pervert their God-consciousness; and speak lies—not from infirmity, as Peter did; not from cowardice, as Jacob did; but from a desire of earthly gain or of pleasure, a seal is set upon their character—Judas and Balaam stand forth.

Men of noble form adorn their natural and mental position with moral and spiritual beauty. They know that the entrance of a human being into the world by the common course of Nature is as real a manifestation of the power of God as were the Creation of Adam, the Translation of Enoch, the Ascent of Elijah. They do not live as creatures of a day, but for the world to come. They say—"Our intellectual and moral structure promises and seems to render necessary an after-stage of expansion. The natural is pierced and pervaded by the spiritual. There is a beauty transcending all beauty, concerning which even our dreams are not wholly false; a joy above all joy, which we hope to attain by a graciousness of God exceeding all other graciousness." These men—whether at the Bank, on 'Change, in the mart, by the forge, with the plough, or in the dust and smoke of battle—are well known, of sound understanding, to adorn and replenish the earth. They exult in the light and beauty of a promised new and fair creation. They regard the spirit's birth into the world of matter as a means whereby, even through solid extension and mechanical properties, the soul is made more personal, more exact, and possessor of joys which disembodied spirits cannot share. These joys to come break in upon them by anticipation, rendering things ever and ever new, revealing the universe in its meanings, beauties, glories, immensities, and God as All in all.

## STUDY XIX.

### THE INVISIBLE.

“ We have a visionary gleam ;  
Is it glory, or but a dream ? ”

WE have now concluded that portion of our subject, the Divine Narrative of Creation, special study of which leads to the conviction of Divine operation, and to demonstration that Religion, which embodied the highest thought of the time, widens and deepens with our ever-growing experience. The explanations which were given of the universe are not childish guesses made by barbarous tribes, but are equally suitable for the infancy and the grandeur of human intellect. They reveal the universe as one splendid unity, a glorious temple of the Almighty, and the present life as that wonderful stage on which, by due exercise of our freedom, we are fitted for an exalted future existence. The dogmas of our Faith, being experimentally verified, shine with a light that was never on sea or shore—the light of a new world.

The remaining Studies give completeness and thoroughness to the whole subject.

It is asserted that there exists a power of perceiving what is passing in the mind of another, or of thought to read thought, which may be voluntarily exalted, but acts generally by unconscious interpretation of indefinable indications—the assertion is not to be utterly rejected. Some of us detect in the best photographs a peculiar delicacy, possessing within the surface a spiritual relief which we at once recognise as a true likeness of the inner man. Heinrich Zschokke, we are informed, was able to describe many particulars of an individual's past life. Certainly, nerve-force may exert itself from a distance and bring the brain of one person into direct dynamical communication with that of another. This power,

which we know to be exercised, seems akin to the link which unites the invisible universe, so that it becomes part of our consciousness. There is, at times in some of us, a delicacy and acuteness of hearing—a subjective sensation producing ideas—that, when on the sea-shore or sitting in a meadow of stillness, the ripple of the waves in soft murmurs among the pebbles and the, to all other ears inaudible, insect music, and that of grasses vibrating in responsive touch as they gracefully move, form sounds sonorous and grand as the thunder-peal; or are full of sweetest harmony as had the melodies of heaven come from the upper fields. This cannot be put away as wholly a freak of the imagination; there are two parts in every sensation—what we get, and what we add to it. Some men have less feeling than others possess, but none are wholly without experience of an inner faculty, nor destitute of feeling as to the mystery of the universe, nor unvisited by thoughts of a life beyond the present, nor dead to the stirring impulses which excite belief that the sorrows of mankind will be remedied and their pleasures enlarged.

The scientific exercise in which we now engage will call into use our highest faculties, those specially with which genius effects her greatest triumphs.

“Even in the strictest of sciences—Mathematics—it can be easily shown that no really great advance, such as the inventions of Fluxions by Newton, and of the Differential Calculus by Leibnitz, can be made without the exercise of the imagination.”<sup>1</sup> There seems to be in Nature something like a galvanic circle, something that reveals itself in peculiar processes of thought—like that which suddenly solved the problem that for fifteen years had haunted Sir W. Rowan Hamilton. Such facts must not be regarded as fortuitously presented. There are many instances, thoroughly well attested, in which knowledge of the death of a relative at a distance has been conveyed, with all the particulars, to persons during their sleep; and there are examples of some special information, buried in the bosom of the dead, being imparted in sleep to the living. “The singularity of the facts conveyed, and the impossibility of their coming through any ordinary channel, ought, on

<sup>1</sup> “Mental Physiology:” W. B. Carpenter, M.D., F.R.S.

every principle of philosophical and of forensic evidence, to be admitted as furnishing proper proof of an invisible interference."<sup>1</sup>

Can these things be scientifically measured, or must we confess that they escape both hand and eye? Doubtless, they can be known according to the measure and kind of a man's ability—"πᾶν τράγμα ἔχει δύο λαβάς."

Swedenborg, who though dreamer was yet a man of spiritual insight, states, "that the whole natural world corresponds to the spiritual world collectively and in every part; for the natural world exists and subsists from the spiritual world, just as an effect does from the cause." Delitzsch says—"The creation realised in time is actually only the temporal realisation of that which was everlastingly present to the triune self-consciousness of God; and of the latter as of the former the same principle is true, that it is God in the totality of His nature from Whom and in Whom it has its ideal existence."<sup>2</sup> It is the every-day experience of a devout man that only he who lives in the world as at the same time belonging to the invisible leads a true life.

A scientific man formulates the fact somewhat in this fashion—The doctrines of the Conservation of Energy, and Uniformity of Law, require that there be no sudden wrench, or absolute break anywhere; nevertheless, the creation and existence of the visible universe from its first manifestation to the final overthrow, from the beginning in time to the end in time, are not a series of smooth continuity and invariable uniformity; but that infinitely various and complicate operation by which all things visible and invisible are wrought in splendid unity.

Science rightly pushes back to the furthest our knowledge of the Great First Cause; but cannot do away with the original production of the visible universe, from the invisible. If we entertain the hypothesis that all Nature once existed in a diffused form, we cannot conceive or know how this could be. If we speculate on the future, no limit can be assigned to the marvellous succession of ever-unfolding phenomena.

<sup>1</sup> "Physical Theory of Another Life," cap. xvii.: Isaac Taylor.

<sup>2</sup> "Bible Psychology," p. 63.

If we look inward, we cannot remember how consciousness began, nor can we examine the essential nature of the consciousness that at present exists, nor shall we know its end: the beginning, continuance, termination, are equally mysterious—an impenetrable mystery lies under all. To ignore everything but what is visible breaks the doctrine of continuity and disrupts the grand chain of entity. To be told that the visible universe is only a huge fire which burns itself out, and leaves nothing but ashes—dead worthless residuum—is enough to startle every one. Science must modify the doctrine of Continuance by acknowledging the kindling, as it owns the quenching of the fire; must allow that the visible is the realisation of the unseen, and possibly forms but an infinitesimal part of that whole which we call the universe.

Put the fact in three shapes. I. Did the visible spring out of an order, or no order of things, with which it had no connection? II. Will it pass into an order or no order of things, wholly unconnected with it? III. Is it a transference from the invisible; which, passing from grade to grade of realisation, becomes transposed into some other order of things with which it is intimately connected? Now, if the scientific affirmation is correct, that the requisites for existence connect every organ and organism with the past—we must hold, as the very root of our life and the foundation of all existence, that the scientific doctrine of Continuity, if true, is proof of a transposition of the past into the present order of things; and of the present into some other order with which it is connected. The third proposition therefore is true; so when

“The cloud-capp'd towers, the gorgeous palaces,  
The solemn temples, the great globe itself,  
Yea, all which it inherit, shall dissolve,”

*Shakespeare.*

there will be a continuance, or state, into which the present visible existence is an avenue. Those who, in the name of science at one end, or in the name of religion at the other, would wall up the path and affix a placard—“No Road This Way,” mistrust their own principles.<sup>1</sup>

The physical properties of matter have been well called—

<sup>1</sup> “The Unseen Universe,” p. 211.

"the alphabet which is put into our hands by God to enable us to read that great book the Universe." In that universe are three mysteries: the mystery of matter, the mystery of life, the mystery of God. The laws of matter seem simplest of the three; but, how great soever the circle of light surrounding them, the circumference of darkness grows more mysterious and tremendous:

"Dark with excessive bright thy skirts appear,  
Yet dazzle Heaven."

*Milton, Paradise Lost, iii. 380, 381.*

Matter, even as to what it is, and how it is, eludes and will for ever elude our grasp. Then, when we come to apply the laws of matter to living things, we are forced to admit the existence of something lying beyond; a something, *sui generis*, working with and through those laws to an appointed end. Passing from life to a region even more mysterious—that of mind, we find something as much transcending life as life transcends matter. It is of no use theoretically to drive life into the structural depths of the universe; of no avail to transfer mind into the thick darkness of the durational past; of no help to conceive of the Great Cause as only operating in the eternal aforesaid; we do not get rid of Him, nor of them. A scientific conception of the universe must embrace—Matter, a manifestation of underlying Energy; Life, an unveiling of hidden Existence; Mind, affording conception of the Highest Intellectual Power—the Supernatural.

Against this we have a few sophistries which sound like echoes of the old speech from under the Tree of Knowledge.

"Everything in Nature is natural, and not supernatural; or it would not be a part of Nature." Then, if a bird flies into a room it belongs to the room, and is part of the furniture. "Every unknown cause must be accounted a natural cause." Then, we are to build upon ignorance, and call the house knowledge. The folly of this being evident, we are assured—"We know nothing about causes, we can only trace antecedents and consequents." Very well, then say nothing about that of which you know nothing. It is asserted—"Matter either made itself, or is eternal; in any case, it made everything else." This irrational faith unfaiths all rational belief,

and can only be received by those who believe everything that is not in the Bible. We know, as well as we can know anything, that matter once was formless, and without properties; that motion must have come into it from without, was therefore preternatural, and without it Nature would not have been possible. The high energy in the universe is ever passing into lower forms; the reversal of low energy into the higher can only be accomplished, even under the most favourable conditions, by loss of the far greater part; and, when the lowest form has become universal, there can be no reversal except by infusion of energy from without. We also know that no amount of pushing by unintelligent force in time and space could create the world we live in, any more than the shaking of pebbles would build Westminster Abbey; nor are the vibrations of atoms equivalent to moral emotions of will, love, reverence, in a self-conscious intellect—they are at least vibrations plus the emotions.

We are told—"It is impossible for us to conceive the Supreme Being acting otherwise than we actually see in Nature." Really this is babble; turn the asserted fact—"It is impossible for us to conceive the Supreme Being acting as we actually see in Nature," and every atheist in the world will say "Amen." "Progress," we are told, "is necessary to existence, or life;" take the reverse—"Progress is necessary for non-existence and death;" both are true. "The highest effect is to bring man into perfect harmony with law;" yes, but the aim of all science and all intelligence is to control natural law by human will. "In obedience to law are life and safety;" yes, but knowledge and power to subdue natural law are imperatively demanded for life and safety. All this shows that there is something unseen in all that is seen, something transcending Nature in Nature.

Some admit that miracles are theoretically possible, but deny that any have been wrought, and would ignore them by means of truisms. "If we neglect gravitation, we shall be dashed in pieces at the foot of a precipice, or be crushed by a falling rock; if we despise sanitary law, we are destroyed by pestilence; if we disregard chemical laws, we are poisoned by a vapour." "Yes," we reply, "because God, who likes simple

folk, approveth not simpletons." It has been proposed that we erect two hospitals; in one the patients are to be "physicked," in the other "prayed for." Evidently the proposer had need of both remedies. The wisdom and order of Divine conduct, whether in giving or withholding, cannot be tabulated by man; so as to form a theory of prayers, and a register of the varying degrees of faith and intensity, for production of greater or lesser results. Sickness unhealed, even as sickness healed, whether a rod or a reproof, may be for the glory of God. Out of folly, wisdom may be got; by gravitation, levitation; from sickness, healing; and poison, not always deadly, becomes medicine; so things contrary turn to our part.

Sometimes a noise is made about the supernatural being unnatural—as if what came into Nature from without, did not thereby become part of Nature and natural. Walking on the sea is a plain reversal of laws; but so also, antecedently, is sending a message under the sea. If the latter is accomplished in our days; so the former, in the example of Christ and the experience of Apostles. To say—"The alleged sea-walking and submarine telegraphy have nothing in common; because to accomplish the miracle, either the body or the water must have been invested with new properties; and, in the telegraph case, it was merely required that old and persistent properties should be ascertained and utilised"—is really to assume that we know all about the miracle that is to be known; that there are no energies, either in heaven or earth, by use of which a man may walk on the surface of the sea. The fact is, to our forefathers, telegraphy was an impossibility equal to the miracle wrought by Christ. Doubtless, it will be established, if ever men do walk on the sea, that they do so by ascertaining and utilising old and persistent properties of the universe.

We are able to explain *why* miracles are wrought; but the definition of so unknown a quantity as how they are wrought is sure to be imperfect. To say—"Whatever is contrary to universal and invariable experience is antecedently incredible," is but a truism; yet what man or nation has universal and invariable experience? The saying of Professor Baden Powell—"In Nature and from Nature, by science and

by reason, we neither have nor can possibly have any evidence of a Deity working miracles ; for that we must go out of Nature and beyond science"<sup>1</sup>—is double-edged ; for neither Nature nor science, in that case, can possibly present any evidence against miracles. Really, such sayings remind one of making a fog and then trying to escape ; they limit science to its present capabilities. It is puppyism grown into dogmatism, as Douglas Jerrold would say, to assert as a universal truth—"It is more probable that testimony should be mistaken than that miracles should be true ;" for the meaning unveiled is this : It is more probable that the evidence for a miracle is false, than that other men, if there were miracles, should not have seen them. If the assertion be taken as a denial of the truth and reality of anything not generally known, it is a flagrant *petitio principii*, an absurd attempt to correct experience by inexperience, to make every unknown and unlikely thing antecedently incredible, and to measure knowledge by ignorance. It is demonstrable, adopting the generally received nebular theory as to the origin of worlds, that there have been continual interventions of energy, even if all the morality, intelligence, life, strength, beauty, variety, existed potentially in the primary diffused mist. Scientific theory and experiment are, however, eliminating all material properties from the primal substance : and, ere long, the evidence for intervention may assume the power of demonstration : for if the original atoms had not material properties, those at present known could not have been got out of them—unless put in by creative energy. The ablest of our scientific men teach that there is something more than matter or stuff in the universe ; and that the doctrine of Continuity, whether they go backwards or forwards, brings them to an invisible universe.

There are two classes of miracles. Those which from the very nature of the case are excluded from investigation, such, for example, as are wrought by the Glory of the Father upon the Son, say the Supernatural Birth ; which must be received as "*miracula de quibus ipsa est fides*," not as "*miracula quæ sunt ad fidei confirmationem*"—the objects of faith, not for

<sup>1</sup> "Essays and Reviews : Study of the Evidences of Christianity."

the confirmation of faith. The other class are those miracles which may be tested by the manner, time, circumstances, of their accomplishment. These surpass the ordinary powers of Nature—"præter naturam, supra naturam, contra naturam;" not that the effect is unnatural, but such as could not be produced unless new powers were evoked.

These latter miracles are as credible, if we have trustworthy report, as if we saw them with our own eyes; there is no absolute difference between the two testimonies. In the case of many witnesses, indeed, we have far more conclusive evidence than could be afforded by our own unaided and uncorroborated senses.

Three things make miracles antecedently probable and subsequently credible: alleged adequate power; sufficient motives for their performance; permanent results arising from their occurrence.

As to the Power, the term *δυνάμεις* seems a fit word to describe the putting forth in a *τέρας*, "wonder, or prodigy," evidence for the existence and presence of the Almighty, or of one from Him. Sufficient motives are manifested, in a teleological point of view, by the *σημείον*, or "sign," or instructive light, by which we are made to understand that Divine love, wisdom, purity, the kingdom of heaven, are nigh at hand. The permanent results are the opening of secret sources of power, of holiness, of wisdom, which make the children of men so strong, pure, wise, that they lay hold on eternal life.

In this latter sense miracles are also prophecies: not only do they sometimes foreshadow future events, as in 2 Kings xx. 8-11; they also foretell the victories of the Son of God, and prefigure the rich potent balm with which the Great Physician will heal the deep and deadly diseases afflicting Nature.

The view of God, in Nature and beyond Nature, moving along all radii from the infinite into the present finite creation, physical and psychical, and passing into the infinite future, most powerfully attracts scientific students, religiously inspires them, and imparts to their glorious studies yet greater glory. God is not only outside, but within the universe; the Book of Nature is the biography of the Author. Dynamical agency

is fundamentally distinct and separate from material conditions. In other words—"The material conditions, in fact, merely furnish the *fuel* and the mechanism; it is the force or power that does the work."<sup>1</sup> The whole process, intellectual, vital, chemical, mechanical, the convertibility of physical forces—their correlation with vital, the *nexus* between mental and bodily activity, lead up to that Mind whence is all power. From the apex of this pyramid it is seen that God cannot be "cribb'd, cabin'd, and confined" within any agencies—cannot be adequately expressed by any materialistic formula. He is not a remote and retired mechanician, but higher than the highest conception we can form of Him, the extension to infinity of all our noblest attributes, and certainly possesses that personality which is presence to Himself. Around Him, we conceive, is some everlasting glory; which, by self-revelation, He framed to be the Heaven or Dwelling-place for the body of the light of His spiritual nature; which goes forth eternally to be everywhere the all-pervading, all-sustaining Power, the inscrutable essence of all, without which the world would be as the baseless fabric of a vision and thought itself would perish.

We now pass to those spectres of thought, ghostly pictures hung in the chambers of our mind by a mysterious power. Is it a power making visible whatever has been reflected in the depths of our nature? Is it a faculty, as yet scientifically undefined, causing what is disembodied and invisible to the natural eye to be spiritually apparent? We certainly seem to have intelligence concerning that unseen land—

"The undiscover'd country from whose bourne  
No traveller returns."

*Hamlet.*

Is it true that there has been no return, no reappearance, no answer? Are all men liars? If so, they do not lie always. Our perceptions are twofold: sensual, by our senses; intellectual, by ideas produced in the brain, that is, cerebral. Is it utterly impossible for impressions to reach our brain from an

<sup>1</sup> "Mental Physiology," p. 694: W. B. Carpenter, M.D., LL.D.

altogether different source—impressions wrought by our own inner organisation, working on the brain precisely as do impressions from the outer and material world? It is not impossible, and their difference in origin and effect cannot always be discerned. Their instrument is the cerebrum, and the transmission of an impression along the nerves of the internal senses to the sensorium, is equivalent to that of an impression through the nerves of the external senses. Dr. W. B. Carpenter, in his "Mental Physiology," says of spectral illusions—"These are clearly sensorial states not excelled by external objects; and it is also clear that they frequently originate in cerebral changes, since they represent creatures of the mind, and are not mere reproductions of past sensations."

If the mind is duly impressed, a thing will seem heavy that is very light; the odour of a dead body may be perceived from a new and empty coffin, and acute agony be endured from an imaginary wound. The influence of ideas on sensitive subjects is so great, that flames have been seen to issue from magnets, luminous phenomena became visible in dark rooms, sounds were heard in perfect silence, and intangible things touched. Imagination has produced various shades and brilliant coruscations of flame from bare walls; self-deceived and spell-bound, the victims become a prey to their delusion—a delusion which proves the extraordinary power of mind over body. It is obvious that the fact, "real sensations are produced by mental states," enables us to understand how Sir Isaac Newton could recall the spectrum of the sun, by going into a dark room and intensely applying his mind; and explains the fact of some men being able, at will and at any time, to surround themselves with spectres; and how others, without will but at any time, may be haunted by horrid illusions. Sir Walter Scott ("Demonology and Witchcraft") gives an example—"Passing from his sitting-room to the entrance-hall, fitted up with the skins of wild beasts, armour, etc., he saw right before him, and in a standing posture, the exact representation of his departed friend (Lord Byron), whose recollection had been so strongly brought to his imagination. He stopped for a single moment, so as to notice the

wonderful accuracy with which fancy had impressed upon the bodily eye the peculiarities of dress and posture of the illustrious poet. Sensible, however, of the delusion, he felt no sentiment save that of wonder at the extraordinary accuracy of the resemblance, and stepped forward towards the figure, which resolved itself, as he approached, into the various materials of which it was composed—great-coats, shawls, plaids, and such articles as are usually found in a country entrance-hall."

Apply these admitted facts—The visible universe and man's physical frame are connected by bonds of energy with the invisible, are capable of receiving energy from it, there exists a bridge between the two—a something that welds the two into one. The motions which produce and accompany thought affect the whole order of things—visible and invisible. Thought may scientifically explain the past state of the earth and by prevision foretell its future condition. Science, in fact, accepts as physically probable, that which true religion asserts as spiritually true: that Moses was enabled to reveal the past, and that prophets were inspired to make known the future. We do not offer this as an explanation of the power of prophecy, but as an attempt to show that so far from spiritual vision, or prophecy, being impossible, there are states of mind in which science may shortly be able to show that it is a real, though an unusual, possession.

Reflection will make this clear. We do not doubt the possibility of a science of meteorology; nor of science dealing with phenomena which are the product of many and complex factors; nor do we, while allowing that sociology cannot be brought under the control of mathematical deduction, refuse to admit that physiological and psychological laws are true, precise, inevitable in their result. Accepting the fact, there is a sense in which Buddhism and Mohammedanism might have been predicted. The production of gigantic personalities, and the peculiar impression produced by them, could be foreseen; such predictions being possible to an intellect able to contemplate and comprehend the many and intricate factors producing and controlling the progressive life and opinions of the world. This prevision, at present, is crude

work, little more than guessing ; but can become systematic and thorough so soon as we know and are able to trace the application of law to the vastness and variety of biologic phenomena. That the antecedents of the phenomena are irresistibly working out their results is certain ; our knowledge of them is uncertain, owing to their vast complication ; owing also to the operation of that unknown factor—human will ; but the science is already in existence, and gathering precision with the development of human skill. This being the case, so far from men of science refusing to acknowledge prophecy, they can conceive the flash of prevision as somewhat similar to the sparks which fell into Sir W. Rowan Hamilton's mind concerning the long-sought fundamental equations.

Pass to another series of thought.

When we dream, it is often against our expectations and wishes. Things, which we would see, are not seen ; those not desired, forcibly intrude. Insight, invention, origination, even creative genius, bearing the well-marked stamp of our individuality, yet transcending ordinary power, are possessed in dreams. The imagination is sometimes constructive, at others lucky guesses are made ; a dullard, when awake, will pass in sleep through long process of thought and years of experience in the twinkling of an eye. The mind not only feeds upon the store of past ideas, but works them up into never-ending combinations. Those who have become deaf, as in the well-known case of Beethoven, compose music involving new combinations of sound ; and men who have lost their sight, rejoice in the imagined beauties of a glorious landscape, or of a visionary picture.

Condorcet, in a dream, found the last steps of a difficult calculation which no power of his waking thought could discover. Tartini in a dream, heard, as he thought, the archfiend play ; but when awake could not satisfactorily reproduce the visional music. Coleridge's "Kubla Khan" is notable as a dream-poem. Some find that their dreams, however vivid, are always incoherent and unreasonable, often impossible in some parts : so true, nevertheless, are dreams to us while they last, and work in such new shape and unaccountable directions, that intended crimes have been prevented and past crimes

discovered—not by mere coincidences, but by occult action of the mind. Some impression, or succession of impressions, in waking moments, has given to the dreamer an almost revelatory power. The wife of General Sleeman slept within a tent which had been pitched in a lovely opening of a jungle. Her dreams were haunted all night by the sight of dead men. The general, because of information which he had received, caused the ground to be opened, and fourteen corpses, victims of the Thugs, were discovered. It is easily conceivable that the foul odour of these dead suggested to the lady, in unconscious cerebration of the dream, the horrible vision.<sup>1</sup>

If it be said, "These things are not of sufficient certainty to be used as arguments;" use them simply as illustrations. Sometimes, dreaming, with closed eyes, we see the realities around—our bedroom and everything in it; our library and persons entering. We are fast asleep, it is a dream—but the objects are true, clear, defined. The horizon of the dream expands, the whole street is visible, distant places are brought nigh, the inward scene is a true picture of things really existing. At times, old things become new; forgotten events are remembered; words long ago said, in a now unknown language, are repeated; the dead appear as living; and, as by clairvoyance, there are visions of the absent. Inward influences seem the stronger the more our brain is given up to rest and sleep: or, as others assert, the operation is carried on not when we sleep soundest, but with the maximum of sub-consciousness consistent with sleep.

Whatever these perceptions are, unconscious, sub-conscious, flashes of insight whether scientific or poetical, our brains use them in the same manner as were they outward impressions received through the senses. They are not a mere play of the fancy: for when we are awake, no imagination, no fancy, has power to produce the objective perceptions and realities of a dream. Some persons, when they dream, are as dramatic as Shakespeare. Sometimes, on awaking in the morning, there is no remembrance other than a confused notion of having lived another life in sleep; but in course of the day some trifling incident, that has no apparent connection with dream-

<sup>1</sup> "Mental Physiology," p. 590: W. B. Carpenter, M.D., LL.D.

land, recalls the whole procession of events to form a living mental scene in the light of day. Most of us, awaking, have to fight our vivid perceptions before we find that they are only shadows; and important events float before the soul—the soul veiled in doubt whether they are visionary or real. We do, or think we do, unreasonable and impossible acts—unconscious that they are so. We dream that we dream, or dream that we awake, and thus the dream is yet more clothed with the realities of life. Sometimes our spirit seems apart from the body, and looks on the dead clay. We are in a cave, consorting with ghosts and idiots. Walls even are no hindrance, space has no limits, though all the conditions of physical sight are absent. Men, who never painted, conceive pictures most charming and artistic; the unpoetic have glowing thoughts, clothe them with the language of Tennyson or Byron; the unmusical make to themselves exquisite melody.

Such dreams cannot be produced solely by outward influences on our senses; unless we are like a harp which, uninfluenced by outward sound when played on, resounds with gentle excitement and sympathetic nerve when not played. Even so, how is it? the eye sees when no light shines; the ear is filled with melodies, discords, or cries of anguish, when no sound is without; the sense distinguishes odours, nerves of taste are delicately excited, and there seems no cause—except that of the brain's peculiar fancy. The fact is, we possess a power by which we see and hear, taste and smell, fill space with forms, when our outer physical senses are closed to the external world: we are endued with a faculty of seeing from within, unaided by impressions from without. Does it not render possible the actual existence of a power by which visions of every kind—prophetic as to the future, inspirative as to doctrine, perceptive as to facts, revelative as to Divine dealings—are brought within the circle of human knowledge and experience?

Lord Brougham recorded a most marvellous incident.<sup>1</sup> In his youth he had frequently disputed with G— on the immortality of the soul and on a future state. They actually committed the folly of drawing up an agreement, written in

<sup>1</sup> "Brougham's Life and Times," vol. i. pp. 201-204.

their blood, to the effect that whichever died the first should appear to the other, and thus solve any doubts they had entertained of "the life after death." They grew up, and Brougham had well-nigh forgotten his young friend, who went to reside in India. On the 19th of December, 1799, after a day in the cold and open air, in Sweden, Brougham had a warm bath. While enjoying the comfort, he turned round and looked toward the chair on which lay his clothes. There, on the chair, sat G—— looking calmly at him. The apparition was so startling that Brougham fell down, and on recovering his senses was sprawling on the floor. There had been nothing to recall G—— to his mind, nor had he thought of him; yet, though regarding the whole as a dream, he felt sure that G—— was dead. Returning to Edinburgh, he received some time after a letter from India, "announcing G——'s death! and stating that he had died on the 19th of December!!" Singular coincidence, an analogy of some of the affairs of life, so Brougham regarded it. Like other ghost stories it is, of course, capable of explanation; but who shall explain the explanation?

Of course, it may be said—"Who will guarantee the witnesses and narrators of these marvels?" No matter, we reply, whether guaranteed or not, our capacity and reality of consciousness are the greater marvel, and affirm the reality of wonders.

"Between the two states" (of dreaming and somnambulism) "there is a gradational transition. There are many, for instance, who talk much in their sleep, yet never attempt to leave their beds and walk. And among sleep-talkers there are some who merely utter meaningless sequences of words, or strangely jumbled phrases, and are incapable of being influenced by suggested ideas; whilst there are others who give utterance to a coherent train of thought, still without any receptivity of external suggestion; and others, again, obviously hear what is said to them, and attend to it or not according to the impression it makes upon them. . . The somnambulist differs from the ordinary dreamer in possessing such a control over his nervo-muscular apparatus, as to be enabled to execute, or at any rate to attempt, whatever it may be in his mind to do; while some of the inlets to sensation ordinarily remain

open, so that the somnambulist may *hear*, though he does not *see* or *feel*, or may *feel*, while he does not *see* or *hear*."<sup>1</sup>

Somnambulism, viewed simply as night-wandering, is a dream of reality for a direct purpose ; and Nature is sometimes, not generally, the guardian in such perilous and mysterious walk ; the wanderers frequently fall and are hurt. Somnambulists sometimes avoid every obstacle, walk on narrowest paths, climb dangerous heights, leap precipices, write without mistake, are conscious of the outer world by other means than their external senses, and certain faculties of the brain are used with greater precision and perfection than when awake.

Carrying these facts into the region of magnetic sleep, we find that the clairvoyant somnambulist may have the attention directed to any place he wishes to see ; where he will know everything that happens, and perceive, so it is asserted, things in advance which do not yet exist, but will happen, in course of time, as sequences of accidentally working causes. This, as also spontaneous somnambulism, brings visions, which do not arise from outward influences, into relation with perceptions which are derived from the material external world ; and dreams having reference to the health, or sickness, or death of the dreamer, have been verified by events.<sup>2</sup> Such dreams may be called prophetic or clairvoyant, others can be explained as mere misgivings and forebodings, most of them are utterly false.

Genuine sleep may be produced in a few moments ; the biologised subject be caused to sleep by the expressed determination of the operator that he will ; not only so, spontaneously to awake at the time he was directed. Metals, accounted the simplest and primitive productions of magnetic force, are said to be related to the system of ganglia in the same manner that the brain is related to light. Persons are not only sensitive to contact with metals, but even without metals or magnets the biologised "subject" may be acted on by mere suggestion ; and the mind which has lost the power of volitional direction will be in complete subjection to a dominant idea given by the master mind. There may be no

<sup>1</sup> "Mental Physiology," p. 591 : W. B. Carpenter, M.D., LL.D.

<sup>2</sup> Fabius, "De Somniis."

need to call in any special or new force to explain the influence which is exercised over what are called good "subjects." The power of paralysing by a masterful expression of determination, by positive assurance of certain things, by earnestness of suggestion, makes the subject assume the personality of the operator. "The undue repetition of such experiments, however, and specially their frequent repetition upon the same individuals, are to be strongly deprecated; for the state of mind thus induced is essentially a morbid one; and the reiterated suspension of that volitional power over the direction of the thoughts, which is the highest attribute of the Human mind, can scarcely do otherwise than tend to its permanent impairment."<sup>1</sup>

In the higher degrees of somnambulism, the "rapport" between magnetiser and magnetised becomes so perfect that the latter is conscious of all that passes in the brain of the magnetiser, of all impressions received by him from without, and is entirely under his control.<sup>2</sup> If this be the case, if such a force comes into play during magnetic sleep, "why should it not show its power at certain moments of our life, when we are awake, placing coming events before us either in a direct or allegorical form?"<sup>3</sup>

We are able, in conception, to separate space and time from pure intellect; and efface all distinction between the near and the distant, past, present, and future; proving that there is no insurmountable barrier to the occurrence of prophetic visions, "*visio in distantia et actio in distantia*," instantaneous acquaintance with events happening at any distance both in space and time. "If we hear that clairvoyant somnambulists are capable of seeing, in advance, what is to happen in the future, we must assume that they had an insight into the hidden and secret machinery from which everything proceeds, where everything is already at the present moment what it will be in future, and which represents itself only seen from without through our optical glass-time—as a future and coming event."<sup>4</sup> We do not understand this, nor wholly endorse the

<sup>1</sup> "Mental Physiology," p. 565: W. B. Carpenter, M.D., LL.D.

<sup>2</sup> "Spiritual and Animal Magnetism," p. 65: Prof. G. G. Zerffi.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.* p. 94.

<sup>4</sup> *Ibid.* p. 69.

statement ; but are thankful for every reverential attempt to reveal the secrets of matter and spirit, everything which gives insight as to the hidden machinery by which our Father moves the world.

Consider the mechanism of these various mysterious actions.

Suppose that a new idea is attended by the passage of a wave of molecular motion along a new path of the brain, and an old idea is the passage of a wave along an old path ; the recollection of these ideas is the passage of later waves along these paths, and memory is the keeping open of the paths by a continual transit of waves. Reflex action and instinct, travelling along these fibrous paths or transit lines connecting nerve-cells, are the simplest psychical phenomena ; and, as a matter of fact, arise without any corresponding experience ; so that flycatchers catch flies, and young pointers indicate the birds, previous to any experience. We are told, the experience of past generations has determined these peculiarities of demeanour, and produced "the automatic cohesion of psychical states." The explanation only puts the difficulty further back : magnifies the experience of a race within a larger nervous arc, makes the repetitions in whole life-times of countless ancestral flycatchers prophetic of similar phenomena in generations unborn, elevates automatism in height of mystery, brings it nearer to conscious psychical life-emotion, memory, reason, volition ; while these latter are thus shown, not only to possess that prevision which the astronomer or chemist has by knowledge ; but to possess the sines of the angles of incidence and reflection in such constant or varying, yet perceptive rates, as differ only from the definiteness of actual knowledge in the remoteness and complexity of prevision.

We confess that the words used are partly of spurious, and in part of uncertain value ; but, in the use, philosophers establish their theories, some by progression, others by retrogression, yet others by ever-recurring cycles ; and thus we shall find, if it is to be found, the lost secret of the foundation of Rome, and attain a science of history.

A sufficiently elevated and enlarged mind may discern

that prophecy, like sociology, is not the product of few and simple factors, and cannot be brought under the control of mathematical deduction—yet, as there is unquestionably a science which could have foretold Buddhism or Mohammedanism, there is as certainly within any mind sufficiently vast, if indeed we admit causation and a definite order of sequence, ability to formulate the activities of forces—including the motions of the sidereal universe for all ages. A mind sufficiently vast may discern all the arrangements for origin, maintenance, development of life; not omitting the yet more complex differing actions of free intelligences—by which everything is brought out of helter-skelter and fitted into Divine science. That race, or nation, or family, or individual, is highest in intellectual power who is capable of vividly realising groups of future conditions, and of adapting the conduct thereto.

Magnetic and other energies stream forth from our bodies and produce strange effects. The strokes of a magnetiser's hands, though having nothing to do with magnetism, give direction and decision to the will of the magnetised. These energies, whatever they are, must be tried by experimental physics. All energies acting on matter, if our science is correct, operate according to certain laws; but where is the explanation of the following mystery? There are moments in which our senses of vision and hearing may be awake and active with that strange power of perception which effaces from our consciousness all distinction between the past and the present, the far-off and the near, and seems to be unrestricted both as to time and space. It is asserted that coming events can be and are placed before us in a direct, or in an allegorical form, in which may be traced a thread of causation. Thousands of persons, clerical and lay, rich, poor, learned, ignorant, pagan, Christian, sceptic, have had spectral, allegorical, prophetic, second-sight visions. If these visions were due to magnetism, if that be the means by which God pleases to make the preternaturals to be natural, and to bring the invisible into view; well. If in some way, not understood, but more instantaneously than the mind of man in England communicates by means of metal wire with the mind of man

in America, God pleases to reveal Himself to us, and vouchsafes a view of unseen and eternal things, are we to refuse the vision because some men deny and others think that they can explain the process? When, all the while, even at the utmost, they only know the manner of the doing, nothing of the power?<sup>1</sup>

Science asserts that the operation of this force, if force it be, cannot be relied on: it is capricious and erring, more frequently calling visions from the chambers of imagination than evoking the shadow of coming events. Real and maddest delusions—which are not unfrequent, can scarcely be separated from the few rare cases of actual prevision. What of that? in a little while we may be able. It has been said with truth that the boundary is narrow between genius and madness, but will any one on that account deny the reality of genius or the wonders it has wrought? Can the existence of Inspiration be reasonably denied because its utterances are counterfeited by visionaries and mystics? There was something in the mind of John the Apostle, which assured him that he did see things in heaven; and something which convinced other men also. Future prophets will possess and communicate the same conviction. In any case, we are so far from being acquainted with all the powers of Nature and their modes of action, that it is unphilosophical and unscientific to deny assertions, even of the most startling phenomena, simply because they are startling. The admitted circulation of a magnetic fluid in us, gives a new spirit not only to our bodies but to the mechanism of the world. Natural energies may become almost supernatural; some kinds of miracles, essentially inexplicable as all miracles are, may receive a measure of explanation; and yield light concerning that life-giving energy which pervades the universe.

Occult sciences afford no explanation of the mystery. They are rejected by most thoughtful men as false, and condemned by Scripture—not as wholly false, but detestably wicked. Sorcerers, witches, astrologers, interpreters of dreams, revealers of signs, still exist; but are accounted degraded beings even

<sup>1</sup> See Isaac Taylor's "Physical Theory of Another Life," p. 210.

by those who seek them. The practice of the dark arts is rooted in savage life, for the most part guided by antique rules, but it cannot be limited to low levels of civilisation: for the development and elaborate systematisation, say of astrology, are the work of great men in the ancient and mediæval world; and the evolution was by processes still understood and attractive to the human intellect.

It is not a little mortifying to physicists who have long sneered at the words of Bishop Butler—"I cannot but judge it highly probable that every faithful person at least hath his particular good genius or angel, appointed by God over him, as the guardian and guide of his life"<sup>1</sup>—to find doctrines concerning disease-demons, helping angels, ancestral spirits, even now inculcated by men of distinguished mental power. One of the favourite taunts, used by scoffers of Scripture, to vex pious men, was taken from the Divine Laws against the seekers of evil spirits. The laws, it was asserted, were cruel in enacting death as a punishment; and were intensely silly, because no evil spirits exist. Some of these revilers are now seekers of the dead. They talk of "elective affinities," of "spiritual matches," and are being prepared—some for physical debility, some for profligacy, some for insanity. The *séances*, counted free from vice and ecstasy, are intensely trivial and of low culture. A wild North American Indian, except for the spelling and writing, would be at home in a spiritual *séance* at London. It is not improbable that, ere long, the culture may equal that of the Chinese; and the devotees possess a war-god, a mechanic's god, a swine-god, a gambler's god; and recognise in the desperate gamster a devil gambling for cash; and distinguish hog-breeders, inventors of tools, and great soldiers, as favourably presided over by their respective spirits.

Modern Spiritualism, however, possesses little novelty, much chicanery, and is scarcely worthy of notice. The Poltergeist has gone about for ages knocking and routing. Some of the ancient Vampires were Poltergeists, or knockers; and in Franconia, on St. Thomas's Day, damsels go to a tree, knock thrice, and solemnly listen, for the indwelling spirit

<sup>1</sup> "Sermons:" second edition, 1714, vol. ii. p. 506.

to answer by raps as to the husband they are to have. As for binding and loosing, the crafty Ulysses, on board the Thesprotian ship, is a very ancient example :—

“ Me on the well-benched vessel strongly bound,  
They leave, and snatch their meal upon the beach ;  
But to my help the gods themselves unwound  
My cords with ease, though firmly twisted round.”

As to turning of tables, “ John Bull,” of the 16th century, “ Interlude Concerning Nature,” writes—

“ I can make stoles to daunce,  
And earthen pots to prauunce,  
That none shall them enhaunce,  
And do but cast my glove.”

As to rising and floating in the air, it is a reproduction of the ancient Indian marvel. Men and women rose and floated in the air without any visible support.

In fact, the old heathen practice of divination is partially revived ; that which God's Word denounces under the terms—witchcraft, sorcery, necromancy, seeking evil spirits, consulting the dead, is again amongst us as “ Spiritualism, or the art of acquiring supernatural information by communication with the unseen and spiritual world.” Men, instead of seeking God, inquire of spirits who, if spirits at all, are lying spirits. It is not likely that holy beings should come from “ the presence of the Lord,” to twitch and toss, to crawl under a table, break crockery, ring bells, and scrawl bad writing with worse spelling. Undoubtedly, men of weak intellect, of shaken and perverted nerves, are liable to a fascination as to consultation with the spirits of the dead, which deludes while it destroys. Yielding to this fascination throws down those mental and spiritual barriers which are the natural safeguard against such revolting pursuits.

That we stand in awful nearness to mysterious beings we fully believe : the warnings of Scripture are not against unrealities. The magicians of Egypt possessed divination—not wholly unreal, but wicked. The witch of Endor answers, some think, to professed mediums in the present day. The coming of Samuel seems to have been contrary to her wish

and despite her power; the appearance of a holy one whom she could not control. Manasseh, one of the most wicked kings of Judah, used enchantments, and dealt with familiar spirits (2 Chron. xxxiii. 6). The damsel of Philippi, according to common report, was possessed with a spirit of divination—deluding the whole city, and perverting her own intellect: when the spirit came out of her she ceased to be a medium (Acts xvi. 16–18). The seven sons of Sceva were renowned exorcists, and the man by whom they were assaulted was more than a maniac (ch. xix. 14–16). Elymas was a sorcerer (ch. xiii. 6–11). Simon Magus was Simon the magician (ch. viii. 9.) These examples, and the manifold cases of demoniac possession, prove that there were acknowledged spiritualists in ancient time, and that wicked spirits were reputed to have fellowship with men and to control them.

Modern spiritualists are not all wicked deceivers and necromancers. Most of them are victims of delusion. The others, in professing to be mediums of supernatural influence from the spiritual world, do, either in pretence or reality, as did the witch of Endor, consult familiar spirits; or are victims, as the damsel at Philippi; or are of unsound mind, as were the mediums generally who gave responses in the oracles of the ancient heathen world.

Modern departings from the faith, revival of diabolical arts, degrading trivialities of spirit-rapping issuing in contemptible frivolity and lowest superstition, remind us of the times when men will give heed to seducing spirits and doctrines of devils, or demons (1 Tim. iv. 1); and, like Jannes and Jambres, resist the truth (2 Tim. iii. 8). Various other portions of Scripture (Matt. xxiv. 24; 2 Cor. xi. 14; 2 Thess. ii. 8–10; Rev. xvi. 14) are equally clear. Turning to the Old Testament (2 Kings xvii. 17, 18; Deut. xviii. 9–12; Lev. xx. 6)—it is not necessary to multiply references—this delusive working, whether pretended or real, “with signs and lying wonders,” is reckoned as the wickedness of adulterers and murderers, the deceivableness of unrighteousness in them that perish, a work of darkness; not because it attempts to foretell events, to trace the inner connection of things—that may be a high aim; but because even the pretence, much more the reality, of unhal-

lowed fellowship, levels those barriers by which our spiritual consciousness is guarded.

The Invisible World is revealed for a very different purpose : that we may know of the reaping which follows our present sowing, that we may have fellowship with God, partake of His Divine Nature through the Incarnation of Christ, and be personally holy by operation of the Holy Ghost.

The New Jerusalem is a city in that world, spiritual gold paves its streets, and around the safe and blissful homes jasper walls are a defence. Earth holds no such city; nor sea such pearls, nor caverns the rubies and diamonds, that adorn the inhabitants of heaven; and so many are the great men there that we shall know more of them than we do on earth. It is true that, here on earth, the leaves of every forest, the flowers of every garden, the waters of every rivulet, contain inner worlds teeming with life; and we learn from them that beyond and above all that is visible are fields of creation immeasurably vast and gloriously beautiful. When the curtain that hides them from view is drawn aside, we shall behold more and greater wonders than astronomy has unfolded: find that, as a universe may be contained in the compass of a point, our wonder-working God fills infinitude with these inner worlds, enclosed within spheres supremely varied and majestic, that the evidences of His glory may afford eternal blissful occupation to innumerable multitudes of holy, happy creatures.

## STUDY XX.

### VARIETY IN NATURE.

"Nisi Deus esset immutabilis, nulla mutabilis natura permaneret."

"See God's hand in all things . . . believe that things are not set in such inevitable order, but that God often changeth it according as He sees fit."—  
GEORGE HERBERT.

"To a clear eye the smallest fact is a window through which the Infinite may be seen."

THE general invariability of natural law must be taken as a fundamental fact without which no scientific interpretation of Nature is possible. The same things will always happen under the same conditions. If gravitation acted sometimes at one angle, sometimes at another, instead of pulling in a straight line, the cry of "stand from under!" would be a delusion and a snare. The most hidden and unaccountable movements, the fitful agitations of the weather, the waving of every leaf, the number of drops in a shower, the shaping of clouds, are by a rule so wise and strong that error, chance, mischance, can never enter.

Natural uniformity is sometimes made to appear—not an order laid down by Infinite Wisdom for beneficent and effectual rule, but a chain of fate blindly, rigorously, invariably, binding all things with iron links of necessity. We agree with Mr. John Stuart Mill that, next to the greatness of the cosmic forces, the quality which most forcibly strikes one is their recklessness—they go straight to their end without regarding what or whom they crush on the road: but enlarged consideration shows that this seeming recklessness is beneficent, by calling upon intelligence to provide safeguards and remedies; it, in fact, enables the will of man to count for something in the world.

The uniformity of Nature and the invariability of law are

not rightly understood, nor well interpreted, unless we know and act upon them as a platform for infinite variety. Laws are conservative, yet the untiring agents of change; and the ever-varying conditions of time, place, material combination, render it certain that no two series of phenomena can be absolutely the same. If, on the one side, a man maintains law is uniform and universal; he may be met, on the other side, with the fact that it incloses infinite diversity and a series of surprises. Out of darkness we extract most brilliant light, and analyse white light into all the colours. Who, looking at the field in winter, would predict, were it not for experience, the fruitfulness and glow of harvest? What man is able to prophesy why and how the caterpillar has a resurrection life of winged beauty? why and how the seed attains development in herb and flower, in shrub or tree? Nature is not one-sided, but all-sided. The student of physics carries the light of his private intelligence only a little way, and on one line, into the dark by which knowledge is surrounded; but Nature faces us on all sides, carries on her work centrally, centrifugally, circularly, in spirals, ever extending into wider regions of the all-embracing infinitude. What seem the wildest meteors of our imagination are sometimes proved to be brightest flashes of thought—with counterpart in the world of fact. Intellectual penetration of surrounding darkness depends not so much on method as on spiritual insight: the force carrying furthest is that of genius in the investigator. Our experiments constitute a body, of which purified intuitions are the soul; "we can also magnify, diminish, qualify, and combine experiences, so as to render them fit for purposes entirely new."<sup>1</sup>

Law, far from being an argument against, is a prevailing plea for miracles. It may be thus stated—Where all things are by chance, no law exists. Law produces that invariability of mechanical action in the universe which renders miracles possible and necessary, it is the platform for miraculous operation. Uniformity of law, when brought into connection with the novel relations consequent on the contrary or consentaneous acts of free beings, gives rise to novel effects. To prevent,

<sup>1</sup> "Scientific Materialism:" John Tyndall, LL.D., F.R.S.

restrain, or enlarge these, new powers must be evoked : miracles are the result of these powers.

This view renders it possible to establish conformity between the Scientific idea of Law and the Theological idea of Will—Will exerting itself with a fixed purpose according to a pre-determined plan. Of that plan, Revelation furnishes the moral scheme ; and Science seeks to unravel the physical process. Divine actions are based on unerring knowledge as to the future ; and creation, begun upon a plan, is sustained and governed by an all-embracing Providence. It is evident that if Foreknowledge be Infinite, if Power be Almighty, if Goodness be All-pervading, the Law or Rule will be so far perfect as to render any subsequent correction unnecessary—unless the action of free beings necessitates interference : all-provident infinite Wisdom neither requiring nor allowing break or irregularity. Scientific men are so sure that the universe is the work of Intelligence, to be understood by intelligence, that they make their study an honest endeavour to unravel its laws. They find, or seem to find, a reason and purpose, infinitely greater than human intelligence could project, weaving the web and warp of history with idea. The initial passage from the Divine ideal to the actual being that moment of interference in which Nature begins to realise and express Supreme Thought. This thought embraces all worlds, all time, everything contained in them, and ensures the liberty and responsibility of intelligent creatures by providing that means for interference, and those agencies for readjustment, which the good and evil wills of free intelligent responsible beings render necessary.

Our conception, that natural uniformity is a chamber in which Divine Will displays variety, may be carried further. The unexpected conclusion has been drawn from certain recondite investigations that more than three dimensions in space are possible. In the career of the solar system we may be passing to regions in which space has not precisely the same proportions that we find here—where something will necessitate "a fourth dimension form of matter" for adaptation to the new locality. Nature, therefore, such as we know, possibly does not include all times, places, things.

That which now concerns men, forming the natural part of their experiences and analogies, may be but a small portion of the Almighty's infinite dominions. When we are told of natural uniformity and invariability of law, we accept the statement, but confine it within the limits of our own experience: for things which seem utterly impossible here may be natural in other experiences and analogies. Consequently, that pre-arrangement which provides for every eclipse of the sun and occultation of a star; and which the government of free intelligent and responsible creatures renders necessary; may weave into the world a loving, spiritual, elevating process, by which purity, now chiefly ideal even in the holiest of men, shall ultimately become actual in all. If so, Inspiration, Prophecy, Miracles, Spirit-power, are not less real parts of Nature than is material and mechanical order.

Such a scheme of government, the highest our minds can conceive, seems to be that of a great and good God. Free responsible creatures, forming an essential part in it, are the most perfect creations of the Infinite. Their freedom, happy existence, righteous and effective government, require that infinite wisdom and might weave the web of existence, and intersperse the Divine plan with a variety surpassing finite understanding.

The philosophical statement may be verified by experiment. Let us take matter as a beginning for examples of variety underlying "Natural Uniformity," and an illustration of the infinitely elastic medium encircling "Invariability of Law."

The various kinds of elements, though of a rigidly accurate mechanical base, geometrical figures lying at the bottom of the whole, are adapted to an infinity of complicate and different purposes. The dense elements are pervaded by those less dense. All solid bodies are penetrated by moisture, or by the gases, or by the imponderables—light, heat, electricity, magnetism. Fluids are pervious by fluids, gases are traversed by gases. Sometimes the path is traced by expansion, by fusion, by active chemical affinities. At other times, the path is secret, and the manner of transit a mystery. The elements, being impelled, aided by electric and other

forces, produce what has been called "Electro-vegetation ;" and advance to the mysteries of vegetable and animal life.

The world, as a material organism, contains more than sixty-four known kinds of elementary atoms, several elements having been lately discovered. Possibly, these atoms, though we cannot convert any one into another, are compound, and were primarily one formless diffused substance. Mr. Crookes's experiments—taken in connection with a paper, read early in 1879, by Professor Osborne Reynolds, before the Royal Society—demonstrate the molecular theory. Mr. Crookes has, in fact, practically demonstrated a truth which Faraday only divined by the instinct of genius sixty years since. Faraday expressed the belief that matter might exist in four states, though we know it but in three. To solid, fluid, and gaseous he added radiant ; and Mr. Crookes claims to show matter in this "radiant" state. His beautiful experiments, with their striking, and to the ordinary mind inconceivable, results, were one of the greatest attractions of the meeting of the British Association (1879). "The phenomena in these exhausted tubes reveal," says Mr. Crookes, "to physical science a new world—a world where matter exists in a fourth state, where the corpuscular theory of light holds good, and where light does not always move in a straight line, but where we can never enter, and in which we must be content to observe and experiment from the outside."

Now we arrive at a startling result. So far from the elements being somewhat inadequate, or all used in the many singularly contrasted substances and results exhibited in Nature, only a few are largely present. As a mass, the outside contents of the globe consist of few elements : silicon, iron, aluminium, calcium, magnesium, potassium, sodium, hydrogen, oxygen, chlorine, carbon. Animals and vegetables are varieties, chiefly of carbon, nitrogen, hydrogen, oxygen. The broad ocean, throughout its vast bulk, is narrowed to two elements—oxygen and hydrogen ; other substances are indeed a small part of it. Considering that the human body, progressing to suitable form and fit use for the genius of Shakespeare, the imagination of Milton, the piety of Wicklyff, is resolvable into a few elementary atoms, we discern that the

band encircling natural uniformity and invariability of law is infinitely elastic.

It might be thought that the mathematical basis of the forms of matter necessitated such invariable procedure, and production of like by like, that the whole future could be calculated and formulated; whereas Mr. Babbage, in his ninth "Bridgewater Treatise," shows that we have no right to expect such invariable and fixed process. Deviations of the most startling character may co-exist with controlling law. A calculating machine can be constructed which, after working in a correct and orderly manner up to 100,000,001, then leaps; and, instead of continuing the chain of numbers unbroken, goes at once to 100,010,002, "The law which seemed at first to govern the series failed at the hundred million and second term. This term is larger than we expected by 10,000." The law thus changes:—

100,000,001.	100,100,005.
100,010,002.	100,150,006.
100,030,003.	100,210,007.
100,060,004.	100,280,008.

"For a hundred or even for a thousand terms, they continued to follow the new law relating to the triangular numbers; but after watching them for 2761 terms, we find this law fails of the 2762nd term. If we continue to observe, we shall discover another law then coming into action, which also is dependent, but in a different manner, on triangular numbers, called triangular, because a number of points agreeing with their term may be placed in the form of a triangle, thus—

1, 3, 6, 10. This will continue through about 1430 terms, when a new law is again introduced over about 950 terms; and this too, like all its predecessors, fails, and gives place to other laws, which appear at different intervals."

Such a process renders it evident that all calculations beyond what serve for the immediate guidance of our life and practical reliance on Nature's uniformity, may be and probably are subordinated to some higher law which, at various seasons, interrupts and changes it. How then can any philosopher

assert—"There never has been, and never will be any intervention of natural laws"?<sup>1</sup> There must have been an intervention, a series of crises, on the formation of elements out of primeval atoms; grouping and giving them powers as solids, fluids, gases; combining the inorganic; organising it, doing that which no chemist can—vitalising it; and building up the world in harmonious beauty. The development, whether by an almost infinitely extended process, or sharp abrupt, absolute, is inexplicable, except by intervention of an Inscrutable Power. During the historical era ordinary observation might discern no change; the procedure, with which we are acquainted, may have been uniform; but, in ages preceding, we know not what happened; nor can we, with certainty, forecast the future; the invisible and unknown are indisputably great factors in the universe. The particles of every substance belong to a vast number of systems, communicating with one another in a manner wholly incomprehensible.

We may think of natural variety in various other ways.

Well-nigh infinite change has been wrought since our planet began. No part of the surface is now, or ever has been at rest. There is a constant change in life, solar radiance is ever gaining or losing in intensity, the density and moisture of the air are continually increasing or diminishing. Take the molecular theory of gases—The particles fly about with very great velocity, impinge upon one another and against the sides of the containing vessel, thus producing what we call the pressure of the gas. At ordinary pressure, every particle has to move a distance, say, of something like  $\frac{1}{300,000}$ th or  $\frac{1}{300,000}$ th part of an inch, on the average, before it comes in contact with another particle, and is sent on a new path. The pressure may be decreased by partially exhausting the gas, so that there are fewer particles in a given space; or, by compression bringing them so much closer that, on the average, the particles are not more, say, than  $\frac{1}{10,000,000}$ th part of an inch asunder. The average square of the velocity of the particles corresponds with the energy of heat in the gas or its temperature. When a gas is so far condensed as to

<sup>1</sup> "Conflict between Religion and Science:" Prof. Draper.

approach the liquid state, its particles are scarcely ever free from collisions; in the solid state its particles are, practically, in a permanent state of collision one with another.<sup>1</sup>

We obtain by mathematical methods a faint conception of the complexity and mystery; for example: in a mass of hydrogen, at ordinary temperature and pressure, every particle has on an average 17,700,000,000 collisions per second with other particles; in every second its course is wholly changed 17,700,000,000 times; and the particle itself moves at the rate of 70 miles in a minute. In air the number of collisions is about half, and the velocity about one-fourth of that in hydrogen.<sup>2</sup> In a cubic inch of air, in the ordinary state of the atmosphere, the number of particles is approximately about  $3 \times 10^{20}$ , that is, 3 with 20 cyphers after it; and the effective diameter of a particle is not very different from one-250,000,000th part of an inch.<sup>3</sup>

Careering amidst the tumult and storm, are minute living creatures hustling one another, or keeping out of one another's way, feeding and propagating themselves; in every room, not myriads only, billions exist.

We are told that distilled water is homogeneous, and a germ of life is absolutely structureless, because the microscope fails to distinguish difference or structure; but, in reality, even the microscope is blind as to these things. What shall we say then to skyey particles, so infinitesimally small that the minutest "vibrios and bacteria of the microscopic field are as behemoth and leviathan?" The diamond and amethyst have structure, but no structure can be detected; particles of water, changed so as to be diametrically polar, twist a ray of light, yet present nothing for the microscope to reveal, and germs of life, which seem absolutely simple, possess a complexity transcending our comprehension as it surpasses our powers of observation.

We hardly have patience with men who, knowing the world to be thus mysterious and utterly incomprehensible, full of things baffling and transcending human intelligence at every step, tell us—"there never has been any Divine Interference."

<sup>1</sup> "Recent Advances in Physical Science," pp. 245-247: P. G. Tait, M.A.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.* p. 324.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.* p. 317.

Divine Interference is continual—matter, life, intelligence, are as a garment of the Living God: shall He not move in it, lay it aside, or change it, as He sees fit? Commonest things manifest incomprehensible peculiarities. Take a cold highly polished plate of metal, place a wafer on it, breathe on the wafer: when the moisture has disappeared, and the wafer been thrown off, no trace of wafer or breath will be seen; but breathe again, and a spectral image of the wafer comes to view. Tried again, after many months, the shadowy form once more emerges—a symbol of resurrection and life from the dead.

The farina of flowers appears to the naked eye like simple dust, but when magnified is seen to possess beautiful shapes of great variety, according to the character of the plant. Leaves are among the most delicate and gorgeous forms of Nature. The leaf of the Box is supposed to have 344,180 pores, and the back of a Rose leaf is diapered as with silver. "The Crowberry of our moors (*Empetrum nigrum*) habitually exhibits a peculiar mode of variation in the arrangement of its leaves on different parts of the same twig. Out of fifty Crowberry twigs, taken at random, only four (and these fragments) preserved the same arrangement throughout. In the remaining forty-six the leaf arrangement was found to undergo a progressive change in ascending from the base of the twig to the summit—a change from a simpler order to others more complex."<sup>1</sup> It seems that complex spiral leaf-order "is the result of condensation operating on some earlier and simpler order or orders, the successive stages of that condensation being ruled by the geometrical necessities of mutual accommodation among the leaves and axillary shoots under mutual pressure in the bud."<sup>2</sup> It is supposed that the original form of leaf-arrangement was two-ranked; that this two-ranked form gave rise to forms with 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, etc., ranks by sporting; that of the orders so formed, those with an even number, except 2, became whorled; and those with 2 or an odd number assumed an alternate arrangement; and that all

<sup>1</sup> "Leaf-Arrangement of the Crowberry. Proceedings of the Royal Society," 1876, No. 172. Hubert Airy, M.A., M.D.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, 1874, No. 152, p. 301.

orders have been subject to vertical condensation under the need of vertical economy of space.<sup>1</sup>

Some consider that the sun is the only source of the energy exhibited in these and all other vital actions, but when mushrooms are grown in the Paris Catacombs there is no light. It is more correct to say—Life is peculiar to organism, all life proceeds from former life; the material constituents of living substances cannot by mere combination and interaction produce life, nor can the sun give—it only stimulates and favours. Yeast will increase indefinitely in the dark. There are organisms, beneath two or three thousand fathoms of water, almost if not wholly deprived of light. Aided by solar influence, or apart from solar influence, the structureless colourless life-fluid infinitely transforms itself, groups the transformations into molecules so marvellously that though the life-wave in two consecutive moments is never composed of the same particles, similar living creatures are continually and unerringly produced: this germ proceeding to the plant, that to the animal; but both, while agreeing in general parallelism and analogy, developing into different and opposing forms of structure.

How is it all wrought? The business of light in plant life is to enable the leaflets to shake apart the carbonic acid of the air and build up the plant. Oxygen is exhaled as an incident in plant nutrition. The proteids which nourish protoplasm are probably constructed by the plant from a carbohydrate and ammonia. Plant protoplasm contains less nitrogen than animal protoplasm. The fact being that the plant exhibits little physical activity as a mass, and has the minimum of protoplasm distributed throughout its framework, needful to sustain vitality. The animal, compared with the plants, brings into play a far larger aggregate of protoplasm, on the contractility of which the movements exhibited by animals depend. Again, the protoplasm of plants is contained in inelastic chambers (cells), the walls of which are composed of an inert substance (cellulose), of which nitrogen is not a constituent. The walls of animal cells, where they can be said to exist, are more of the nature of inert protoplasm, and

<sup>1</sup> "Leaf-Arrangement of the Crowberry. Proceedings of the Royal Society," 1874, No. 152, p. 307. Hubert Airy, M.A., M.D.

are therefore nitrogenous. Bulk for bulk, plant tissues contain less nitrogen than animal, but mainly because they contain less protoplasm—this fact being correlated with the absence of any power of movement *en masse*.

Some suppose that by means of electrical agency form is imparted to organisms, and that the leaves and twigs of plants all terminate in angles or sharp edges by electrical operation. Among Phanerogamous Plants, a certain number of organs, either developed or rudimentary, is always present; and the rudimentary are capable of development. Flowers, bearing stamens on one stalk and pistils on another, can be made to produce both. Where and when a new function is required, Nature provides—not a new organ—but a modification of the common one by metamorphism. Some plants, if transferred to the sea-shore, produce thick fleshy leaves; the same plants, placed in a dry hot locality, get thin hair leaves. Out of the wild acrid sloe, some say the almond, have been produced our rich variety of plums, peaches, nectarines. Individual peculiarities are more accurately transmitted by non-sexual than by sexual propagation. When, for instance, a tree with stiff and upright branches accidentally produces down-hanging branches, the gardener, as a rule, must obtain a weeping tree by planting cuttings or slips: seedlings would generally have the stiff and upright form. A species of Aloe is said to blossom once in a century. Not less wonderful is a bamboo that grows among the hills in the south-east of Mysore: the natives report that it seeds once every sixty years, and the product, marvellously abundant, is called bamboo rice. In the husk it resembles cleansed paddy, but more like wheat; sweet and palatable as food, more satisfying than rice. The periodic falls of this great spontaneous abundance attract to the region not only men, but a vast assemblage of rats, birds, deer, pigs, squirrels. The decay of the plants dates from their seeding, and they fall about three years afterwards; by which period the young bamboos, that have struck root around them, attain a height of eight or ten feet. He is presumptuous and rash who, professing to know all about these varieties and sports of life having at one end of the series something infinitely less than a tadpole and

at the other end a man, asserts "there never has been any insertion of Creative Power."

We now vary and extend the inquiry.

Law, as applied to all phenomena within range of human observation, stands on an equal footing with the axioms of geometry itself; but as all phenomena are a continuity or extension of the invisible into the visible, and of the visible into the invisible, whatever we know is bounded by the greater unknown. For example—the chemical composition and actual state of living matter is wholly unknown. It changes and dies as we try to analyse it; and the dead, not the living substance, is in our hand. It is probable that during the living state the elements are not in any ordinary chemical combination, that the causes of transformation reside in the lowest germs, and operate in every interval of time. The initial point, the start, in all and everywhere, seems absolutely the same; nevertheless, the organic energy is essentially different. What surprises, variety of results, differences of structure and of functions, are contained in carbon, hydrogen, oxygen, nitrogen—those four elements of the living creature! Where man finds neither distinction nor difference, a great gulf, which may not be passed, separates kind from kind. From the very centre of invariable uniformity inscrutable energy works infinite variety. From a kindred substance, aye, the very same substance, emerge creatures which, as plants, are perfected in the tree; as animals, are glorified in man.

"The greatest wonder  
Is, that to us the real true wonders can  
Become so commonplace, and must become so."

*Lessing.*

Offspring resemble their parents, but the similarity never amounts to absolute identity either in body or mind. The tendency to general likeness is constantly checked by an impulse leading to variety. Brothers and sisters, children of the same parents, are unequal from their birth. Many animals produce several young ones at a time; but all those young differ in size, colour, strength. In the wild state, differences are less marked. Some divergences of child-organism

are so great and striking as to be monstrous. There are no two individuals which can complete their life under quite the same external or internal conditions; and the difference first affects the functions, then affects the form of the organism. On the same field depasture the sheep, the horse, the bird; but one turns his nourishment into wool, another into hair, the third into feathers: who knows how or why? To Pericles were born Paralus and Xanthippus; just Aristides produced the infamous Lysimachus; Thucydides, the powerful-minded, was represented by the idiotic Milesias and the stupid Stephanos; the son of Marcus Aurelius Antoninus was Commodus. What a difference separated Oliver Cromwell from his son Richard! Who cares for the children of Shakespeare, or regards the daughters of Milton? The only son of Addison was—an idiot.

Evidently an unknown law does, notwithstanding, establish heredity. We talk of the wit of the Montemarts and of the Sheridans. Many celebrated fathers have sons of renown: the two Herschels, the two Colmans, the Kemble family, the Coleridges, the Darwins; Sebastian Bach's musical genius descended to three hundred of his race. These are cases of transmission.

The power of an organised germ to unfold into a complex adult, and repeat ancestral details in the minutest traits, even when placed in conditions unlike those of its ancestors, is a capacity we cannot understand. A microscopic portion of seemingly structureless matter contains such an influence that the resulting man shall, fifty years after, become gouty or insane.

In the higher animals, every separate organ is a manifold structure, every organism is a complication of related organs, the whole having many relations to the internal and external worlds. Were changes made by blind fortuity, the chances against the continuance of an organism, and against any permanent improvement, would be as those attending the production of Milton's poem, "Paradise Lost," from the fortuitous upsetting of a box of unassorted type. Were permanence ensured by rigid uniformity, progressive amelioration would be impossible. To regard creation aright, we must

see it as a whole, working itself out in orderly yet varying sequence. We may compare it to the mathematical artifice of expanding a function into a series ; but the series adds nothing to the function—it is implicit in it. The comparison is not adequately complex, for the whole of Nature is, in many respects, analogous to the evolution of life. Life, from the appearance of the first speck of living matter in the world to the organisation of the most elaborate plants and animals, is strictly analogous, we may say, to the evolution of every individual man in himself. Every one of us began as a speck of protoplasm, with scarcely any appreciable structure. Bit by bit, this evolved into the adult complex organism. Our individual life seems to be a recapitulation of cosmical life. The idea is not fanciful, but solidly scientific, and may be applied also to the sphere of morals. Let him who reads discern a new meaning in the Apostle's words—"The wages of sin is death."

Until the year 1824, it was thought that the blood of every animal took one definite and invariable direction. In that year, M. von Haselt, happening to examine a little animal, the Ascidian, found that the heart, after beating a certain number of times, stopped, and then began to beat the opposite way, reversing the course of the current. Professor Huxley says—"I have myself timed the heart of these little animals. I found it as regular as possible in its periods of reversal, and I know no spectacle in the animal kingdom more wonderful than that which it represents—all the more wonderful that to this day it remains a unique fact, peculiar to this class among the whole animated world."

Uniformity is evidently the floor of Nature's workshop ; the tools and mechanisms prove that variety is aimed at as a beauty, not always for utility : some beauty not being of any use. Coral—formerly counted a seaweed which had the singular property of becoming hard when brought up from native depths into contact with the air—we know to be an animal, with stem and branches, and fixed to the soil. "It is a sort of natural co-operative store," one that buds and divides, a living thing laying numerous eggs. The young, coming forth from the eggs, have no resemblance to their

parents ; swim about until, having lost their cilia or hair-like filaments, they settle down in the sea bottom, or become fixed to the rock, and grow up like their ancestors. Here is a plant—no—an animal ; the young go forth unlike their sires, in infancy volatile ; but, finding discretion betimes, build upon a rock. Other creatures have little or no infancy : “ their young are in good liking, go forth and return not unto them.”

Birds of passage, without chart or compass, find their path across the sea, even to a place six thousand miles away, for suitable food. True, as the needle to the pole, are these birds to their right place and at the right time. Gallinaceous fowl are, even at the first, equipped with instinct ; and their bodies are clothed with feathers, yet not like the adult.

The fishes, *Helmichtthyidæ*, have such clear fleshy bodies that the words of a book may be read through them. Fishes have no voice, yet the *Mambra* utters a cry, and has breasts, with milk ;<sup>1</sup> and that fish, the *Amia*, grunts in disapproval of the doctrine, “ Nature in all things is uniform.” Sundry, for no very obvious reason, ramble about on land. The fish, *Perca Scandens*, is sometimes found scaling rocks, climbing bushes, ascending trees. The squirting fish shoots drops of water at its prey, and seldom misses making booty of it. Mud-fish bury themselves, and remain dormant till the rains of the wet season set them free.

Closer inquiry discovers yet more interesting varieties. The synthetic types which comprehend in one the properties of several groups of life, and those embryonic changes by which the young both of plants and animals pass through comprehensive stages of existence belonging to other creatures, prove that there are wonderful physical and organic changes strangely connected with some vastness which escapes us on every side. A series of intermediate agencies of which we have no knowledge intervene, not a series of uniform agencies, but often surprises. Science, far from rendering the universe a less mystery, proves it a greater mystery ; the genesis of an atom is not easier to conceive than the genesis of a planet. Creation is not mechanical—a man may put together a machine, but not a machine that shall develop

<sup>1</sup> Livingstone's “ Africa,” vol. ii. p. 44.

itself. The process is even more wonderful ; formless diffused matter was raised into the present universe and filled with life.

The variety of process in the operations is infinite. We give, as examples, a few specialities of life.

The fact that the embryos of all animals, apparently not different, are really different, is proved ; for if the mammal throws off its embryo with heart in two-chambered or fish form, it does not live ; or in the three-chambered reptile form, it does not live ; nor though the brain of a child passes through some lower forms, is it at any time other than the brain of a human being. Every organic structure is not merely a thing conditioned by circumstances for circumstances ; but passes beyond and above circumstances into the peculiarities of special and unaccountable conditions. Take the highest example : at some point in the development of the individual, the human embryo became a living soul.

This variety of life's rhythm may be illustrated by light and sound. They are undulations of an elastic medium, simply wave-movement : the sounding body exciting undulations in the air, luminous and heated bodies exciting undulations in the æther. Owing to the differences of the media, the sound-waves are longitudinal, those of light are transverse the course of direction. By differences, far more minute than those which separate light from sound, some life is limited to a monad—compared with which a grain of sand is an earth ; other life is complicated and perfected in those functions of man which require cyclopædias to describe, and is able to explore that universe in comparison with which our earth is but an atom.

There are oddest eccentricities. Porcupine men of the Lambert family, covered with thorn-shaped horny substance projecting more than an inch. Six-fingered and six-toed, people, as the famous Spanish family of no less than forty individuals. Descend to smaller creatures—The Hyrax (coney of Scripture) is like a rabbit, but with strange divided hoof, miniature of the Rhinoceros's hoof. The Rotifera, despite complex structure and aquatic habits, can be nearly dried ; and again brought to life by the addition of a little water. This wetting and drying, dying without death, can be repeated many times without killing.

The Frog is the only creature that has a calf like a man. Inquiry as to the nature and affinities of the Frog reveals the independent origin of remarkably similar structures—such as a shielded temporal fossa and elongated tarsus—which, with structures like the tooth of the Labyrinthodon, neither minute oscillations of structure nor any sexual phenomena will account for. This process, considered in connection with the curious transformation of the Axolotl into a creature of quite another genus—the genus *Amblystoma*—shows the powerful action of internal tendencies which may long be latent, and points to the probability that such forms arose through evolution of implanted powers, that is, by specific genesis.

In ordinary Mammals the milk is obtained by voluntary suction on the part of the young, but in the Marsupials (Kangaroos, Opossums, etc.) the milk is forced into the mouth of the young animal by the action of a special muscle.

Plants grow up, almost into animals; and there is a lowering of some animals, as into plant-like condition. We find an intelligence, well-nigh human, in the beast; there is scarcely anything which we would not believe of the dog; and, at times, the human becomes more inhuman than the beast. The *Æthelium septicum*, appearing upon decaying vegetables, is a fungus; yet the *Æthelium*, in another condition, is a moving creature, and takes in solid matter as food. The Venus Fly-trap is an insectivorous plant, laying traps for insects, squeezing them to death, and devouring or dissolving their substance for nourishment. The *Drosera* plant digests animal food. Life's variations combine in forms so strange, habits so various, contradictory, startling, unaccountable, as transcend all our philosophy.

There is no reason, in the nature of things, why creatures covered with feathers should always have beaks; yet it seems they do, and the Penguin has feathers somewhat scale-like. A certain *Actinia* keeps house on the hermit-crab. The creature goes with that crab to share the prey, and even snatches morsels that its companion is eating. Water does not seem a good medium for a fly, yet more species than one live beneath the surface—coming up only occasionally for air. Red clover could not exist without the humming bee; which,

in sucking the honey, brings the pollen in contact with the stigma—so the flower is fructified. How red clover began to be red clover without the bee we do not know, nor how it could be produced by “a merely mechanical relation acting unconsciously.”

You cannot continue the perfect equilibrium of a pair of scales; eventually one scale will descend, the other ascend. Professor Hughes's Induction Balance is one of the most exquisite pieces of apparatus ever designed to measure differences in the molecular constitution or the weight of metals. If two shillings fresh from the Mint be placed, one in each electrical coil, a perfect balance is obtained; but even a breath on one of the shillings, or its being rubbed between the fingers, makes a difference which is at once indicated by a sound in a telephone attached, which is called the sonometer. This sonometer has been used by Dr. Richardson to measure minute differences in hearing under the name of the audiometer. This has led to the curious discovery that right-handed people hear best with the right ear, and left-handed persons hear best with the left ear.

Water, however kept, will inevitably become of unequal density and consequent currents. Heated matters soon become different in their outer and inner parts. All masses assume heterogeneity by action of various forces. These things are strange as the sudden combustion of stars; and all natural principles and modes of life are acted upon as by a centrifugal force; which, nevertheless, is so controlled that even exceptive cases gather around some centre of uniformity. Silence may be produced by intersecting waves of sound. Flames are made musical for hours, and dance to sounds. Few people know that the only objects which they see single are those they look at directly; all others, behind or before these, appear double. Who has found the blind spot in his eye?

These strange anomalies, stranger still in being subject to strictest law, are as nothing to the fact that, though we connect our sensations with the things producing them, no kind nor degree of similarity exists between the quality of a sensation and the quality of an agent inducing it and portrayed by it. The facts of consciousness present a class of phenomena whose

connection with physics Professor Tyndall declares to be "unthinkable," a chasm, "which must ever remain intellectually impassable;" therefore, though the material basis may be argued for, life can never be proved purely mechanical in essence. We possess, moreover, a faculty of projecting life and mind beyond the body: for in thinking of the mind we place ourselves outside the world of space, nor can we think of it unless we do; thus a faculty of living apart, of acting without the body, seems attributable to the mind. Even if we do not admit all this, when we speak of a mental act, we have always the concave and convex—a cause with two faces; the effect is not merely produced by the mind, but by mind joined with the body. The construction of the sentient and the imaginative principle reveals a universe of elaborate structure, in which our intelligence and life are facts real as any other. The assertion—"There is nothing in the world but matter, force, and necessity," is utterly without justification.

#### Varieties in Reproduction.

Some animals are sexual, others are non-sexual; some, strange to say, are sexual at one time, non-sexual at another; others combine the two sexes in one individual; others bring forth in a virgin state. One creature, the reproductive *Zoöid*, or jelly-fish, has been known to attain a size of seven feet across with tentacles fifty feet in length, though the fixed organism from which it sprang was not more than half an inch in height. With regard to the Water-flea (*Daphnia pulex*) it seems a well-established fact that the female, when once fertilised by the male, not only lays eggs for the rest of her life, but can transmit the power of producing fertile ova to her young for several generations. Among certain lower animals and plants there are alternations of generations (metagenesis). The *Salpæ*, which float on the surface of the sea, have the first, third, and fifth generations alike; but unlike these, yet like one another, are the second, fourth, and sixth generations. All breeders of animals know that occasionally by reversion, or "atavism," individual animals assume a form which has not existed for many generations. There is no known law concerning this relapse to a more ancient type.

The Tapeworm is hermaphrodite in every generative joint,

and contains innumerable ova. Variety not only distinguishes things which are lovely, making them yet more beautiful, it acts as a warning that we be clean. Repulsive things in endless variety of disgusting existence are symbols of those low and vile among men who defile the very course of Nature ; whose life seems "a mocking travesty wrought in the dark by an impish finger." The strangest part of all is, that these bad cannot live but by means of the good, by help of nobler natures ; evil, in itself, being only destructive—working itself out, if the pure touch not, taste not, handle not. Examples are afforded by entozoa. The ova of tapeworms cannot live unless they are swallowed and nourished by a pig. For further development they must enter the alimentary canal of man. If a portion of measly pork be eaten, it becomes an adult tapeworm in the human stomach. Another tapeworm of man is developed from the measles of the ox. A kind of tapeworm, found in the stickleback, is barren ; but if the stickleback be eaten by a water-fowl, the worm lives and reproduces after its kind. There is a tapeworm in the mouse, and it remains infertile ; but if a cat eat the mouse the worm lives and multiplies. The tapeworm of the fox comes from the cystic worm of hares and rabbits. The disease Hydatids in men is caused by cystic worms, which are ultimately developed into the tapeworm of the dog.

The Cod-fish spawns its million of small ova and leaves them without protection. The Hippocampus has its fewer large ova carried about by the male in a caudal pouch in its skin. The *Arius Boakei*—a fish six or seven inches long, produces ten or twelve eggs, large as marbles, which the male carries in his mouth till they are hatched. After building a nest, the male Stickleback guards the eggs ; the great *Silurus glanis* does the same for some forty days, in which he takes no food, until the eggs are hatched.

The males of most creatures are generally larger than the females, but some females, as the parasite, *Sphaerularia Bombi*, are a thousand or many thousand times larger than the male ; and the male *Balanus* is small and rudimentary. Of nearly all Raptorial birds, Vultures excepted, the females are larger. In this, the eye sees what it brings the power to

see; and intelligent men ought to perceive that instinct and laws of Nature are not an immutable fate, but act in a plastic medium, drawing complication out of existing elements, ever bringing a new message concerning new issues, revealing new ways for attainment of new purposes, and awaking

“Sense sublime  
Of something far more deeply interfused.”

Among Bees the queen is universal mother. The males, or drones, are produced at certain seasons; neuters, or sterile females (workers), are the ordinary production. These workers procure food, build the nests, feed the young, fight for the community. They can so modify a larva which would result in a worker that it shall be a queen. They enlarge its cell, make it assume vertical instead of horizontal position, keep it warm, and feed it with queenly food. The queen requires sixteen days for development, the workers twenty-one, the drones twenty-five. Not only bodily organisation but psychical nature is essentially altered by nurture.

Ants form communities of males, females, workers. The males and females are born with wings, soon after fly away, but in a little while the females cut off their wings, and settle down to be careful and steady housekeepers, laying their eggs during the first early days of the year. The workers take wonderful care of the eggs, place them in special chambers, every now and then lick them, and alternately carry them to the upper and lower stories of the nest to keep them at due temperature. When hatched, the little vermiform larvæ cannot move, but have instinct to raise the head and open the mouth, into which their nurses put the food, feeding them like little birds, and cleaning them by a rub over with their palpi. When the larvæ are full grown, they spin a silky oval cocoon. The metamorphosis completed, the ant being too weak to tear open the silk of its cocoon, would actually perish—a prisoner, were it not for the vigilance of the workers. These, using their mandibles, set it free, nourish it, lead it all over the nest, introducing it to new life.

The red ants, *Formica sanguinea*, enslave other ants. Huber describes a curious scene which he saw in 1804 near Geneva.

A great mass of large ants of reddish colour crossed a road with great rapidity, marching in a body from eight to ten feet in length by three or four inches in breadth. They pierced a thick hedge, entered and passed over a grass field in regular array for about twenty yards, and arrived at a nest of blackish ants. Those about the door gave an alarm and attacked the invaders, while a host rushed from within; but the red ants thrust the black ones back into the nest, clambered the dome, some forcing a way into the large avenues, while others worked with their mandibles to open a breach in the walls, by which the invading army entered. In three or four minutes the red ants came out quickly, every one holding between its mandibles a larva or nymph, and bore it home. This was a clear case of slave-making. A wonderful instinct causes these—which cannot work the soil, nor construct underground edifices, nor nourish their own larvæ—to capture and enslave the nymphs and larvæ of workers from the nests of other species; which, so soon as they have completed their metamorphosis, build cells and feed the larvæ of their captors.

Some ants are sure to be found on the plants crowded with *Aphidæ*: not to harm, but to rub them gently with their antennæ; then the *Aphidæ*, apparently pleased, distil a little drop of sugary liquid which the ants sip up—using the *Aphidæ* as cows. Hundreds of observations prove that these industrious creatures communicate with and understand one another. They may be seen to stop, and touch one another with their antennæ, which seem to be special organs of a peculiar insect language. Wounded brethren are helped, led to the nest, operations are conducted, and battles are fought in military array.

*Aphidæ* present curious and interesting facts. The males have large wings, but nearly all the females are without wings. In autumn their eggs are laid on plants; hatched in the spring, not as caterpillars or grubs, but imperfect *Aphidæ*, all females. These females are the mothers of millions and millions exactly like themselves—females and wingless—to nine or ten generations. Then the last generation does not produce its like, but perfect males and females with wings, which lay eggs in autumn to be hatched in spring. Only the

first generation of imperfect females is hatched from eggs, all the rest are born alive at the rate of three, four, or seven a day; but the last generation have inside buds which, when born, are not like their mothers, but resemble the parents which laid eggs the year before. This anomalous system of reproduction is known as parthenogenesis, breaking the rule—that like produces like.

The glories of the perfect insect are not marked in the tiny grub. Important organs, and new combinations of structure for peculiar functions, are added and shaped by the unknown energy of growth and metamorphosis. The parts of an adult are not on a small scale in the creature as it escapes from the egg; they can no more be found than our own soul, or inner man, the angel part, is discovered by anatomical research and *post-mortem* dissection.

Some insects, like Grasshoppers, change their skins several times during growth. There are changes inside the egg, and moultings and metamorphoses outside, during the history of most of the Articulata. Some change so greatly as to become wholly different creatures, others submit but to slight changes of shape and structure. Things very similar end in differences most striking; nevertheless, between the immature and adult forms anatomy discovers close resemblance. The lobster and the prawn, for example, are closely allied by similarity of construction; but the former changes little, the latter presents three forms before attaining the mature beauty of prawn life.

The Death's Head Moth possesses the power of squeaking. The caterpillars, *Attacus æcropia*, from Louisiana, at first nearly black, decorated with hairs, look like little hedgehogs. Moulting, they become grey-green or russet in colour, all the tubercles or spines brilliantly black. Again moulting, they are bright green with five rows of black spots; two magnificent tubercles of a carmine colour are on the second and third segments, and two of light yellow are on the dorsal part of every other segment. At a third moult, the body is azure blue on the back with black spots on the sides and head; the tubercles form two rows on the back, are red and much enlarged; the other tubercles have a single spine upon them.

At the last moult, the caterpillar is of a pale green colour, all the lateral tubercles are light green, the red tubercles take an orange tint and have only one spine. Then it forms a double cocoon—the outside hard and like parchment in texture, the interior silky—where it is transformed into the moth.<sup>1</sup>

Some caterpillars fast for nine months ; larvæ of the next kind eat and grow big ; there is more in the philosophy of this than we know : metamorphosis is not determined by simple physical influences, it often refers back to ancestral peculiarities. The processional caterpillars go forth under a leader to their food, return in the same array, yet nothing distinguishes the leader from the others. Caterpillars, much alike, become moths which present marked distinctions ; and moths, which resemble one another, proceed from very dissimilar caterpillars.

Metamorphoses are generally an advance, but the female winter moth, *Climata brumata*, and *Psyche*, positively retrograde ; the male advances, has wings, but the female is without even the moving power of the caterpillar : whereas, the females of a *Nemoura* are perfectly developed as winged flies ; but the wings of the males are rudimentary and short. Of the *Psyche helix* moth, we only know the female ; the virgin females lay eggs which become perfect females. In like manner, isolated female wasps give birth to eggs which turn to females, no males ; which again produce their like.<sup>2</sup>

The *Hymenoptera*, most highly endowed of all insects, are in an early stage most helpless ; the larvæ of ants, for example, must have the food put into their mouths. On the other hand, the instinct, or sense of hearing, or of smell, that enables the parasitic Hymenoptera to discover a larva inside a fruit, or within a branch or trunk of a tree, and perfectly out of sight, makes us wonder. Some non-carnivorous insects hunt and catch prey for their carnivorous young ; then stupefy the prey so that it may remain alive, even months in helpless state, for the young to feed on. All known Beetles lay eggs, but in 1864 Schiödte discovered that the *Staphylinidæ* pro-

<sup>1</sup> " Transformations of Insects," p. 111 : Dr. P. Martin Duncan, F.R.S.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid. pp. 158, 238.

duced living larvæ. All the Myriapods respire by agency of tracheæ, but Sir John Lubbock describes a curious little myriapod, *Pauropus*, which has a look of cheerful intelligence, no tracheæ, and respire, he supposes, through the skin. All these varieties, of which natural uniformity is the theatre for display, are indications of a mysterious energy working in particular ways, adjusting inner and outer relations; and, however elevated and complicated the result, it is wrought by means of the simplest elements, and generally by insensible degrees.

The smallest amount of intelligence requires perfect organisation: but mechanical appliances, implements, tools, necessary to produce good work, do not convey intelligence, though they may be called its mechanical basis. Nature seems to have a purpose in everything, and works as knowing how to do it, though the purposeless or "silent members" in animal frames are hard to account for. Some animals have teeth, never meant to eat with; the rudiments of toes in a horse, and teats in male animals, are utterly useless. Are we thence to infer that eyes are not meant to see with; nor feet to walk with; nor teeth to eat with; nor was "a duck expressly intended to be a duck with a web-foot, that it might pleasantly move on the water; but forefathers and mothers a long way back began, under pressing circumstances, to get a duckish disposition; and by dint of endeavour for ages to try their chance of paddling themselves about on the pools of a puddly world, were at length rewarded with complete success—so remarkable indeed, that a generation sprang from them thoroughly equipped for the waters with web-feet, oily back, boat-shaped bodies, spoony bills, and bowels to correspond with mudworms and duckweed?"<sup>1</sup> Surely it is time to lay aside notions so grotesque, and to live, as did Newton and Boyle, in the conception that

"God dwells within, and moves the world and moulds,  
Himself and Nature in one form enfolds."

*Goethe*

If not able to assign a purpose for these purposeless struc-

<sup>1</sup> "The First Man and His Place in Creation," p. 36: George Moore, M.D.

tures, we are less able to account for them as a natural selection: they would be unnatural. It is inconceivable that any creature could or would voluntarily grow them; nor can we credit that any brute is able to make an intelligent attempt, by means of purposeless structures, to become intelligent. It is incredible that any animal would put swiftness from the feet, fangs from the mouth, claws from the paws, cast aside the acute sense of smell, in order to advance in life; or that any intelligent creature would divest itself of those advantages. As for time and space, they are not structural causes, and could never enable any brute to generate a progeny that would submit to conditions of moral responsibility. If, however, we consider that "silent members" were of use in the past, or are for use in the future; that there is in Nature an agency of use and disuse; light begins to shine in the darkness. Rudimentary organs then show somewhat of the stages by which old forms die out and new forms come in: by modifications acting through generations of ancestral organisms. If not, there is another explanation:—The finished and complicated parts of our most wonderful machinery are all found typified in simpler shape, and narrower use in smaller or in primitive engines: so the imperfect organs of lower animals become perfect in higher creatures. In like manner, the human mind is a real though faint emblem of the Wisdom of which all natural phenomena are manifestations. We have a sketch, in ourselves, of the detail and plan which are worked up into the universal fabric: the lower anticipating the higher, the higher fulfilling that anticipation.

The battle of life through all time and in every field represents an unseen influence, but visible in effect, taking away the feeble from an unequal contest, laying aside the lame if they cannot be made to walk, carrying off the blind if they cannot be made to see; that the strong, the swift, the clear-sighted, may attain perfection. Butler's comparison may be true; waste of seeds, like waste of souls, is a condition of psychic and organic progress; an analogue of selection carried out in the spiritual world. "Life is not a bully who swaggers out into the open universe, upsetting the laws of energy in all

directions, but rather a consummate strategist, who, sitting in his secret chamber over his wires, directs the movements of a great army,"<sup>1</sup> and leads his forces to possess the world.

We pass from Varieties in Life to the Manifold Changes of Inorganic Matter.

Chemistry is the science of experimental surprises. The most inert substances often produce, by combination, compounds of the strongest energy; the tasteless becoming intensely sour, sweet, or bitter; water, that quenches fire, contains the elements of fire; and things which give and gladden life turn into demons of destruction. Many mineral, vegetable, animal poisons, having apparently little in common, produce the same effect on the muscles as heat. The chemical union of different kinds of atoms, in the definite proportions of whole numbers, entirely changes their characters and properties. Paint is made which so absorbs and retains bright light as to become luminous in the dark. Two different liquids often condense into a solid; and the result of the chemical combination of two various gases or vapours, in quantitative proportions, may be solid, liquid, or aeriform. The ingredients of that acrid, dangerous, corrosive liquid, aquafortis, in different proportions, are constituents of the summer breeze. Another affinity of our atmosphere produces "laughing gas." More surprising, there are compound substances absolutely identical in the number and relative proportions of elements which in colour, odour, taste, are wholly unlike. The same substance will act as an acid in one combination, and as a base in another. Indeed, chemical laws seem imperfectly stated cases of some more general law of combination.

A piece of sugar falls into water, sinks by law of gravity; but, in a little while, is found to have pervaded and sweetened the whole. The same happens with salt, alum, and various other substances; yet, oil poured on the water will not diffuse itself through the mass; and gases of different densities put into a vessel will not take different levels according to gravity, but commingle, by the law of diffusion.

<sup>1</sup> "The Unseen Universe."

Every different body requires a different quantity of heat to produce in it the same change of temperature; and the volume of most substances increases continuously as the temperature rises; but there is at least one exception among solid bodies—Iodide of Silver. The three principal states in which matter is found are the solid, the liquid, the gaseous; but most substances, probably all, are capable of existing in every one of these states. The solid, passing into the liquid state, is actually hotter than the liquid—the surplus heat, used up in liquefying, is called latent. There is generally a change of bulk in the act of fusion; some substances expand, some diminish, we know not why. Ice dissolves into water of less bulk, but most substances enlarge by liquefaction. It requires more heat at high than low temperature to warm liquid one degree. Most liquids contract with cold, but water expands from 39° F. to 32° F., and then crystallizes. A glacier moves slowly on like a viscous body, although ice is not viscous. An indiarubber band suddenly stretched out becomes warmer, if you pull out a steel spring it becomes colder. The conversion of liquid into vapour requires an amount of latent heat which is generally much greater than the latent heat of fusion of the same substance, and when a gas is near its point of condensation, density increases more rapidly than the pressure. When it is at the point of condensation, the slightest increase of pressure condenses the whole into liquid, which seems contrary to the law—"the pressure of a gas is proportional to its density." In the liquid form the density increases very slowly with the pressure. When temperature has attained a certain point, the properties of a liquid and those of the vapour continually approach to similarity, and above a certain temperature the properties of a liquid are not separated from those of a vapour by any apparent difference between them. Hence, the gaseous and liquid states are only different forms of the same condition of matter, and pass into each other without any interruption or breach of continuity. In one way you can see this, in another you cannot. Begin, for example, with water: take this path B, a, A; return by A, a, B. We begin with water at B, we have water and saturated steam about a, then

superheated steam till we reach A. On our way back we have no such stages—though when we reach B there is water as at first.<sup>1</sup> M. Daubrée, by heating water to a very high temperature, and under pressure in strong glass tubes, has produced silica in a crystallised condition similar to the crystals of quartz. There is now a process for the production of carbon in the state of crystals. The products do not seem to be diamonds, nor is the crystalline substance truly carbon; but, possibly, diamond dust may be manufactured, and ultimately diamonds of magnitude. Industrious workers are pushing investigation and experiment into every field, are adding to our knowledge year by year, and increasing our power to use the forces of Nature for our own purposes.

Potassium and sodium are somewhat remarkable: these metals are near akin in their specific gravities, their atomic weights, their chemical affinities, and the properties of their compounds. Potassium fuses at  $144.5^{\circ}$  F., sodium at  $207.7^{\circ}$  F., but the alloy or mixture of the two is liquid at the ordinary temperature of the air. Cold is made to exist amidst hottest fire, and ice may be taken from a burning crucible. These are facts which only experiment discovers, and can only be reduced to law by a formula which includes the usual course and the apparent exception. Observe more particularly as to water: when in contact with ice, it cannot be cooled below zero without being converted into ice. In heating the water the ice melts, but the temperature of the mixture is never raised above  $32^{\circ}$  F. so long as the ice remains unmelted. Hence, the water contains a greater quantity of heat at  $32^{\circ}$  F., than ice contains at  $32^{\circ}$  F., and gives up or uses its heat in the effort to become ice.

Physicists state that changes in consciousness are correlated with molecular motions of nerve-matter, which are highly differentiated forms of solar radiance. They mean—vital energy differentiates the waves of solar radiance into those undulatory motions of nerve-matter which excite organic consciousness. Waves of this radiance speed to the earth at the rate of more than five hundred trillions to the second, and impart their energy so that we have growth of grass. Cattle browse on this, and hold in another form of equi-

<sup>1</sup> "Recent Advances in Physical Science," p. 335: Prof. P. G. Tait, M.A.

librium, by integration of tissues, these metamorphosed sunbeams. Man, assimilating the nitrogenous tissues of the cow, builds up that wonderful white and grey nerve-tissue by the vital action of which is obtained the astonishing and completed transformation of solar radiance into human consciousness. We know of nothing more wonderful than this continual miracle : a miracle of progress by daily infinitesimal steps and transformations, and without our being able to say — "there is the place of birth."

Mental life comes out of physiological life, but how mental activity was originated in organisms by the simple elementary modifications of external to internal relations, and passed from the automatism of lowest creatures to the highest act of consciousness in man, is a mystery ; nor can we say where nor when

"turned the dense black element  
Into a crystal pathway for the sun."

We can think of a world, all dark, beginning to vibrate differently and in various rapidities until all gorgeous colours shine in light and beauty ; or we may conceive the low rumblings of many motions acquiring tone until every musical note vibrates in world-wide oratorio ; but infinitely more miraculous and varied is that operation by which, from things dark and silent, God brings the light of human intellect, and the many prayers and praises which make the earth a vast cathedral.

Turn to the exactest of sciences, Astronomy.

The planetary motions, and those of the more than two hundred planetoids, are so complex, and their relative positions so change, that the place of the general centre of gravity in relation to the mass of the sun is never the same for two consecutive moments ; therefore, the disturbances of the sun's motion must be most irregular and complex ; nor is any particle of matter throughout the whole solar system in the same state or place for any two consecutive seconds.

This example of immeasurable variety in connection with marvellous uniformity, is only exceeded by the same fact as

extended to all worlds. How vast and many are those worlds! Before our scientific gaze the diamond dust in the sky becomes suns and stars. Little cloudlets expand and reveal spheres of majesty. There are variable suns, binary and multiple systems, stars suddenly blazing forth in splendour, and mysterious dark orbs rolling in night. Great is the variety of systems, yet not a tithe of the various orders of bodies is known, we have only a faint conception of the wonderfully varied forms of creation within the stellar spaces. Not long ago, astronomers could scarcely allow that the vast depths, wherein the planets pursue their career, are the home of countless smaller bodies rushing in wide orbits round the solar mass. Few or none believed that those faintly gleaming lights, passing with silent swoop across a star group, leaving no trace of their existence and seeming of as little importance in the universe as a rain-drop or snow-flake, indicated the close of a career which had often, by uncounted millions of miles, surpassed the utmost limits of the known planetary system. These crowds of independent orbs, rushing disorderly round the sun, in no sort an obedient family, would, it was considered, make the sweet bells of the planetary system to jangle, be out of time, and harsh: nevertheless, the earth, sweeping on in her path, is exposed to cannonade from more than a hundred meteor systems; and at critical periods is assaulted with heavier metal than that encountered in the second week of November; not only balls weighing many pounds, but of several tons, have been shot against her.

How wonderful are the coloured suns! The brilliant Vega, a splendid steel-blue star, in the constellation Lyra, at midnight in winter, and earlier with the approach of spring, as it skirts the southern horizon, scintillates with red blue and emerald light. Arcturus, low down in the east and north-east, in spring evenings twinkles yet more beautifully. Capella, towards the north, in summer nights, notably sparkles. Sirius, noblest of all—

“The fiery Sirius alters hue,  
And bickers into red and emerald.”

These various colours are caused in part by our own atmo-

sphere ; but the stars are not wanting in real colours of their own. Sirius, Regulus, Spica, are white stars ; Betelgeux, Aldebaran, Arcturus, Antares, are red ; Procyon, Capella, the Pole-star, are yellow ; Castor is of slightly green tint ; Vega and Altair are bluish ; Castor has a green companion, Antares also, and there is the well-known "garnet star." In the double, triple, and multiple stars are many tints of the rainbow. " Here we have a green star with a deep blood-red companion, there an orange primary accompanied by a purple or indigo-blue satellite. White is found mixed with light or dark red, purple, ruby, or vermilion." One of the most startling facts is—their colour is not unchangeable. Of old, Sirius was red, now it is white. A double star in Hercules changed in twelve years "from yellow, through grey, cherry-red, and egregious red, to yellow again." These show that the stars are formed of different elements, and that their vapours burn with variable brilliancy. There is Mira, the marvellous, shining brightly for two days thirteen hours and a half, as a star of the second magnitude ; then, *suddenly* losing her light, in three hours and a half falls to the fourth magnitude ; then, the brilliancy growing, in another three hours and a half she reattains her former lustre. The times of at least twenty-four variable stars have been calculated. Sometimes, as in the case of temporary stars, a spectrum of the fourth class is suddenly crossed by the bright lines of hydrogen, showing either a last discharge of red flames, or a flicker due to some last chance impact of meteoric matter.

Suns far off in space, and, for aught we know, important as our own, quickly blaze with wonderful brightness, and afterwards lose their splendour. A beautiful star appeared in Cassiopeia, A.D. 1572. It surpassed all other stars, was as Venus at her brightest, became of the first magnitude, exhibited various hues, and disappeared in March, 1574. In May, 1866, a star which had long shown feebly in the constellation of the Northern Crown, suddenly burst into flames, and attained the glory of a second magnitude star. Scientific men thought that the hydrogen encircling it passed from a relatively cool state, like that surrounding our sun and Capella and Aldebaran, into intense heat which made it glow with a hundred-

fold brightness. It is now, again, a star of the tenth magnitude. "For the years A.D. 807, 840, 1096, and 1607, and several others . . . a great deficiency of the sun's light has been recorded. Thus in the annals of the year A.D. 536, the sun is said to have suffered a great diminution of light which continued fourteen months. From October, A.D. 626, to the following June, a defalcation of light to the extent of one-half is recorded; and in A.D. 1547, during three days, the sun is said to have been so darkened that the stars were seen in the day-time."<sup>1</sup>

We can study, not only changes in splendour, fatal catastrophes, the succession of phases of life in one particular star, but different simultaneous phases in many. Some stars start into life, others become older, others older and older; sometimes a dead star—a star scarcely noticeable by the astronomer, lives again. One, lately examined by Dr. Huggins, a star which had cooled down to its lowest stages, became bright by an outburst of hydrogen. Does all this, like the rolling of the ocean, rhythmically repeated yet ever varying, while it rivets our attention and hurries us along, leave a final impression of solitude on the mind? No: the motions of the stars, orderly and stately in gorgeous hue, bear down into the beholder's soul conceptions of hitherto unimagined glory and beauty.

Take our own system: the rule of law within may itself be regarded as a miracle, if wrought by chance. The chances against the uniformity being by chance are, Laplace states, four millions of millions to one. The movement of the sun on its axis, of the planets round the sun, of the satellites round their primaries (those of Uranus, possibly Neptune, excepted), and the motion of all on their axes, is from west to east. There is nearly a regular gradation in their density, the distances are curiously relative, weaving them into one web of mutual arrangement and harmonious agreement. Nevertheless, the uniformity is not an invariability impressed by unintelligent force. Variety prevails everywhere. Take the rates of axial rotation. The sun revolves in about twenty-five days eight hours; the moon requires a month to turn in:

<sup>1</sup> "Outlines of Astronomy:" Sir John F. W. Herschel, Bart.

the earth occupies one day; Mercury, twenty-four hours and five minutes; Venus about twenty-three hours and a half; Mars, somewhat more than twenty-four hours and a half; Jupiter, less than ten hours; and Saturn, say, ten and a half hours. We are sure that there is reason in all this: for "if the universe be delivered over to the undisturbed action of its physical processes, all force will finally pass into the form of heat, and all heat come into a state of equilibrium. Then all possibility of a further change would be at an end, and the complete cessation of all natural processes must set in . . . the universe from that time forward would be condemned to a state of eternal rest."<sup>1</sup>

From such a state of eternal rest the world could not raise itself; and into such a state it would long ago have passed, were it not for Reason guiding and Energy sustaining. The leaps, surprises, reversals, new beginnings, found within our system (for the births of planets occurred at widely remote periods, and the stages of their growth differ enormously in duration) are of a nature that requires not only might but wisdom for their maintenance. "We see our earth passing through a vast period from its first existence as a separate member of the solar system, to the time when life appeared upon its surface: then began a comparatively short period, now in progress, during which the earth has been and will be the abode of life; and after that must follow a period, infinite to our conceptions, when the cold and inert globe of the earth will circle as lifelessly round the sun as the moon now does."<sup>2</sup> We know that our earth may so change in the course of hundreds of thousands of years to come, that none of the present forms of life could live in those changed conditions; nevertheless, we also know that descendants of the creatures now living may then be as well fitted to the existing circumstances as are the most favoured races of our time: so great and marvellous are the varieties of God's handiwork. Wander whithersoever we may, far as we can, long as we can, we shall yet find ourselves within the populous dominions of the Almighty.

<sup>1</sup> "Interaction of Natural Forces:" Prof. Helmholtz.

<sup>2</sup> "Science Byways," pp. 15, 16: Richard A. Proctor.

This study of varieties may well end in leading heart and mind to some, though faint, conception of the great changes and catastrophes yet to come.

At every transformation of heat-energy into work a large portion is degraded, and only a small portion put into real work. It is easy to transform all mechanical or useful energy into heat, but only a small part of this heat-energy can be turned back into work. Every change degrades or dissipates the heat: it becomes less and less available for further transformation: nevertheless, energy whilst dissipating may be available; thus the earth cools and loses its potential energy by radiation into space, but the rocks contract and lay up a store of available kinetic energy and curve the surface of the earth.<sup>1</sup> Heat is really the communist of the universe, tending for ever and ever to equalisation, and will, no doubt, bring our system to an end. The sun, supporting us with heat and energy, is becoming older and colder. By something analogous to æthereal friction, the earth and planets are spirally drawn nearer, and will be engulfed in his mass. By that collision, energy will be converted into heat, and the power of the sun have partial and temporary restoration to do more work; but this process also will come to an end. Then the fall together, say of some other sun, distant as Sirius, and our sun, would generate thirty or forty times as much energy for future radiation to other planets. Then, the fall together of other suns will convert more energy into heat and matter to be evaporated and transformed into gaseous or nebulous condition. Ages and ages pass away, but ultimately all masses share the same fate, give out their light and heat into space, become dark, and no more seen.

Whether this process completes itself independently in different parts of the sidereal system by local integration and disintegration, or by aggregating the whole matter of the sidereal system, the diffusion will undo all previous concentration. Without entering any transcendental inquiry as to the existence or non-existence of infinite systems, but keeping to a practical and soluble question, there is reason to think

<sup>1</sup> Presidential Address to Geological Society, 1877: Dr. P. Martin Duncan, F.R.S.

that all existing solar systems will be reduced again to nebulous form. The universally co-existent forces of attraction and repulsion cause, when attraction prevails, creation to predominate ; and when repulsion predominates, chaos to prevail. The actions of the past are repeated in the future, in form, in motion, in life ; the same in principle, never the same in concrete result. Destruction follows destruction, through periods long delayed, until the things seen and temporal pass away. Then, if He will who rules, other beginnings and creations arise to occupy an immeasurable future as preceding rhythms of Divine Power occupied an infinite past.

Our mind contemplates with awe the sublime spectacle of space and time, of creation and chaos, of life and death, shrined within the omniscience, omnipotence, omnipresence, of God. The epochs of transformation may be separated by time-intervals so enormous that the duration of life on our earth and the duration of our earth itself, may be but a second as compared with a thousand years.

Energies wholly unknown to us are at work, and at any moment may produce weal or woe. That which overtakes other worlds may happen to our own ; for this, and, something yet nearer, our own dissolution, we have to prepare. Many considerations are involved in it. We will take one that fits our study—The life-sustaining orbs around us, are surpassed, probably a thousand-fold, by those yet lifeless, or those long since dead. It is not unscientific to think that some of us may wander as spectres among inert lifeless masses of ruined worlds—where the dead bury their dead ; while others, entering that which is now invisible, possess worlds truly amazing.

The lower animals are a parable to us. At certain seasons they abandon their usual haunts, turn from wonted enjoyments, and seek some asylum as if to prepare for new untried condition—they follow a sure guiding of Nature. Even the insect is not deluded in preparing for metamorphosis—no, not one ; and awakes unto the gaiety of a new and higher life. Nor shall human dust be irrecoverably scattered by the winds : for good purpose our eyes traverse and oversee the immensity of space, our minds form true notions of the universe. The

sun, the stars, the planets, are "brilliant floating in an upper æther," to light us in that pathway of the just which shineth more and more unto perfect day. Beside all this, we have the loving influence of human soul on human soul. We are conscious of a baptism and consecration in which the true belief of holy men binds us to purity and rectitude. Blessed influence, not calculable by algebra, not deducible by logic; mysterious, effectual, mighty, as the hidden processes by which life is quickened. Words are but poor ghosts of the grand reality of things that make themselves felt as if they were our flesh. They breathe upon us with warm breath, they touch us with responsive hands, look at us with sincere glad eyes. The presence of soul to soul is a power filling with emotion, attractive as flame to flame, drawing with gentle compulsion to the sweet enjoyment of union with the Lord.

For this union we are being prepared by the existing variety in Nature. Eternal Energy is not limited to natural uniformity, but comes forth in all changes of the world's ever-varying forces. Similar antecedents do not always determine similar consequents. Involution and evolution of a Divine character advance by manifestations increasingly unlike their precedents. From chaos went forth creation, out of the dead came the living. From the present creation and the present life, by different degrees in Nature, as lower steps to the higher, we shall ascend those glorious heights, whither Divine thought and work successively conduct. No wonder that our discipline is somewhat sharp, for the destiny before us is very splendid, and in the coming hallowed glory that our Creed tells us of the universe will never lose its soul of loveliness.

"My spirit was entranced  
With joy exalted to beatitude;  
The measure of my soul was filled with bliss,  
And holiest love; as earth, sea, air, with light,  
With pomp, with glory, with magnificence."

*William Wordsworth.*

## STUDY XXI.

### FOLLIES OF THE WISE.

“Not as yet  
Are we in shelter or repose,  
The Holy House is still beset  
With leaguer of stern foes.”

KEBLE

“Conquer we shall, but we must first contend ;  
’Tis not the fight that crowns us, but the end.”

ANON.

WE propose to investigate certain statements made by a few scientific men concerning Scripture. If the inquiry should prove that remarkable fact—“the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God : for they are foolishness unto him : neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned” (1 Cor. ii. 14)—it may lead them and us to a more reverent heed of that which God has spoken by the prophets, and by His Son Jesus ; that the world may be full of a revealed Deity, yet the outside manifestation exercise little or no influence for good, unless it awakens the conscience and regenerates the affections.

Our investigation may also correct that hard theological dogmatism which, professing adherence to the very letter of Holy Scripture, departs from that letter through ignorance of the real meaning ; and violates the spirit through want of that pure, wise, loving, obedient heart, without which no one is accepted of God.

At the outset we encounter a puzzling truth : the Bible, neither teaching science, nor written scientifically, has well-nigh for ever seemed against the secular science of the age, yet the Old Book and the Old Faith survive. Not only so, theologians have been among the first to point out astro-

nomical and other difficulties in the Bible ; while the greatest astronomers and most renowned physicists always assert that Mind planned the world, its processes and laws having interpretation by intelligence as they are the manifestation of Intelligence. To mention only two—who can doubt Newton's piety, or distrust the simple child-like faith of Copernicus ?

The oppositions of Science in one age against Scripture have generally been removed in the next, and though the time for full mutual reconciliation and verifying has not arrived—the mechanism of the world not being wholly revealed, and the best of us “stretching but lame hands of faith”—the ablest men have a growing and abiding conviction that intelligence and piety unite in the perfect man.

The objectors of old were acute as are objectors now. Ancient heathens well handled, and then cast away as useless, the very weapons which men of our own day gather and refurbish. The Jews, long ago, by pseudo-criticism, did all well-nigh that could be done against the Messianic Prophecies ; but those Prophecies yet testify and truly.

The complaint that science was not Divinely taught is evidently unreasonable—“If the Jews had been told that water existed in the clouds in small drops, they would have marvelled that it did not constantly descend ; and to have explained the wisdom of this would have been to teach Atmology in the Sacred Writings. If they had read in their Scripture that the earth was a sphere, when it appeared to be a plane, they would only have been disturbed in their thoughts, or driven to some wild and baseless imaginations, by a declaration to them so strange. If the Divine Speaker, instead of saying that He would set His bow in the clouds, had been made to declare that He gave to water the property of refracting different colours at different angles, how utterly unmeaning to the hearers would the words have been!”<sup>1</sup> It is not for the sake of physical science ; but for the eternal problems which lie behind all natural phenomena, and are unaffected and unchanged despite all

<sup>1</sup> “Philosophy of the Inductive Sciences,” vol. i. p. 686 : Rev. W. Whewell, D.D.

other changes ; that the world reverently holds in her hand the ancient Book, and makes an effort to understand her childhood.

Some parts of the Bible have always seemed more adapted to particular periods ; and, conversely, some more opposed. In the Crusaders' times such words as—"Take up the Cross," "Glory in the Cross," filled every mouth. During Puritan days, the New Testament being greatly neglected, the Old was all in all. Now the Old is neglected, and some parts are furiously assailed under the mask of science. We have no Ulphilas to take away the *σκανδάλα*, or stones of stumbling,<sup>1</sup> even if we needed one : but as Abbot Joachim's prophetic book of the Everlasting Gospel is forgotten,<sup>2</sup> and the attacks of Voltaire and his literary progeny, wicked as witty, are disregarded ; we, reviewing the past, are sure that speech of the following sort will soon be silenced :—"Revealed Religion is on its trial before the world. The question is not so much whether we shall recite the damnatory clauses in our Athanasian Creed, as whether any creed whatever is worth reciting. Christianity is on its trial before the world, not for some trifling blemishes which a little mild correction may mend, but for its very life ; and if the clergy, its natural defenders, can show no intelligible reason why it should stand, common sense, in this country at least, will very speedily decide upon its merits in a somewhat rough-and-ready fashion."<sup>3</sup> This writer mistakes the errors of believers for faults in the grand old Faith : Christianity is not on trial—men are on trial by Christianity, not Christianity by men. Our blessed Lord did not make every one pleased with religion, or with Him ; and those who expect Christianity to answer riddles before the riddles are made, must themselves answer this riddle—that despite the opposition of secularists, "no amount of knowledge, of the kind which alone physical science can impart, can do more than widen the foundation of intelligent spiritual belief."<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Dean Milman's "Gibbon," small edition, vol. iv. chap. xxxviii. p. 322.

<sup>2</sup> Dean Milman's "Latin Christianity," 8vo, vol. viii. book xii. chap. vi. p. 347.

<sup>3</sup> "Modern Christianity a Civilised Heathenism," Preface to second edition.

<sup>4</sup> "Reign of Law : " Duke of Argyle.

We shall not take in hand sensual and irreverent ones, who glory to find fault with whatever is pure and sacred; and would fain be witty by making a jest of those things which wiser men worship. They, gloating over a good man's error, and glad to find any nakedness of Scripture, imitate an ancient odious sin (Gen. ix. 22, 23). It would be equally unwise to notice men who if they chip a bit from a rock contemptuously fling it at the Sacred Shrine. Those bone-finders in caves who threaten to break down all the houses of God in our land must be left in their self-confident possession of Samson's weapon. Those, moreover, who count the result of galvanic experiments on a frog as proof that the phenomena of Nature are wholly apart from the Almighty, certainly believe that the mist they live in is a mountain-height, and affirm that "the whole complexion of religious and scientific thought must be changed." Such men recall to our memory the words of Thomas Fuller, whose humour was full of wisdom, and wisdom full of humour:—"To speak plainly, it is not the fierceness of the lion, nor the fraud of the fox, but the mimicalness of the ape, which in our age hath discredited the undoubted truth: but what if the apes in India, finding a glow-worm, mistook it to be true fire, and heaping much combustible matter about it, hoped by their blowing of it thence to kindle a flame; I say, what if that laughter-causing animal, that mirth-making creature, deceived itself; doth it thence follow that there is no fire at all?"—"If some did not believe? Shall their unbelief make the truth of God without effect? God forbid."

Our task is specially difficult and painful: for the follies of wise men are a personal disadvantage to every one, and a public loss. To belittle great men is to dwarf ourselves; and when their folly concerns the best hopes of our race every good man must weep rather than exult.

It is asserted—"Genesis is a narrative based upon legends; Exodus is not historically true; the whole Pentateuch is unhistorical and non-Mosaic; it contains the most extraordinary contradictions and impossibilities, sufficient to involve the credibility of the whole—imperfections so many and so con-

spicuous that they would destroy the authenticity of any modern historical work."<sup>1</sup>

The writer thus taxes the pious and faithful, confessedly the most thoughtful men in the world, with grossest ignorance; capable of being deluded by the most extraordinary contradictory and impossible things. He cites from an apocryphal book, 2 Esdras xiv., as proof that Ezra, aided by five other persons, "wrote these books in the space of forty days." Against this, first, take the fact that Moses did write the Law, (Ex. xxiv. 4; Deut. xxxi. 9); and was so confident that he wrote by Divine Inspiration, that though stating—"He wrote upon the tables the words of the covenant, the ten commandments" (Ex. xxxiv. 28); he states afterwards that God wrote them (Deut. iv. 13, v. 22, x. 4). Secondly, notice that the author of the Books of Esdras lays no claim at all to authorship of the Pentateuch. He states that the Law was burnt—that is, the copy that had been kept in the Temple; and asks that he may write an account of God's works "done in the world since the beginning" (2 Esdras xiv. 21, 22). He did write, but not the Pentateuch. He and Sarea, Dabria, Selemia, Ecanus, Asiel, in forty days, wrote two hundred and four books (ver. 24)—seventy for the wise, one hundred and thirty-four for the unwise. Thirdly, we use the testimony most likely to avail with men who make and credit gross denials of Scripture verity, that taken from their own school of thought—"Tradition has (without any variation, as I believe) ascribed the history of these transactions to Moses. . . . The language and the degree of minuteness of the Israelitish history, from the first energetic expostulations with the Egyptian king, to the entrance into Canaan, are, to my mind, evidently those of a contemporaneous account. The details of interviews with the king, on the one hand, and of transactions with the enslaved people, on the other hand, can only have been known to the leader of the nation. The history of the occurrence at the burning bush (whatever difficulties may accompany it), and of other events nearly at the same time, can scarcely have been invented by another person. . . . The arguments, therefore, for the truth

<sup>1</sup> "Conflict between Religion and Science:" Prof. Draper.

of the established tradition appear to me so strong, that nothing short of irrefragable reasoning seems sufficient to destroy it."<sup>1</sup> "I do not allude at any length to the recension in the time of Ezra, because no critic, as I believe, has suggested that any addition to or modification of the Hebrew Books, as they then existed, was made at that time."<sup>2</sup>

Another groundless charge: "Sacred cosmogony regards the formation and modelling of the earth as the direct act of God; it rejects the intervention of secondary causes in those events."<sup>3</sup>

The statement is wholly incorrect. With far more fairness and truth it might be said—Scripture gives the true theory and real facts of the scientific doctrine of Evolution; for water is said to produce the things of the deep; and from the earth, as mother, proceed every plant and living creature of the land. David, with true science and common sense, used these words as to God—"Who maketh His angels spirits; His ministers a flaming fire" (Ps. civ. 4). The LXX. translation, and the Epistle to the Hebrews i. 7, lead us to understand that God maketh His angels like winds (viz., incorporeal, swift, powerful), and His ministers (His heavenly servants) as a flame of fire. In Mendelssohn's "Beor" the verse is explained: "He maketh the winds His messengers, and lightnings His ministers." Kimchi, Yarchi, and others take it much in the same way. The best thinkers hold that the universe is not only the skilful work of a Creator, but of a Creator acting by means of those physical properties and chemical combinations of matter which He had Himself conferred.

The professor further states—"A Divine revelation of science admits of no improvement, no change, no advance. It discourages as needless, and indeed as presumptuous, all new discovery, considering it as an awful prying into things which it was the intention of God to conceal."<sup>4</sup>

Scripture—it seems we must state it again and again—is not a revelation of science, therefore the charge is groundless.

<sup>1</sup> "Notes on the Earlier Hebrew Scriptures," p. 23: Sir G. B. Airy, K.C. B.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid. p. 7.

<sup>3</sup> "Conflict between Religion and Science:" Prof. Draper.      <sup>4</sup> Ibid.

So-called scientific statements are, for the most part, popular illustrations for the use of unscientific people. David shall admonish the professor as to the studies of those who love Scripture—"The works of the Lord are great, sought out of all them that have pleasure therein" (Ps. cxi. 2). Solomon, no mean man, gives a rebuke, for he greatly studied those works (1 Kings iv. 30-33). The founders of universities, the ancient endowers of schools, rightly thought that our knowledge of God as Creator leads to a more reverential and better understanding both of Creation and Revelation. These devout men, far from thinking that Scripture allowed no improvement, no change, no advance, encouraged as useful, as reverential, all search after truth: pious men have ever been the great promoters of learning and of science.

An able man, in his own line of things, praises and dispraises at the same time:—"Two great and fundamental ideas, common also to the non-miraculous theory of development, meet us in this Mosaic hypothesis of Creation, with surprising clearness and simplicity—the idea of separation or *differentiation*, and the idea of progressive development or *perfecting*. Although Moses looks upon the result of the great laws of organic development (which we shall later point out as the necessary conclusions of the doctrine of Descent) as the direct actions of a constructing Creator, yet in his theory there lies hidden the ruling idea of a progressive development and a differentiation of the originally simple matter. We can therefore bestow our just and sincere admiration on the Jewish lawgiver's grand insight into Nature, and his discovering in it a so-called 'Divine revelation.' That it cannot be such is clear from the fact that two grand fundamental errors are asserted in it, namely, first, the *geocentric* error that the earth is the fixed central point of the whole universe, round which the sun, moon, and stars move; and secondly, the *anthropocentric* error, that man is the premeditated aim of the creation of the earth, for whose service alone all the rest of Nature is said to have been created." <sup>1</sup>

The learned professor ought to know that Moses says nothing about man being "the premeditated aim of the

<sup>1</sup> "The History of Creation:" Prof. Haeckel.

creation ;" but that man, being the highest work of God, was made lord of earthly creatures. Further, it is somewhat inconsistent to credit Moses for far-reaching wisdom ; and yet, to tax him with rudest ignorance in that very thing concerning which he was wise. The *Geocentric Error* is no error ; the earth is popularly, figuratively, poetically, and as our own standpoint, the centre. The *Anthropocentric Error* is likewise to be explained as a popular mode of speech. In reality, all true spiritual presentation passes into the infinite—suggests rather than expresses. Scripture must be judged in accordance with all the facts : the earth is great, the sun is greater ; as to far-off worlds, assertion becomes unscientific, yet to those worlds and beyond them travels the human spirit, as if exceeding all, seeking brighter light and higher life. It is the height of unreason, for materialistic and atheistic professors—blaming the statement of Scripture that man's true greatness is found in likeness to God—to tell us that we are merely clever beasts, and yet—the only god ! With utter loathing we give the following reprehensible declaration :—"The dim and shadowy outlines of the superhuman deity fade slowly away from before us ; and as the mist of his presence floats aside, we perceive with greater and greater clearness the shape of a yet grander and nobler figure, of Him who made all Gods, and shall unmake them. From the dim dawn of history, and from the inmost depth of every soul, the face of our father Man looks out upon us with the fire of eternal youth in his eyes, and says—'Before Jehovah was, I am.'"<sup>1</sup> It is contemptible folly for these men to talk thus of "our father Man." Why, they assure us that he was nothing better than—a monkey !

The expressions—rising, setting, travelling of the sun, the fixity and foundations of the earth—though the only intelligible language, have been found fault with. We are told—"Scripture speaks of a flat earth ; and of the sky as a watery vault in which the sun, moon, and stars set ; of the firmament as a solid arch, literally something beaten or hammered out ; and of the Almighty as a gigantic man."

Really, such fault-making displays neither intelligence nor

<sup>1</sup> "Lectures and Essays," W. K. Clifford, vol. ii. p. 243.

candour; if opponents would remember that no science is involved here, that these are the every-day statements of all ages; and if they discriminate as to what is fact and what figure, where literal accuracy is to be looked for and where a poetic thought, they will be preserved from an infinity of folly. The firmament is that in which, to the eyes of the people, sun and stars do set; and is, indeed, a space for waters. The earth, in common language, is ever spoken of as a plane. In a higher sense even than is stated, the sun does go forth as a giant to run a race.

The stability of the earth is counted an error:—

“The world also shall be stable, that it be not moved”  
(1 Chron. xvi. 30).

“The world also is stablished, that it cannot be moved”  
(Ps. xciii. 1, xcvi. 10, cxix. 90; Eccl. i. 4).

The real meaning is—God, who made the earth, will support it; the excellent order which He established shall be maintained; neither storms from without, nor any commotion from within, shall unsettle its abiding.

The principal texts mentioning the movement of sun and stars are:

“The sun was risen upon the earth” (Gen. xix. 23).

“The sun was going down” (Gen. xv. 12).

“The sun . . . is as a bridegroom coming out of his chamber, and rejoiceth as a strong man to run a race. His going forth is from the end of the heaven, and his circuit unto the ends of it” (Ps. xix. 5, 6).

“The sun also ariseth, and the sun goeth down, and hasteth to his place where he arose” (Eccl. i. 5).

Science uses the same language now, and it is the best language. He who finds fault with Scripture for poetically and popularly speaking of the sun, must deal with other books in the same manner. If, however, scientific accuracy is unreasonably demanded; we answer that even here, “deep answers to deep within the sacred oracles”—the sun revolving on his axis, as actually viewed from the earth by scientific men and as revolving around his own great centre, does rise, set, go forth and return, in a manner truly wonderful, and surpassing all expectation.

Two other passages are asserted to be incorrect :—

“Sun, stand thou still upon Gibeon ; and thou, Moon, in the valley of Ajalon ” (Josh. x. 12).

The sun and his shadow are stated to have returned ten degrees (2 Kings xx. 10 ; Isai. xxxviii. 8).

The words translated “sun” and “moon,” rather refer to the light than to the substance of those bodies. In what way God continued the sunlight, or a light resembling it, so that Israel fought as in the day, we know not, nor does it seem in the power of man to explain the wonder which confirmed Hezekiah’s faith ; but a scientific eye-witness might possibly have discerned some of the means by which the different marvels were wrought, though the stopping of the earth in its axial rotation, or the return of degrees, may be inexplicable as a change in natural order naturally effected. No human effort can bring Scripture miracles within the understood range of natural order ; indeed, their evidential value may depend upon deviation from that order. Both of those in question may have been special providences—coincidence of the physical event with the moral lesson in illustration of Divine rule.

Providential and miraculous arrangements are probably similar to those operations which we see day by day in the course of Nature ; for all things, ordinary and extraordinary, are wrought by the eternal omnipresent Power. As Nature, ever flowing onward in the uninterrupted rhythm of cause and effect, is mediately used and subordinated by the human will acting as a trigger to liberate controlling power, so Divine Will acts mediately by Nature, and directly upon Nature, with infinite wisdom and might.

With somewhat of scientific affectation calculations have been made to show that the miracle wrought on behalf of Israel, in the days of Joshua, required the energy of six trillions of horses ; was a wasteful expenditure, in a few hours, of that which would have provided fighting power for all the armies of the world during millions of years.<sup>1</sup> Such trifling needs no grave reply. Match it with another calculation : the wisdom and power requisite to form and give life, by human means, to a cheese mite, would require more than all

<sup>1</sup> “Miracles and Special Providences :” Prof. Tyndall.

the millions of men from the beginning of creation till now have possessed; what a waste of power for God to have been at such expenditure for a cheese mite! Moreover, of 2,300 million parts of light and heat emitted by the sun, our earth only receives one part. Surely those who blame us for likening God to man—when we exhort men to be God-like, are more blameable for making God man-like, by accounting that anything is either little or much to Him. Greatness and smallness are relative—nothing more: "*there is absolutely nothing* to show that even a portion of matter which in our most powerful microscope appears as hopelessly minute as the most distant star appears in our telescopes, may not be as astoundingly complex in its structure as is that star itself, even if it far exceed our own sun in magnitude." <sup>1</sup>

If miracles were bound up with credulous prattle, and stood alone, doubtless, faith in miracles would pass away with our childhood; but, being associated with words and deeds of imperishable wisdom and sublime purity, they are regarded as sparks from the great wheel of Divine operation. They are in connection with examples of moral grandeur, nowhere matched in the history of mankind, proving that they are not inventions of the crafty and deceitful. If opponents answer—"We do not deny the moral grandeur of those who asserted the miracles, but we maintain that in an unscientific age moral grandeur is compatible with an uncritical belief in the marvellous;" then we reply—The men used as agents to work them, and many of the eye-witnesses, were the most thoughtful and experienced of our race: not likely to be, and, in many cases, could not be deceived: and the Power displaying the marvels is that very Power which Science acknowledges to exist behind all phenomena. Nor is that all: those physical marvels are given in attestation of whatever knowledge is possessed concerning Forgiveness of sin, Redemption from evil, Immortality of life.

We are gravely told—"The universe of the Bible is limited to a few thousand years in time, and to a narrowly bounded area in space."

Where is it so limited? Certainly not in the Bible, where

<sup>1</sup> "Recent Advances in Physical Science," p. 284: Prof. P. G. Tait.

are glowing descriptions of the grandeur and antiquity of the universe. Limitations, that do exist, must be interpreted by the larger accounts; or explained by the purpose for which limitation is made. The Inspiration of a Prophet was not universal as to knowledge; but special for his ministry. As to the Earth's antiquity, the Rev. R. Greswell, in "The Three-fold Cord," says—"In the very year, which, it has often been shown, is assigned by the chronology of the Hebrew Bible as the year of the Mosaic Creation itself, B.C. 4000, we find all the measures of time, both the natural and the civil, which have entered this system from the first and are still making part of it, meeting together." We cannot agree with the above statement. It is not in man to know, with any accuracy, when time began to be measured by day and night. Job was admonished of this—"Where wast thou when I laid the foundations of the earth?" (Job xxxviii. 4). Moses, so far from counting the world new, spoke of the mountains as very old (Ps. xc. 2). Other passages (Gen. xlix. 26; Deut. xxxiii. 15; Job xv. 7; Prov. viii. 22-31) plainly declare the antiquity, even as "The laying of foundations," "The laying of the corner-stone," "The stretching out of the line upon it," mark a slow and progressive operation.

The time occupied by the Mosaic Days has been a subject of controversy from the earliest times. Some great men, considering the eternity of God and the infinitude of His works, maintained that everything done in connection with the earth occupied only a moment of time; but that this moment it is impossible to imagine or to explain. Biblical archæologists, of modern times, agree that the common chronology is too narrow. Ancient records, the development of commerce and government, the time required for the production of a thousand languages from the confusion of early speech at Babel, the separation of so many human families from the early race, "require a cradle of larger dimensions than Archbishop Ussher's Chronology." The early Church at Antioch counted six thousand years from the Creation till the birth of Christ; the Greeks took five hundred from that number; Eusebius, taking three hundred more, was content with an antiquity of five thousand two hundred years; the

Samaritans counted thirteen hundred and seven years from the Creation to the Deluge; the Hebrews, sixteen hundred and fifty-six; the Septuagint, two thousand two hundred and sixty-three. The sum of all is—we have no revelation as to the time which has elapsed since God made the world. We agree with Sir G. B. Airy, concerning the tenth chapter of Genesis, to interpret "the filial relation of persons as meaning the colonial relation of tribes."<sup>1</sup>

We agree with Aristotle—Nature is not full of incoherent episodes, like a bad tragedy; yet we supplement the dictum of Leibnitz—"La nature n'agit jamais par saut," by wider experience—"Nature sometimes does make a leap." While allowing the Pythagorean doctrine of pervading order in the universal *κοσμός*; or, as the Bechuana chief said—"One event is always the son of another, and we must not forget the parentage;" we do not reduce history to nothing better than an almanac, nor allow that morals can be explained by mechanics. It is somewhat premature for a few physicists to account orthodox theology a graveyard, the Bible a coffin, and our Lord that dead one to be buried out of sight. Those who will not believe, who arrogantly refuse Scripture, and choose to be guiltily ignorant of its marvellous evidence and proof of Divinity; who want the Lord to be always walking on the sea—but, even if He did, would have less than the little faith of Peter; who profess to educe the world from something that was ever less and less, so that Nature began from no Nature, and life from no life; surrender their position and accept the miracle of miracles—"Can there be anything more miraculous than the existence of man and the world? anything more literally supernatural than the origin of things?"<sup>2</sup>

From many painful examples of the unbelief that clings as a parasite to certain physicists, take a work from the pen of a leader.

He says concerning the observance of the Sabbath Rest—"To give sanction to this precept, the authority of at least a myth was requisite. I believe it was simply for this reason that the myth of the six days of creation was preserved."<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> "Notes on the Earlier Hebrew Scriptures," p. 45.

<sup>2</sup> "Lothair."

<sup>3</sup> "Notes on the Earlier Hebrew Scriptures," p. 17: Sir G. B. Airy, K.C.B.

The second narrative in Genesis ii., was "to confirm the solemnity of marriage; and for this purpose only, or chiefly, the second history of creation was preserved."<sup>1</sup>

We are to believe that Moses, who has produced a greater effect on the history of the civilised world than any other man, one only excepted; Moses, of whom it is stated, "that the mighty inspiration came upon him which convinced him that, great as were the difficulties, he could lead his people to independence and to territorial possessions; but that it must be done by the establishment among them of a new and pure religion;"<sup>2</sup> became, in order to establish "a new and pure religion," one of the greatest deceivers in the world. We are to believe this in order to disbelieve miracles!

The death of Abel is stated to be "simply a myth, explaining the hostility between the feeders of sheep and the tillers of the ground."<sup>3</sup> The punishment of Cain is a myth—"a holy myth would be required . . . to restrain a half-savage people."<sup>4</sup> Concerning Lamech—"It appears that the history of Lamech is a mere myth, floating down from some distant age, and preserved by Moses as a sanction for the beneficent measures which he was anxious to enforce."<sup>5</sup> The terrors of the Lord on Mount Sinai, are attributed to a volcanic eruption;<sup>6</sup> and the glory seen in the cloud was "either the smoke of Sinai, or the reflection of its fire as seen in the clouds."<sup>7</sup> The unwise guessing is rebuked by the fact that there is no volcanic formation in the Triassic rock of Sinai. The water obtained at Rephidim (Ex. xvii. 1), by smiting the rock, receives this explanation—"I think it will appear that this was some artificial, or (in modern terms) engineering, process by which water was procured."<sup>8</sup> A larger explanation of verses 5 and 6 is given—"The meaning seems to be that, instead of patiently relying on the goodness of God, under circumstances which would have justified waiting, he undertook some mechanical work for obtaining water. Or, possibly, he may have used some forced labour, carried out with cruelty, in the engineering."<sup>9</sup> How the people were per-

<sup>1</sup> "Notes on the Earlier Hebrew Scriptures," p. 18: Sir G. B. Airy, K.C.B.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.* p. 54.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.* p. 26.

<sup>4</sup> *Ibid.* p. 30.

<sup>5</sup> *Ibid.* p. 33.

<sup>6</sup> *Ibid.* p. 81.

<sup>7</sup> *Ibid.* p. 80.

<sup>8</sup> *Ibid.* p. 91.

<sup>9</sup> *Ibid.* p. 96.

suaded that God helped them, though all was done by engineering, is not explained. The punishment of Nadab and Abihu by fire from God (Lev. x. 1, 2), is thus misrepresented—"I suppose Moses put them to death immediately."<sup>1</sup> The destruction of the two hundred princely rebels (Numb. xvi. 35) was not by fire from God, but "by the act of Moses. What kind of pitfall had been prepared for the few, and what form of death for the many, we cannot precisely say."<sup>2</sup> No character seems sacred; as for Elijah and Elisha, we are told—"Of those who, with great ability, displayed unlimited ferocity are Elijah, who slaughtered without mercy the party opposed to him; Elisha, who instigated Hazael (vizier) to murder Benhadad (king) of Syria, and who set up Jehu apparently for the express purpose of committing wholesale slaughters, in which he was aided by the savage Jehonadab. The legendary history of Elijah and Elisha may be compared with that of Dunstan."<sup>3</sup>

The irreverence exhibited in these unwarrantable interpolations and misinterpretations, the rash charges made against holy men, the believing anything rather than that which is in Scripture, are astounding—as coming from one whose reasoning faculties have been highly cultivated. To get rid of miracles, to tie down God to modern notions, it is thought worth while to charge holy men, the best and greatest of our race, with cruelty, lying, and grossest deception. To credit that the scheme of Redemption is without Divine authority, we must account all recorded marvellous acts of God unsubstantial figments, Prophets and Apostles must be denounced as the greatest deceivers in the world. Moses, who describes God as "The Lord, The Lord God, merciful and gracious, longsuffering, and abundant in goodness and truth . . . that will by no means clear the guilty" (Ex. xxxiv. 6, 7), is charged with the guilt of lying and murder; yet, from this man we have "a code of social laws to which nothing then existing was comparable for purity and for clear definition of justice in the infinity of social relations. I imagine that

<sup>1</sup> "Notes on the Earlier Hebrew Scriptures," p. 92: Sir G. B. Airy, K.C.B.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.* p. 95.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.* p. 102.

everything good, in the legislation of modern times, has had its origin in the Sinaitic laws of Moses." <sup>1</sup>

We will endeavour to find a cause for the weakness, irreverence, want of sanctity, assumption of authority, painfully marking such perversions of Holy Scripture.

A high degree of complexity wearies and confuses any ordinary intellect. Few minds either will or can apply the needful power of attention, and mental energy of several faculties, continuously in an involved process. The most vigorous experience a sense of fatigue, followed by lassitude, if they transgress either time or season in arduous manifold work ; and the penalty has to be paid in confusion of ideas and collapse of mental energy. On this account it has been thought necessary for intellectual action to be defined, so that men become Divines, Mathematicians, Logicians, Artists, in a technical manner. The result, to the individual, is a weak and partial apprehension and narrowing of general knowledge. The advance of every mind along such narrow track has, it is true, the advantage of penetrating further into that which is unknown ; for example, it is said—"It takes a man fourteen years to make himself acquainted with what has been done, and can now be known in regard to chemistry alone ;" nevertheless, this narrowing tends, when men are not profound and circumspect, to sectarianism in religion, and to a hard narrow mechanical spirit in science. The division of labour certainly enables explorers to push further in particular directions ; but unless the greater men attend to philosophy in its wider range, and to those elevated themes of theology which stand related to all sciences, physicists will be liable to that unnatural indifference and unbecoming ignorance, as to letters and learning, as to the spiritual and eternal, now so painfully and irrationally exhibited by a few who are otherwise scientific and moral.

Theology suffers greatly from this narrowness. Its compendious themes cannot be apprehended by any simple faculty ; nor can the mere theologian, nor the simple physicist, co-ordinate the natural and the spiritual which require the whole moral and intellectual nature—the old learning and the new

<sup>1</sup> "Notes on the Earlier Hebrew Scriptures," p. 93 : Sir G. B. Airy, K.C.B.

science. Nor must we omit to state, that the constant opposition to science, manifested by a few narrow theologians, has reacted in the unbelief of scientists as to Revelation. At present there is no pre-eminently great one endowed with synthesis of human powers. Individuality and technicality sound their own notes in utter neglect of harmonious and simultaneous movement, and the result is humiliating in the melancholy spectacle of men, capable of better things, adopting the wildest theories as to theology, and converting the firm land of physics into a materialistic slough.

A few examples will serve to explain what we mean by narrowness.

Hume gave himself to history and philosophy. Had he never even seen a New Testament, his works would be substantially what they are. Voltaire had little or no scholarship as to Christianity. He made disgraceful blunders as to Biblical incidents. Gibbon was about twenty-two years old when he said—"Here I suspended my religious inquiries." Experience shows that those who refuse the Bible do not know the book which they deny, and that those who know it best love it most.

Pass to later examples.

St. Paul is charged with maintaining the error that a seed dies before the young plant springs from it—"Thou fool, that which thou sowest is not quickened, except it die' (1 Cor. xv. 36). Whereas if the seed did die there could be no young plant."<sup>1</sup> The contention is, that a writer claiming to be inspired by Divine Wisdom illustrates his botany by stating as a fact what is not a fact. We reply—the seed dies in giving life; the germ initiates the new plant, but the seed perishes. Jeremy Taylor says—"Every meal is a rescue from one death, and lays up another; and while we think a thought we die." The law of all Nature is that it lives by dying; in, by, and out of this death we are born again, atom by atom, every moment of our life. No one thinks that St. Paul was a scientific botanist, or used the illustration in any other than a popular sense, and the accuser himself unconsciously vin-

<sup>1</sup> "Biogenesis and Abiogenesis:" Prof. Huxley.

dicates the accused—"Physiology writes over the portals of life—

‘*Debemur morti nos nostraque,*’

with a profounder meaning than the Roman poet attached to that melancholy line. Under whatsoever disguise it takes refuge, whether fungus or oak, worm or man, the living protoplasm ultimately dies and is resolved into its mineral and lifeless constituents—is always dying, and strange as the paradox may sound, could not live unless it died."<sup>1</sup> In like manner, Dr. L. S. Beale constantly uses the graphic expression that the protoplasm of this or that kind dies into this or that tissue or secretion. "Every form in Nature—leaves, flowers, trees, shells; every tissue—hair, skin, bone, muscle, results from the death of bioplasm" ("Biop." p. 10).<sup>2</sup>

Professor Helmholtz, pointing out some defects in the eye, states—"It is not too much to say that if an optician wanted to sell me an instrument which had all these defects, I should think myself justified in blaming his carelessness in the strongest terms, and giving him back his instrument. Of course, I shall not do this with my eyes, and shall only be too glad to keep them as long as I can—defects and all."<sup>3</sup>

We do not think that the learned professor meant to charge God with "carelessness," but a critic, even on purely optical grounds, should not speak of "defects" as if God had been remiss.

What are these defects? They shall be stated fully, but briefly. The cornea is the transparent window in front of the eye, like a watch-glass in front of the metal case. A short distance behind is a crystalline lens, covered by the iris—a curtain of varying colour perforated in the centre by the pupil—a round hole, the edges of which are in contact with the front of the lens. The lens is circular, biconvex, elastic. It is attached at the edge by a circular band, the ciliary body, to the inside of the eye. The tension of this ring and of the lens itself, is regulated by muscular fibres, called the ciliary

<sup>1</sup> "Physical Basis of Life."

<sup>2</sup> "Protoplasmic Theory of Life:" T. Drysdale, M.D.

<sup>3</sup> "The Recent Progress of the Theory of Vision."

muscle. The contraction of this muscle diminishes the tension of the lens; and its surfaces, chiefly the front one, become more convex. The healthy eye, when at rest, sees distant objects distinctly; by contraction of the ciliary muscle it is accommodated to discern those which are near; thus, the images of objects, whether near or far off, are brought to a focus on the back of the dark chamber of the eye. This mechanism is sometimes disarranged, defects and different conditions of accommodation produce squinting, short sight, long sight, and no man can be said to have perfect sight. The failures are partly the result of our artificial way of life, partly of changes wrought by old age.

The chromatic aberration of the eye is that defect by which, all the colours not being brought to a focus, a "dispersive image" is formed. In common use it is of little or no ill effect; and in scientific use, the fact of the eye not being achromatic is guarded against. Another defect is known as spherical aberration: the cornea of most human eyes is not a perfect symmetrical curve, but is variously bent in different directions. Owing to these two defects, chromatic and spherical aberration, we cannot see vertical and horizontal lines at the same distance perfectly clearly at once: in all eyes, it may be said, there are distinct though often slight deviations from accurate centreing. In consequence of this ill centreing, the image, say of a star, is not a single illuminated point; but the focus is irregularly radiated, and the rays which we see around stars and other distant lights are images of the radiated structure of our lens.

Another defect: the crystalline lens, though it looks so beautifully clear, is not optically uniform in structure. There are shadows and dark spots, chiefly due to the fibres and spots in the lens; corpuscles also, and folds of membranes floating in the vitreous humour, cause *muscæ volitantes* in our vision; so called, because they move with the movement of our eye. Lastly, there is that blind spot, the break or gap in the retina, where the optic nerve enters; and those smaller gaps of vision, caused by the minute shadows of the blood-vessels of the retina cast on the field of vision.

These defects no more prove that the eye is not good, than

moral evil demonstrates that no Divine government exists. Our contention is not simply, the eye is good enough—it might be contended that the world is good enough; but we contend that while Nature testifies of eternal power and God-head (Rom. i. 20), it attests the mysterious fact that Nature partakes of vanity and trouble (Rom. viii. 20–23). Science, therefore, actually confirms Scripture as to the imperfection of all things: nevertheless, the defects described, which would be very troublesome in an artificial camera obscura, are not any real trouble or hindrance in the eye; in fact, it is very difficult to find some of them. We not only have two eyes, so one makes up for the defects of the other; but, as we are continually moving them, the field of vision is freed from those defects which irregularity and imperfection might occasion. Our eye has not only a very large field of vision, and all other optical instruments a small field which becomes smaller with the increased size of the image; but it is necessary for the image on the retina to be exactly over a very small surface merely, namely, that of the yellow spot. In this small part of the field, our power of vision is so accurate that it can distinguish the distance between two points, of only one minute angular magnitude, a distance equal to the sixtieth part diameter of the thickness of the finger-nail. Hence, the image which we receive by the eye, is a picture minutely and perfectly elaborated in the centre, with a rough sketching in all around. Every instant, with rapidity, we turn the eye from one point to another in the field of vision; and this rapidity, with perfection of the smaller field, and the rough sketching in of the larger, make the eye far superior to every other optical instrument. We turn our eye to one thing at a time; so soon as this has been taken in, we hasten to another; the sense of vision accomplishes all that is necessary. Whatever we want to look at we see accurately, and so quick is the transition from one object to another, that practically we possess the same advantages as if we viewed the whole field of vision at once. Just as quickly as the eye turns up or down, from side to side, the accommodation changes to bring the object looked at into focus; thus both near and distant objects pass with rapid succession into accurate view. The

eye shows them so rapidly that most people, who have not thought how they see, are not aware of any change at all. By the eye alone we discern the wealth of form and colour among flowers, the distant landscapes of our earth, all the varieties of sunlight that reveals them, and know the countless shining worlds that fill immeasurable space. It is the unsurpassed model of opticians, philosophers extol it as an organism full of wonders, poets and orators justly celebrate its praise.

The following words are printed in an address on scientific education:—"Some time ago I attended a large meeting of the clergy, for the purpose of delivering an address which I had been invited to give. I spoke of some of the most elementary facts in physical science, and of the manner in which they directly contradict certain of the ordinary teachings of the clergy. The result was, that, after I had finished, one section of the assembled ecclesiastics attacked me with all the intemperance of pious zeal, for stating facts and conclusions which no competent judge doubts; while, after the first speakers had subsided, amidst the cheers of the great majority of their colleagues, the more rational minority rose to tell me that I had been taking wholly superfluous pains, that they already knew all about what I had told them, and perfectly agreed with me. A hard-headed friend of mine, who was present, put the not unnatural question—"Then why don't you say so in your pulpits?" to which inquiry I heard no reply. In fact, the clergy are at present divisible into three sections: an immense body who are ignorant and speak out; a small proportion who know and are silent; and a minute minority who know and speak according to their knowledge."

The assembled ecclesiastics were not irritated at the statement "of facts and conclusions which no competent judge doubts:" their "pious zeal" was aroused by the assertion that these facts were in opposition to Revealed Truth. It is no wonder, when a learned professor insults the common sense and attainments of educated men—men in the habit of encountering unbelief and misbelief—that they regard him as trifling with them; and say, with some little warmth—"No one doubts the elementary facts in physical science:" no

wonder that the more courteous minority think and say—"We know all about what you have told us."

The same professor writes flippantly, as if glad to announce his belief that Christianity is false. "In this nineteenth century, as at the dawn of modern physical science, the cosmogony of the semi-barbarous Hebrew is the incubus of the philosopher and the opprobrium of the orthodox. . . . Extinguished theologians lie about the cradle of every science as the strangled snakes beside that of Hercules; and history records that whenever science and orthodoxy have been fairly opposed, the latter has been forced to retire from the lists, bleeding and crushed, if not annihilated; scotched if not slain. But orthodoxy is the Bourbon of the world of thought. It learns not, neither can it forget; and though, at present, bewildered and afraid to move, it is as willing as ever to insist that the first chapter of Genesis contains the beginning and the end of sound science; and to visit with such petty thunderbolts as its half-paralysed hands can hurl, those who refuse to degrade Nature to the base of primitive Judaism" ("The Origin of Species," *Westminster Review*, April, 1860).

The professor reminds us—

"Intelligence and courtesy not always are combined,  
Often in a golden house a wooden room you find."

\* \* \* \* \*

"The fire of rage was in him, and 'twere good  
You leaned unto his sentence with what patience  
Your patience may inform you."

He states the saddest thing in the world—if it be true. We are a duped race led by knaves, or fools taught by maniacs. Is it possible any true man can be glad that there has been no revelation of God to men? that Christ's spotless life, wise words, mighty deeds, possess no truth, no reality? that all good men, past and present, who made the world better, who enlarged our views and use of Nature, made life happier, death more peaceable and hopeful, were deluded? Such conviction were enough to make the merriest-hearted weep and mourn.

Every one, even but a little acquainted with history, is well aware that science and true doctrine are never opposed.

Religious, intellectual, industrial progress culminates in the most splendid series of researches when God's glory and man's welfare are the motives which unitedly urge devout and thoughtful men to fearless investigation of truth. The fanatical and ignorant, in all ages, have been rash, violent, unjust, cruel. They seem to think that the face of Truth is full of dread. They are afraid to unveil her statue, they say—"We will none of this dogma, none of that science." The great and good have no fears that, perchance they may encounter a ghastly death's head: they know that the beaming countenance of the image of Truth, raised by God Almighty, is the face of Jesus Christ where Divine glory and human purity meet in rarest beauty. Feeling their way, as best they can, into that limited portion of facts lying within their reach, they interpret the Two Books of Revelation, the Works of God and the Word of God, as they are—not as men might like them to be. The mediæval conception of the material and spirit world, as presented by Dante, was somewhat in harmony with the best science and the urgent wants of the time; but the Copernican revolution displaced all that, and scientific light enables us more largely to understand Providence, and to see that God's plan is written in the physical laws of the universe and in the pure morality of Holy Scripture.

It is time that all good and true men, whether students of Science or of Religion, put down every feeling of antagonism. The roll of names, illustrating the annals of science, of itself ennobles that pursuit; the Newtons, the Wallises, the Wollastons, the Davys, the Rumfords, the Faradays, confer imperishable renown. Will not praise be added to their successors if, enfranchised from narrowness, they recognise those other lights of charities and moralities which shine in the path of human life that wayfarers may walk cheerily onward to their future home?

For those who would falsify our high lineage, make us "cunning casts in clay," and require that we discard, as a romantic delusion, the ennobling conviction that we are little lower than the angels; we have an answer in the words of

Goethe—"No strong-minded man suffers his belief in immortality to be torn from his breast." Indeed, we can show that their science is neither far-searching nor deep-piercing, and show it in their own way. Acting on their words—"take nothing on trust, . . . learn of Nature, . . . listen to the voice of truth"—we try their knowledge; we empty a lark's egg into a little vessel, a thrush's egg into another little vessel, a starling's egg into a third little vessel, and a blackbird's egg into a fourth little vessel; and, having destroyed the shells, ask these men to justify our confidence in their skill by severally naming the birds; they cannot—no, not even by aid of a microscope.

These are a small matter, try something great. Take a camel, show the skeleton, and inquire—our teachers never having seen a camel before—"Is it possible that skeleton can represent an animal with a huge hump on his back?" They will either say—"We know not;" or prove from the bony structure that the hump is an absurdity almost approaching the impossible.

Try a lion, a tiger, request an explanation of the osteological differences which constitute the one a lion-frame, the other a tiger-frame. They have no explanation. The most skilful can only point out some few small differences in the skulls.

Respectfully ask why, during the whole controversy about man-like apes, we were not told that these apes have a huge air-sac packed away in front of the windpipe, and amongst the muscles of the neck,<sup>1</sup> rendering the man-like apes very unman-like, and utterly unable to speak: so that we are not of them, nor they of us? If they knew of this, why were we not informed? If they did not know, it was ignorance that exalted the monkey and abased the man. Knowing, moreover, that the power of uttering articulate words is not found in races possessing structures nearest in likeness to man's; but in creatures, such as parrots, with vocal organs so different to ours that it is not easy to trace the analogous parts; surely, our scientific teachers ought to remember what Pascal said—"It is dangerous to show man how much he

<sup>1</sup> "Casell's Natural History," p. 67: Dr. P. M. Duncan, F.R.S.

resembles the beast, without, at the same time, indicating his own greatness."

We accept evolution, so far as verification warrants, but when those who profess to explain everything lower man until there is "no essential difference between the drowning of a superfluous baby, and a superfluous kitten"—for no faith means no morals ultimately, we disregard these teachers of little science and of less faith, with "their maxims of the mud." We are sure that there is "an end worth living for—an end supremely good for us to gain, and supremely ill for us to lose—an end that we can only gain by virtue, and must lose by vice."

The subject may be viewed with somewhat more largeness.

Physical Science, properly so called, concerns the relations between natural phenomena and their physical antecedents. The investigation is conducted by processes of mathematical reasoning as to whatever regards quantity and conditions of space. A lower department of natural science, phenomenology, examines and classifies phenomena; and infers, by induction, their laws. These laws cannot, however, be determined as the necessary results of physical energies until so interpreted by the higher science—they can only be regarded as serial occurrences. The subordinate science has of late invaded the province of the higher; and, no longer servant, masterfully asserts, with high-sounding phrases, that though the world was not made, in any proper sense of making, all powers are mechanical, all mysteries can be explained by the laws of tangible matter and its energy.<sup>1</sup>

On examination, we find no clear evidence in favour of this wide masterful assertion. Matter, simple as it may seem, "is the complex of so many relations, a conjuncture of so many events, a synthesis of so many sensations, that to know one Real thoroughly would only be possible through an intuition embracing the universe."<sup>2</sup> Common sense refuses to believe that matter is everything: for we find that even scientific conviction of the objective reality of matter is obtained only

<sup>1</sup> *Church Quarterly*, April, 1876.

<sup>2</sup> "Problems of Life and Mind," vol. i. p. 343: Geo. Henry Lewes.

by experiment under the guidance of mind ; and that Heat, Light, Sound, Electric currents, are real objective existences though not matter, but forms of energy. A shadow or reflection is real, though not a solid ; a motion is real, though not a substance ; a feeling is real, though neither substance nor motion ; intelligence is real, though not motion, nor a solid—but certainly energy with other things thereto added.

As to scientific conception of matter, we find it convenient in mathematical reasoning to dispense with the ordinary meaning of the word ; and, in place of the hard atom, to suppose a mere geometrical point “with repulsive and attractive energies tending towards or from a certain point—but nothing at the point.” The points are fictions without relations, solidity, extension, or colour. Nor is that all ; physicist and metaphysicist both admit that we never feel matter, never see it, never hear it ; our perceptions are symbols of the externals, but are not more like them and have no more community of kind than a numerical figure has to the form of the numbered objects ; indeed, our sensations are merely mental affections which are called up by impulses on the nerves. Our notion of Matter, as well as of Mind, “is the notion of a perpetual something, contrasted with the perpetual flux of the sensations and other feelings or mental states which we refer to it ; a something which we figure as remaining the same, while the particular feelings, through which it reveals its existence, change.<sup>1</sup> On one side is the world of forms, of colours, of movements ; on the other is a mirror which reflects their images ; not in any respect a plain transcript, but an ideal picture of external order. Sensations, terror, hope, calculations, are psychical phenomena associated with molecular motions set up in a previously prepared brain ; but we do not know the causal connection, if any, between the objective and subjective—between molecular motion and the state of consciousness. In astronomical speculations we take into account dark stars, scattered through space, hidden from observation not being luminous ; so, in everything around and within us, innumerable hidden factors are at work, and he is a rash man,

<sup>1</sup> “An Examination of Sir William Hamilton's 'Philosophy,'” p. 205 : John Stuart Mill.

no true philosopher, who asserts—"Matter is the beginning and end of all."

Indeed it may be demonstrated that the mechanical theory utterly fails to explain the origin of the world. The following experiment seems to have been made first of all by Professor P. G. Tait :—

Suppose that we have a wooden box : at one end is a large hole ; we remove the wood from the opposite end, and in place of it affix a tightly stretched towel. To make the air visible which you are about to expel from the box, sprinkle the bottom of the box with strong solution of ammonia ; then put into the box a dish containing common salt, and over the salt pour sulphuric acid of commerce. You have now in the box ammoniacal gas and muriatic acid gas, they combine and form solid sal ammoniac ; and whatever escapes from the box that is visible consists of small particles of sal ammoniac ; and they remain suspended like smoke in the air. Now give a sudden blow to the end that is opposite the hole in the box ; and, at once, a circular vortex-ring moves, as if it were an independent solid, through the room. Observe, when two vortex-rings impinge upon one another they vibrate like solid elastic rings. This vibration of a vortex-ring can be produced, without any impact on another, by simply making an elliptical or even a square hole instead of the circular. The circle is the equilibrium form of a simple vortex, and if a simple vortex be produced of other than circular form it will vibrate about the circular form as about a position of equilibrium.

If the air were a perfect fluid—if there were no fluid-friction in it—that vortex-ring would go on moving for ever ; and the portion of fluid containing the smoke would remain for ever the same set of particles ; and could not be made by any process, except an act of creative power, to unite with the air in the room. Now, if we adopt the supposition of Sir William Thomson, that the universe is full of this perfect fluid, something not like matter, but which really is matter, "*this property of rotation may be the basis of all that appeals to our senses as matter ;*" indeed, that which we call "matter" may be only rotating portions of something which fills space—vortex-motions of an everywhere present fluid ; but nothing less than

creative power could produce a vortex-ring in a perfect fluid; consequently, no mechanical theory, apart from creative power, can explain that which appeals as matter to our senses; or sufficiently account for the origin of the world.

In this process of reasoning concerning a perfect fluid and vortex-motion, we have been thinking of matter apart from its usual properties—putting ourselves outside of it; or, as we may say, standing out of the body that we may look into the body so as to know the nature of it. We have been acting as if our spirit was an æolian harp thrilling to accordant tremors of the breath of life, apart from material touch, learning of existence; and it is certain that by supposing a substance wherein thinking, knowing, doubting, power of moving subsist, we have as clear a notion of the substance of spirit, as we have of body.<sup>1</sup> If this be so, it is unwise to doubt concerning the existence of spirit; seeing that, as philosophers, we can only know of other things by its means; and to doubt of that by which we know, and to believe in that of which we should be ignorant were it not for the other, is in the highest degree unreasonable.

The case is not made better, as to Matter and Nature, by the assumption that material atoms and vortex-motions have been from everlasting in the perfect fluid; for no mechanical theory can account for their existence. There is no help in the assumption that no perfect fluid exists: for, then, without continual restoration of energy, which no mechanical theory affords or sufficiently explains, the universe would long since have burnt out.

We conclude, from the whole argument, that neither for primal origination, nor for successive restorations, does mechanical power yield the equivalent.

A similar process of investigation may be carried into the unwise assertion as to the physical intervention of the Deity in human affairs being to the scientific thinker, *à priori*, so improbable that no amount of historic testimony suffices to make him entertain the hypothesis for an instant.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> "Locke on the Understanding," book ii. ch. xxiii. sect. 5.

<sup>2</sup> "Cosmic Philosophy," vol. ii. pp. 379, 380: John Fiske.

The fact that all sciences, specially that which concerns the Dissipation of Energy, points to a beginning, to a state of things incapable of being derived by means of any existing laws from any conceivable previous arrangement,<sup>1</sup> is proof of physical intervention ; therefore, that which is unwarrantably declared "*à priori* improbable," becomes a matter of actual science : there have been physical interventions, or all our knowledge is at fault. Those who deny this imagine that their own dull element is all, and that no deep sea echoes round the world.

Take outside things, either as materials for the scaffold of our argument, or, using them as a sort of algebraic symbol, submit them to the necessary operations for ascertaining the unknown quantity—whether of Divinity or miracle : thus proceed :—

The agency of light is wave-movement, but the moving agent we know not ; the mode of operation by chemical affinity is known, chemical affinity is not known ; the laws of motion seem to be laws of heat, but we do not know what is moving nor how it moves ;<sup>2</sup> thus our conviction of the existence of the unknown is verified by experience.

Now advance somewhat further—Do we know all Nature's combinations ? Certainly not : many, indeed all operations are wrought by means of a complexity so extreme as to present an almost insuperable obstacle to our investigations. It is impossible, therefore, to have any evidence which can be accounted sufficient to enable a scientific thinker to conclude that miracles are, *à priori*, improbable.

Try another mode of investigation.

Human consciousness is brought into connection with material things by means of nervous tremors—a neural process ; it is easy to conceive of a succession of sentiments, of consciousness eternally prolonged ; indeed, our recollections are not limited to the present—they embrace the past, and our expectations take hold of the future. There is organic union throughout : our thoughts are not separate beads, but as a necklace ; and the string is "organic union"—so we continue

<sup>1</sup> "Recent Advances in Physical Science," p. 26 : Prof. P. G. Tait.

<sup>2</sup> "Natural Philosophy," vol. i. p. 311 : Thomson and Tait.

to be ourselves. If we say—the Mind is a series of feelings, we are obliged to complete the statement by calling it a series of feelings which is aware of itself as past and future. Thus we are brought to the alternative of saying—the Mind is something different from any series of feelings, or that a mere series of feelings can be aware of itself, as a series, which is absurd.

In all this, philosophers who have most carefully studied decide, "there is no need of substance, except as the support and bond of phenomena ;"<sup>1</sup> the ego, our own mind, is the real existence. As we proceed in investigation, the lines become finer and finer, are concerned with new unimaginable elements though the process is thinkable, and we are conscious that go far as we may an untried universe lies beyond ; a region of

"The measures and the forms  
Which an abstract Intelligence supplies,  
Whose kingdom is where Time and Space are not."

Our consciousness of existence may be thought of as pages of algebraic figures which the scientific student reads off into conception of the facts which reveal the splendour and variety of light with untold gradation of blended colours ; or as notes written on the mental tablet, which a musician stirs into sweetest and complex harmony. Thus, arguing on scientific principles, we have, by means of our sensations, an actual revelation, direct or indirect, in signs and symbols to our thoughts, concerning things material and immaterial ; and the laws of thought are laws of our organism. Scientific truths, like spiritual, are waves of the universal flow of existence. Hence, concretes and their abstractions are as the convex and concave of things, the outer and inner meaning, body and soul, the matter and meaning of the stony leaves of history. All modes and grades of knowledge are only differentiations ; therefore, our intelligent consciousness, our reasoned faith as to the unknown, our convictions and experiences as to fine lines of intelligence and emotion extending beyond the world's material surface, claim a place within the domain of human intellect. Not only is Revelation to be found in Holy Scripture, there is a revelation to our conscious-

<sup>1</sup> "English Psychology," p. 119 : Th. Ribot.

ness concerning the Almighty's operations. It binds the natural and supernatural into one splendid unity. It is the bond of continuity in all existence, correlates the mind of man with the body, and, in its concentrated view and comprehension of Nature, is a symbol of the complexity and mystery of the universe.

Further:—

It is demonstrably certain, if Materialism is true, that we cannot take a step physically or mentally, religiously or morally, but in the way and according to the thoughts of the millions who have gone before us. It is not given to any man, however endowed, to rise spontaneously or quickly into intellectual splendour; there is no break, no solution of continuity. At any and every given moment of our history, knowledge has limits which it cannot pass, and every one of us is weak, standing alone.

As if to disprove this mechanical theory, an unknown law intervenes. Not only the thought and work of other men converge in us, the long travail of past centuries—the patience, experience, emotion of all former ages, make us what we are. This rule or empire of the dead is a great and increasing empire; not a small and measurable thing, the interpretations are illimitable; a reservoir of experience for all the living. That is not the whole: a choice few receive unwonted special gifts of which ancestry affords no explanation. Hence, we fairly argue, the human mind is not a gloomy cave, or winding passage leading no whither, dimly lighted with the flame of departed intellects, and filled with the ghosts of dead men's thoughts, but a vessel well prepared, which, receiving rich stores from the past, carries forward the whole man towards perfect truth and supreme good.

Such a revelation from ancient source, to every living man, disposes for ever of that huckstering traffic which would measure the exercise of thought, the flight of fancy, the brilliancy of creative genius, and sell it by weight over the counter of physical experiment. The psychical laws of it are real, true, and further reaching than the physical; their effects may be likened to thrills of the earth seen and measured in a magnetic mirror. There is a revelation of things to our

mental centre, and an interpretation played with exquisite variety on the chords of our emotion: emotion, which makes successive ages spectators, and the great souls of all periods contemporary.

Enlarge the fact.

Energy and brilliancy of thought not being of unvarying quantitative or qualitative stability in an individual, a race, or a period, we are not surprised by appearances, when and where least expected, of great and sudden splendour. The progress not being uniform, but intermittent; at times gathering strength in the clearness consequent upon repose, or some thinker of exceptional power by mighty and sudden wrestling thrusts aside barriers, and wins a wider circle in which thought entrenches itself, thence to go forth with new strength once more to conquer. For example, enormous distance comes between the experience of Pythagoras and the scientific computations of Newton, between common minds and the genius of Shakespeare, between profane persons and men of piety. Throes arise out of the long travail of centuries, from the trouble and struggle of a million workers, and, by passionate exercise concentrating much light and power, turn common-places of effort into miracle-scenes of a wonderful life. This accounts for Moses, the son of a slave, delivering a nation of slaves—rendering them free men; and giving laws which evermore preserved them as a pure race and a peculiar people. This shows how holy Apostles, not having movement and tone from their age, received world-enlightening thought from Jesus Christ.

Timid souls, alarmed at the complicate nature and vast extent of inquiry, exclaim—"Let us leave one another alone; keep to your own province, do not enter ours; let there be peace between us." This will never do: the pact can be observed only so long as neither party is quite in earnest. By no treaty can the domain of truth be divided. No bargaining, nor fencing off, nor any form of process, will maintain artificial barriers against inquiry, or bar the right of way: blessed right, enforced by rightful power. The natural world and spiritual world, the intellectual and the emotional, cannot

be separated in any such fashion. That fatal objection—"It is not true," will cast down any system. Truth will not admit nor allow a lie. Every truth, whether physical or psychical, is connected with all other truth. Science, therefore, must be allowed, without suspicion or hindrance, to pursue her own proper work. The Church will certainly, despite all hindrance, do hers; nor is it limited to purely spiritual consolation, to academic speculation, or mere philosophy; her work is of a very practical nature—to make men honest, true, and pure; you cannot cause it to cease from the pulpit, nor from the hearth, nor from the printing press, it will win and replenish the earth.

The clergy, well aware of this, count it their special office to teach from the pulpit and exhort in the house concerning the great facts—Redemption, Sanctification, Everlasting Life. Not the precise antiquity of the human race—not the exact line separating allegory from history in Scripture—not the interval between miraculous operation and natural cause—not the reconciliation of the Supernatural with ordinary law—are to be greatly enforced on the Holy Day; though it were well for fit men to show what a good and holy thing is Physical Science. Most of them, and rightly, will enforce simple Bible Truth: that every man, as he lives and when he dies, may use Professor Henslow's prayer—"Washed in the Blood of the Lamb: enable me to submit to Thy Holy Will: sanctify me with Thy Spirit." Faith and Prayer of this sort will exist despite scientific difficulties, and outlive them: for God fulfils Himself in many ways, and more is wrought by faith and prayer than the world dreams of. Truths, that seem simplest, are deepest; and in guiding those who have gone astray, helping the tempted, consoling the troubled, our clergy tell us what God has done, what Christ has done, what the Holy Spirit has done, and these truths breathe in the thoughts, burn in the words, are the power of God to the soul.

This teaching, throwing light into many dark places of the Bible, shows that the face which answered to our face in childhood, becomes, as we grow, a reflection of manhood in Christ: an unseen intelligence becoming visible. This en-

largement of meaning with our growth of understanding, the rising of precept and doctrine into rules of higher discipline for the advancement of purity, had long been matter of spiritual experience to devout minds ; but accurate scientific thought led to inquiry whether those parts also which address our reason, not the emotional and reverential faculties, do not possess equal power of enlargement. What have we found ? We have found that the Bible is the boldest and truest book in the world. It says—"Go with the antiquary among ancient ruins, you will find confirmation of my veracity on every medal and in all inscriptions. I love light, hate darkness, rejoice in true science—for it is death to superstition and life to faith." This excellency of the Bible above all other books, and its peculiarity as the Word of God, prove it to be a spiritual organism (Heb. iv. 12). The words are not chosen and arranged as by a scientific man, nor do they contain latent systems of science ; but, when scientific facts become known, they confirm the old letter. As an artist beholds spirit and life in that which, to a common eye, is dead ; or as the sculptor sees genius live and move in the marble that, to another man, is lifeless ; the believer finds the chambers of Scripture to be full of true and holy living things. He says—"I am not great, yet I feel some far-off touch of greatness, not mine own, but of a Heavenly Friend, by whom I shall be great." There are some rare human countenances in which an honest homely look might be counted all ; but in a moment, as if light from heaven shone, depths of soul are revealed glowing with love and truth : so is it with the Bible.

We respectfully ask scientific men whether cold, mechanical, narrow conception and interpretation of the Book are not as scientifically wrong as some old conceptions of Nature are actually false ? whether the difficulties in Scripture do not arise, for the most part, from the low state of knowledge among translators, expositors, readers ? Can a book excite holy emotion, quicken pious resolve, overcome fear of death, enable the low, the vicious, the cruel, to attain elevation, sanctity, and mercifulness, and its powers be accounted for by mechanical arrangements ? Are its peculiar construction—sometimes setting aside modern rules of grammar ; its

splendour of imagery—adorning every chamber of our mind ; its array of facts and historic narration—delighting to confound our theories ; to be interpreted, or corrected, or rejected, because some of our systems are not yet in accord with its statements ? Ought it not to be meted by another measure than the hard analysis of criminal court procedure ? Surely, godly emotions, sense of the Supreme, desire for immortality in purity and truth, are valuable parts of human nature, more worthy of cultivation and reliance than the carnal instincts which crave only to eat, drink, and be merry ?

Let it be a matter of duty to develop the high, as it is a necessity to appease the low. Let the mastery of logical methods and the accuracy of experiment, partake of those more elaborate, delicate, and comprehensive processes of thought and emotion which during long ages have drawn the pure in heart to Scripture, to Faith, to God. If a critic asserts—"Shakespeare had no genius, and Milton no imagination," will not men smile at his folly ? Is it not greater folly to call Moses, the most wonderful of men, "a semi-barbarous Hebrew ;" to account the Prophets enthusiasts, Jesus as wholly human, and the Apostles as deceived or deceivers ? We cannot but hope that He who, in compassionate and unflinching love, prayed for His enemies—"Father, forgive them," will look from the Cross upon those who count themselves wise, turn His sublime suffering countenance upon them, draw them with His love, save them in His mercy.

## STUDY XXII.

### THE KINGDOM OF GOD.

"Institutions are to be judged by their great men; in the end they take their line from their great men. The Christian Church, and the line which is natural to it, and which will one day prevail in it, is to be judged from the saints and the tone of the saints."—MATTHEW ARNOLD, *The Church of England*.

"Deus est homo factus; quid futurus est homo,  
Quem propter Ipse factus est homo Deus?"

"FROM the consideration of ourselves, and what we infallibly find in our own constitutions, our reason leads us to the knowledge of this certain and evident truth, that there is an eternal, most powerful, and most knowing Being"—these are the words of John Locke.<sup>1</sup> The existence of God is a verity real as are mathematical axioms: so thought Descartes—the Infinite, Eternal, Unchangeable, Self-existent, Omniscient, Omnipotent, Creator, is God.<sup>2</sup> Add the belief of Malebranche, that God acts in all things by the counsels of wisdom, and by inspiration of love. Take Newton's words—"He is not eternity and infinity, but Eternal and Infinite; not time and space, but the Ever-Living and Ever-Present, in whom time and space have existence and foundation;" "Non est æternitas et infinitas, sed æternus et infinitus; non est duratio et spatium, sed durat et adest. Durat semper et adest ubique, et existendo semper et ubique, durationem et spatium constituit."<sup>3</sup> We thus form that idea of God which conscience and Holy Scripture approve, and conclude with Descartes—"God is the first and eternal of all the truths which can possibly exist, and the One whence all others proceed."<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> "Human Understanding," book iv. ch. x.

<sup>2</sup> "Discourse on Method," i. p. 161.

<sup>3</sup> "Philosophiæ Naturalis Principia Mathematica, Scholium Generale."

<sup>4</sup> "Letters," i. p. 112.

On this fact, the First Study—"Intelligence is not divorced from Piety," was established.

The same truth takes another form.

The perfect human life is that most conformed, not to blind appetite, but to the enlightened desires of wisdom. Consciousness of this wisdom leads to the conviction that an infinite guiding Mind holds all events within control, and says to every surging wave—"Hitherto shalt thou come, no further." This intelligent Governor is a personal God: for knowing, as well as we know anything, that our own wisdom cannot spring from a world of blind fatality; we also know that the world is not one huge terror, rolling on with mighty speed and energy, mind-less, reason-less, soul-less, crumbling our every hope into disappointment; but a world in which we reach through everything felt and seen, to depths of inwardness, to springs of life, to law of knitted purport. Not one living thing is too minute for Infinite care, or too stupendous for Divine strength. The sun in heaven, or the lowly life rejoicing in his beams; the destiny of an empire, or a tear on infant's cheek; are cared for by One omniscient to guide, omnipotent to save. To know and serve such a God, love and obey Him with fervent emotion and clear intelligence, is highest, happiest, fullest life: it satisfies the purest desire of our being, gives reality to virtue, truth to religion, unity to mankind. The existence of God is written as a law in human nature, and is the immortal original which men have sought to transcribe in all their faiths.<sup>1</sup> "No fantastical art of juggling with words," no sensuality of low animal-men, ever stifled our consciousness of the Supernatural, "We have a more certain knowledge of the existence of a God, than of anything our senses have not immediately discovered to us."<sup>2</sup> The desire of all nations for freedom of conscience is not because of unbelief, but a yearning for inquiry to establish more life and fuller faith. The best man, the man in whom piety and intelligence are duly combined, will say, as Plato did long ago—"The world is guided by an accompanying Divine Power, and receives life and immortality by the appointment of the Creator."<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> "Descartes' Ethics—Liberty," part v. prop. xx.

<sup>2</sup> John Locke, "Human Understanding," book iv. ch. x.

<sup>3</sup> "Plato's Dialogues—Statesmen," p. 270: Jowett's translation.

In Studies of "The Supernatural," "Threshold of Creation," "Rudiments of the World," we arrived at the Creation as a fact. We are not "a crowd of wretches, equally criminal and unfortunate," but children of God—not looking from the outside into halls and saloons, but tenants of a spacious house, to whom all doors are open. Competent to labour, mentally capable of investigation, spiritually desirous of knowing whence we came and whither we go, we somewhat apprehend the influence of spirit on matter; how it is possible for a being to go forth from his own sphere to influence the development of another being: nevertheless, the effective real physical action of one substance upon another is really "unthinkable;" therefore, the actuality of it in Nature, being "unthinkable," is a continual miracle. Unbelievers will have no miracles, and say—"What is so absurd as perpetual miracles in Nature?" Yet the universe is one splendid, universal, all-comprehending miracle: an infinite number of incomprehensible energies acting in, by, and through matter; of living units, the same in essence, but different in degree and capacity of development. The different degrees are classed in families, orders, species, and rise from brute nature, in which life sleeps, to life's spiritual awakening in the splendour of humanity. Minerals and plants, animals and men, things gross and things sublime, all that can be imagined and not imagined, our own world and existence in other known worlds, are but a small part of the infinite whole of the universe. All these existences, separate but mingled with one another, alike and unlike, ever dying yet continuing through innumerable ages in successive evolution, so act for, with, and against one another, that the sounds of life are a grand march-tune of the universe. Every existence is, in itself, a little world; represents, in diminutive mirror, the whole universe. Every creature lives, not of itself; but continues by continual efficacy of the unknown eternal energy in whom all lines of life centre. We all know that the visible is the actual and continual outcome of the Invisible, a manifestation of the Supernatural, a splendid miracle in the whole and essentially miraculous in every part; yet, forsooth our blind men do not see a miracle, nor are the ignorant conscious of Great Intelligence.

An objection is raised—"A miracle is beyond usual law, and science declines to admit such weakness in Omnipotence." We reply—Law is administered and explained by such infinite variety of operation, that no man is able to limit the power of usual operation when an unusual element is introduced. It is gross presumption to imagine that we know all the operation of law, and are so acquainted with the whole course of things that we can say—"It would be a weakness in Omnipotence to act outside the course that we know of, in another course which we do not know."

This statement does not express the whole argument: demonstration may be given.

The highest act of creation is to produce free, responsible beings. We may be sure that a perfect God will perform perfect work and create these free beings. They must be finite beings: for everything created is so of necessity. These finite free beings, in the roll of infinite duration and varying cycles of experience, are liable to misuse their freedom: otherwise, they are not free. This freedom of action inevitably brings in new elements modifying law, requiring new procedure, necessitating special operations of wisdom and power. These special operations, not being in accord with the law hitherto prevailing, but manifesting new powers so as to co-ordinate novel relations, are miracles, actualities to meet necessities; yet not out of, but within the Divine plan; not marks of weakness, nor of short-sightedness, but proofs that omnipotence and omniscience control all existence.

The Studies—"Creative Words," "Days of Creation," "The Two Divine Accounts," "Pre-Adamite Earth"—could not explain the two great mysteries, which must ever be buried in the depths of Divine existence, why God is, and how creation was possible: but they show that God was neither indifferent nor powerless as to the image of the universe eternally imprinted on His Intelligence: He realised it as a manifestation of Himself. The might of God was the worker; the love of God was the inspiring motive; the wisdom of God was the guide. Divine Intelligence is not circumscribed as is our intelligence, and certainly it is better to speak

of God's attributes as those of mind rather than those of matter.

Did God create the world from without Himself? If so, a being acting from without himself is not infinite, but as a sculptor who fashions from marble.

Did God act upon chaos, as Anaxagoras said—Mind moving inert matter? or, as the Demiurgos of Plato—impress luminous ideas of the good and beautiful? or did the world, being eternal, in virtue of God's secret aspiration, as Aristotle would say, move towards Him who attracteth all things; yet in His Solitude and Bliss, regardeth them not?

Put it otherwise:—Did God create the world from within Himself? then the world is Himself, His substance, His life: this is Pantheism. Did He create the world from without Himself? then He is not infinite.

How are these difficulties, as to a personal God and as to Pantheism, to be overcome?

A personal God is an Individual, not an absolutely abstract notion which we form concerning infinitude and universality, but the I Am, the self-existent, all-perfect Being. Do we, by this Personality, represent to ourselves a superb idol who truly may dwell in heaven—that is, a limited space; yet, though we load him with brilliant gifts and magnificent attributes, is but a dwarf in comparison with the Infinite whose abode is immensity, whose duration is eternity? Certainly not: for the more we meditate upon personality and creation, the surer becomes our conviction that all difficulties arise only from our ignorance; whereas Pantheism contains fatal contradictions.

Pantheism reproaches Scripture for making God like man, yet falls itself into something lower than anthropomorphism—grossest materialism; by attributing the properties of matter and the imperfections of creatures to the Creator. There is nothing more contrary to the idea of perfection than that it should develop; yet this is the Pantheistic illusion. Pantheists liken God to the activities of the universe; make Him a being who changes, who develops; and, consequently, is infinitely short of perfection. Nor is that all: their God, without the world, is incomplete; a God—wanting essence, a power—

without effect, a cause—without activity, wisdom—without purpose, love—without object ; such a God, without the world, is no God ; and His extinction takes place with the extinction of Nature.

Our God, the Personal God, is the Principle, the Spirit, the Universal, who inhabits heaven, earth, infinity, eternity. He is not, in creating, as a Michael Angelo, who draws forth Moses from a block of marble. He is not, in His own life, as a grain of wheat germinating ; not as an oak extending its branches ; with profounder energy and more sublime activity than matter can exhibit, or we conceive, He exists and creates. He is not to be conceived of as under the necessity of acting from within or without Himself ; such conceptions are human and finite, have their limits in space, in time ; God is Infinite, Eternal, Perfect, Self-sufficient, but the world is in course of development. God is in eternity—the Eternal ; the world is in time—the temporal. The moments of time do not compose eternity ; time is neither within nor without it ; yet, eternity is the reason of its being. In like manner, the world which is incomplete—but becomes complete, is not strictly either within or without Him—the Eternally Complete ; yet He is the reason, cause, founder of it. The relation is unique, incomparable, mysterious, but a relation certain and demonstrated. Whatsoever is gross in words must be laid aside and the inner spirit regarded : God, in eternity, eternally sees time, space, the world. In time, He sees the expression of His Eternity ; in space, the expression of His Infinity ; in the world, the expression of the communicable powers of His Infinite Being. Our happiness consists not, nor will it ever, of full possession—nothing further to know, no more to desire : continual progress will find new pleasures, ever discover new perfections in the Infinite and Eternal.

The Studies of Divine Operation in the various creative Works of the Days, evidenced the reality, definiteness, comprehensiveness, simplicity, complexity, of the Scripture narrative. The Study, "Variety in Nature," was of the endless versatility in Nature : Law is not bound with links of Fate, but beautiful in capacity of adaptation, and a means of

trial and discipline for improvable and responsible creatures. The Study of "The Invisible Universe" regarded worlds as a vast procession from the unseen to the seen; to return in due order from the House of Time to the Eternal Dominion. By "Follies of the Wise," we learn that there is a wisdom of the world which is proved to be folly.

The argument, in all the Studies, has been variably and variously conducted. The inquiry progressed unrestrainedly along many lines of thought, that through intelligent intercourse with ourselves and Nature we might see by reason, by conscience, by science, that the Bible is the Book of God: not an evolution or a product of unaided human intellect, but a Divine Revelation of things wholly unknown, that our disciplined freedom may partake of more glorious Freedom, of some greater Reality.

"The Kingdom of God," our present Study, has several times and meanings allotted to it: 1. The Gospel period; 2. The kingdom for which we pray—"Thy Kingdom Come;" 3. The kingdom of Glory. Not in any of these senses, but in the large meaning of God's Providence and Spiritual Rule amongst men, is it now to be considered. Our investigation therefore, is as to Religion in the world generally, and will aim at the establishment of sound knowledge concerning our Christian Faith: according to which Faith we believe that God is distinct from the world—is a living God, possessing His Own life, a God to be worshipped—the Creator.

Religion and History possess a kind of organic existence, which enables us to explain, by general laws, many past and present phenomena of human life. We calculate and enumerate special faults, habits, and vices of mixed communities; and see the agreement of immense multitudes as to traditions and beliefs, "quod ubique, quod semper, quod ab omnibus creditum est," extending from remotest periods to present time; from primitive culture until the high Faith of Christianity stands complete in doctrines, in rites, in ceremonies. It is thought that we can trace the growth of Faith in the world, as were it of human origination—a product of human culture. It is asserted that evidence as to the ancient phases of religious

consciousness ; evidence concerning the nature, meaning, practice, of rites and ceremonies ; evidence of their transmission, expansion, restriction, modification ; gives a natural explanation of the most sacred and high powers of religion.

The fault, or weak part, in the assumed Natural Philosophy of Religion is, that as the culture of science and art, of history and philosophy, displays a world-long evolution of civilisations wrought out wholly by men in their ascent toward highest development ; the same process is assumed as to religion, but the great fact of the Supernatural, on which all religion rests, and without which all religion is vain, is either denied or persistently ignored. Ignored—despite the truth that, from earliest days till now, the universal consciousness, conscience, intelligence of mankind, accepted and accept the Supernatural. Denied—despite the fact that Christianity, Mohammedanism, Brahminism, Buddhism, Zoroastrism, and all other Faiths down to lowest brutal Fetishism, claim Divinity in their origin and continuance.

The folly of ignoring the miraculous becomes more evident when we learn—"the relation of savagery to barbarism and semi-civilisation lies almost wholly in pre-historic or extra-historic regions. . . . Direct history hardly tells anything of the changes of savage culture. . . . Perhaps no account of the course of culture in its lower stages can satisfy stringent criticism."<sup>1</sup> The philosophy of religion, which professes to account for the origin, nature, development of religion, is confessedly ignorant of that origin, and can trace only a few steps of its backward course. Moreover, Mr. Tylor says—"Separation of intelligence from virtue which accounts for so much of the wrong-doing of mankind, is continually seen to happen in the great movements of civilisation."<sup>2</sup> He adds—"ethnographers consider the rude life of primeval man under favourable conditions to have been, in its measure, a good and happy life."<sup>3</sup> Knowing, further, the fact thus expressed by Bishop Butler—"Mankind are for placing the stress of their religion anywhere rather than in virtue ;" it seems, if the doctrine or philosophy of a natural evolution of religion

<sup>1</sup> "Primitive Culture," vol. i. p. 35 : Edward B. Tylor.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.* vol. i. p. 25.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.* p. 27.

be true, that uncultured ancient men devised supernatural restraints on vice and encouragements to virtue; but that cultured men, "in the great movements of civilisation," through unbelief discard those supernatural restraints and separate intelligence from virtue. The conclusion is irresistible—Religion, resting upon faith in the supernatural, far from being an evolution by advancing intelligence, is that very thing which culture, through unbelief of the supernatural, sets itself to destroy.

Banishment of the supernatural, establishing the throne of reason apart from those high emotional faculties which are the essence of humanity, has brought to trial the long and intricate world-history of right and wrong. Secularism, undertaking accurately to formulate all knowledge, has been forced to admit the remarkable fact that all natural phenomena rest on the transcendental—on the unknown. The tools that opponents of the supernatural perverted into weapons of destruction are being restored to their real use: to clear, trim, adjust, appropriate thoughts and facts for that contentment of religious emotion and satisfaction of intelligence which are the great want of our day.

Some of the facts and processes of thought lie distant from us in time, as the stars are distant from us in space, but the laws of mind, like those of the physical universe, are not bounded by the unaided experience of our senses. History, philosophy, science, bring to view factors of natural philosophy as foundations of positive morality—morality resting on consciousness of the Supreme. Scientific thought which, as by polarising force, separated the natural from the supernatural to the utmost limits of repulsion, now recognises that—as in material things, so in spiritual—the ultimate cause is the Unknown. The end of things and the beginning of things are hidden in impenetrable mystery. We are incapable of understanding the nonentity out of which they were drawn, and unable to comprehend the infinity into which they are translated.

Proceed to the verification of this.

The order in which various stages of doctrine and rite succeed one another in the history of religion, and the fact

that most of those doctrines and rites are not products of the particular systems sanctioning them—but results of previous systems, carry back religion to that early stage which is pre-historic or extra-historic. Hence, religious feeling springs from that primitive universal desire of the human race to establish a relationship between itself and those superhuman and supernatural powers upon whose will the course of Nature and the well-being of men were felt to be dependent. This roots religion in the beginning of the life of our race, in the deepest recesses and essential elements of our nature, and clothes it with the highest authority which antiquity, reverence, reason, can afford.

The various symbols with which this consciousness clothes itself, the external practices and forms of words, may change and die; but under all the superficial differences are a few certain unchangeable and undying truths. Only three need to be mentioned:—

1. The conviction of a Divine and Supernatural Power is always accompanied by an attempted twofold intercourse with that Power: prayer, by which the worshipper communes with Him; and an asserted revelation from Him to the creature. In other words—"The religious consciousness regarded as a sense of the presence of the Divine in the universe and among mankind, is found in all stages of human history, and constitutes a primary efficiency in religion, in social life, and in civilisation."<sup>1</sup>

2. There exists, it is affirmed, an abode in which men abide after death. "Looking at the religion of the lower races as a whole, we shall at least not be ill advised in taking as one of its general and principal elements the doctrine of the soul's Future Life."<sup>2</sup>

3. The reality of evil is an abiding conviction. Evil, as to the body, which no industry, no political arrangement, can destroy. Evil, as to the soul, in its weakness and passions. We find it everywhere. It lies in the old Pythagorean doctrine of the metempsychosis. Of Plato it is said—"A tolerably complete doctrinal statement might be gathered

<sup>1</sup> "God in History," vol. iii. p. 302: Bunsen.

<sup>2</sup> "Primitive Culture," vol. ii. p. 19: Edward B. Tylor.

from his works of the origin, nature, and effects of sin."<sup>1</sup> Polybius would check "the unruly passions and desires of man, by the fear of the invisible and such like tales of horror."<sup>2</sup> Cicero says of the sparks of virtue—"They are quickly extinguished by corrupt habit and thought, so that the light of Nature nowhere appears."<sup>3</sup>

In connection with these universal convictions exist holy places, persons, things; to which are added observances, ceremonies, rites; the outcome of an undeniable fact that God was prominent in the minds of primitive men, that they perceived a Spirit in everything, mysterious ghostliness in all dark space. No tribe nor people has ever been discovered in the whole course of human history that has not a religion of some kind or other. These religions are not indefinitely variable: the great moral truths are substantially the same. The aborigines of Australia were said to have no idea of the Supreme, no object of worship, "nothing whatever of the character of religion, or of religious observance, to distinguish them from the beasts that perish;"<sup>4</sup> yet in the same book are statements and traditions concerning supernatural beings, of the author of mischief in the form of a serpent, of souls, demons, deities. "No religion of mankind lies in utter isolation from the rest, and the thoughts and principles of modern Christianity are attached to intellectual clues which run back through far pre-Christian ages to the very origin of human civilisation, perhaps even of human existence."<sup>5</sup>

This last statement is not perfectly accurate as to Christianity, which possesses essential truths of its own. Accept, however, as fact, that the similarity found in ancient faiths is so great that it must arise either from the relics of an ancient revelation, or from universal convictions interwoven with the very life of the soul. There is, indeed, sufficient resemblance in Theologies to show that, for the most part, they rest upon a common consciousness of the supernatural; sufficient to

<sup>1</sup> "Christian Element in Plato:" Dr. C. Ackerman.

<sup>2</sup> Neander's "Church History," vol. i. p. 8.

<sup>3</sup> "Tuscu. Quest." lib. iii. *in proem.*

<sup>4</sup> "Queensland:" J. D. Lang.

<sup>5</sup> "Primitive Culture," vol. i. p. 381: Edward B. Tylor.

mark a dim, confused recollection and tradition of a Divine communication; but not sufficient to enable us to gather out of other faiths our Christian Faith. A committee of inquiry could not collect Christianity from theologies, nor a representative council co-ordinate it as the growth of universal consciousness. Christianity is neither a development nor an evolution, it is a revelation and realisation. "It is the blessed disclosure of that mystery which had been sealed in silence since the foundation of the world. . . . It is a bringing home to every living soul of that which had been the dim and latent hope of the poor suffering heart of humanity in all ages and in all times, but which never became an objective reality until angel voices on the slopes of Bethlehem sang of peace and blessedness to mankind."<sup>1</sup>

There is, consequently, a moral order, a false and a true, a right and a wrong. Indeed, all intelligent intercourse with ourselves and with the outer world rests on our faith that the good is true and the true is good. Not to accept this would conduct a man to insanity, and a race to stupidity: not even in the stupidity of savagery is the moral element absent though scanty. Where formal precept fails, traditional consensus and public opinion exist by which actions are held to be good or bad, right or wrong. Where religion is separated from morals, as it greatly is in barbarism, and partly in some low forms of professedly Christian faith, the sense of morality is never wholly lost from consciousness and life. On this sense of moral order, of the reality of truth, rests the possibility of a Kingdom of God amongst men, the potentiality of our grand creed that God is our Father, Heaven is our Home.

We now transfer our argument to the advance of art and science.

The similarity of early fishing, hunting, warlike instruments, indicates that they were contrived almost instinctively by a sort of natural necessity: these rude beginnings advanced to the improvements of modern skill. Civilisation, itself a work of skill, the joint advance of art and science, effects

<sup>1</sup> Bishop of Gloucester and Bristol, "Modern Unbelief," p. 56.

a general improvement of mankind ; promotes human power and happiness by higher organisation of the individual and of society ; but the advance is not, necessarily, a growth of moral order. Some developments of science are positively evil, abound in debasing arts, sensuous godless literature, utterly corrupt. We try to make distinctions in favour of civilisation, to prove that the street arab is a specimen of broken-down civilisation—who never was civilised ; and is, to the Hottentot, as a ruined house to a builder's yard ; and we gloss over the hideous depravity and appalling misery of the dangerous classes in our large cities ; but all in vain. Civilisation does not, of itself, destroy either impurity or superstition. The ancient Etruscans, like the modern Chinese, are examples of skill and delicacy in goldsmith's work and ivory carving. We have not surpassed the Greek in oratory, or in sculpture ; nor exceeded Rome in policy and law. Arts of skill and elegance flourished, and still flourish, in connection with abounding cruelty, profligacy, impurity. Far from religion, or moral order, growing, as by evolution, with the growth of civilisation—all the great advances of civilisation were marred by a separation of secularity from piety, by divorce of purity from manners.

Nor is that all : when we survey the flights and quaint fancies of primitive tribes, and try to trace them into a higher morality, no example of a forward path is presented ; nor do existing savages advance as men pressing forward to the light, they grope and stumble in darkness.

Yet further, the holiest life ever looked on by the world, and the purest code of morals, which have so marvellously influenced the world for righteousness, and of which we are looking for some new manifestation of spirit and power, are not found in the luxurious and refined cities of Athens, or Corinth, or Rome, but amongst the Jews—a nation not greatly eminent for skill in art or science, but remarkable for purity of culture.

If it be said—Epictetus and Marcus Aurelius were also moral heroes ; and may, in some respects, be compared with Jewish saints ; we reply—These great men furnish the strongest evidence that their virtues were rather by intuition and inde-

structible consciousness residing in human nature, certainly not the product of civilisation ; for civilisation in the age of the Antonines could not evolve any except a low type of morality.

History proves that piety was not invented by savagery, is not established by civilisation ; but of nobler place, and at war with the evil of both.

Piety, or yearning for a better life and immortality, was not created by primitive poetic fancy, as may be proved by existing myths. Myths do not merely contain a rudimentary cosmic philosophy : an uncivilised race must possess considerable latent philosophy ere a rich mythology can be constructed. Arranging these myths in large assorted groups of ancient imaginative process, the originating thoughts may be traced in different lands—they appear with the regularity of mental law. The inner truth is always stronger and stranger than the fictitious surface ; and these myths, as proving the well-marked and consistent structure of the human mind in all ages, are the very best history. They reveal ancestral heirlooms of thought ; the texture of ancient minds ; and, while placing on record arts and manners, tell of philosophy and religion in times wholly lost from formal history.

The child-like and poetical fancy of early men recognised every natural event as the pictured or representative operation of personal life and will. The Caucasian mind carved out shapes of Nature for itself ; and, with hues well pleasing, designed silent faces of the Great and Wise—figures of the Immortal. It was Jove who stretched the rainbow down from heaven, a purple sign of war and tempest ; or, sent it, as Iris, a messenger between gods and men. Analogies, which to us are mere fancies, were realities to the ancients. Orientals were not the sole possessors of power in imagery : the Death-goddess, stern, livid, grim ; with strong-barred house and nine worlds of departed souls ; Hunger—her dish, Famine—her knife, Care—her bed, Misery—her curtain, was a powerful being to the old Norseman. Whatever was seen gave birth to fancies ; and fully to understand old-world myths needs not evidence nor argument, but deep poetic feeling—the faculty

of transporting our spirit into the atmosphere and romance of former life.

The thoughtful man traces in these myths a consciousness and picture-history of the work of God. Sometimes crude, narrow, repulsive; yet, modern poets' fictions, however delicately shaped, want that reality of power wherewith archaic forms acted with an immense effect on life and faith which the world has not even yet outgrown. Even if every myth were nought but wild lawlessness of imagination, having no pattern whether in heaven or earth, what a wonderful land of genius did those early men win and occupy! These births from the imagination of the poet, the tale-teller, the seer, disclose so rich a fancy, such creative power and mystic mazes of thought, that modern inventive poetic powers are put to the blush. Milton's Sin and Death sitting within the gates of hell, and their bridge across the deep abyss to earth, powerfully done, are true antiques. The modern fictions of artistic beauty and highly wrought fancies, with which civilised man delights himself, possess not the reality nor freshness of the phantasms which brightened ancient imagination and deepened devotion. We have lost the key of mythic-cypher; but could we translate the complex shifting terms into reality, and read off the meaning in worship, love, adventure, war; their life and beauty would go far to prove that the masterpieces of imagination belong rather to the past than to the present.

Unconsciously often, and despite themselves, the shapers of poetic myth and legend in their lives of gods, goddesses, and superhuman heroes, displayed the structure and operation of their own minds, the philosophy and religion of their own times, as if the earliest and highest fountain of thought issued from consciousness of Deity.

Amongst lowest races the gods of legend and worship are of mixed personality. Man is the type of deity, human society and government are models of Divine society. There are chiefs and kings among men, and on high great gods among little gods, the difference being rather of rank than of nature. In after-times, culture does not invent, but develops amongst Aryan nations, and descends to lowest form in

Fetishism. Sir William Jones writes—"We must not be surprised at finding, on a close examination, that the characters of all the Pagan deities, male and female, melt into each other, and at last into one or two; for it seems a well-founded opinion that the crowds of gods and goddesses in ancient Rome, and modern Várânes (Benares), mean only the powers of Nature, and principally those of the sun, expressed in a variety of ways and by a multitude of fanciful names."<sup>1</sup>

The statement of Sir William Jones evidences that theology, even amongst rude races, rested not on the error—that there are many gods; but on the truth—there is one God, the Divine ancestor of men, Shaper, Animator, Ruler, Spirit, holding up heaven, shining in the sun, smiting with the thunder. Nature was the high priestess, not goddess; but a symbol of Him, the Giver of Wisdom; of Him who is Good as True. It is clear that a conviction of the Being of one God, is not an evolution from highly cultured world-consciousness acting on appropriate facts, but a primitive faith. This is further shown by the fact that some highly cultured races have low doctrines and rites; while others, not so intellectually gifted, form exalted conceptions of the Supreme. There is also among existing genuine savage faiths not only a rudimentary form of idea as to the deep problem of good and evil, but an effort to solve the mystery by realisation of the good and by victory over evil. The good, the valiant, all who excel, are heroes, divine men; symbols, though not understood, of Him who became Incarnate.

#### DOCTRINE OF SOULS.

There are two beliefs: 1. Every creature has a soul capable of continued existence; therefore, the dead chief's horse is slain at the tomb for use of the human spirit. 2. There are souls and spirits ranging from low degree to the high rank of powerful deities.

1. "The theory of the soul is one principal part of a system of religious philosophy, which unites in an unbroken line of mental connection, the savage Fetish-worshipper and the

<sup>1</sup> The First Anniversary Discourse before the Asiatic Society of Bengal.

civilised Christian."<sup>1</sup> This unbroken line of mental connection, this universal and imperishable conviction, is found in the soul-depths of every human creature; and reminds us, though sometimes in rudest quaintest symbols, of a Spiritual Kingdom.

In lowest levels of culture the notion of a ghost-soul occasionally inhabiting the dead body, and in vision and dream appearing out of the body, is deeply ingrained. This faith inevitably leads to acts of reverence and propitiation. Part of the old culture of souls and spirits survives in modern spiritualism.

It is believed that phantasms are ghosts; that, being disembodied, they can enter the sleeper's mind and excite perception apart from any external or objective figure. As to persons awake, spirits are said to be visible to some, to others invisible, according to the will of the spirits. It is also taken for granted, both in rudest and most advanced culture, that spirits recognise one another by a likeness of the body retained in the disembodied state. Man's spirit, after death, lives in complete and abiding human shape:

"Eternal form shall still divide  
The eternal soul from all beside;  
And I shall know him when we meet."

*In Memoriam.*

2. In Zulu theology, not only do souls exist after the death of the body, but are spirits and deities worshipped by the living. In modern thought, the soul furnishes a more intellectual side to the religious doctrine of the future life; but, in all faiths, however unintellectual, it is an essential. The most formal denial of future life, found amongst an uncultured race, is in a poem of the Dinka tribe concerning Dendrid the Creator:

"He made man:  
And man comes forth, goes down into the ground, and comes no more."

There is, nevertheless, even in this tribe, testimony to belief in another life. Indeed, the continued existence of the soul,

<sup>1</sup> "Primitive Culture:" Edward B. Tylor.

after the death of the body, may be counted part of the universal faith.

Two forms of doctrine are found :—

1. The Transmigration of souls, which, ascending from lower stages, has established itself amongst the huge communities of Asia.

2. The separate personal Existence of the Soul, found not only amongst rude and primitive men, but in the heart of Christianity—where it is at once an inducement to goodness, a sustainer of hope, and a solution to the problem presented by the mixed state of our present life.

The savage mind is generally incapable of a large and clear view of immortality; all dull and careless natures are wont to regard the world to come as far off; but conviction of its reality finds expression in every definition of faith. Sometimes continuance of life is the main fact, sometimes retribution is the chief feature.

Four great regions are assigned to the dead: hell, earth, hades, heaven, and the conception of them does not sink into dreaminess, but is characterised rather by ghostliness. The low creeds have little moral element in connection with the state and place of the departed. It was reserved for our Christian Faith to implant righteousness and holiness, to give the inspiration of duty and love, and to constitute them chief verities in the Kingdom of God.

#### FUTURE RETRIBUTION.

The idea of future retribution and different grades of condition is not universal: some savage races are in an intermediate condition between the continuance theory and the retribution theory. This confirms the New Testament statement that the revelation of a pure and glorious immortality is by Jesus Christ.

All races have idea of the soul outliving the body in a country of ghosts; and all carnal men, whether of low or high culture, count a corner in this world the better place. In all faiths, except the Christian Faith, whether the spirit dwells with the body in the grave, or is secluded in a subterranean void, or abides in the dark classic realm of hades, or occupies

the Roman Orcus of pallid souls, or roams the ghostly prairie of the savage hunter, the life is shadowy and dismal. The Sheol of ancient Jewish dead was, to common conception, but little better—a place where the dead met the dead. Nevertheless, we can trace amongst many barbarous nations germs of that holy comforting doctrine which lies at the very heart of Christianity; but the roads by which a happy land is attained are so strangely different that the path of life to one race seems to another a very descent into the pit. The chief idea in low culture is—what gives prosperity or renown here will give it hereafter; present contrasts have reality in future existence; “the good are good warriors and hunters,” said the Pawnee chief; but as the good, whatever it may mean, is a qualification for reward, the theory, even among lowest races, belongs to morality.

The crude primitive faith pictures a spectral abode. The higher faiths more and more spiritualise the definite regions of heaven and hell into states rather than localities of happiness and misery. In the last hours of earthly dwelling godly men say of the coming change—“It is not death, but life.” Mourners, setting aside the evidence of their physical senses, exclaim—“Life is not severed by fatal shears, only the bands of earth, the consummation is in eternal glory.” The Christian Faith reveals a state of perfect purity; and to aid our conception of it brings to view a building of God, a house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens.

#### THE POWER AND DOCTRINE OF HOLY SCRIPTURE.

The attempts which have been made to discredit the Divine Inspiration of Holy Scripture, and to disprove Prophecy, faith in a Personal God, in moral order, in spiritual existence, in judgment to come, have led to searching investigation.

A certain predictive power seems to be possessed by peculiar states of human consciousness, and prophecy of some kind has been found to exist among all nations. Apart from any sacred purpose, considered as a mere faculty in the human mind, it is something distinct from intelligent thought and consciousness, but not inconsistent with them: it is a part of the relation of the psyche to the inner and outer world. In

Hellas, the office of the Pythia, with the rational prophet or *ὑποφήτης* to stand beside her ; and amongst Jews, the school of the Prophets ; are historical proofs.

The power, in its lowest form, is a morbid condition of consciousness, or a sickly brooding enthusiasm ; but, though uncertain in the degree and accuracy of prophetic enunciation, it has, through the whole course of history, obtained and kept power over stoutest minds. In high states, or the spiritual grade—we speak not of the sacred and Divine as found in Holy Scripture—the inward vision is allied with the faculty of recollection ; is related to, but is not, demoniacal possession.

It is an error to assume that it belongs wholly to lower culture, and will be destroyed by higher medical knowledge. Higher medical knowledge will do well to investigate it as psychic power. In British India, moving, writhing, tearing men, are entered by a psychic power and oracles are uttered. This kind of prophecy, or prevision, or delusion, or disease, or whatever it may be, arose in times of so-called barbarism ; continued in full vigour throughout the classic world, and exists now scarcely altered. Men, who naturally have neither ability nor eloquence, will, in the possessed state, pour forth earnest lofty declamation in well-knit harangue of metaphor and poetic figure.

We are not prepared with any explanation, and only use the fact as one of the many links by which human consciousness is united to a world of occult influences ; and as example, whether good or bad, of the verity of that higher and holier power which is manifested in Scripture. The relation seems to be somewhat like that of the divining damsel, at Philippi, to St. Paul and the preached gospel (Acts xvi. 16-18).

These investigations, carried into fields of thought, worked, for the most part, by those who refuse Holy Scripture, show that the attempt of physicists to limit the universe to material existences is in opposition to universal consciousness and experience. Matter is but one small piece of furniture in the many-chambered House of God. There is world within world, as there are stars beyond stars ; and space, where we see nothing, teems with a more manifold existence than that

exhibited in material forms. It is the high attribute of true Art and Science to suggest infinitely more than they express; suggestions that all material things are not carcasses of the dead, but rather germs of life. We all, at times, have the shuddering impression, embodied by Coleridge in dark and fearful verse, that something not of earth is behind us; and he is less than man who does not weave wild contrasts of heights and depths, of solemn mysteries, of possible loss, of holy and eternal triumph,

"A spirit moves within us, and impels  
The passion of a prophet to our lips."

Inner powers are ready to be quickened into the life of manifold senses: senses by which we see—not with the eye; and hear—not by the ear; faculties enabling the soul to discriminate between spirit and spirit, evoking forms now coiled as in chrysalis web, that we may stand perfect in vital organisation.

Take example, a cultivator of positive science, endowed with healthiest of human brains, Sir Humphry Davy. By inhalation of nitrous oxide, he was abstracted from all external things, losing perception of them. Trains of visible images, strangely linked with words, passed rapidly through his mind; so that he "existed in a world of newly connected and newly modified ideas." On awaking he resolved that the universe had its chief reality in the mind. If so slight a cause, till then unknown, gave exhilaration, elasticity, vigour, refreshing and doubling the grandeur and might of intellectual man; it is certain that many occult influences run through all creation; and our present faculties, duly heightened, might establish communication wherever beings live and think. Man already obtains favours that are marvellous; yet, he does but touch the infinite; can only meditate a little on evils that perplex—not disable and disarm them; can but desire the exquisite and perfectly good—not possess it.

The consideration of these mental phenomena and potentialities enables us to make a profitable definite examination of Holy Scripture.

The examination aims at showing that the Infinite Spirit has entered finite Nature ; that the Voice which past generations believed to be the Voice of God revealing deep mysteries, is a true Voice ; that Christianity consists of a definite positive body of truths admitting neither addition nor diminution except by Divine Authority ; and that the Bible is not such a book as man would make, if he could ; or could make, if he would.

The indications of unity in the Bible, despite being the work of many writers who were separated by wide intervals in time and space, are proof of a plan running through the whole, and render it impossible for the Book to be a work either of chance or of human contrivance.

More varied in its contents, in its writers, in its ages, than any other book ; it raises unwearied testimony against the universal tendency to polytheism ; and, as if to disprove the possibility of it being the product or evolution of human consciousness, it everywhere maintains a sublime doctrine of monotheism. This Book, alone of all books, resisted and overcame the tendency to worship many gods ; and declared of the one God—"His the greatness, and the power, and the glory, and the victory, and the majesty : for all that is in the heaven and in the earth is His ; and He reigneth over all."

With the unique spiritual sublimity, is an inversion of the seeming relative importance of events. The rise and fall of empires, changes and revolutions which fill nations with terror or triumph, sure to be recorded on human page, have here little or no mention. A small people, domestic scenes, family trials, traits of personal character, are invested with peculiar greatness, some mysterious connection with moral government by the Supreme Ruler. The world rings with the fame of great captains, the earth shakes beneath the tread of innumerable legions, and the writers of this strange Book are not deaf ; nevertheless, the Bible is silent and unconcerned as sun and stars : only those events are regarded as great which bear on the development and issues of that spiritual empire, or Kingdom of God, which the Book asserts is being founded and builded in the world.

While crowns and sceptres lie about as neglected things, the foundations of earthly morality are established on the fact of our intimate connection with heaven. Human laws derive their sanction and authority from Divine Will: Will, determined by supreme rectitude, wisdom, power, enjoining what is good and claiming supremacy by right. This dominant idea subordinates everything to the ultimate triumph of a spiritual empire.

Other systems form two different spheres of duty—religion and morality. Religion, separated from its chief root, fails even to maintain the soul's consciousness of God; and morality, apart from Divinity, becomes utterly corrupt. The Bible alone co-ordinates morality with religion; not in analogy with any merely human system, nor in accord with the universal tendency of sensuous civilisation to fall into materialism.

History shows that human nature, left to itself, would never have devised the moral code of Scripture; any more than the worm that crawls could claim the attributes of an eagle that flies. Patience, humility, meekness, spiritual purity, reliance on God, forgiveness of injury, are not, in the world's estimate, constituents of heroic character, nor most worthy of applause. These chief features of Bible morality are not the native lineaments of human nature; and secularists doubt whether they really are virtues. Refined selfishness, systematic shrewd culture and indulgence of the natural appetites, self-assertion, are the worldly graces. Nevertheless, the wise adaptation and comprehensiveness of Bible religion are so great, that millions declare "every mood and necessity of our moral and spiritual life are therein exhaustively expressed." The morality and doctrine propounded are so exquisitely adapted to the circumstances of the nature which it guides, sustains, exalts; yet, so out of the range of all that unassisted Nature would suggest; that men, emulous of good, find their hearts filled with joy in realisation of the good; and no more doubt concerning the Divinity of its definite and positive body of truth than they doubt the evidence of their senses.

As to the Old Testament, it may and does honour the Jews; but, so far from glorifying that nation, it constitutes, if

false, one long libel ; telling them that they are a "perverse and stiff-necked generation," refusing alike warning and reformation till they become a "hissing and a by-word among the nations ;" nevertheless, as Pascal says, "they preserve it at the expense of their life."<sup>1</sup> It is certain that they could not have invented it ; not in barbarian, nor Jewish, nor Greek, nor Roman nature, do we discover elements out of which the Bible Religion could have been spontaneously evolved as a growth of national genius and culture ; or as an ideally conceived deliberate fiction ; or as an aggregation of myth and legend. What we do discover is a plain statement that human nature, far from being able of itself to erect a kingdom of immortal glory, is ever going down to mouldering rubbish, to utter and perpetual desolation, forgetting to take God into account at all ; but that God, by patient endurance of human folly, by merciful forgiveness of sin, by propounding a holy law to work beautiful humility and desire after holiness, prepares men for a reign of righteousness. We hear as it were a sound, not from halls of philosophy, not from prince's palace, not from intrigues of statesmen ; the sound as of ocean on distant shore, and a sweet strange melody of men and angels concerning issues of an invisible spiritual empire.

As to Christianity, far from being a natural growth of Jewish nature, it has roused, for nineteen hundred years, the undying animosity of that race. The Messiah, though, as Christians think, plainly prophesied of, shocked their national prejudices, wrecked their hope of martial dominion, and so evoked fierce indignation that they crucified Him. The few, however, who knew Him best, accepted Him, made Him known to the nations, and were the faithful, wise expositors of His will. They painted no fancy portrait, but a true likeness, showed how the man, Christ, transcended manhood and in Himself antedated and realised beforehand the ultimate perfection of our race. Christ, in personal character and in the essence of His teaching, is perfection : clearly beyond the plane of unaided human nature—a phenomenon to be expected, if evolution be true, in the future, not one who has

<sup>1</sup> "Cependant, ce livre qui les déshonore en tant de façons, ils le conserve aux dépens de leur vie."—Pensées, tom. ii. p. 139.

already for two thousand years fixed the admiring gaze of mankind.

Scripture, as a whole, far from being an outgrowth of human reason and philosophy, is well-nigh for ever in opposition to the wisdom of the world. Moreover, the antiquity of the writings places them at an earlier age than any in which such an evolution was possible. If the writings are not ancient and genuine, but modern and forgeries, how and when were they palmed on the nation as true? It must have been so cleverly done that not a murmur of complaint has come down to us; not only so, the conception of such a Messiah as Christ was antagonistic to the Jews' deepest prejudices and principles. The spontaneous and natural projection by Jewish mind of a Messiah, whose humble origin and condition, character, teaching, and ignominious death, have ever made Him an object of hatred to the race, is incredible and impossible. The only allegiance, moreover, which this Messiah accepts is a voluntary one, founded on the love of truth, the practice of piety, the exhibition of holiness; yet, He claims universal empire; and predicts His own supreme rule over heart and mind and will throughout the world. In connection with, and a means of winning, such wide domain, is an intense spirit of proselytism: the gospel must be proclaimed "to all nations under heaven," and preached "to every creature:" nevertheless, no sword must smite, no violence compel, no persecution hurt opponents; every victory must be gained by truth, graced by purity, illumined by love. The rights of conscience are held sacred, and the principle of toleration is consecrated. Such a system, to the Jews, a paradox; to the Gentiles, contemptible; to the natural tendencies of our race, contrary; could neither originate nor continue unless by superhuman illumination and power. The genius of man, the wisdom of man, the civilisation of man, whenever departing from this Faith—whether for esoteric mysteries, or rationalistic interpretations—have overshadowed and blighted doctrine and morality. Investigation confirms the affirmation—"the Bible is not such a book as man would make, if he could; or could make, if he would."

There are other peculiarities in Holy Scripture, of a remark-

able and practical character, in which men, for the most part, go astray.

The way of understanding the Book, is—"He that doeth the will of God shall know of the doctrine whether it be of God." This one simple rule is the surest method of advancing in the knowledge of Divine Truth; and, indeed, the only way of learning things of a sacred and practical nature. It leads to, and keeps in the right path, true-hearted men, like the Apostles, though to worldly wise men the path is hard to find and harder to keep. The soul, possessing this rectifying instrument of obedience, detects where a fallacy lies; and, as by a touch, discerns between the living and the dead.

A second peculiarity is, that while an unspiritual man works that he may justify himself and win merit; Scripture requires that utter abnegation of self which leads a man to rely wholly on God for power whether to think or do—from this death of self, the believer goes forth, in the power of new life, to obtain higher life.

The third peculiarity is that union of opposites—wisdom and zeal, moderation and wonderfully comprehensive morality, which, though free from minute rules, actually governs heart and mind, word and deed. A few striking, and some think absurd, precepts—"pluck out even a right eye . . . give to him that asketh . . . love your enemies . . . do to others as ye would that they should do unto you"—bring more riches out of the Treasury of God than do the cases, judgments, casuistical tomes, of a thousand secular writers. Go to the Scriptures with robust good sense, moderation, charity; or go in a child-like spirit; and you have light to walk by, and strength to walk. As to "becoming all things to all men;" the manifestation of liberty and comprehensiveness of charity for "the weak brother," yet maintenance of that "unity of spirit" which produces highest uniformity; these directions assign the crown and glory of religion to Love, yet exalt Faith.

The fourth peculiarity is the skill with which social and political rocks are avoided. Principles are laid down which purify society, and ultimately ensure upright government; being first efficacious for the individual, afterwards for the

mass ; but the fanaticism of the Jews, the hatred of heretics, the passions of men inflammable as tinder concerning vicious social customs and political institutions, are not kindled into a flame ; while social rights are vindicated, and limitations set to political power, by the gradual formation of enlightened opinion.

Whence had unlearned men this wisdom, avoiding the fanaticism of the Jews, the excesses of the Greeks, the violence of the Romans, yet possessed with burning enthusiasm ? Enthusiasm, effecting a greater revolution in the world than ever before had been effected ; and with such moderation, sagacious control, sober firmness, that the precepts are evermore a terror to evil-doers, a wonder to the wise, the praise of them that do well ? There is but one answer—from the Almighty by Inspiration.

The New Testament was not written in Attic, but common Greek. There are quaint idioms ; scholars detect Syriac, Hebrew, and Chaldee ruggedness ; but, despite these, a purity and grace all its own, have won a name and place in the forefront of the world's literature. Argued against, when carried into Greece, by an intellectual power which has never been surpassed ; opposed, when preached in the Roman Empire, by an organised worldly policy the like of which has never since been seen ; refused by the very people on whom, in reality, it conferred the greatest honour ; it is now the greatest moral power in the world, and the only source whence we derive definite knowledge of the Divine Person, of the resurrection, of judgment to come, of immortality. We unflinchingly, therefore, adopt these words—"The Scriptures do not depend for their existence, or their obligation, on the contingency of human belief, but on the infallibility of a Divine revelation. They do not exist because they are believed, but because of the eternal truth of that which they reveal."<sup>1</sup>

The truths are objective—true before they are believed, and true even after faith in them is lost. They are subjective also—their influence being the result of immediate operation by the Holy Ghost on the human heart and conscience. This must be remembered in dealing with opponents of Scripture :

<sup>1</sup> "The Bible and its Critics," p. 13 : Rev. Edward Garbett.

we shall not prevail with them, unless we win our way into the conviction of their intellect, and into the affection of their will. We are also to bear in mind a fearful truth—"When with the Bible in her hand, and Jesus as her archetype, the Rational Conscience is seated on the throne, there will be also revealed worse and worse abominations of superstition and scepticism."<sup>1</sup> The two poles of man's nature, belief and unbelief, are acted upon; and, as he wills, there is negation unto utter destruction; or acceptance of that positive truth which gives light and saves life. We all have need to pray—

"Let Evil die away in night,  
And Truth walk forth in joyous light."

View the matter somewhat otherwise.

Holy Scripture had origin amongst a people who were separated from mankind: to whom, nevertheless, it gave a sense of the unity of men. In themselves, anything rather than representative of collective humanity—even now they may be said to dwell alone, their Book explains the tangled aimless movements of nations, and brings into harmony the jarring discords of varied destinies. From Moses to Malachi is a succession of men manifesting spiritual and prophetic power during 1000 years, which has nothing like it in the world's history. They proclaim a Divine life in man, and that the Redeemer was to come of Jewish flesh to make all flesh akin. They had inward perception of Divine things, high spiritual endowment from God, were heroes of moral effort, were gifted with Inspired speech. They illuminate the past with the true doctrine of creation, sanctify and beautify the present with the fact of everlasting Redemption, reveal the future by declaring the establishment of a Divine universal kingdom. Then Christ and the apostles appear—"Not in a barbarous age, but in the most instructed and enlightened age that the world had ever before seen, and perhaps in many respects has since seen;"<sup>2</sup> but, as if to show that the gospel was not an evolution wrought by the world's wisdom, Peter, James, John, not philosophers, but fishermen, went forth

<sup>1</sup> "God in History," vol. i. p. 14: Bunsen.

<sup>2</sup> "Foundations of Religion:" Sir John Barnard Byles.

to teach the world. Not endued with the wisdom of the time, not experienced in the ways of the world, not acquainted with scientific, physical, theological, moral, or social theories, they had been taught by one, Jesus.

Pass from the men to the Books.

The Books, whether old or new, not always chronological in canonical arrangement, are coherent with the circumstances of their date, and as to matter, congruous. Everything has due place in the successive steps of one indivisible yet exceedingly variable history; and in every part are symbols, allusions, prophecies, showing that the whole was seen from the beginning, and linked with knitted purport.

The predictions concerning our Lord's nature and work and suffering, are not fewer than one hundred and nine,<sup>1</sup> taken from nine and twenty books. There is no merely human development of doctrine, for—notwithstanding a progressive unfolding of the Divine scheme—the unity of a personal God, the creation and preservation of the world by His power, a particular Providence, the corruption of man, atonement through sacrifice, efficacy of prayer, human responsibility, the necessity of personal holiness, were as plainly stated at first as last. The whole being—not a human science, but a system of objective truth revealed by God, with subjective counterpart in man.

Verification may be obtained by any candid intelligent mind who reverently searches Scripture to discover those continuous lines of thought, of prophecy, of doctrine, of morals, which run through the whole, making it one piece.

One line of prophecy, the Messianic, may be taken as example of the wonderful accuracy, yet complexity of the prophetic portion. So soon as man falls by means of woman, restoration is promised even through that weak one (Gen. iii. 15). After the Flood, lest men think the ancient blessing has departed, the kingdom of God is re-established in Shem; and Japheth, received into holy community, is to dwell in the tents of Shem (Gen. ix. 26, 27). Abraham and the patriarchs are told that through them will come the Benediction of Nations

<sup>1</sup> Classified in "Simpson's Plea for Religion."

(Gen. xii. 1-3, xlix. 8-10). Balaam's prophecy (Numb. xxiv. 17-19) is of a Star—the symbol of splendour in Divine Rule, and of a Sceptre—symbol of dominion. Against his will, the man said concerning his enemies—"the Lord is amongst them." Moses' prophecy, of a Prophet like unto himself, gave yet greater definiteness of view (Deut. xviii. 15-19). Afterwards, we learn that this Messiah is not only to be of Judah's tribe, but of David's family (2 Sam. vii. 12-16). The predictions in the Psalms are too numerous to mention; these may be profitably studied—ii., viii., xvi., xxii., xxiv., xl., xli., xlv., lv., lxviii., lxxii., lxxxvii., lxxxix., xc., cx., cxviii. Passing on, we find the Man of sorrows (Isai. liii.), the Lord our Righteousness (Jer. xxiii. 6), the Shepherd of Ezekiel (xxxiv. 23, 24), Messiah the Prince (Dan. ix. 24-27), the Lord and His Goodness (Hosea iii. 4, 5), the Builder of David's Tabernacle (Amos ix. 11, 12), the Saviours of Obadiah (ver. 21), the Salvation and Resurrection typified by Jonah, the Ruler in Israel (Micah v. 2), the Giver of Peace (Hag. ii. 9), the Fellow of the Lord of Hosts (Zech. xiii. 7), and the Messenger of the Covenant (Mal. iii. 1). These are a few out of many predictions which critical investigation, application and fulfilment in the New Testament, manifest as a light shining in dark places and ancient times to testify of the Lord's Dominion.

This one line of investigation, well continued, will bring conviction to any, possessed of acuteness and learning, who may wish to understand the reality of prophecy, the Inspiration of Scripture, the establishment of God's kingdom. The truth will be found to deepen in meaning with the profundity of a student's capacity. Sacred, like physical science, enlarges with the growth of human intelligence; and prophecy is a continual abiding revelation, the speaking of God afresh to us in every fulfilment; and, with reference to Jesus, predictions in the Psalms and the Prophets as to His character and work, translate themselves by the peculiar power of Scripture into the believer's heart and mind, to renew his nature, and make him, Christ-like, live resolutely in the whole, the beautiful, the good.

Nor is that all—the "*curiosa felicitas*" of the Book is sur-

prising even in its feeblest translations. It fits almost naturally into every language; it is easiest of all books to translate without great loss of energy, of beauty, of specific character; yet let any one who thinks that he can cast it in any mould but its own, endeavour to submit David's Psalms to our metre or rhyme; his words will be as notes of a whistle to the majestic roll of an organ, or as the trickling of a rill in comparison with the "voice of many waters."

The Book has become universal: evoked more literature than all other books in the world. Every book, that works any good, seems connected with this—either for or against; and, in the more than two hundred languages into which it has been translated, it reigns as king. Children love it, the dullest of our race delight in it; the feminine mind becomes more graceful and womanly by it; the masculine, more manly; and the troubled find by means of it a "peace which passeth all understanding." Men, in the front of science, learning, civilisation, everlastingly pore over it, illustrate, interpret, translate, defend, or attack. No pains are too great to make plain even its insignificant parts; and the greatest of wicked men, the Lucifers of ungodliness, shout and roar if they find a mote in the light, or a spot on the face of this Sun. It is quoted more than any other book, lives a manifold life in every school of thought, is the delight of painters, and suggests to poets their most gorgeous conceptions. "There never was any book like the Bible, and there never will be such another." It is the Book for all men and for all time: as a phenomenon it is unique. Like an old oak, in its days and under its branches, the harvest of thousands of years spring, ripen, fall beneath the sickle of Time.

It is of no avail to say—"Many sacred books have received admiration and reverence, there are always ignorant people, and nations in a low stage of civilisation." We reply—No book is like this: so full of variety as to events, so inimitable in style, so rich in mysterious endowment of the writers. No other book has been received, by power of moral persuasion, to rule life and morals amongst nations and races of every conceivable variety as to origin, position, tradition, belief, language, and that in days when men of loftiest minds guided

public opinion. No other book has been so sifted, as to evidence; so tested, as to power; so tried, as to purity. Errors, if any exist, are not consecrated by law; doctrines, when opposed, are not fenced in against hostile criticism; its principles, even enemies declare, can never be uprooted from our nature; it alone seems capable of raising a succession of men heroically bent on making it universal. No other book so vividly sets forth the doom of guilt; yet the guilty are wont to read, admire, and obey. Men weary and heavy laden, the sick and those about to die, find rest—healing—life.

The Book is one, yet the product of many men in many ages; by writers—for the most part, neither conscious nor capable of co-operating; a portion now, and a part then; dreams, centuries separating, strangely finding realisation; disclosures made piecemeal, so adjusted that grandest results are obtained from minutest beginnings. The cylinder of the world's history—as it unrolls, art and science—as they advance, are found inscribed with hieroglyphics: the Bible reveals their meaning.

#### MARVELLOUS WORK WROUGHT BY THE JEWS.

The Hebrews have embalmed the spirit, thought, laws, history, all that constitutes the life of a nation; but the Egyptian, Assyrian, Babylonian, whom the world account greater and cleverer, left far inferior memorials—and we discover the records, and bring them from out the tomb of centuries, through a spirit of investigation excited by the Bible.

By means of Miracles, by power of the Bible, this race has done more for literature and science, both as to God and man, than did the Greeks—celebrated for genius, than the Romans—renowned for government. The paradox is not diminished by their alleged insignificance and obscurity, but explained when viewed as part of a Divine Plan. No fortuitous collection of tracts—written by men of unaided powers, could so win the homage of mankind and extort the passionate love of ten thousand times ten thousand.

They did not hold the world in amazement by means of Jewish genius—the Jew holds little place, apart from Scripture,

in the world's mental history ; yet the Jew had the sublimest system of spiritual truth, the purest morality, the clearest knowledge of God. He brought a new life into the heart of the world. Deeper and deeper the truth struck its roots in all lands, wider and wider became its influence among the nations. The science of Babylonia, Egypt, Arabia ; the subtle genius in philosophy, speculative intellect, vividness and vigour of thought amongst the Greeks ; the wisdom of all other races in the world ; failed. Where they fell, the Jew rose ; soared with a flight true and lofty to the knowledge of God. He declared that to be wrong which heathendom declared to be right, and that right which heathendom pronounced wrong. Centuries of thought had not advanced one step nearer to the solution of problems with which, child-like, it began—began with child-like question, ended with aged doubt. Jesus, the Jew, solved those problems. In what school had the Jew been taught highest wisdom and purest faith ? In the school of the Almighty. The greatest minds have seen no further, nor added one truth to religion, since John, taught by Jesus, wrote of Love to God and man. Those mysterious themes—Sin, Ruin, Redemption, Sanctification, Eternal Life, do now and will for ever form the great matters on which profound minds meditate : all that we know of these things has been learned from the Jews. We look at human science, and trace its hesitating course through ages of uncertainty and imperfection ; but, turning to the Bible, we find it plainly stated that man is connected with the Infinite by place and authority ; is related to the Eternal in origin ; if he falls, it is to rise higher ; if he dies, it is that he may live again. Brought down to the depths of humiliation, tried and tempted, the servant of God is, nevertheless, destined to highest glory. In his spirit, in the depths of his heart, a Divine voice proclaims the final overthrow of evil, the lasting triumph of goodness, the reign of righteousness among men.

The great and wise of the world stood amazed, while prophets and fishermen did a work which they confessed was not their own—but by power of the Spirit of God. They appealed to signs and wonders, marvels and miracles, in proof

of their Supernatural authority ; that powers of the world to come accompanied them, that the continual presence of God, the all-pervading wisdom of the Holy Ghost, gave them the victory.

During many later ages we have not seen public manifestations of outer material miracles ; but the ancient marvels may now be evidenced and tested by inner and spiritual operations. In the prophets' days, in the time of Christ's manhood, in the times of those who had seen Him, visible signs were given ; but signs having been given, and the world having received manifestation of the Divine Nature by Personal Presence, the further proof was that of holy influence. Miracles have never ceased, their sphere of action has been almost wholly changed ; they are now wrought within, seldom without, the man. Every regeneration, every conversion from unfaith to faith, is a miracle : it is Creation in a new form (Gal. ii. 20).

#### THE CHARACTER OF CHRIST.

He is the Founder, Exemplar, King of our Faith ; the Messiah, now refused, but to be accepted, of the Jews ; His originality and power of character raised Him above the plane of human nature—yet, how human is He ! Not in Roman, Greek, or Jew, can we discover the elements of so rare a creation. The Holy Personality was not the slow combined product of a world spirit stirring, with high culture, a greatly gifted race ; nor a moral development—equipped in the school and cultured in the palace. Jesus, the Child of poor parents, educated as a carpenter's son, nurtured in Nazareth, of almost homeless poverty, was it possible for such a child, if but a child, to become that God-man of work so mighty ? Contrast His humility with Jewish pride, His charity with their fanaticism, His expansiveness and their narrowness ; you will say that He is one whom they could neither produce nor invent. The prophesied of, yet Secret One—ever hidden from their eyes ; their honour and their shame ; inextricably woven into their history, yet always nationally refused. For nineteen hundred years He has been the centre and cause of all moral and spiritual development amongst the wisest nations ; outside

of these nations exists little knowledge. Around His life, work, death, the world gathers. His profound acquaintance with the human heart, His grand morality, His wonderful knowledge, yet—except in early childhood—He never stepped beyond the confines of Palestine, render Him the greatest of men.

He declared that the world should bow down to Him, the nations worship Him, that He would judge quick and dead. Are they pretensions of a straw-crowned Bedlam monarch? are they declarations of impious ambition, or midsummer madness? No, beautiful in humility, a little child is symbol of those who enter His kingdom: bitterest enemies could not convict Him of pride or sin. Around the Nazarene of obscurity, of poverty, of suffering, gathers a halo of glory to which no hero, nor history, nor romance, can pretend. He lived in holiness that knew no frailty, yet conciliated human infirmity with heavenly sympathy. With courage that no fear could daunt, no death dismay, He endured all horrors. His gentleness bound up the broken heart, poured consolation for every mourner—"If the life and death of Socrates are those of a sage, the life and death of Jesus are those of a God."

At no other time, by no other man, was so supreme a start from such low degree to manifestation of higher life; no other man has done so much for men; none but Jesus could be Jesus. Some thousand workers come up in this century to be forgotten in the next; but the silver cord of Christ is not loosed, nor the golden bowl of doctrine broken. Time sits as a refiner, the dross is cast away and the pure gold preserved; Time chronicles centuries, myriads die; Jesus, imperishable as gold, lives for ever; binds the heart of the world to Himself with electric chain; tells how the soul, weak and wandering like a storm-driven bird, may nestle in the bosom of our Holy Father. In the spirits of men, where sin has opened an unfathomable depth of anguish, He causes streams of consolation to flow and fill that depth. He makes our eye to sparkle with light, and our cheek to glow with the strangely sweet aspect of those who look into far-off worlds and gladly hasten thither.

We have not fully realised our mental conception of the wonderful manner in which science reveals the truth, beauty, and power of Holy Scripture; but we take courage in the thought that Eternal Truths do not rest solely for support on human championship; they are God Himself speaking to the minds and hearts and consciences of men. Generation after generation passes away, but Revealed Truth shines with ever-brightening flame as the atmosphere of reason becomes more clear and pure. Philosophers, many shallow, some profound, follow one upon another; every one in turn puzzles men for a moment, and then departs in the long procession of dead men, of dead creeds, to a common grave. Christ alone has the power of endless life, and He gives this life to the thoughtful mind, the susceptible heart, the poetic genius, with strength for duty and comfort in sorrow. In revelation of immortality, by His supreme wisdom and truth, He carries the beauty of holiness and the ardour of love to elevate the humblest, enrich the poorest, make wise the least instructed, and to take away fear of all that lies beyond the grave. At those moments in history, when unbelieving men predicted the end of Christianity, its youth has been renewed; and at this time, when dissolution is confidently foretold, it arms itself for new victories, and goes forth to conquer the world. The kingdom of God contains in itself the evidence that it is the kingdom of God. *Verbum domini manet in æternum.* Blessed are all who know it to be the Word of the Lord. They may be weary and stricken in the fight against the Powers of Darkness; but, in full sincerity baring their spirit before the Immensity and Eternity, they are conscious of a Divine Presence in their own personality; that their life will not be wrecked by failure and disappointment, but be safe for ever against all storms—a new life; reincarnate by Divine generation of the great God Man, Jesus, our Lord.

Those whom we have been refuting may not join in our prayer, but will believe in its sincerity: we implore the Infinite Unseen Power to reveal to them also undying truths, lead them into the Peace of God, make them brilliant, heart-elevating, fruitful in good works for Divine honour and human welfare!



## INDEX.

### A

Actinia, 410  
 Actinism, 159, 160, 162  
 Adam the first man, 289, 311  
*Æthalius septicum*, 410  
 Æther, 161; waves, 178  
 Ætiology, 361  
 Affinity, chemical, 83  
 Age of the earth, 88; no Divine record of, 443  
 Ailments, bodily, 361  
 Alcyone, 231  
 Allotropic forms, 83  
 Amia, the grunting fish, 408  
 Ancients, their knowledge, 169; their poetic fancy, 479  
 Angels, 300; fall of, 300, 301  
 Animal magnetism, 388  
 Animals, their forms cannot be mechanically explained, 62; types of animal structure, 240-2; an advance on plants, 265; natural origin of species, 270; plant-like, 410  
 Anomalies, physical, 411; chemical, 420; indicate the existence of an unknown and higher law, 420  
 Ants, 414; some use aphidæ as cows, 415; make slaves, 415  
 Aphidæ, 415  
*Arius Boakei*, how hatched, 413  
 Arts and sciences, incapable of regenerating mankind, 27; no substitutes for religion, 28; not incompatible with moral degradation, 478  
 Ascidian, the, blood circulation of, 407  
 Astronomy, 86-9; Babylonian, 150; wonders of, 423-6  
 Atavism, 412  
 Atheism, incapable of proof, 35; modern but not new, 432  
 Atmosphere, 86; pressure, 170; power of, to suspend water, 170, 172; primal, 172, 186; uniform constitution of, 175; sun's, 224

Atomic theory no explanation of the creative mystery, 82  
 Atoms, size, 78; movements of, 78, 79; types of the book of Nature, 82; affinities of, 83  
*Attacus cecropia*, the changing caterpillar, 416  
 Automatism, 351, 387

### B

Babbage's calculating machine, 399  
 Bamboo rice, 404  
 Bees, 414  
 Beetles, viviparous, 417  
 Beginning, the, 58; meaning of, 70; "In the beginning," 120; all sciences point to a, 459  
 Bible, contains the highest and best ethical ideal, 10; marvellous completeness and power of, 19, 20; contains its own evidence, 22; written for all time, 48; its account of creation misrepresented, 49, 50, yet scientifically correct, 50, 138; exhibits the connection of the natural with the supernatural, 138; contains hidden truths, 164, 165; of great literary merit, 170; not to be regarded as a scientific book, 432; popular language of, 432, explains many difficulties, 437-9; verities regarded as myths, 444, 445; a spiritual organism, 464; unity and variety of, 487; monotheistic teaching of, 487; co-ordinates morality with religion, 488; religion of, not invented or evolved, 489; peculiarities of, 491; prophecies concerning Messiah, 494, 495; excellences of, 496  
 Birds, 251; scientific classification of, 251; of passage, 408

Blood, human, 261; circulation, an exceptional case of, 407  
Brain, the weight of, 331; action, 359, 360

## C

Cain, 310  
Calculating machine (Babbage's), 399  
Carbonic acid gas, the food of plants, 179, 199  
Caterpillars, 417  
Causation implies a first cause, 35, 45; hence a Creator, 45  
Chaldean chronology, 150  
Chance, Cicero on, 84  
Chinese, their educational system, 332  
Christianity, the religion of the world's greatest men, 15; will be verified by science, 15; a revelation, not an evolution, 477; not the product of civilisation, 478; not the natural growth of Judaism, 489; continual and ever-growing power of, 501  
Chromosphere, sun's, 226  
Chronology, comparison of Biblical and Chaldean, 150; Archbishop Ussher's, too restricted, 442  
Civilisation, failure of, to regenerate mankind, 27; ancient, 304, 342, 343; not always progressive, 305, 306; modern, 343; future, 344; not incompatible with impurity and superstition, 478; does not foster religion, 478  
Clairvoyance, 385  
Climate, 91-3  
Clouds, 174  
Clover, red, 410  
Colour, 159, 177  
Coloured stars, 424, 425  
Comet-matter, 178  
Coming man, the, 17  
Consciousness, 100, 411; theory of, 422; embraces the past and future as well as the present, 459  
Conservation of energy, the law misapplied, 31; favours the immortality of the soul, 322; new direction by creation, 371  
Continuity, doctrine of, involves reality of the supernatural, 30, 372, 376; break of, by creation of the visible universe, 371  
Coral, 200, 407  
Creation, Biblical account of, not a myth, 15; misrepresented, 49, 329; scientifically correct, 50, 138; a

scientific summary, 51; if true, must be inspired, 51, 52; narrow and mechanical views of, 57, 58; meaning of word, 121; days of, 128, 140; their order rhythmical, 133; process of, 182, 183; Biblical account of, Divine, 217; not instantaneous but continuous and progressive, 134, 141, 257-9; comparison of Bible statements of, with those of the philosophers, 252; the two Divine accounts of, examined, 282-90; Chaldean account of, 291-4; symbolical character of the Scripture narratives, 296; spiritual meaning of, 295, 296; Mosaic account of, written in poetical and popular language, 437; contains no revelation as to time, 443  
Crime, hereditary, example of, 363  
Crowberry, the, 402  
Crystallisation the result of a mysterious agency, 62, working by law, 84

## D

Days, of creation, not common days, 129, 144; interpretation of, 140 et seq.; the seventh day, 145, 149; various uses of the word "day," 146; duration of, unknown, 147, 206, 442; symbolical, 150  
Deity, the, acknowledged in science as the "inscrutable power," 36; a person as well as a power, 37, 53; not unknowable, 39, 53, 54; more than the universe, 39; pantheistic views of, 470; personality of, 471; one God, a primitive faith, 481  
Design in Nature, 13  
Development, animal, 109, 262; embryonic, 275; social, 342  
Dew point, 172  
Diabolical arts, 391; revival of, 392  
Diamonds, artificial, 422  
Diseases in men and animals, 361  
Divination by magicians of Egypt, 391; not to be explained, 485  
Doubt, a hinderer of progress, 20; not a mark of knowledge, 21; discomfort of, 21; honest, 29; dishonest, 29  
Dreams, 381; mechanical theory of, 387  
Drosera plant, 410  
Dysteology, 277

## E

- Earth, the, rudimentary, 80; form of, 87; age of, 88; progressive formation of, 88, 134; eccentricity of orbit of, 91, its influence on climate, 91; crust of, 92, 187; antiquity of, 140; primeval condition of, 184; specific gravity of, 187; geologic epochs of, 189; life-history of, 191; changes in, 427
- Electricity, experiments with, 157, 163, 177
- Elements, the, number of, 75, 398; probably not homogeneous, 75, 398; Nature's sparing use of, 79, 398
- Embryos apparently alike, 239; development of, 275; really different, 409
- Entozoa, eccentricities of, 413
- Epochs, geological, 189 et seq.
- Ethical ideal, necessity of, 10, 26; highest and best found in the Bible, 10
- Ethics of the philosophers, failure of, 28
- Evil, existence of, 115; physical, an element of progress, 117; a consequence of man's freedom, 313; cure of, 315
- Evolution theory, 107, 267; no explanation of the origin of things, 107; not inconsistent with the Mosaic cosmogony, 134, 436; not incompatible with Divine rule, 307, 308; no explanation of essential differences, 455
- Experiment with vapour, 67; with electricity, 157; with electric light, 163, 177; with sulphurous acid gas, 177; producing vortex-rings (Professor Tait), 457; Mr. Crookes's, 398
- Eye, an instance of design, 13; limited in power, 161; of insects, 161; the blind spot in, 411; defects of, 448, 449; excellences of, 450, 451

## F

- Firmament, the, 129, 168; water in, 175
- First cause, necessity of, 35; infinite and independent, therefore supernatural, 35, 36
- Fish, ancient types of, 247; affinities of to higher creatures, 249; a climbing, 249
- Fission a mode of reproduction, 245
- Food, of plants, 179, 199; of man, assimilation of, 360
- Frog, peculiarities of, 410

## G

- Gases, molecular theory of, 400
- Gemmation a mode of reproduction, 244
- Genealogies of Christ, 141; deal with epochs, 153, 155
- Genius of unbelief (Coleridge), 47
- Geological eras, 189-91
- Geology, scientific, 184; chemical, 185
- Germs, 194; specific nature of, 239, 244, 325
- Glacial epochs, 91, 92
- Good and evil, doctrine of, 40; ground of our consciousness of, 41
- Grasshoppers, peculiarities of, 416
- Gravity not an essential of matter, 85
- Greeks, ancient, the ablest people, 28; becoming impure they degenerated, 28
- Growth, 102; of plants, 198

## H

- Hare, 276
- Heat, solar, 91; effects of, on animal and vegetable life, 92; connection of, with light, 157; effects of, on inorganic matter, 421; tends to equalisation, 428
- Heaven, a vision of, 73; heavens, creation of, 125
- Hebrew language, power of the letter  $\aleph$ , 132; destitute of scientific terms, 144
- Hebrews, their conviction of the existence and presence of God, 25, the cause of their greatness, 25; prophets of, 493
- Heredity, 267, 268, 406; does not exclude variety, 269, 405; criminal, 363, 364
- Hermaphrodites, 244
- Heterogenesis, 245
- Hippocampus, peculiarities of, 413
- Homogenesis, 245
- Hydatids, how caused, 413
- Hymenoptera, 417
- Hypotheses as to origin of things, 44, 127; as to origin of life, 211
- Hyrax (coney), 409
- Holy Ghost, work of, 126

## I

- Ice, 421, 422
- Image of God, 135
- Immortality of the soul a part of the universal faith, 482
- Induction balance (Professor Hughes), 411

Infidels not whole or comprehensive men, 30  
 Infusoria, 107  
 Insects, 264; transformations, 416

## J

Jelly-fish, 412  
 Jesus Christ, His teaching the highest morality, 11; His perfect humanity a miracle, 19; His life, a real life, 19; affirms supernaturalism, 26; His rule inspires the highest virtue, 29; genealogies of, 141, 153, 154; incarnation of, 213; made immortality glorious, 483; prophecies concerning, 494, 495; character of, 499  
 Jews, their conviction of the existence and presence of God, 25, the cause of their greatness, 25; did not invent Christianity, 489; marvellous work wrought by, 497  
 Jupiter (planet), 173; in the same state as was our earth, 173, 227

## L

Lambert family, the, 409  
 Lamech's family, 27  
 Language, origin of, 333; peculiar to man, 334, 336; theories of, 339; ancient languages, 341  
 Law, providence in action, 18; without providence there can be no law, 18; does not preclude miracles, 394; conformity of law and will, 395; natural invariability of, confined to our own experience, 397; deviations from, illustrated by Babbage's calculating machine, 399; the rule of, a miracle if wrought by chance, 426  
 Leaf structure, 402  
 Life, theories, 98; physical accompaniments of, 100; advent of, 101, 102; origin of, 326; a mystery, 102, 103, 105; physical basis of, 103; vital substance, 105; commencement of, denied, 107; not a functional product, 192; in other worlds, 196; scientific hypothesis of, 211; specific nature of, 239; general characteristics of, 240; process of, 243; reproduction of, 244; succession of, 246; progress of, 247, 327; transitions of, 248; unity of power, 261, of form, 261, of substance, 263; historical succession of, 265-8; natural selec-

tion, 270; origin of species, 270; human, 348; definitions of, 349; the cause of organism, 349; personality, 351; automatism, 351; individuality, 353; body, soul, and spirit, 353, 354; man's idiosyncrasies, 355; speciality of human, 358; a physician's view of, 361, 362

Light, 128; without the sun, 128, 157; lights in the firmament, 131; nature of, 156; connection of light and heat, 156; vibrations, 158, 159; actinic rays, 159; waves, 161; medium, 161; sensation of, 163; sun's, occasional diminution of, 426  
 Lizard, the oldest reptile, 249; a link between fish and bird, 250

## M

Magnetism, animal, 388  
 Mamba (fish), 408  
 Mammals, 268  
 Man, origin of, 134, 136; in "the image of God," 135; antiquity of, 141; possibly surpassed in other spheres, 192; threefold nature of, 289; descent of, 302; pre-Adamite, 302; more than a material organism, 320; not an improved beast, 323, 324  
 Manasseh a sorcerer, 392  
 Marsupials, 267; peculiarities, 410  
 Materialism, does not account for man's spiritual nature, 16, 17, 30; materialists not whole or comprehensive men, 30; incapable of explaining natural phenomena, 31; the idolatry of matter, 52; does not account for the origin of things, 60, 63; fails to account for human progress, 461  
 Matter, forms of accidents not essentials, 6; worshipped as God, 52; the origin of all that exists an assertion of presumptuous ignorance, 57, 260; known only by mind, 63, 456; creation of, 65; mutation of, a help to a belief in the supernatural, 67; primal, 75; the elements possibly not ultimate, 75; nature and constitution of, 76; structure of, 77; always moving, 81; not self-motive, 85; known only by its manifestations of energy, 85; union of mind with, 111; sky-matter, 177; does not develop mind, 237; a fourth-dimension form of, 396; radiant, 398; living, 405; inorganic, changes of, 420; scientific conception of, 456

- Memory, theory of, 387  
 Messiah, prophecies concerning, 494, 495  
 Metamorphosis, 417  
 Militarism, its degrading tendency, 345  
 Mill, John Stuart, on the recklessness of the cosmic forces, 394  
 Mind, its union with matter, 60, 61, 111; its existence equally certain as the existence of matter, 64; not a development of matter, 237; the master of matter, 260  
 Miracles, not the only marvels, 42; accepted by scientific thinkers, 43; possibly the result of an unknown law, 279; two classes of, 376; credible, 377; not incompatible with the reign of law, 395; stupendous power used in, 440; associated with the highest wisdom and purity, 441; attest man's redemption and immortality, 441; man's existence the greatest miracle, 443; the record of, how discredited, 445; not *à priori* improbable, 459; demonstrated, 469  
 Molecular energy, 80, 85-7  
 Molecules, 78; movement of, 79  
 Monkeys, 276; why they never can speak, 454  
 Morality, based on divinity, 13; needs Divine sanction, 26; an all-pervading sense, 477; of the Bible, 488  
 Moses, of a scientific spirit, 132; reared amidst idols, restores the knowledge of the one true God, 217; his account of creation inspired, 254; regarded as a deceiver, 444  
 Myriapods, 418  
 Mythology, ancient, embodies the philosophy and religion of prehistoric times, 479; the key to, lost, 480; symbolical history of the manifestations of one God, 481
- N
- Natural powers, man's, probable expansion of, 10; but without religion will not yield increased happiness, 10; not the only powers, 43  
 Natural selection, the doctrine, 270; rudimentary organs a difficulty, 277; purposeless structures in animals incompatible with, 419  
 Nature, only one of the manifestations of Divine power, 43; includes the supernatural, 62, 279; variety in, obtained with few materials, 79, 398; variety in, not self-produced, 81; ever changing, 81; wearing out, 89, 427; laws of, uncompromising, 114, 394; a splendid miracle, 258; progress in, 308; the result of preternatural energy, 374; uniformity of, a platform for infinite variety, 394; never at rest, 400; left to herself, would soon come to a standstill, 427; lives by dying, 447  
 Negro race, 311  
 New Jerusalem, 393  
 Nitrous oxide, its effect on the brain, 486
- O
- Occult sciences, 389  
 Ovum, development of, 109
- P
- Pantheism, 470  
 Paradise, 285  
 Parasites, 116  
 Parthenogenesis, 416  
 Penguin, 410  
*Perca scandens*, the climbing fish, 408  
 Perfume vapours, power of intercepting calorific rays, 178  
 Personal God, a logical necessity, 37; objections answered, 37-9; the author of creation, 51  
 Philosophers, ancient, 98; account of creation, 252-4  
 Philosophy, ancient, failure of, to regenerate mankind, 27  
 Phosphorus, allotropic forms of, 83  
 Physician's view of life, a, 361 et seq.  
 Planetary system, 88, 95  
 Plants, 131; creation of, 198; food of, 199; classification of, 202; order of creation of, 204, 205; protoplasm of, 209, 403; plant life affords glimpses of the transcendental, 212; action of light on, 403  
 Pole of earth, change of inclination, 193  
 Porcupine men, 409  
 Prawn metamorphosis, 416  
 Pre-Adamite world, 302; pre-Adamite men possible, 302  
 Prediction, a condition of consciousness, 484; a mysterious power, 485  
 Principles, two, of creation, a personal intelligence and an impersonal power, 18; two, of government, providence, and law, 18; these two unite in one process, 18

Prophecy, a natural gift, 380, 397 ;  
found to exist among all nations, 484 ;  
prophecies, Messianic, 494, 495  
Prophets, Jewish, 493  
Protein, 104  
Protoplasm, 101, 105 ; formed by  
plants, 209 ; of plants, 403

Quartz, 185

## Q

## R

Rabbit, 276  
Rain, 175 ; in primeval times, 285  
Red clover, 410  
Religion, not obsolete as regarded by  
some, 8 ; the externals of, only change,  
8 ; not opposed to reason, 8, 22 ; the  
summit and crown of science, 16 ;  
both practical and experimental, 22 ;  
its power to raise the whole man, 24 ;  
based on the supernatural, 26 ; ac-  
cepted by the best thinkers, 32 ; all  
religions more or less claim revela-  
tion, 54 ; not a product of human  
culture, 472 ; based upon (1) a convic-  
tion of a Divine and supernatural  
power, 473, 475, (2) a belief in the  
future life, 475, and (3) the reality of  
evil, 475 ; Christian, not a human  
invention, 488 ; Bible co-ordinates  
morality with, 488  
Reptiles, 191, 248  
Revelation, the only infallible guide to  
religious truth, 4 ; a special message  
to our intelligence, 19 ; claimed more  
or less by all religions, 54 ; both ex-  
ternal and internal, 40 ; includes the  
discoveries of science, 280, 460 ; in-  
structs when science fails, 46 ; objects  
of, 218  
Richter's dream, 31 ; vision of heaven,  
73  
Rocks, the, 189-91  
Rotifera, the, 409  
Rudimentary organs, 277, 419 ; no ex-  
planation of, 277

## S

Sabbath day, 145, 149, 443  
*Salpa*, peculiarities of, 412  
Saturn (planet), 227  
Scepticism, paves the way to sensualism  
and superstition, 11 ; held to be for  
the scientific student the highest of

duties, 20 ; impedes intellectual pro-  
gress, 20 ; when based on ignorance  
is irrational, 35  
Science, separated from Religion, un-  
happy effects of, 2 ; tending to agree-  
ment with Scripture, 4 ; men of, the  
priests of the material universe, 16, 55 ;  
inability of, to connect physical and  
mental phenomena, 57 ; inadequate  
to explain the origin of things, 60 ;  
throws light on Scripture, 69 ; growth  
of, 215 ; discoveries of, a revelation,  
280, 460 ; occult, 389 ; does not clear  
up the mystery of the universe, 408 ;  
its opposition to Scripture constantly  
being removed, 432 ; not to be looked  
for in the Bible, 436 ; specialism in,  
tends to narrowness, 446 ; agrees with  
true doctrine, 453 ; at fault, 454  
Scientific men, narrowness of some, 1,  
30, 446 ; the priests of the physical  
universe, 16, 55  
Sea, level, changes of, 92 ; composition,  
398  
Seven a mystic and symbolic number,  
145, 146  
Sight, human, rudimentary, 161  
Silence from a conflict of sounds, 411  
Silent members, 277, 418, 419  
Sin, origin of, 312 ; liberty to, 313, 314 ;  
original, doctrine of, 364  
Sky, colour of, 176 ; artificially pro-  
duced, 176, 177 ; matter, 177  
Sleep, magnetic, 385  
Solar system, 88, 89, 426  
Somnambulism, 384  
Sophists, the, 27  
Soul, the, 288, 321 ; not to be materi-  
ally explained, 321 ; the immortality  
of, a scientific doctrine, 322 ; of the  
beast, 354 ; beliefs as to, 481 ; im-  
mortality of, a universal faith, 482 ;  
transmigration of, 483  
Sound, 159, 409 ; producing silence,  
411  
Space, elements of, 59 ; dimensions of,  
59 ; a fourth dimension possible, 59  
Specialism, narrowing effect of, 1, 30,  
446  
Species, origin of, 239, 270 ; variations  
of a single primitive type, 271  
Spectral illusions, 379  
Spectrum, 160  
Spectrum analysis, 159  
Spiritualism, modern, 390 ; ancient,  
391  
Spontaneous generation a myth, 105  
Stars, coloured, 424 ; variable, 425  
Sulphur, various forms of, 186

- Sun, the, 89; heat of, 89-91, 222; origin of, 219; age of, 221; physical constitution of, 223; size of, 223; spots, 225; composition of, 224, 226; surroundings of, 226; power of, 228, 229; path of, through space, 230; influence of, on vegetable life, 403; light of, subject to occasional diminution, 426
- Supernatural, the, involves our highest interests, 3; not unacceptable to common sense, 12, 13; the denial of, is denial of the Deity, 12, and withdraws from morality its Divine sanction, 13; the essence of true religion, 26; rashly denied, 34; acknowledged in the existence of an inscrutable power, 36; a universal belief, 42; necessary to explain Nature, 62; Nature interpenetrated by, 279; not unnatural, 375; a universal conviction, 475
- Swedenborg, on the connection of the natural and spiritual worlds, 371
- Synthetic types, 408
- T
- Table-turning, 391
- Tapeworm, 412
- Temperature, influence of, on distribution of plants and animals, 92, 93, 141; on matter, 421
- Theology, a part of science, 46; suffers from the narrowness of scientists and scholars, 446
- Theories, physical, ancient, 98
- Thought, the mechanism of, 387
- Time, 58; coeval with creation, 71
- Touch, the sense of, 278
- Trinity, Holy, doctrine of, 40, 123
- Types, persistency of, 262, 267, 268; synthetic, 408
- U
- Universe, too vast for our comprehension, 58; beneficently ruled, 118; the work of intelligence, 396; a splendid miracle, 468
- V
- Venus fly-trap, 410
- Vision, a peculiarity of, 411; defects, 448
- Vision of heaven, a (Richter), 73
- Visions, 383, 389
- Vital substance, 101; defies analysis, 405
- Vortex-motion, 457; does not account for the origin of the world, 458
- W
- Wasps, peculiarities of, 417
- Water, particles, 78; however formed, the same substance, 83; suspended in the atmosphere, 176, 178; use of, in the atmosphere, 178
- Water-flea, peculiarities of, 412
- Waters, the, bring forth, 132; primeval, 171
- Witch of Endor a "medium," 392
- Word of God, 124
- Z
- Zulu theology, 482







*A LIST OF*

*KEGAN PAUL, TRENCH, & CO'S  
PUBLICATIONS.*

- BLUNT** (*The Ven. Archdeacon*)—THE DIVINE PATRIOT, AND OTHER SERMONS, Preached in Scarborough and in Cannes. Crown 8vo. cloth, 6s.
- BLUNT** (*Wilfrid S.*)—THE FUTURE OF ISLAM. Crown 8vo. cloth, 6s.
- BONWICK** (*J.*) *F.R.G.S.*—PYRAMID FACTS AND FANCIES. Crown 8vo. price 5s.
- EGYPTIAN BELIEF AND MODERN THOUGHT. Large post 8vo. cloth, price 10s. 6d.
- BOUVERIE-PUSEY** (*S. E. B.*)—PERMANENCE AND EVOLUTION. An Inquiry into the supposed Mutability of Animal Types. Crown 8vo. cloth, 5s.
- BOWEN** (*H. C.*) *M.A.*—STUDIES IN ENGLISH, for the use of Modern Schools. Third Edition. Small crown 8vo. price 1s. 6d.
- ENGLISH GRAMMAR FOR BEGINNERS. Fcp. 8vo. cloth, price 1s.
- BRIDGETT** (*Rev. T. E.*)—HISTORY OF THE HOLY EUCHARIST IN GREAT BRITAIN. 2 vols. Demy 8vo. cloth, price 18s.
- BRODRICK** (*the Hon. G. C.*)—POLITICAL STUDIES. Demy 8vo. cloth, price 14s.
- BROOKE** (*Rev. S. A.*)—LIFE AND LETTERS OF THE LATE REV. F. W. ROBERTSON, M.A. Edited by.
- I. Uniform with Robertson's Sermons. 2 vols. With Steel Portrait. Price 7s. 6d.
- II. Library Edition. 8vo. With Portrait. Price 12s.
- III. A Popular Edition. In 1 vol. 8vo. price 6s.
- THE SPIRIT OF THE CHRISTIAN LIFE. A New Volume of Sermons. Second Edition. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 7s. 6d.
- THE FIGHT OF FAITH. Sermons preached on various occasions. Fifth Edition. Crown 8vo. price 7s. 6d.
- THEOLOGY IN THE ENGLISH POETS.—Cowper, Coleridge, Wordsworth, and Burns. Fourth and Cheaper Edition. Post 8vo. price 5s.
- CHRIST IN MODERN LIFE. Sixteenth and Cheaper Edition. Crown 8vo. price 5s.
- SERMONS. First Series. Twelfth and Cheaper Edition. Crown 8vo. price 5s.
- SERMONS. Second Series. Fifth and Cheaper Edition. Crown 8vo. price 5s.
- BROOKE** (*W. G.*) *M.A.*—THE PUBLIC WORSHIP REGULATION ACT. With a Classified Statement of its Provisions, Notes, and Index. Third Edition, revised and corrected. Crown 8vo. price 3s. 6d.
- SIX PRIVY COUNCIL JUDGMENTS—1850-72. Annotated by. Third Edition. Crown 8vo. price 9s.
- BROWN** (*Rev. J. Baldwin*) *B.A.*—THE HIGHER LIFE. Its Reality, Experience, and Destiny. Fifth Edition. Crown 8vo. price 5s.
- DOCTRINE OF ANNIHILATION IN THE LIGHT OF THE GOSPEL OF LOVE. Five Discourses. Third Edition. Crown 8vo. price 2s. 6d.
- THE CHRISTIAN POLICY OF LIFE. A Book for Young Men of Business. Third Edition. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 3s. 6d.
- BROWN** (*J. Croumbie*) *LL.D.*—REBOISEMENT IN FRANCE; or, Records of the Replanting of the Alps, the Cevennes, and the Pyrenees with Trees, Herbage, and Bush. Demy 8vo. price 12s. 6d.
- THE HYDROLOGY OF SOUTHERN AFRICA. Demy 8vo. price 10s. 6d.

- BROWN (S. Borton) B.A.**—THE FIRE BAPTISM OF ALL FLESH; OR, the Coming Spiritual Crisis of the Dispensation. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 6s.
- BROWNE (W. R.)**—THE INSPIRATION OF THE NEW TESTAMENT. With a Preface by the Rev. J. P. NORRIS, D.D. Fcp. 8vo. cloth, price 2s. 6d.
- BURCKHARDT (Jacob)**—THE CIVILIZATION OF THE PERIOD OF THE RENAISSANCE IN ITALY. Authorised translation, by S. G. C. Middlemore. 2 vols. Demy 8vo. price 24s.
- BURTON (Mrs. Richard)**—THE INNER LIFE OF SYRIA, PALESTINE, AND THE HOLY LAND. With Maps, Photographs, and Coloured Plates. Cheaper Edition in one volume. Large post 8vo. cloth, price 10s. 6d.
- BUSBECQ (Ogier Ghiselin de)**—HIS LIFE AND LETTERS. By CHARLES THORNTON FORSTER, M.A., and F. H. BLACKBURN DANIELL, M.A. 2 vols. With Frontispieces. Demy 8vo. cloth, price 24s.
- CANDLER (H.)**—THE GROUNDWORK OF BELIEF. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 7s.
- CARPENTER (Dr. Philip P.)**—HIS LIFE AND WORK. Edited by his brother, Russell Lant Carpenter. With Portrait and Vignettes. Second Edition. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 7s. 6d.
- CARPENTER (W. B.) LL.D., M.D., F.R.S., &c.**—THE PRINCIPLES OF MENTAL PHYSIOLOGY. With their Applications to the Training and Discipline of the Mind, and the Study of its Morbid Conditions. Illustrated. Sixth Edition. 8vo. price 12s.
- CERVANTES**—THE INGENIOUS KNIGHT DON QUIXOTE DE LA MANCHA. A New Translation from the Originals of 1605 and 1608. By A. J. DUFFIELD. With Notes. 3 vols. Demy 8vo. price 42s.
- CHEYNE (Rev. T. K.)**—THE PROPHECIES OF ISAIAH. Translated with Critical Notes and Dissertations. 2 vols. Second Edition. Demy 8vo. cloth, price 25s.
- CLAIRAUT**—ELEMENTS OF GEOMETRY. Translated by Dr. KAINES. With 145 Figures. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 4s. 6d.
- CLAYDEN (P. W.)**—ENGLAND UNDER LORD BEACONSFIELD. The Political History of the Last Six Years, from the end of 1873 to the beginning of 1880. Second Edition, with Index and continuation to March 1880. Demy 8vo. cloth, price 16s.
- CLODD (Edward) F.R.A.S.**—THE CHILDHOOD OF THE WORLD: a Simple Account of Man in Early Times. Sixth Edition. Crown 8vo. price 3s. A Special Edition for Schools. Price 1s.
- THE CHILDHOOD OF RELIGIONS.** Including a Simple Account of the Birth and Growth of Myths and Legends. Ninth Thousand. Crown 8vo. price 5s. A Special Edition for Schools. Price 1s. 6d.
- JESUS OF NAZARETH.** With a brief sketch of Jewish History to the Time of His Birth. Small crown 8vo. cloth, price 6s.
- COGHLAN (J. Cole) D.D.**—THE MODERN PHARISEE AND OTHER SERMONS. Edited by the Very Rev. H. H. DICKINSON, D.D., Dean of Chapel Royal, Dublin. New and Cheaper Edition. Crown 8vo. cloth, 7s. 6d.
- COLERIDGE (Sara)**—PHANTASMION. A Fairy Tale. With an Introductory Preface by the Right Hon. Lord Coleridge, of Ottery St. Mary. A New Edition. Illustrated. Crown 8vo. price 7s. 6d.
- MEMOIR AND LETTERS OF SARA COLERIDGE.** Edited by her Daughter. With Index. Cheap Edition. With one Portrait. Price 7s. 6d.

- COLLECTS EXEMPLIFIED (The)**—Being Illustrations from the Old and New Testaments of the Collects for the Sundays after Trinity. By the Author of 'A Commentary on the Epistles and Gospels.' Edited by the Rev. JOSEPH JACKSON. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 5s.
- COLLINS (Mortimer)**—THE SECRET OF LONG LIFE. Small crown 8vo. cloth, price 3s. 6d.
- CONNELL (A. K.)**—DISCONTENT AND DANGER IN INDIA. Small crown 8vo. cloth, price 3s. 6d.
- COOKE (Prof. J. P.)**—SCIENTIFIC CULTURE. Crown 8vo. price 1s.
- COOPER (H. J.)**—THE ART OF FURNISHING ON RATIONAL AND ÆSTHETIC PRINCIPLES. New and Cheaper Edition. Fcp. 8vo. cloth, price 1s. 6d.
- CORFIELD (Professor) M.D.**—HEALTH. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 6s.
- CORY (William)**—A GUIDE TO MODERN ENGLISH HISTORY. Part I.—MDCCCXV.—MDCCCXXX. Demy 8vo. cloth, price 9s. Part II.—MDCCCXXX.—MDCCCXXXV. Price 15s.
- CORY (Col. Arthur)**—THE EASTERN MENACE. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 7s. 6d.
- COTPERILL (H. B.)**—AN INTRODUCTION TO THE STUDY OF POETRY. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 7s. 6d.
- COURTNEY (W. L.)**—THE METAPHYSICS OF JOHN STUART MILL. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 5s. 6d.
- COX (Rev. Sir George W.) M.A., Bart.**—A HISTORY OF GREECE FROM THE EARLIEST PERIOD TO THE END OF THE PERSIAN WAR. New Edition. 2 vols. Demy 8vo. price 36s.
- THE MYTHOLOGY OF THE ARYAN NATIONS. New Edition. Demy 8vo. price 16s.
- A GENERAL HISTORY OF GREECE FROM THE EARLIEST PERIOD TO THE DEATH OF ALEXANDER THE GREAT, with a sketch of the subsequent History to the present time. New Edition. Crown 8vo. price 7s. 6d.
- TALES OF ANCIENT GREECE. New Edition. Small crown 8vo. price 6s.
- SCHOOL HISTORY OF GREECE. New Edition. With Maps. Fcp. 8vo. price 3s. 6d.
- THE GREAT PERSIAN WAR FROM THE HISTORY OF HERODOTUS. New Edition. Fcp. 8vo. price 3s. 6d.
- A MANUAL OF MYTHOLOGY IN THE FORM OF QUESTION AND ANSWER. New Edition. Fcp. 8vo. price 3s.
- AN INTRODUCTION TO THE SCIENCE OF COMPARATIVE MYTHOLOGY AND FOLK-LORE. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 9s.
- COX (Rev. Sir G. W.) M.A., Bart., and JONES (Eustace Hinton)**—POPULAR ROMANCES OF THE MIDDLE AGES. Second Edition, in 1 vol. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 6s.
- COX (Rev. Samuel)**—SALVATOR MUNDI; OR, IS CHRIST THE SAVIOUR OF ALL MEN? Seventh Edition. Crown 8vo. price 5s.
- THE GENESIS OF EVIL, AND OTHER SERMONS, mainly expository. Second Edition. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 6s.
- A COMMENTARY ON THE BOOK OF JOB. With a Translation. Demy 8vo. cloth, price 15s.

- CRAUFURD (A. H.)**—SEEKING FOR LIGHT: Sermons. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 5s.
- CRAVEN (Mrs.)**—A YEAR'S MEDITATIONS. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 6s.
- CRAWFURD (Oswald)**—PORTUGAL, OLD AND NEW. With Illustrations and Maps. New and Cheaper Edition. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 6s.
- CROZIER (John Beattie) M.B.**—THE RELIGION OF THE FUTURE. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 6s.
- CYCLOPEDIA OF COMMON THINGS.** Edited by the Rev. Sir GEORGE W. COX, Bart., M.A. With 500 Illustrations. Third Edition. Large post 8vo. cloth, price 7s. 6d.
- DALTON (John Neale) M.A., R.N.**—SERMONS TO NAVAL CADETS. Preached on board H.M.S. 'Britannia.' Second Edition. Small crown 8vo. cloth, price 3s. 6d.
- DAVIDSON (Thomas)**—THE PARTHENON FRIEZE, and other Essays. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 6s.
- DAVIDSON (Rev. Samuel) D.D., LL.D.**—THE NEW TESTAMENT TRANSLATED FROM THE LATEST GREEK TEXT OF TISCHENDORF. A New and thoroughly revised Edition. Post 8vo. price 10s. 6d.
- CANON OF THE BIBLE: Its Formation, History, and Fluctuations.** Third and revised Edition. Small crown 8vo. price 5s.
- THE DOCTRINE OF LAST THINGS,** contained in the New Testament, compared with the Notions of the Jews and the Statements of Church Creeds. Small crown 8vo. cloth, price 3s. 6d.
- DAVIES (Rev. J. L.) M.A.**—THEOLOGY AND MORALITY. Essays on Questions of Belief and Practice. Crown 8vo. price 7s. 6d.
- DAWSON (Geo.) M.A.**—PRAYERS, WITH A DISCOURSE ON PRAYER. Edited by his Wife. Eighth Edition. Crown 8vo. price 6s.
- SERMONS ON DISPUTED POINTS AND SPECIAL OCCASIONS.** Edited by his Wife. Third Edition. Crown 8vo. price 6s.
- SERMONS ON DAILY LIFE AND DUTY.** Edited by his Wife. Third Edition. Crown 8vo. price 6s.
- THE AUTHENTIC GOSPEL.** A New Volume of Sermons. Edited by GEORGE ST. CLAIR. Second Edition. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 6s.
- THREE BOOKS OF GOD.** Nature, History, and Scripture. Sermons, Edited by GEORGE ST. CLAIR. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 6s.
- DE JONCOURT (Madame Marie)**—WHOLESOME COOKERY. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 3s. 6d.
- DE REDCLIFFE (Viscount Stratford)**—WHY AM I A CHRISTIAN? Fifth Edition. Crown 8vo. price 3s.
- DESPREZ (Philip S.) B.D.**—DANIEL AND JOHN; or, the Apocalypse of the Old and that of the New Testament. Demy 8vo. cloth, price 12s.
- DIDON (Rev. Father)**—SCIENCE WITHOUT GOD. Translated from the French by ROSA CORDER. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 5s.
- DOWDEN (Edward) LL.D.**—SHAKSPERE: a Critical Study of his Mind and Art. Sixth Edition. Post 8vo. price 12s.
- STUDIES IN LITERATURE, 1789-1877.** Second Edition. Large post 8vo. price 6s.

- DREWRY (G. O.) M.D.**—THE COMMON-SENSE MANAGEMENT OF THE STOMACH. Fifth Edition. Fcp. 8vo. price 2s. 6d.
- DREWRY (G. O.) M.D., and BARTLETT (H. C.) Ph.D., F.C.S.**  
CUP AND PLATTER : or, Notes on Food and its Effects. New and Cheaper Edition. Small 8vo. price 1s. 6d.
- DUFFIELD (A. J.)**—DON QUIXOTE : HIS CRITICS AND COMMENTATORS. With a brief account of the minor works of MIGUEL DE CERVANTES SAAVEDRA, and a statement of the aim and end of the greatest of them all. A handy book for general readers. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 3s. 6d.
- DU MONCEL (Count)**—THE TELEPHONE, THE MICROPHONE, AND THE PHONOGRAPH. With 74 Illustrations. Second Edition. Small crown 8vo. cloth, price 5s.
- EDGEWORTH (F. Y.)**—MATHEMATICAL PSYCHICS. An Essay on the Application of Mathematics to Social Science. Demy 8vo. cloth, 7s. 6d.
- EDIS (Robert W.) F.S.A. &c.**—DECORATION AND FURNITURE OF TOWN HOUSES : a Series of Cantor Lectures, delivered before the Society of Arts, 1880. Amplified and Enlarged. With 29 Full-page Illustrations and numerous Sketches. Second Edition. Square 8vo. cloth, price 12s. 6d.
- EDUCATIONAL CODE OF THE PRUSSIAN NATION, IN ITS PRESENT FORM.** In accordance with the Decisions of the Common Provincial Law, and with those of Recent Legislation. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 2s. 6d.
- EDUCATION LIBRARY.** Edited by PHILIP MAGNUS :—
- AN INTRODUCTION TO THE HISTORY OF EDUCATIONAL THEORIES. By OSCAR BROWNING, M.A. Second Edition. Cloth, price 3s. 6d.
- JOHN AMOS COMENIUS : his Life and Educational Work. By Prof. S. S. LAURIE, A.M. Cloth, price 3s. 6d.
- OLD GREEK EDUCATION. By the Rev. Prof. MAHAFFY, M.A. Cloth, price 3s. 6d.
- SCHOOL MANAGEMENT ; including a General View of the Work of Education, Organization, and Discipline. By JOSEPH LANDON. Crown 8vo. cloth, 6s.
- ELSDALE (Henry)**—STUDIES IN TENNYSON'S IDYLLS. Crown 8vo. price 5s.
- ELYOT (Sir Thomas)**—THE BOKE NAMED THE GOVERNOUR. Edited from the First Edition of 1531 by HENRY HERBERT STEPHEN CROFT, M.A., Barrister-at-Law. With Portraits of Sir Thomas and Lady Elyot, copied by permission of her Majesty from Holbein's Original Drawings at Windsor Castle. 2 vols. Fcp. 4to. cloth, price 50s.
- ERANUS.** A COLLECTION OF EXERCISES IN THE ALCAIC AND SAPPIC METRES. Edited by F. W. CORNISH, Assistant Master at Eton. Crown 8vo. cloth, 2s.
- EVANS (Mark)**—THE STORY OF OUR FATHER'S LOVE, told to Children. Fifth and Cheaper Edition. With Four Illustrations. Fcp. 8vo. price 1s. 6d.
- A BOOK OF COMMON PRAYER AND WORSHIP FOR HOUSEHOLD USE, compiled exclusively from the Holy Scriptures. Second Edition. Fcp. 8vo. price 1s.
- THE GOSPEL OF HOME LIFE. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 4s. 6d.
- THE KING'S STORY-BOOK. In Three Parts. Fcp. 8vo. cloth, price 1s. 6d. each.
- \*,\* Parts I. and II. with Eight Illustrations and Two Picture Maps, now ready.
- 'FAN KIWAE' AT CANTON BEFORE TREATY DAYS, 1825-1844. By AN OLD RESIDENT. With Frontispieces. Crown 8vo. price 5s.

- FELKIN (H. M.)**—TECHNICAL EDUCATION IN A SAXON TOWN. Published for the City and Guilds of London Institute for the Advancement of Technical Education. Demy 8vo. cloth, price 2s.
- FIELD (Horace) B.A. Lond.**—THE ULTIMATE TRIUMPH OF CHRISTIANITY. Small crown 8vo. cloth, price 3s. 6d.
- FLOREDICE (W. H.)**—A MONTH AMONG THE MERE IRISH. Small crown 8vo. cloth, price 5s.
- FOLKESTONE RITUAL CASE**: the Arguments, Proceedings, Judgment, and Report. Demy 8vo. price 25s.
- FORMBY (Rev. Henry)**—ANCIENT ROME AND ITS CONNECTION WITH THE CHRISTIAN RELIGION: An Outline of the History of the City from its First Foundation down to the Erection of the Chair of St. Peter, A.D. 42-47. With numerous Illustrations of Ancient Monuments, Sculpture, and Coinage, and of the Antiquities of the Christian Catacombs. Royal 4to. cloth extra, £2. 10s; roxburgh half-morocco, £2. 12s. 6d.
- FRASER (Donald)**—EXCHANGE TABLES OF STERLING AND INDIAN RUPEE CURRENCY, upon a new and extended system, embracing Values from One Farthing to One Hundred Thousand Pounds, and at rates progressing, in Sixteenths of a Penny, from 1s. 9d. to 2s. 3d. per Rupee. Royal 8vo. price 10s. 6d.
- FRISWELL (J. Hain)**—THE BETTER SELF. Essays for Home Life. Crown 8vo. price 6s.
- GARDINER (Samuel R.) and J. BASS MULLINGER, M.A.**—INTRODUCTION TO THE STUDY OF ENGLISH HISTORY. Large crown 8vo. cloth, price 9s.
- GARDNER (Dorsey)**—QUATRE BRAS, LIGNY, AND WATERLOO. A Narrative of the Campaign in Belgium, 1815. With Maps and Plans. Demy 8vo. cloth, 16s.
- GARDNER (J.) M.D.**—LONGEVITY: THE MEANS OF PROLONGING LIFE AFTER MIDDLE AGE. Fourth Edition, revised and enlarged. Small crown 8vo. price 4s.
- GEDDES (James)**—HISTORY OF THE ADMINISTRATION OF JOHN DE WITT, Grand Pensionary of Holland. Vol. I. 1623-1654. With Portrait. Demy 8vo. cloth, price 15s.
- GENNA (E.)**—IRRESPONSIBLE PHILANTHROPISTS. Being some Chapters on the Employment of Gentlewomen. Small crown 8vo. cloth, price, 2s. 6d.
- GEORGE (Henry)**—PROGRESS AND POVERTY: an Inquiry into the Causes of Industrial Depressions, and of Increase of Want with Increase of Wealth. The Remedy. Second Edition. Post 8vo. cloth, price 7s. 6d.  
\* \* \* Also a Cheap Edition, sewed, price 6d.
- GILBERT (Mrs.)**—AUTOBIOGRAPHY AND OTHER MEMORIALS. Edited by Josiah Gilbert. Third and Cheaper Edition. With Steel Portrait and several Wood Engravings. Crown 8vo. price 7s. 6d.
- GLOVER (F.) M.A.**—EXEMPLA LATINA. A First Construing Book with Short Notes, Lexicon, and an Introduction to the Analysis of Sentences. Fcp. 8vo. cloth, price 2s.
- GODWIN (William)**—THE GENIUS OF CHRISTIANITY UNVEILED. Being Essays never before published. Edited, with a Preface, by C. Kegan Paul. Crown 8vo. price 7s. 6d.

- GOLDSMID** (*Sir Francis Henry*) *Bart., Q.C., M.P.*—MEMOIR OF. Second Edition, revised, with Portrait. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 6s.
- GOODENOUGH** (*Commodore J. G.*)—MEMOIR OF, with Extracts from his Letters and Journals. Edited by his Widow. With Steel Engraved Portrait. Square 8vo. cloth, price 5s.
- \*,\* Also a Library Edition with Maps, Woodcuts, and Steel Engraved Portrait. Square post 8vo. price 14s.
- GOSSE** (*Edmund W.*)—STUDIES IN THE LITERATURE OF NORTHERN EUROPE. With a Frontispiece designed and etched by Alma Tadema. New and Cheaper Edition. Large post 8vo. cloth, price 6s.
- GOULD** (*Rev. S. Baring*) *M.A.*—THE VICAR OF MORWENSTOW: a Memoir of the Rev. R. S. Hawker. With Portrait. Third Edition, revised. Square post 8vo. price 10s. 6d.
- GERMANY, PRESENT AND PAST. New and Cheaper Edition. Large crown 8vo. cloth, price 7s. 6d.
- GOWAN** (*Major Walter E.*)—A. IVANOFF'S RUSSIAN GRAMMAR. (16th Edition). Translated, enlarged, and arranged for use of Students of the Russian Language. Demy 8vo. cloth, price 6s.
- GRAHAM** (*William*) *M.A.*—THE CREED OF SCIENCE, Religious, Moral, and Social. Demy 8vo. cloth, price 12s.
- GRIFFITH** (*Thomas*) *A.M.*—THE GOSPEL OF THE DIVINE LIFE: a Study of the Fourth Evangelist. Demy 8vo. cloth, price 14s.
- GRIMLEY** (*Rev. H. N.*) *M.A.*—TREMADOC SERMONS, CHIEFLY ON THE SPIRITUAL BODY, THE UNSEEN WORLD, AND THE DIVINE HUMANITY. Third Edition. Crown 8vo. price 6s.
- GRÜNER** (*M. L.*)—STUDIES OF BLAST FURNACE PHENOMENA. Translated by L. D. B. GORDON, F.R.S.E., F.G.S. Demy 8vo. price 7s. 6d.
- GURNEY** (*Rev. Archer*)—WORDS OF FAITH AND CHEER. A Mission of Instruction and Suggestion. Crown 8vo. price 6s.
- HAECKEL** (*Prof. Ernst*)—THE HISTORY OF CREATION. Translation revised by Professor E. RAY LANKESTER, M.A., F.R.S. With Coloured Plates and Genealogical Trees of the various groups of both plants and animals. 2 vols. Second Edition. Post 8vo. cloth, price 32s.
- THE HISTORY OF THE EVOLUTION OF MAN. With numerous Illustrations. 2 vols. Post 8vo. price 32s.
- FREEDOM IN SCIENCE AND TEACHING. With a Prefatory Note by T. H. HUXLEY, F.R.S. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 5s.

HALF-CROWN SERIES :—

- A LOST LOVE. By ANNA C. OGLE (Ashford Owen).
- SISTER DORA: a Biography. By MARGARET LONSDALE.
- TRUE WORDS FOR BRAVE MEN: a Book for Soldiers and Sailors. By the late CHARLES KINGSLEY.
- AN INLAND VOYAGE. By R. L. STEVENSON.
- TRAVELS WITH A DONKEY. By R. L. STEVENSON.

HALF-CROWN SERIES—continued:—

- A NOOK IN THE APENNINES. By LEADER SCOTT.  
 NOTES OF TRAVEL : being Extracts from the Journals of Count VON MOLTKE.  
 LETTERS FROM RUSSIA. By Count VON MOLTKE.  
 ENGLISH SONNETS. Collected and Arranged by J. DENNIS.  
 LYRICS OF LOVE. FROM SHAKESPEARE TO TENNYSON. Selected and Arranged by W. D. ADAMS.  
 LONDON LYRICS. By F. LOCKER.  
 HOME SONGS FOR QUIET HOURS. By the Rev. Canon R. H. BAYNES.

*HALLECK'S* INTERNATIONAL LAW ; or, Rules Regulating the Inter-course of States in Peace and War. A New Edition, revised, with Notes and Cases, by Sir SHERSTON BAKER, Bart. 2 vols. Demy 8vo. price 38s.

*HARTINGTON* (*The Right Hon. the Marquis of*) *M.P.*—ELECTION SPEECHES IN 1879 AND 1880. With Address to the Electors of North East Lancashire. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 3s. 6d.

*HAWEIS* (*Rev. H. R.*) *M.A.*—CURRENT COIN. Materialism—The Devil—Crime—Drunkeness—Pauperism—Emotion—Recreation—The Sabbath. Fourth and Cheaper Edition. Crown 8vo. price 5s.

ARROWS IN THE AIR. Fourth and Cheaper Edition. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 5s.

SPEECH IN SEASON. Fifth and Cheaper Edition. Crown 8vo. price 5s.

THOUGHTS FOR THE TIMES. Twelfth and Cheaper Edition. Crown 8vo. price 5s.

UNSECTARIAN FAMILY PRAYERS. New and Cheaper Edition. Fcp. 8vo. price 1s. 6d.

*HAWKINS* (*Edward Comerford*)—SPIRIT AND FORM. Sermons preached in the Parish Church of Leatherhead. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 6s.

*HAYES* (*A. H.*), *Junr.*—NEW COLORADO AND THE SANTA FÉ TRAIL. With Map and 60 Illustrations. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 9s.

*HELLWALD* (*Baron F. Von*)—THE RUSSIANS IN CENTRAL ASIA. A Critical Examination, down to the Present Time, of the Geography and History of Central Asia. Translated by Lieut.-Col. THEODORE WIRGMAN, LL.B. With Map. Large post 8vo. price 12s.

*HENRY* (*Philip*)—DIARIES AND LETTERS. Edited by MATTHEW HENRY LEE. Large crown 8vo. cloth, 7s. 6d.

*HIDE* (*Albert*)—THE AGE TO COME. Small crown 8vo. cloth, 2s. 6d.

*HIME* (*Major H. W. L.*) *R.A.*—WAGNERISM : a Protest. Crown 8vo. cloth, 2s. 6d.

- HINTON (J.)**—THE PLACE OF THE PHYSICIAN. To which is added  
ESSAYS ON THE LAW OF HUMAN LIFE, AND ON THE RELATIONS BETWEEN  
ORGANIC AND INORGANIC WORLDS. Second Edition. Crown 8vo.  
price 3s. 6d.
- PHILOSOPHY AND RELIGION. Selections from the MSS. of the late  
JAMES HINTON. Edited by CAROLINE HADDON. Crown 8vo. cloth, 5s.
- PHYSIOLOGY FOR PRACTICAL USE. By Various Writers. With  
50 Illustrations. Third and Cheaper Edition. Crown 8vo. price 5s.
- AN ATLAS OF DISEASES OF THE MEMBRANA TYMPANI. With Descrip-  
tive Text. Post 8vo. price £6. 6s.
- THE QUESTIONS OF AURAL SURGERY. With Illustrations. 2 vols.  
Post 8vo. price 12s. 6d.
- CHAPTERS ON THE ART OF THINKING, AND OTHER ESSAYS. With an  
Introduction by SHADWORTH HODGSON. Edited by C. H. HINTON. Crown  
8vo. cloth, price 8s. 6d.
- THE MYSTERY OF PAIN. New Edition. Fcp. 8vo. cloth limp, 1s.
- LIFE AND LETTERS. Edited by ELLICE HOPKINS, with an Intro-  
duction by Sir W. W. GULL, Bart., and Portrait engraved on Steel by C. H.  
JEENS. Fourth Edition. Crown 8vo. price 8s. 6d.
- HOOPEE (Mary)**—LITTLE DINNERS: HOW TO SERVE THEM WITH  
ELEGANCE AND ECONOMY. Seventeenth Edition. Crown 8vo. price 2s. 6d.
- COOKERY FOR INVALIDS, PERSONS OF DELICATE DIGESTION, AND  
CHILDREN. Third Edition. Crown 8vo. price 2s. 6d.
- EVERY-DAY MEALS. Being Economical and Wholesome Recipes for  
Breakfast, Luncheon, and Supper. Sixth Edition. Crown 8vo. cloth,  
price 2s. 6d.
- HOPKINS (Ellice)**—LIFE AND LETTERS OF JAMES HINTON, with an  
Introduction by Sir W. W. GULL, Bart., and Portrait engraved on Steel by  
C. H. JEENS. Fourth Edition. Crown 8vo. price 8s. 6d.
- WORK AMONGST WORKING MEN. Fourth Edition. Crown 8vo.  
cloth, 3s. 6d.
- HORNER (The Misses)**—WALKS IN FLORENCE. A New and thoroughly  
Revised Edition. 2 vols. Crown 8vo. Cloth limp. With Illustrations.  
VOL. I.—Churches, Streets, and Palaces. Price 10s. 6d.  
VOL. II.—Public Galleries and Museums. Price 5s.
- HOSPITALIER (E.)**—THE MODERN APPLICATIONS OF ELECTRICITY.  
Translated and Enlarged by JULIUS MAIER, Ph.D. With 170 Illustrations.  
Demy 8vo. cloth, price 16s.
- HOUSEHOLD READINGS ON PROPHECY. By A LAYMAN. Small crown  
8vo. cloth, price 3s. 6d.
- HUGHES (Henry)**—THE REDEMPTION OF THE WORLD. Crown 8vo.  
cloth, price 3s. 6d.
- HULL (Edmund C. P.)**—THE EUROPEAN IN INDIA. With a Medical  
Guide for Anglo-Indians. By R. S. MAIR, M.D., F.R.C.S.E. Third  
Edition, Revised and Corrected. Post 8vo. price 6s.
- HUNTINGFORD (Rev. E.) D.C.L.**—THE APOCALYPSE. With a  
Commentary and Introductory Essay. Demy 8vo. cloth, 9s.

- HUTTON (Arthur) M.A.**—THE ANGLICAN MINISTRY: its Nature and Value in relation to the Catholic Priesthood. With a Preface by His Eminence Cardinal Newman. Demy 8vo. cloth, price 14s.
- HUTTON (Charles F.)**—UNCONSCIOUS TESTIMONY; OR, THE SILENT WITNESS OF THE HEBREW TO THE TRUTH OF THE HISTORICAL SCRIPTURES. Crown 8vo. cloth, 2s. 6d.
- JENKINS (E.) and RAYMOND (J.)**—THE ARCHITECT'S LEGAL HANDBOOK. Third Edition, Revised. Crown 8vo. price 6s.
- JENKINS (Rev. R. C.) M.A.**—THE PRIVILEGE OF PETER and the Claims of the Roman Church confronted with the Scriptures, the Councils, and the Testimony of the Popes themselves. Fcp. 8vo. price 3s. 6d.
- JERVIS (Rev. W. Henley)**—THE GALILICAN CHURCH AND THE REVOLUTION. A Sequel to the History of the Church of France, from the Concordat of Bologna to the Revolution. Demy 8vo. cloth, price 18s.
- JOEL (L.)**—A CONSUL'S MANUAL AND SHIPOWNER'S AND SHIPMASTER'S PRACTICAL GUIDE IN THEIR TRANSACTIONS ABROAD. With Definitions of Nautical, Mercantile, and Legal Terms; a Glossary of Mercantile Terms in English, French, German, Italian, and Spanish; Tables of the Money, Weights, and Measures of the Principal Commercial Nations and their Equivalents in British Standards; and Forms of Consular and Notarial Acts. Demy 8vo. cloth, price 12s.
- JOHNSTONE (C. F.) M.A.**—HISTORICAL ABSTRACTS: being Outlines of the History of some of the less known States of Europe. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 7s. 6d.
- JOLLY (William) F.R.S.E.**—JOHN DUNCAN, Scotch Weaver and Botanist. With Sketches of his Friends and Notices of his Times. With Portrait. Large crown 8vo. cloth, price 9s.
- JONES (C. A.)**—THE FOREIGN FREAKS OF FIVE FRIENDS. With 30 Illustrations. Crown 8vo. cloth, 6s.
- JONES (Lucy)**—PUDDINGS AND SWEETS; being Three Hundred and Sixty-five Receipts approved by experience. Crown 8vo. price 2s. 6d.
- JOYCE (P. W.) LL.D. &c.**—OLD CELTIC ROMANCES. Translated from the Gaelic. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 7s. 6d.
- JOYNES (J. L.)**—THE ADVENTURES OF A TOURIST IN IRELAND. Small crown 8vo. cloth, price 2s. 6d.
- KAUFMANN (Rev. M.) B.A.**—SOCIALISM: Its Nature, its Dangers, and its Remedies considered. Crown 8vo. price 7s. 6d.
- UTOPIAS; or, Schemes of Social Improvement, from Sir Thomas More to Karl Marx. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 5s.
- KAY (Joseph)**—FREE TRADE IN LAND. Edited by his Widow. With Preface by the Right Hon. JOHN BRIGHT, M.P. Sixth Edition. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 5s.
- KEMPIS (Thomas à)**—OF THE IMITATION OF CHRIST. Parchment Library Edition, 6s.; or vellum, 7s. 6d. The Red Line Edition, fcp. 8vo. cloth, red edges, price 2s. 6d. The Cabinet Edition, small 8vo. cloth, red edges, price 1s. 6d. The Miniature Edition, 32mo. cloth, red edges, price 1s.

\*.\* All the above Editions may be had in various extra bindings.

- KENT (C.)**—CORONA CATHOLICA AD PETRI SUCCESSORIS PEDES OBLATA. DE SUMMI PONTIFICIS LEONIS XIII. ASSUMPTIONE EPIGRAMMA. In Quinquaginta Linguis. Fcp. 4to. cloth, price 15s.
- KERNER (Dr. A.)**—FLOWERS AND THEIR UNBIDDEN GUESTS. Translation edited by W. OGLE, M.A., M.D. With Illustrations. Square 8vo. cloth, price 9s.
- KETTLEWELL (Rev. S.)**—THOMAS A KEMPIS AND THE BROTHERS OF COMMON LIFE. 2 vols. With Frontispieces. Demy 8vo. cloth, 30s.
- KIDD (Joseph) M.D.**—THE LAWS OF THERAPEUTICS; or, the Science and Art of Medicine. Second Edition. Crown 8vo. price 6s.
- KINAHAN (G. Henry) M.R.I.A., of H.M.'s Geological Survey.**—THE GEOLOGY OF IRELAND, with numerous Illustrations and a Geological Map of Ireland. Square 8vo. cloth, 15s.
- KINGSFORD (Anna) M.D.**—THE PERFECT WAY IN DIET. A Treatise advocating a Return to the Natural and Ancient Food of Race. Small crown 8vo. cloth, price 2s.
- KINGSLEY (Charles) M.A.**—LETTERS AND MEMORIES OF HIS LIFE. Edited by his WIFE. With Two Steel Engraved Portraits and Vignettes. Twelfth Cabinet Edition, in 2 vols. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 12s.
- ALL SAINTS' DAY, and other Sermons. Edited by the Rev. W. HARRISON. Third Edition. Crown 8vo. price 7s. 6d.
- TRUE WORDS FOR BRAVE MEN. A Book for Soldiers' and Sailors' Libraries. Eighth Edition. Crown 8vo. price 2s. 6d.
- KNIGHT (Professor W.)**—STUDIES IN PHILOSOPHY AND LITERATURE. Large post 8vo. cloth, price 7s. 6d.
- KNOX (Alexander A.)**—THE NEW PLAYGROUND; or, Wanderings in Algeria. New and Cheaper Edition. Large crown 8vo. cloth, price 6s.
- LAURIE (S. S.)**—THE TRAINING OF TEACHERS, and other Educational Papers. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 7s. 6d.
- LEE (Rev. F. G.) D.C.L.**—THE OTHER WORLD; or, Glimpses of the Supernatural. 2 vols. A New Edition. Crown 8vo. price 15s.
- LEWIS (Edward Dillon)**—A DRAFT CODE OF CRIMINAL LAW AND PROCEDURE. Demy 8vo. cloth, price 21s.
- LINDSAY (W. Lauder) M.D., F.R.S.E., &c.**—MIND IN THE LOWER ANIMALS IN HEALTH AND DISEASE. 2 vols. Demy 8vo. cloth, price 32s. Vol. I.—Mind in Health. Vol. II.—Mind in Disease.
- LLOYD (Walter)**—THE HOPE OF THE WORLD: An Essay on Universal Redemption. Crown 8vo. cloth, 5s.
- LONSDALE (Margaret)**—SISTER DORA: a Biography. With Portrait. Twenty-fifth Edition. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 2s. 6d.
- LORIMER (Peter) D.D.**—JOHN KNOX AND THE CHURCH OF ENGLAND. His Work in her Pulpit, and his Influence upon her Liturgy, Articles, and Parties. Demy 8vo. price 12s.
- JOHN WICLIF AND HIS ENGLISH PRECURSORS. By GERHARD VICTOR LECHLER. Translated from the German, with additional Notes. New and Cheaper Edition. Demy 8vo. price 10s. 6d.

- LOWDER (Charles)**—A BIOGRAPHY. By the Author of 'St. Teresa.' New and Cheaper Edition. Large crown 8vo. With Portrait. Cloth, price 3s. 6d.
- MACHIAVELLI (Niccolò)**—THE PRINCE. Translated from the Italian by N. H. T. Small crown 8vo, printed on hand-made paper, cloth, bevelled boards, 6s.
- MACKENZIE (Alexander)**—HOW INDIA IS GOVERNED. Being an Account of England's work in India. Small crown 8vo. cloth, 2s.
- MACLACHLAN (Mrs.)**—NOTES AND EXTRACTS ON EVERLASTING PUNISHMENT AND ETERNAL LIFE, ACCORDING TO LITERAL INTERPRETATION. Small crown 8vo. cloth, price 3s. 6d.
- MACNAUGHT (Rev. John)**—CÆNA DOMINI: An Essay on the Lord's Supper, its Primitive Institution, Apostolic Uses, and Subsequent History. Demy 8vo. price 14s.
- MAGNUS (Mrs.)**—ABOUT THE JEWS SINCE BIBLE TIMES. From the Babylonian Exile till the English Exodus. Small crown 8vo. cloth, price 6s.
- MARRIAGE AND MATERNITY; or, Scripture Wives and Mothers. Small crown 8vo. cloth, price 4s. 6d.
- MAIR (R. S.) M.D., F.R.C.S.E.**—THE MEDICAL GUIDE FOR ANGLO-INDIANS. Being a Compendium of Advice to Europeans in India, relating to the Preservation and Regulation of Health. With a Supplement on the Management of Children in India. Second Edition. Crown 8vo. limp cloth, price 3s. 6d.
- MANNING (His Eminence Cardinal)**—THE TRUE STORY OF THE VATICAN COUNCIL. Crown 8vo. price 5s.
- MANY VOICES.**—A Volume of Extracts from the Religious Writers of Christendom, from the First to the Sixteenth Century. With Biographical Sketches. Crown 8vo. cloth extra, red edges, 6s.
- MARKHAM (Capt. Albert Hastings) R.N.**—THE GREAT FROZEN SEA: A Personal Narrative of the Voyage of the *Alert* during the Arctic Expedition of 1875-6. With Six Full-page Illustrations, Two Maps, and Twenty-seven Woodcuts. Fifth and Cheaper Edition. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 6s.
- A POLAR RECONNAISSANCE: being the Voyage of the 'Isbjörn' to Novaya Zemlya in 1879. With 10 Illustrations. Demy 8vo. cloth, price 16s.
- MARTINEAU (Gertrude)**—OUTLINE LESSONS ON MORALS. Small crown 8vo. cloth, price 3s. 6d.
- McGRATH (Terence)**—PICTURES FROM IRELAND. New and Cheaper Edition. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 2s.
- MEREDITH (M. A.)**—THEOTOKOS, THE EXAMPLE FOR WOMAN. Dedicated, by permission, to Lady AGNES WOOD. Revised by the Venerable Archdeacon DENISON. 32mo. limp cloth, 1s. 6d.
- MILLER (Edward)**—THE HISTORY AND DOCTRINES OF IRVINGISM; or, the so-called Catholic and Apostolic Church. 2 vols. Large post 8vo. price 25s.
- THE CHURCH IN RELATION TO THE STATE. Large crown 8vo. cloth, price 7s. 6d.

- MILNE (James)**—TABLES OF EXCHANGE for the Conversion of Sterling Money into Indian and Ceylon Currency, at Rates from 1s. 8d. to 2s. 3d. per Rupee. Second Edition. Demy 8vo. cloth, price £2. 2s.
- MINCHIN (J. G.)**—BULGARIA SINCE THE WAR: Notes of a Tour in the Autumn of 1879. Small crown 8vo. cloth, price 3s. 6d.
- MIVART (St. George)**—NATURE AND THOUGHT. An Introduction to a Natural Philosophy. Demy 8vo. cloth, price 10s. 6d.
- MOCKLER (E.)**—A GRAMMAR OF THE BALOOCHEE LANGUAGE, as it is spoken in Makran (Ancient Gedrosia), in the Persia-Arabic and Roman characters. Fcp. 8vo. price 5s.
- MOLESWORTH (W. Nassau)**—HISTORY OF THE CHURCH OF ENGLAND FROM 1660. Large crown 8vo. cloth, price 7s. 6d.
- MORELL (J. R.)**—EUCLID SIMPLIFIED IN METHOD AND LANGUAGE. Being a Manual of Geometry. Compiled from the most important French Works, approved by the University of Paris and the Minister of Public Instruction. Fcp. 8vo. price 2s. 6d.
- MORSE (E. S.) Ph.D.**—FIRST BOOK OF ZOOLOGY. With numerous Illustrations. New and Cheaper Edition. Crown 8vo. price 2s. 6d.
- MUNRO (Major-Gen. Sir Thomas) Bart. K.C.B., Governor of Madras.** SELECTIONS FROM HIS MINUTES AND OTHER OFFICIAL WRITINGS. Edited, with an Introductory Memoir, by Sir ALEXANDER ARBUTHNOT, K.C.S.I., C.I.E. 2 vols. Demy 8vo. cloth, price 30s.
- MURPHY (J. N.)**—THE CHAIR OF PETER; or, the Papacy Considered in its Institution, Development, and Organization, and in the Benefits which for over Eighteen Centuries it has conferred on Mankind. Demy 8vo. cloth, 18s.
- NELSON (J. H.) M.A.**—A PROSPECTUS OF THE SCIENTIFIC STUDY OF THE HINDŪ LAW. Demy 8vo. cloth, price 9s.
- NEWMAN (J. H.) D.D.**—CHARACTERISTICS FROM THE WRITINGS OF. Being Selections from his various Works. Arranged with the Author's personal Approval. Sixth Edition. With Portrait. Crown 8vo. price 6s.
- \*\* A Portrait of Cardinal Newman, mounted for framing, can be had, price 2s. 6d.
- NEW WERTHER.** By LOKI. Small crown 8vo. cloth, price 2s. 6d.
- NICHOLSON (Edward Byron)**—THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO THE HEBREWS. Its Fragments Translated and Annotated with a Critical Analysis of the External and Internal Evidence relating to it. Demy 8vo. cloth, price 9s. 6d.
- A NEW COMMENTARY ON THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO MATTHEW. Demy 8vo. cloth, price 12s.
- THE RIGHTS OF AN ANIMAL. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 3s. 6d.
- NICOLS (Arthur) F.G.S., F.R.G.S.**—CHAPTERS FROM THE PHYSICAL HISTORY OF THE EARTH: an Introduction to Geology and Palæontology. With numerous Illustrations. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 5s.
- NOPS (Marianne)**—CLASS LESSONS ON EUCLID. Part I. containing the First Two Books of the Elements. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 2s. 6d.
- NUCES: EXERCISES ON THE SYNTAX OF THE PUBLIC SCHOOL LATIN PRIMER.** New Edition in Three Parts. Crown 8vo. each 1s.
- \*\* The Three Parts can also be had bound together in cloth, price 3s.

- OATES (Frank) F.R.G.S.**—MATABELE LAND AND THE VICTORIA FALLS. A Naturalist's Wanderings in the Interior of South Africa. Edited by C. G. OATES, B.A. With numerous Illustrations and 4 Maps. Demy 8vo. cloth, price 21s.
- OGLE (W.) M.D., F.R.C.P.**—ARISTOTLE ON THE PARTS OF ANIMALS. Translated, with Introduction and Notes. Royal 8vo. cloth, 12s. 6d.
- O'MEARA (Kathleen)**—FREDERIC OZANAM, Professor of the Sorbonne: His Life and Work. Second Edition. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 7s. 6d.
- HENRI PERREVE AND HIS COUNSELS TO THE SICK. Small crown 8vo. cloth, price 5s.
- OSBORNE (Rev. W. A.)**—THE REVISED VERSION OF THE NEW TESTAMENT. A Critical Commentary with Notes upon the Text. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 5s.
- OTTLEY (Henry Bickersteth)** THE GREAT DILEMMA: Christ His own Witness or His own Accuser. Six Lectures. Second Edition. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 3s. 6d.
- OUR PUBLIC SCHOOLS—ETON, HARROW, WINCHESTER, RUGBY, WESTMINSTER, MARLBOROUGH, THE CHARTERHOUSE. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 6s.
- OWEN (F. M.)**—JOHN KEATS: a Study. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 6s.
- OWEN (Rev. Robert) B.D.**—SANCTORALE CATHOLICUM; or, Book of Saints. With Notes, Critical, Exegetical, and Historical. Demy 8vo. cloth, price 18s.
- AN ESSAY ON THE COMMUNION OF SAINTS. Including an Examination of the Cultus Sanctorum. Price 2s.
- OXENHAM (Rev. F. Nutcombe)**—WHAT IS THE TRUTH AS TO EVER-LASTING PUNISHMENT. Part II. Being an Historical Enquiry into the Witness and Weight of certain Anti-Origenist Councils. Crown 8vo. cloth, 2s. 6d.
- \*.\* Parts I. and II. complete in one volume, cloth, 7s.
- OXONIENSIS**—ROMANISM, PROTESTANTISM, ANGLICANISM. Being a Layman's View of some Questions of the Day. Together with Remarks on Dr. Littledale's 'Plain Reasons against Joining the Church of Rome.' Small crown 8vo. cloth, 3s. 6d.
- PALMER (the late William)**—NOTES OF A VISIT TO RUSSIA IN 1840-41. Selected and arranged by JOHN H. CARDINAL NEWMAN. With Portrait. Crown 8vo. cloth, 8s. 6d.
- PARCHMENT LIBRARY. Choicely printed on hand-made paper, limp parchment antique, 6s.; vellum, 7s. 6d. each volume.
- FRENCH LYRICS. Selected and Annotated by GEORGE SANITSBURY. With miniature Frontispiece, designed and etched by H. G. Glindoni.
- THE FABLES OF MR. JOHN GAY. With Memoir by AUSTIN DOBSON, and an etched Portrait from an unfinished oil sketch by Sir Godfrey Kneller.
- SELECT LETTERS OF PERCY BYSSHE SHELLEY. Edited, with an Introduction, by RICHARD GARNETT.
- THE CHRISTIAN YEAR; Thoughts in Verse for the Sundays and Holy Days throughout the Year. With etched Portrait of the Rev. J. Keble, after the Drawing by G. Richmond, R.A.

## PARCHMENT LIBRARY—continued.

- SHAKSPERE'S WORKS. Now publishing in Twelve Monthly Volumes.
- EIGHTEENTH CENTURY ESSAYS. Selected and Edited by AUSTIN DOBSON. With a Miniature Frontispiece by R. Caldecott.
- Q. HORATI FLACCI OPERA. Edited by F. A. CORNISH, Assistant Master at Eton. With a Frontispiece after a design by L. ALMA TADEMA. Etched by LEOPOLD LOWENSTAM.
- EDGAR ALLAN POE'S POEMS. With an Essay on his Poetry by ANDREW LANG, and a Frontispiece by Linley Sambourne.
- SHAKSPERE'S SONNETS. Edited by EDWARD DOWDEN. With a Frontispiece etched by Leopold Lowenstam, after the Death Mask.
- ENGLISH ODES. Selected by EDMUND W. GOSSE. With Frontispiece on India paper by Hamo Thornycroft, A.R.A.
- OF THE IMITATION OF CHRIST. By THOMAS À KEMPIS. A revised Translation. With Frontispiece on India paper, from a Design by W. B. Richmond.
- TENNYSON'S THE PRINCESS; a Medley. With a Miniature Frontispiece by H. M. Paget, and a Tailpiece in Outline by Gordon Browne.
- POEMS: Selected from PERCY BYSSHE SHELLEY. Dedicated to Lady Shelley. With Preface by RICHARD GARNET and a Miniature Frontispiece.
- TENNYSON'S 'IN MEMORIAM.' With a Miniature Portrait in *eau-forte* by Le Rat, after a Photograph by the late Mrs. Cameron.
- \*.\* The above Volumes may also be had in a variety of leather bindings.
- PARKER (*Joseph*) D.D.—THE PARACLETE: An Essay on the Personality and Ministry of the Holy Ghost, with some reference to current discussions. Second Edition. Demy 8vo. price 12s.
- PARR (*Capt. H. Hallam, C.M.G.*)—A SKETCH OF THE KAFIR AND ZULU WARS: Guadana to Isandhlwana. With Maps. Small crown 8vo. cloth, price 5s.
- PARSLOE (*Joseph*)—OUR RAILWAYS. Sketches, Historical and Descriptive. With Practical Information as to Fares and Rates, &c., and a Chapter on Railway Reform. Crown 8vo. price 6s.
- PATTISON (*Mrs. Mark*)—THE RENAISSANCE OF ART IN FRANCE. With Nineteen Steel Engravings. 2 vols. Demy 8vo. cloth, price 32s.
- PAUL (*C. Kegan*)—THE GENIUS OF CHRISTIANITY UNVEILED. Being Essays by William Godwin never before published. Edited, with a Preface, by C. Kegan Paul. Crown 8vo. price 7s. 6d.
- MARY WOLLSTONECRAFT. Letters to Imlay. New Edition with Prefatory Memoir by. Two Portraits in *eau-forte* by ANNA LEA MERRITT. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 6s.
- PEARSON (*Rev. S.*)—WEEK-DAY LIVING. A Book for Young Men and Women. Second Edition. Crown 8vo. cloth, 5s.
- PENRICE (*Maj. J. B.A.*)—A DICTIONARY AND GLOSSARY OF THE KO-RAN. With Copious Grammatical References and Explanations of the Text. 4to. price 21s.
- PESCHEL (*Dr. Oscar*)—THE RACES OF MAN AND THEIR GEOGRAPHICAL DISTRIBUTION. Large crown 8vo. price 9s.

- PETERS (F. H.)**—THE NICOMACHEAN ETHICS OF ARISTOTLE. Translated by. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 6s.
- PIDGEON (D.)**—AN ENGINEER'S HOLIDAY; or, Notes of a Round Trip from Long. 0° to 0°. New and Cheaper Edition. Large crown 8vo. cloth, price 7s. 6d.
- PINCHES (Thomas) M.A.**—SAMUEL WILBERFORCE: FAITH—SERVICE—RECOMPENSE. Three Sermons. With a Portrait of Bishop Wilberforce (after a Portrait by Charles Watkins). Crown 8vo. cloth, price 4s. 6d.
- PLAYFAIR (Lieut.-Col.)**—TRAVELS IN THE FOOTSTEPS OF BRUCE IN ALGERIA AND TUNIS. Illustrated by fac-similes of Bruce's original Drawings, Photographs, Maps, &c. Royal 4to. cloth, bevelled boards, gilt leaves, price £3. 3s.
- POLLOCK (Frederick)**—SPINOZA, HIS LIFE AND PHILOSOPHY. Demy 8vo. cloth, price 16s.
- POLLOCK (W. H.)**—LECTURES ON FRENCH POETS. Delivered at the Royal Institution. Small crown 8vo. cloth, price 5s.
- POOR (Laura E.)**—SANSKRIT AND ITS KINDRED LITERATURES. Studies in Comparative Mythology. Small crown 8vo. cloth, price 5s.
- PRICE (Prof. Bonamy)**—CURRENCY AND BANKING. Crown 8vo. Price 6s. CHAPTERS ON PRACTICAL POLITICAL ECONOMY. Being the Substance of Lectures delivered before the University of Oxford. New and Cheaper Edition. Large post 8vo. price 5s.
- PROTEUS AND AMADEUS.** A Correspondence. Edited by AUBREY DE VERE. Crown 8vo. price 5s.
- PULPIT COMMENTARY (THE).** Old Testament Series. Edited by the Rev. J. S. EXELL and the Rev. Canon H. D. M. SPENCE.
- GENESIS.** By Rev. T. WHITELAW, M.A.; with Homilies by the Very Rev. J. F. MONTGOMERY, D.D., Rev. Prof. R. A. REDFORD, M.A., LL.B., Rev. F. HASTINGS, Rev. W. ROBERTS, M.A. An Introduction to the Study of the Old Testament by the Rev. Canon FARRAR, D.D., F.R.S.; and Introductions to the Pentateuch by the Right Rev. H. COTTERILL, D.D., and Rev. T. WHITELAW, M.A. Seventh Edition. One vol. price 15s.
- EXODUS.** By the Rev. GEORGE RAWLINSON. With Homilies by Rev. J. ORR, Rev. D. YOUNG, Rev. C. A. GOODHART, Rev. J. URQUHART, and Rev. H. T. ROBJOHN. Third Edition. Price 16s.
- LEVITICUS.** By the Rev. Prebendary MEYRICK, M.A. With Introductions by Rev. R. COLLINS, Rev. Professor A. CAVE, and Homilies by Rev. Prof. REDFORD, LL.B., Rev. J. A. MACDONALD, Rev. W. CLARKSON, Rev. S. R. ALDRIDGE, LL.B., and Rev. McCHEYNE EDGAR. Third Edition. Price 15s.
- NUMBERS.** By the Rev. R. WINTERBOTHAM, LL.B.; with Homilies by the Rev. Professor W. BINNIE, D.D., Rev. E. S. PROUT, M.A., Rev. D. YOUNG, Rev. J. WAITE, and an Introduction by the Rev. THOMAS WHITELAW, M.A. Fourth Edition. Price 15s.
- DEUTERONOMY.** By Rev. W. L. ALEXANDER, D.D.; with Homilies by Rev. D. DAVIES, M.A., Rev. C. CLEMANCE, D.D., Rev. J. ORR, B.D., and Rev. R. M. EDGAR, M.A. Second Edition. Price 15s.

## PULPIT COMMENTARY (THE) Old Testament Series—continued.

- JOSHUA.** By Rev. J. J. LIAS, M.A.; with Homilies by Rev. S. R. ALDRIDGE, LL.B., Rev. R. GLOVER, Rev. E. DE PRESSENSÉ, D.D., Rev. J. WAITE, B.A., Rev. F. W. ADENEY, M.A.; and an Introduction by the Rev. A. PLUMMER, M.A. Fourth Edition. Price 12s. 6d.
- JUDGES AND RUTH.** By the Right Rev. Lord A. C. HERVEY, D.D., and Rev. J. MORRISON, D.D.; with Homilies by Rev. A. F. MUIR, M.A., Rev. W. F. ADENEY, M.A., Rev. W. M. STATHAM, and Rev. Professor J. THOMSON, M.A. Fourth Edition. Price 10s. 6d.
- 1 SAMUEL.** By the Very Rev. R. P. SMITH, D.D.; with Homilies by Rev. DONALD FRASER, D.D., Rev. Prof. CHAPMAN, and Rev. B. DALE. Fifth Edition. Price 15s.
- 1 KINGS.** By the Rev. JOSEPH HAMMOND, LL.B. With Homilies by the Rev. E. DE PRESSENSÉ, D.D., Rev. J. WAITE, B.A., Rev. A. ROWLAND, LL.B., Rev. J. A. MACDONALD, and Rev. J. URQUHART. Third Edition. Price 15s.
- EZRA, NEHEMIAH, AND ESTHER.** By Rev. Canon G. RAWLINSON, M.A.; with Homilies by Rev. Prof. J. R. THOMSON, M.A., Rev. Prof. R. A. REDFORD, LL.B., M.A., Rev. W. S. LEWIS, M.A., Rev. J. A. MACDONALD, Rev. A. MACKENNA, B.A., Rev. W. CLARKSON, B.A., Rev. F. HASTINGS, Rev. W. DINWIDDIE, LL.B., Rev. Prof. ROWLANDS, B.A., Rev. G. WOOD, B.A., Rev. Prof. P. C. BARKER, LL.B., M.A., and Rev. J. S. EXELL. Fifth Edition. One vol. price 12s. 6d.

## PULPIT COMMENTARY (THE) New Testament Series. Edited by the Rev. J. S. EXELL and the Rev. Canon H. D. M. SPENCE.

- ST. MARK.** By the very Rev. Dean BICKERSTETH, D.D.; with Homilies by the Rev. Prof. THOMSON, M.A., Rev. Prof. GIVEN, M.A., Rev. Prof. JOHNSON, M.A., Rev. A. ROWLAND, LL.B., Rev. A. MUIR, M.A., and Rev. R. GREEN. 2 Vols. 21s.

**PUNJAB (THE) AND NORTH-WESTERN FRONTIER OF INDIA.** By an Old Punjaabee. Crown 8vo. price 5s.

**RABBI JESHUA.** An Eastern Story. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 3s. 6d.

**RADCLIFFE (Frank R. Y.)—THE NEW POLITICUS.** Small crown 8vo. Cloth, price 2s. 6d.

**RAVENSHAW (John Henry) B.C.S.—GAUR: ITS RUINS AND INSCRIPTIONS.** Edited by his Widow. With 44 Photographic Illustrations, and 25 facsimiles of Inscriptions. Royal 4to. cloth, price £3. 13s. 6d.

**READ (Carveth)—ON THE THEORY OF LOGIC: AN ESSAY.** Crown 8vo. price 6s.

**REALITIES OF THE FUTURE LIFE.** Small crown 8vo. cloth, price 1s. 6d.

**RENDELL (J. M.)—CONCISE HANDBOOK OF THE ISLAND OF MADEIRA.** With Plan of Funchal and Map of the Island. Fcp. 8vo. cloth, 1s. 6d.

**REYNOLDS (Rev. J. W.)—THE SUPERNATURAL IN NATURE.** A Verification by Free Use of Science. Second Edition, revised and enlarged. Demy 8vo. cloth, price 14s.

**THE MYSTERY OF MIRACLES.** New and Enlarged Edition. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 6s.

- RIBOT** (*Prof. Th.*)—ENGLISH PSYCHOLOGY. Second Edition. A Revised and Corrected Translation from the latest French Edition. Large post 8vo. price 9s.
- HEREDITY: A Psychological Study on its Phenomena, its Laws, its Causes, and its Consequences. Large crown 8vo. price 9s.
- ROBERTSON** (*The late Rev. F. W.*) *M.A.*—LIFE AND LETTERS OF. Edited by the Rev. Stopford Brooke, *M.A.*
- I. Two vols., uniform with the Sermons. With Steel Portrait. Crown 8vo. price 7s. 6d.
- II. Library Edition, in demy 8vo. with Portrait. Price 12s.
- III. A Popular Edition, in 1 vol. Crown 8vo. price 6s.
- SERMONS. Four Series. Small crown 8vo. price 3s. 6d. each.
- THE HUMAN RACE, and other Sermons. Preached at Cheltenham, Oxford, and Brighton. Large post 8vo. cloth, price 7s. 6d.
- NOTES ON GENESIS. New and Cheaper Edition. Crown 8vo. price 3s. 6d.
- EXPOSITORY LECTURES ON ST. PAUL'S EPISTLES TO THE CORINTHIANS. A New Edition. Small crown 8vo. price 5s.
- LECTURES AND ADDRESSES, with other Literary Remains. A New Edition. Crown 8vo. price 5s.
- AN ANALYSIS OF MR. TENNYSON'S 'IN MEMORIAM.' (Dedicated by Permission to the Poet-Laureate.) Fcp. 8vo. price 2s.
- THE EDUCATION OF THE HUMAN RACE. Translated from the German of Gotthold Ephraim Lessing. Fcp. 8vo. price 2s. 6d.
- The above Works can also be had, bound in half-morocco.
- \* \* A Portrait of the late Rev. F. W. Robertson, mounted for framing, can be had, price 2s. 6d.
- RODWELL** (*G. F.*) *F.R.A.S., F.C.S.*—ETNA: A HISTORY OF THE MOUNTAIN AND ITS ERUPTIONS. With Maps and Illustrations. Square 8vo. cloth, price 9s.
- ROLLESTON** (*T. W. H.*) *B.A.*—THE ENCHEIRIDION OF EPICETUS. Translated from the Greek, with a Preface and Notes. Small crown 8vo. cloth, price 3s. 6d.
- ROSMINI'S ORIGIN OF IDEAS. Translated from the Fifth Italian Edition of the *Nuovo Saggio*. *Sull' origine delle idee*. 3 Vols. demy 8vo. cloth [Vol. I. now ready, 16s.]
- ROSMINI'S PHILOSOPHICAL SYSTEM. Translated, with a Sketch of the Author's Life, Bibliography, Introduction, and Notes by THOMAS DAVIDSON. Demy 8vo. cloth, 16s.
- ROSS** (*Alexander*) *D.D.*—MEMOIR OF ALEXANDER EWING, Bishop of Argyll and the Isles. Second and Cheaper Edition. Demy 8vo. cloth, price 10s. 6d.
- RULE** (*Martin*) *M.A.*—THE LIFE AND TIMES OF ST. ANSELM, ARCHBISHOP OF CANTERBURY AND PRIMATE OF THE BRITAINS. 2 Vols. demy 8vo. cloth, 32s.
- SALTS** (*Rev. Alfred*) *LL.D.*—GODPARENTS AT CONFIRMATION. With a Preface by the Bishop of Manchester. Small crown 8vo. cloth limp, price 2s.

- SALVATOR** (*Archduke Ludwig*)—LEVKOSIA, THE CAPITAL OF CYPRUS. Crown 4to. cloth, price 10s. 6d.
- SAMUEL** (*Sydney M.*)—JEWISH LIFE IN THE EAST. Small crown 8vo. cloth, price 3s. 6d.
- SAYCE** (*Rev. Archibald Henry*)—INTRODUCTION TO THE SCIENCE OF LANGUAGE. 2 vols. Large post 8vo. cloth, price 25s.
- SCIENTIFIC LAYMAN.** The New Truth and the Old Faith: are they Incompatible? Demy 8vo. cloth, price 10s. 6d.
- SCOONES** (*W. Baptiste*)—FOUR CENTURIES OF ENGLISH LETTERS: A Selection of 350 Letters by 150 Writers, from the Period of the Paston Letters to the Present Time. Third Edition. Large crown 8vo. cloth, price 6s.
- SCOTT** (*Robert H.*)—WEATHER CHARTS AND STORM WARNINGS. Second Edition. Illustrated. Crown 8vo. price 3s. 6d.
- SHAKSPEARE** (*Charles*)—SAINT PAUL AT ATHENS. Spiritual Christianity in relation to some aspects of Modern Thought. Five Sermons preached at St. Stephen's Church, Westbourne Park. With a Preface by the Rev. Canon FARRAR.
- SHELLEY** (*Lady*)—SHELLEY MEMORIALS FROM AUTHENTIC SOURCES. With (now first printed) an Essay on Christianity by Percy Bysshe Shelley. With Portrait. Third Edition. Crown 8vo. price 5s.
- SHILLITO** (*Rev. Joseph*)—WOMANHOOD: its Duties, Temptations, and Privileges. A Book for Young Women. Third Edition. Crown 8vo. price 3s. 6d.
- SHIPLEY** (*Rev. Orby*) *M.A.*—CHURCH TRACTS: OR, STUDIES IN MODERN PROBLEMS. By various Writers. 2 vols. Crown 8vo. price 5s. each.
- PRINCIPLES OF THE FAITH IN RELATION TO SIN.** Topics for Thought in Times of Retreat. Eleven Addresses delivered during a Retreat of Three Days to Persons living in the World. Demy 8vo. cloth, price 12s.
- SISTER AUGUSTINE,** Superior of the Sisters of Charity at the St. Johannis Hospital at Bonn. Authorised Translation by HANS THARAU, from the German 'Memorials of AMALIE VON LASAULX.' Second Edition. Large crown 8vo. cloth, price 7s. 6d.
- SKINNER** (*The late James*) *M.A.*—A SYNOPSIS OF MORAL AND ASCETICAL THEOLOGY. With a Catalogue of Ancient and Modern Authorities, arranged according to Centuries. With a prefatory Note by the Rev. T. T. CARTER. Demy 4to. cloth, 10s. 6d.
- SMITH** (*Edward*) *M.D., LL.B., F.R.S.*—HEALTH AND DISEASE, as Influenced by the Daily, Seasonal, and other Cyclical Changes in the Human System. A New Edition. Post 8vo. price 7s. 6d.
- TUBERCULAR CONSUMPTION IN ITS EARLY AND REMEDIABLE STAGES.** Second Edition. Crown 8vo. price 6s.
- SPEEDING** (*James*)—REVIEWS AND DISCUSSIONS, LITERARY, POLITICAL, AND HISTORICAL NOT RELATING TO BACON. Demy 8vo. cloth, price 12s. 6d.
- EVENINGS WITH A REVIEWER; OR, Bacon and Macaulay.** With a Prefatory Notice by G. S. VENABLES, Q.C. 2 vols. demy 8vo. cloth, price 18s.

- STAPPER (Paul)**—SHAKSPEARE AND CLASSICAL ANTIQUITY: Greek and Latin Antiquity as presented in Shakspeare's Plays. Translated by EMILY J. CAREY. Large post 8vo. cloth, price 12s.
- ST. BERNARD.** A Little Book on the Love of God. Translated by MARIANNE CAROLINE and COVENTRY PATMORE. Cloth extra, gilt top, 4s. 6d.
- STEPHENS (Archibald John) LL.D.**—THE FOLKESTONE RITUAL CASE. The Substance of the Argument delivered before the Judicial Committee of the Privy Council on behalf of the Respondents. Demy 8vo. cloth, price 6s.
- STEVENSON (Rev. W. F.)**—HYMNS FOR THE CHURCH AND HOME. Selected and Edited by the Rev. W. Fleming Stevenson.  
The most complete Hymn Book published.  
The Hymn Book consists of Three Parts:—I. For Public Worship.—II. For Family and Private Worship.—III. For Children.  
\* \* \* Published in various forms and prices, the latter ranging from 8d. to 6s.  
Lists and full particulars will be furnished on application to the Publishers.
- STEVENSON (Robert Louis)**—VIRGINIBUS PUERISQUE, and other Papers. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 6s.
- STRACHEY (Sir John) G. C. S. I., and Lieut.-Gen. Richard STRACHEY, R. E., F. R. S.**—THE FINANCES AND PUBLIC WORKS OF INDIA, FROM 1869 TO 1881. Demy 8vo. cloth, 18s.
- STRECKER-WISLICENUS**—ORGANIC CHEMISTRY. Translated and Edited, with Extensive Additions, by W. R. HODGKINSON, Ph. D., and A. J. GREENAWAY, F. I. C. Demy 8vo. cloth, price 21s.
- SULLY (James) M. A.**—SENSATION AND INTUITION. Demy 8vo. price 10s. 6d.  
PESSIMISM: a History and a Criticism. Second Edition. Demy 8vo. price 14s.
- SYME (David)**—OUTLINES OF AN INDUSTRIAL SCIENCE. Second Edition. Crown 8vo. price 6s.  
REPRESENTATIVE GOVERNMENT IN ENGLAND. Its Faults and Failures. Second Edition. Large crown 8vo. cloth, 6s.
- TAYLOR (Algernon)**—GUIENNE. Notes of an Autumn Tour. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 4s. 6d.
- THOM (John Hamilton)**—LAWS OF LIFE AFTER THE MIND OF CHRIST. Crown 8vo. cloth, 7s. 6d.
- THOMSON (J. Turnbull)**—SOCIAL PROBLEMS; OR, AN INQUIRY INTO THE LAWS OF INFLUENCE. With Diagrams. Demy 8vo. cloth, price 10s. 6d.
- TIDMAN (Paul F.)**—GOLD AND SILVER MONEY. Part I.—A Plain Statement. Part II.—Objections Answered. Third Edition. Crown 8vo. cloth, 1s.
- TIPPLE (Rev. S. A.)**—SUNDAY MORNINGS AT NORWOOD. Prayers and Sermons. Crown 8vo. cloth, 6s.
- TODHUNTER (Dr. J.)**—A STUDY OF SHELLEY. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 7s.
- TREMENHEERE (H. Seymour) C. B.**—A MANUAL OF THE PRINCIPLES OF GOVERNMENT AS SET FORTH BY THE AUTHORITIES OF ANCIENT AND MODERN TIMES. New and enlarged Edition. Crown 8vo. cloth, 5s.

- TUKE** (*Daniel Hack*) *M.D.*—CHAPTERS IN THE HISTORY OF THE INSANE IN THE BRITISH ISLES. With 4 Illustrations. Large crown 8vo. cloth, 12s.
- TWINING** (*Louisa*)—WORKHOUSE VISITING AND MANAGEMENT DURING TWENTY-FIVE YEARS. Small crown 8vo. cloth, price 3s. 6d.
- UPTON** (*Major R. D.*)—GLEANINGS FROM THE DESERT OF ARABIA. Large post 8vo. cloth, price 10s. 6d.
- VAUGHAN** (*H. Halford*)—NEW READINGS AND RENDERINGS OF SHAKESPEARE'S TRAGEDIES. 2 vols. demy 8vo. cloth, price 25s.
- VIATOR** (*Vacuus*)—FLYING SOUTH. Recollections of France and its Littoral. Small crown 8vo. cloth, price 3s. 6d.
- VILLARI** (*Professor*)—NICCOLO MACHIAVELLI AND HIS TIMES. Translated by Linda Villari. 2 vols. Large post 8vo. price 24s.
- VOLCKXSOM** (*E. W. V.*)—CATECHISM OF ELEMENTARY MODERN CHEMISTRY. Small crown 8vo. cloth, 3s.
- VYNER** (*Lady Mary*)—EVERY DAY A PORTION. Adapted from the Bible and the Prayer Book, for the Private Devotions of those living in Widowhood. Collected and Edited by Lady Mary Vyner. Square crown 8vo. extra, price 5s.
- WALDSTEIN** (*Charles*) *Ph.D.*—THE BALANCE OF EMOTION AND INTELLECT; an Introductory Essay to the Study of Philosophy. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 6s.
- WALLER** (*Rev. C. B.*)—THE APOCALYPSE, reviewed under the Light of the Doctrine of the Unfolding Ages, and the Restitution of All Things. Demy 8vo. price 12s.
- WALPOLE** (*Chas. George*)—HISTORY OF IRELAND FROM THE EARLIEST TIMES TO THE UNION WITH GREAT BRITAIN. With 5 Maps and Appendices. Crown 8vo. cloth, 10s. 6d.
- WALSHE** (*Walter Hayle*) *M.D.*—DRAMATIC SINGING PHYSIOLOGICALLY ESTIMATED. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 3s. 6d.
- WATSON** (*Sir Thomas*) *Bart., M.D.*—THE ABOLITION OF ZYMOTIC DISEASES, and of other similar Enemies of Mankind. Small crown 8vo. cloth, price 3s. 6d.
- WEDMORE** (*Frederick*)—THE MASTERS OF GENRE PAINTING. With Sixteen Illustrations. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 7s. 6d.
- WHEWELL** (*William*) *D.D.*—HIS LIFE AND SELECTIONS FROM HIS CORRESPONDENCE. By Mrs. STAIR DOUGLAS. With a Portrait from a Painting by SAMUEL LAURENCE. Demy 8vo. cloth, price 21s.
- WHITE** (*A. D.*) *LL.D.*—WARFARE OF SCIENCE. With Prefatory Note by Professor Tyndall. Second Edition. Crown 8vo. price 3s. 6d.
- WHITE** (*F. A.*)—ENGLISH GRAMMAR. Small crown 8vo. cloth, 2s.
- WHITNEY** (*Prof. William Dwight*)—ESSENTIALS OF ENGLISH GRAMMAR, for the Use of Schools. Crown 8vo. price 3s. 6d.
- WICKSTEED** (*P. H.*)—DANTE: Six Sermons. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 5s.

**WILLIAMS (Rowland) D.D.**—PSALMS, LITANIES, COUNSELS, AND COLLECTS FOR DEVOUT PERSONS. Edited by his Widow. New and Popular Edition. Crown 8vo. price 3s. 6d.

STRAY THOUGHTS COLLECTED FROM THE WRITINGS OF THE LATE ROWLAND WILLIAMS, D.D. Edited by his Widow. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 3s. 6d.

**WILLIS (R.) M.D.**—SERVETUS AND CALVIN : a Study of an Important Epoch in the Early History of the Reformation. 8vo. price 16s.

WILLIAM HARVEY. A History of the Discovery of the Circulation of the Blood : with a Portrait of Harvey after Faithorne. Demy 8vo. cloth, price 14s. Portrait separate.

**WILSON (Sir Erasmus)**—EGYPT OF THE PAST. With Chromo-lithograph and numerous Illustrations in the text. Second Edition, Revised. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 12s.

**WILSON (H. Schütz)**—THE TOWER AND SCAFFOLD. A Miniature Monograph. Large fcp. 8vo. price 1s.

**WOLLSTONECRAFT (Mary)**—LETTERS TO IMLAY. New Edition, with Prefatory Memoir by C. KEGAN PAUL. Two Portraits in *eau-forte* by Anna Lea Merritt. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 6s.

**WOLTMANN (Dr. Alfred), and WOERMANN (Dr. Karl)**—HISTORY OF PAINTING. Edited by Sidney Colvin. Vol. I. Painting in Antiquity and the Middle Ages. With numerous Illustrations. Medium 8vo. cloth, price 28s. ; bevelled boards, gilt leaves, price 30s.

**WOOD (Major-General J. Creighton)**—DOUBLING THE CONSONANT. Small crown 8vo. cloth, price 1s. 6d.

WORD WAS MADE FLESH. Short Family Readings on the Epistles for each Sunday of the Christian Year. Demy 8vo. cloth, price 10s. 6d.

**WREN (Sir Christopher)**—HIS FAMILY AND HIS TIMES. With Original Letters, and a Discourse on Architecture hitherto unpublished. By LUCY PHILLIMORE. Demy 8vo. With Portrait. Price 14s.

**WRIGHT (Rev. David) M.A.**—WAITING FOR THE LIGHT, AND OTHER SERMONS. Crown 8vo. price 6s.

**YORKE (J. F.)**—NOTES ON EVOLUTION AND CHRISTIANITY. Crown 8vo. cloth, 6s.

**YOUMANS (Eliza A.)**—AN ESSAY ON THE CULTURE OF THE OBSERVING POWERS OF CHILDREN, especially in connection with the Study of Botany. Edited, with Notes and a Supplement, by Joseph Payne, F.C.P., Author of 'Lectures on the Science and Art of Education,' &c. Crown 8vo. price 2s. 6d.

FIRST BOOK OF BOTANY. Designed to Cultivate the Observing Powers of Children. With 300 Engravings. New and Cheaper Edition. Crown 8vo. price 2s. 6d.

**YOUMANS (Edward L.) M.D.**—A CLASS BOOK OF CHEMISTRY, on the Basis of the New System. With 200 Illustrations. Crown 8vo. price 5s.

## THE INTERNATIONAL SCIENTIFIC SERIES.

- I. FORMS OF WATER : a Familiar Exposition of the Origin and Phenomena of Glaciers. By J. Tyndall, LL.D., F.R.S. With 25 Illustrations. Eighth Edition. Crown 8vo. price 5s.
- II. PHYSICS AND POLITICS ; or, Thoughts on the Application of the Principles of 'Natural Selection' and 'Inheritance' to Political Society. By Walter Bagehot. Fifth Edition. Crown 8vo. price 4s.
- III. FOODS. By Edward Smith, M.D., LL.B., F.R.S. With numerous Illustrations. Seventh Edition. Crown 8vo. price 5s.
- IV. MIND AND BODY : the Theories of their Relation. By Alexander Bain, LL.D. With Four Illustrations. Seventh Edition. Crown 8vo. price 4s.
- V. THE STUDY OF SOCIOLOGY. By Herbert Spencer. Tenth Edition. Crown 8vo. price 5s.
- VI. ON THE CONSERVATION OF ENERGY. By Balfour Stewart, M.A., LL.D., F.R.S. With 14 Illustrations. Fifth Edition. Crown 8vo. price 5s.
- VII. ANIMAL LOCOMOTION; or, Walking, Swimming, and Flying. By J. B. Pettigrew, M.D., F.R.S., &c. With 130 Illustrations. Second Edition. Crown 8vo. price 5s.
- VIII. RESPONSIBILITY IN MENTAL DISEASE. By Henry Maudsley, M.D. Fourth Edition. Crown 8vo. price 5s.
- IX. THE NEW CHEMISTRY. By Professor J. P. Cooke. With 31 Illustrations. Sixth Edition. Crown 8vo. price 5s.
- X. THE SCIENCE OF LAW. By Professor Sheldon Amos. Fifth Edition. Crown 8vo. price 5s.
- XI. ANIMAL MECHANISM : a Treatise on Terrestrial and Aerial Locomotion. By Professor E. J. Marey. With 117 Illustrations. Second Edition. Crown 8vo. price 5s.
- XII. THE DOCTRINE OF DESCENT AND DARWINISM. By Professor Oscar Schmidt. With 26 Illustrations. Fourth Edition. Crown 8vo. price 5s.
- XIII. THE HISTORY OF THE CONFLICT BETWEEN RELIGION AND SCIENCE. By J. W. Draper, M.D., LL.D. Fifteenth Edition. Crown 8vo. price 5s.
- XIV. FUNGI: their Nature, Influences, Uses, &c. By M. C. Cooke, M.D., LL.D. Edited by the Rev. M. J. Berkeley, M.A., F.L.S. With numerous Illustrations. Second Edition. Crown 8vo. price 5s.
- XV. THE CHEMICAL EFFECTS OF LIGHT AND PHOTOGRAPHY. By Dr. Hermann Vogel. Translation thoroughly revised. With 100 Illustrations. Third Edition. Crown 8vo. price 5s.
- XVI. THE LIFE AND GROWTH OF LANGUAGE. By Professor William Dwight Whitney, Third Edition. Crown 8vo. price 5s.
- XVII. MONEY AND THE MECHANISM OF EXCHANGE. By W. Stanley Jevons, M.A., F.R.S. Fifth Edition. Crown 8vo. price 5s.
- XVIII. THE NATURE OF LIGHT. With a General Account of Physical Optics. By Dr. Eugene Lommel. With 188 Illustrations and a Table of Spectra in Chromo-lithography. Third Edition. Crown 8vo. price 5s.
- XIX. ANIMAL PARASITES AND MESSMATES. By Monsieur Van Beneden. With 83 Illustrations. Second Edition. Crown 8vo. price 5s.
- XX. FERMENTATION. By Professor Schützenberger. With 28 Illustrations. Third Edition. Crown 8vo. price 5s.
- XXI. THE FIVE SENSES OF MAN. By Professor Bernstein. With 91 Illustrations. Third Edition. Crown 8vo. price 5s.
- XXII. THE THEORY OF SOUND IN ITS RELATION TO MUSIC. By Professor Pietro Blaserna. With numerous Illustrations. Second Edition. Crown 8vo. price 5s.
- XXIII. STUDIES IN SPECTRUM ANALYSIS. By J. Norman Lockyer, F.R.S. With six photographic Illustrations of Spectra, and numerous engravings on Wood. Crown 8vo. Second Edition. Price 6s. 6d.

- XXIV. **A HISTORY OF THE GROWTH OF THE STREAM ENGINE.** By Professor R. H. Thurston. With numerous Illustrations. Second Edition. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 6s. 6d.
- XXV. **EDUCATION AS A SCIENCE.** By Alexander Bain, LL.D. Fourth Edition. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 5s.
- XXVI. **THE HUMAN SPECIES.** By Prof. A. de Quatrefages. Third Edition. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 5s.
- XXVII. **MODERN CHROMATICS.** With Applications to Art and Industry. By Ogden N. Rood. With 130 original Illustrations. Second Edition. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 5s.
- XXVIII. **THE CRAYFISH: an Introduction to the Study of Zoology.** By Professor T. H. Huxley. With 82 Illustrations. Third Edition. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 5s.
- XXIX. **THE BRAIN AS AN ORGAN OF MIND.** By H. Charlton Bastian, M.D. With numerous Illustrations. Second Edition. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 5s.
- XXX. **THE ATOMIC THEORY.** By Prof. Wurtz. Translated by G. Cleminshaw, F.C.S. Third Edition. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 5s.
- XXXI. **THE NATURAL CONDITIONS OF EXISTENCE AS THEY AFFECT ANIMAL LIFE.** By Karl Semper. With 2 Maps and 106 Woodcuts. Second Edition. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 5s.
- XXXII. **GENERAL PHYSIOLOGY OF MUSCLES AND NERVES.** By Prof. J. Rosenthal. Second Edition. With Illustrations. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 5s.
- XXXIII. **SIGHT: an Exposition of the Principles of Monocular and Binocular Vision.** By Joseph le Conte, LL.D. With 132 Illustrations. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 5s.
- XXXIV. **ILLUSIONS: a Psychological Study.** By James Sully. Second Edition. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 5s.
- XXXV. **VOLCANOES: WHAT THEY ARE AND WHAT THEY TEACH.** By Professor J. W. Judd, F.R.S. With 92 Illustrations on Wood. Second Edition. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 5s.
- XXXVI. **SUICIDE: an Essay in Comparative Moral Statistics.** By Prof. E. Morselli. With Diagrams. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 5s.
- XXXVII. **THE BRAIN AND ITS FUNCTIONS.** By J. Luys. With Illustrations. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 5s.
- XXXVIII. **MYTH AND SCIENCE: an Essay.** By Tito Vignoli. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 5s.
- XXXIX. **THE SUN.** By Professor Young. With Illustrations. Second Edition. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 5s.
- XL. **ANTS, BEES, AND WASPS: a Record of Observations on the Habits of the Social Hymenoptera.** By Sir John Lubbock, Bart., M.P. With 5 Chromolithographic Illustrations. Fifth Edit. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 5s.
- XLI. **ANIMAL INTELLIGENCE.** By G. J. Romanes, LL.D., F.R.S. Second Edition. Crown 8vo. cloth, 5s.
- XLII. **THE CONCEPTS AND THEORIES OF MODERN PHYSICS.** By J. B. Stallo. Crown 8vo. cloth, 5s.
- XLIII. **DISEASES OF MEMORY: an Essay in the Positive Psychology.** By Prof. Th. Ribot. Crown 8vo. 5s.
- XLIV. **MAN BEFORE METALS.** By N. Joly. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 5s.
- XLV. **THE SCIENCE OF POLITICS.** By Prof. Sheldon Amos. Crown. 8vo. cloth, 5s.

## MILITARY WORKS.

**ARMY OF THE NORTH GERMAN CONFEDERATION: a Brief Description of its Organisation, of the Different Branches of the Service and their rôle in War, of its Mode of Fighting, &c.**

Translated from the Corrected Edition, by permission of the Author, by Colonel Edward Newdigate. Demy 8vo. price 5s.

- BARRINGTON** (*Capt. J. T.*)—ENGLAND ON THE DEFENSIVE; or, the Problem of Invasion Critically Examined. Large crown 8vo. with Map, cloth, price 7s. 6d.
- BLUME** (*Maj. W.*)—THE OPERATIONS OF THE GERMAN ARMIES IN FRANCE, from Sedan to the end of the War of 1870-71. With Map. From the Journals of the Head-quarters Staff. Translated by the late E. M. Jones, Maj. 20th Foot, Prof. of Mil. Hist., Sandhurst. Demy 8vo. price 9s.
- BOGUSLAWSKI** (*Capt. A. von*)—TACTICAL DEDUCTIONS FROM THE WAR OF 1870-1. Translated by Colonel Sir Lumley Graham, Bart., late 18th (Royal Irish) Regiment. Third Edition, Revised and Corrected. Demy 8vo. price 7s.
- BRACKENBURY** (*Col. C. B.*), R.A., C.B.—MILITARY HANDBOOKS FOR REGIMENTAL OFFICERS. I. Military Sketching and Reconnaissance, by Colonel F. J. Hutchison, and Major H. G. MacGregor. Fourth Edition. With 15 Plates. Small 8vo. cloth, price 6s. II. The Elements of Modern Tactics Practically applied to English Formations, by Lieut.-Col. Wilkinson Shaw. Fourth Edition. With 25 Plates and Maps. Small cr. 8vo. cloth, price 9s.
- BRIALMONT** (*Col. A.*)—HASTY INTRENCHMENTS. Translated by Lieut. Charles A. Empson, R.A. With Nine Plates. Demy 8vo. price 6s.
- CLERY** (*C.*) *Lieut.-Col.*—MINOR TACTICS. With 26 Maps and Plans. Fifth and revised Edition. Demy 8vo. cloth, price 16s.
- DU VERNOIS** (*Col. von Verdy*)—STUDIES IN LEADING TROOPS. An authorised and accurate Translation by Lieutenant H. J. T. Hildyard, 71st Foot. Parts I. and II. Demy 8vo. price 7s.
- GOETZE** (*Capt. A. von*)—OPERATIONS OF THE GERMAN ENGINEERS DURING THE WAR OF 1870-1. Published by Authority, and in accordance with Official Documents. Translated from the German by Colonel G. Graham, V.C., C.B., R.E. With 6 large Maps. Demy 8vo. price 21s.
- HARRISON** (*Lieut.-Col. R.*)—THE OFFICER'S MEMORANDUM BOOK FOR PEACE AND WAR. Third Edition. Oblong 32mo. roan, with pencil, price 3s. 6d.
- HELVIG** (*Capt. H.*)—THE OPERATIONS OF THE BAVARIAN ARMY CORPS. Translated by Captain G. S. Schwabe. With Five large Maps. In 2 vols. Demy 8vo. price 24s.
- TACTICAL EXAMPLES: Vol. I. The Battalion, price 15s. Vol. II. The Regiment and Brigade, price 10s. 6d. Translated from the German by Col. Sir Lumley Graham. With nearly 300 Diagrams. Demy 8vo. cloth.
- HOFFBAUER** (*Capt.*)—THE GERMAN ARTILLERY IN THE BATTLES NEAR METZ. Based on the Official Reports of the German Artillery. Translated by Captain E. O. Hollist. With Map and Plans. Demy 8vo. price 21s.
- LAYMANN** (*Capt.*)—THE FRONTAL ATTACK OF INFANTRY. Translated by Colonel Edward Newdigate. Crown 8vo. price 2s. 6d.
- NOTES ON CAVALRY TACTICS, ORGANISATION, &c. By a Cavalry Officer. With Diagrams. Demy 8vo. cloth, price 12s.
- PARR** (*Capt. H. Hallam*) C.M.G.—THE DRESS, HORSES, AND EQUIPMENT OF INFANTRY AND STAFF OFFICERS. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 1s.
- SCHAW** (*Col. H.*)—THE DEFENCE AND ATTACK OF POSITIONS AND LOCALITIES. Second Edition, revised and corrected. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 3s. 6d.
- SHELL** (*Maj. von*)—THE OPERATIONS OF THE FIRST ARMY UNDER GEN. VON GOEBEN. Translated by Col. C. H. von Wright. Four Maps. demy 8vo. price 9s.
- THE OPERATIONS OF THE FIRST ARMY UNDER GEN. VON STEINMETZ. Translated by Captain E. O. Hollist. Demy 8vo. price 10s. 6d.
- SHELLENDORF** (*Major-Gen. B. von*)—THE DUTIES OF THE GENERAL STAFF. Translated from the German by Lieutenant Hare. Vol. I. Demy 8vo. cloth, price 10s. 6d.

- SCHERFF** (*Maj. W. von*)—STUDIES IN THE NEW INFANTRY TACTICS. Parts I. and II. Translated from the German by Colonel Lumley Graham. Demy 8vo. price 7s. 6d.
- SHADWELL** (*Maj.-Gen. C. B.*)—MOUNTAIN WARFARE. Illustrated by the Campaign of 1799 in Switzerland. Being a Translation of the Swiss Narrative compiled from the Works of the Archduke Charles, Jomini, and others. Also of Notes by General H. Dufour on the Campaign of the Valtelline in 1635. With Appendix, Maps, and Introductory Remarks. Demy 8vo. price 16s.
- SHERMAN** (*Gen. W. T.*)—MEMOIRS OF GENERAL W. T. SHERMAN, Commander of the Federal Forces in the American Civil War. By Himself. 2 vols. With Map. Demy 8vo. price 24s. *Copyright English Edition.*
- STUBBS** (*Lieut.-Col. F. W.*)—THE REGIMENT OF BENGAL ARTILLERY. The History of its Organisation, Equipment, and War Services. Compiled from Published Works, Official Records, and various Private Sources. With numerous Maps and Illustrations. 2 vols. Demy 8vo. price 32s.
- STUMM** (*Lieut. Hugo*)—RUSSIA'S ADVANCE EASTWARD. Based on the Official Reports of. Translated by Capt. C. E. H. VINCENT, With Map. Crown 8vo. price 6s.
- VINCENT** (*Capt. C. E. H.*)—ELEMENTARY MILITARY GEOGRAPHY, RECONNOITRING, AND SKETCHING. Compiled for Non-commissioned Officers and Soldiers of all Arms. Square crown 8vo. price 2s. 6d.
- VOLUNTEER, THE MILITIAMAN, AND THE REGULAR SOLDIER, by a Public Schoolboy. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 5s.
- WARTENSLEBEN** (*Count H. von.*)—THE OPERATIONS OF THE SOUTH ARMY IN JANUARY AND FEBRUARY, 1871. Compiled from the Official War Documents of the Headquarters of the Southern Army. Translated by Colonel C. H. von Wright. With Maps. Demy 8vo. price 6s.
- THE OPERATIONS OF THE FIRST ARMY UNDER GEN. VON MANTEUFFEL. Translated by Colonel C. H. von Wright. Uniform with the above. Demy 8vo. price 9s.
- WICKHAM** (*Capt. E. H., R.A.*)—INFLUENCE OF FIREARMS UPON TACTICS: Historical and Critical Investigations. By an OFFICER OF SUPERIOR RANK (in the German Army). Translated by Captain E. H. Wickham, R.A. Demy 8vo. price 7s. 6d.
- WOINOVITS** (*Capt. I.*)—AUSTRIAN CAVALRY EXERCISE. Translated by Captain W. S. Cooke. Crown 8vo. price 7s.

## POETRY.

- ADAMS** (*W. D.*)—LYRICS OF LOVE, from Shakespeare to Tennyson. Selected and arranged by. Fcp. 8vo. cloth extra, gilt edges, price 3s. 6d.
- ADAM OF ST. VICTOR**—THE LITURGICAL POETRY OF ADAM OF ST. VICTOR. From the text of Gautier. With Translations into English in the Original Metres, and Short Explanatory Notes. By Digby S. Wrangham, M.A. 3 vols. Crown 8vo. printed on hand-made paper, boards, price 21s.
- ANTIOPE**: a Tragedy. Large crown 8vo. cloth, price 6s.
- AUBERTIN** (*J. J.*)—CAMOENS' LUSIADS. Portuguese Text, with Translation by. Map and Portraits. 2 vols. Demy 8vo. price 30s.
- SEVENTY SONNETS OF CAMOENS. Portuguese Text and Translation, with some original Poems. Dedicated to Capt. Richard F. Burton. Printed on hand made paper, cloth, bevelled boards, gilt top, price 7s. 6d.
- AUCHMUTY** (*A. C.*)—POEMS OF ENGLISH HEROISM: From Brunanburgh to Lucknow; from Athelstan to Albert. Small crown 8vo. cloth, price 1s. 6d.

- AVIA**—THE ODYSSEY OF HOMER. Done into English Verse by. Fcp. 4to. cloth, price 15s.
- BANKS (Mrs. G. L.)**—RIPPLES AND BREAKERS: Poems. Square 8vo. cloth, price 5s.
- BARNES (William)**—POEMS OF RURAL LIFE, IN THE DORSET DIALECT. New Edition, complete in one vol. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 8s. 6d.
- BENNETT (Dr. W. C.)**—NARRATIVE POEMS AND BALLADS. Fcp. 8vo. sewed, in Coloured Wrapper, price 1s.
- SONGS FOR SAILORS. Dedicated by Special Request to H. R. H. the Duke of Edinburgh. With Steel Portrait and Illustrations. Crown 8vo. price 3s. 6d.
- An Edition in Illustrated Paper Covers, price 1s.
- SONGS OF A SONG WRITER. Crown 8vo. price 6s.
- BEVINGTON (L. S.)**—KEY NOTES. Small crown 8vo. cloth, price 5s.
- B. LSON (C. J.)**—THE ACHARNIANS OF ARISTOPHANES. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 3s. 6d.
- BOWEN (H. C.) M.A.**—SIMPLE ENGLISH POEMS. English Literature for Junior Classes. In Four Parts. Parts I, II, and III. price 6d. each, and Part IV. price 1s.
- BRYANT (W. C.)**—POEMS. Red-line Edition. With 24 Illustrations and Portrait of the Author. Crown 8vo. cloth extra, price 7s. 6d.
- A Cheap Edition, with Frontispiece. Small crown 8vo. price 3s. 6d.
- BYRNNE (E. Fairfax)**—MILICENT: a Poem. Small crown 8vo. cloth, price 6s.
- CALDERON'S DRAMAS**: the Wonder-Working Magician—Life is a Dream—the Purgatory of St. Patrick. Translated by Denis Florence MacCarthy. Post 8vo. price 10s.
- CLARKE (Mary Cowden)**—HONEY FROM THE WEED. Verses. Crown 8vo. cloth, 7s.
- COLOMB (Colonel)**—THE CARDINAL ARCHBISHOP: a Spanish Legend. In 29 Cancions. Small crown 8vo. cloth, price 5s.
- CONWAY (Hugh)**—A LIFE'S IDYLLS. Small crown 8vo. cloth, price 3s. 6d.
- COPPÉE (Francois)**—L'EXILÉE. Done into English Verse, with the sanction of the Author, by I. O. L. Crown 8vo. vellum, price 5s.
- CONHEAD (Ethel)**—BIRDS AND BABIES. Imp. 16mo. With 33 Illustrations. Cloth gilt, 2s. 6d.
- DAVID RIZZIO, BOTHWELL, AND THE WITCH LADY.** Three Tragedies. By the Author of 'Ginevra,' &c. Crown 8vo. cloth, 6s.
- DAVIE (G. S.) M.D.**—THE GARDEN OF FRAGRANCE. Being a complete Translation of the Bóstan of Sádi, from the original Persian into English Verse. Crown 8vo. cloth, 7s. 6d.
- DAVIES (T. Hart)**—CATULLUS. Translated into English Verse. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 6s.
- DE VERE (Aubrey)**—THE FORAY OF QUEEN MEAVE, and other Legends of Ireland's Heroic Age. Small crown 8vo. cloth, 5s.
- ALEXANDER THE GREAT**: a Dramatic Poem. Small crown 8vo. price 5s.
- THE LEGENDS OF ST. PATRICK, and other Poems. Small cr. 8vo. price 5s.
- ST. THOMAS OF CANTERBURY: a Dramatic Poem. Large fcp. 8vo. price 5s.
- ANTAR AND ZARA: an Eastern Romance. INISFAIL, and other Poems, Meditative and Lyrical. Fcp. 8vo. price 6s.
- THE FALL OF RORA, THE SEARCH AFTER PROSERPINE, and other Poems, Meditative and Lyrical. Fcp. 8vo. 6s.
- LEGENDS OF THE SAXON SAINTS. Small crown 8vo. cloth, price 6s.
- THE INFANT BRIDAL, and other Poems. A New and Enlarged Edition. Fcp. 8vo. price 7s. 6d.
- DILLON (Arthur)**—RIVER SONGS and other poems. With 13 Autotype Illustrations from designs by Margery May. Fcp. 4to. cloth extra, gilt leaves, 10s. 6d.
- DOBELL (Mrs. Horace)**—ETHELSTONE, EVELINE, and other Poems. Crown 8vo. cloth, 6s.

- DOBSON (Austin)**—VIGNETTES IN RHYME, and Vers de Société. Third Edition. Fcp. 8vo. price 5s.
- PROVERBS IN PORCELAIN.** By the Author of 'Vignettes in Rhyme.' Second Edition. Crown 8vo. price 6s.
- DOROTHY:** a Country Story in Elegiac Verse. With Preface. Demy 8vo. cloth, price 5s.
- DOWDEN (Edward)** LL.D.—POEMS. Second Edition. Fcp. 8vo. price 5s.
- SHAKSPERE'S SONNETS.** With Introduction. Large post 8vo. cloth, price 7s. 6d.
- DOWNTON (Rev. H.) M.A.**—HYMNS AND VERSES. Original and Translated. Small crown 8vo. cloth, price 3s. 6d.
- DUGMORE (Rev. Ernest Edward)**—FROM THE MOUNTAINS OF THE EAST: A Quasi Dramatic Poem on the Story of the Prophet Soothsayer Balaam. Crown 8vo. cloth, 3s. 6d.
- DUTT (Torn)**—A SHEAF GLEANED IN FRENCH FIELDS. New Edition, with Portrait. Demy 8vo. cloth, 10s. 6d.
- ANCIENT BALLADS AND LEGENDS OF HINDUSTAN.** With an Introductory Memoir by Edmund W. Gosse. Small crown 8vo. printed on hand-made paper, price 5s.
- EDWARDS (Rev. Basil)**—MINOR CHORDS; or, Songs for the Suffering: a Volume of Verse. Fcp. 8vo. cloth, price 3s. 6d.; paper, price 2s. 6d.
- ELDRYTH (Maud)**—MARGARET, and other Poems. Small crown 8vo. cloth, price 3s. 6d.
- ELLIOT (Lady Charlotte)**—MEDUSA and other Poems. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 6s.
- ELLIOTT (Ebenezer), The Corn Law Rhymist.**—POEMS. Edited by his son, the Rev. Edwin Elliott, of St. John's, Antigua. 2 vols. crown 8vo. price 18s.
- ENGLISH ODES.** Selected, with a Critical Introduction by EDMUND W. GOSSE, and a miniature frontispiece by Hamo Thornycroft, A.R.A. Elzevir 8vo. limp parchment antique, price 6s.; vellum, 7s. 6d.
- EPIC OF HADES (THE).** By the Author of 'Songs of Two Worlds.' Thirteenth Edition. Fcp. 8vo. price 7s. 6d.
- \* \* \* Also an Illustrated Edition, with seventeen full-page designs in photo-mezzotint by George R. Chapman. 4to. cloth, extra gilt leaves, price 25s.; and a Large Paper Edition with Portrait, price 10s. 6d.
- EVANS (Anne)**—POEMS AND MUSIC. With Memorial Preface by ANN THACKERAY RITCHIE. Large crown 8vo. cloth, price 7s.
- GOSSE (Edmund W.)**—NEW POEMS. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 7s. 6d.
- GROTE (A. R.)**—RIP VAN WINKLE: a Sun Myth; and other Poems. Small crown 8vo. printed on hand-made paper, limp parchment antique, price 5s.
- GURNEY (Rev. Alfred)**—THE VISION OF THE EUCHARIST, and other Poems. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 5s.
- GWEN:** a Drama in Monologue. By the Author of the 'Epic of Hades.' Third Edition. Fcp. 8vo. cloth, price 5s.
- HAWKER (Robt. Stephen)**—THE POETICAL WORKS OF. Now first collected and arranged. With a Prefatory Notice by J. G. Godwin. With Portrait. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 12s.
- HELLON (H. G.)**—DAPHNIS: a Pastoral Poem. Small crown 8vo. cloth, price 3s. 6d.
- HERMAN WALDGRAVE:** a Life's Drama. By the Author of 'Genevra,' &c. Crown 8vo. cloth, 6s.
- HICKEY (E. H.)**—A SCULPTOR, and other Poems. Small crown 8vo. cloth, price 5s.
- HOLMES (E. G. A.)**—POEMS. First and Second Series. Fcp. 8vo. price 5s. each.
- INGHAM (Sarson C. F.) CÆDMON'S VISION** and other Poems. Small crown 8vo. cloth, 5s.
- JENKINS (Rev. Canon)**—THE GIRDLE LEGEND OF PRATO. Small crown 8vo. cloth, price 2s.
- ALFONSO PETRUCCI,** Cardinal and Conspirator: an Historical Tragedy in Five Acts. Small crown 8vo. cloth, price 3s. 6d.
- KING (Edward)**—ECHOES FROM THE ORIENT. With Miscellaneous Poems. Small crown 8vo. cloth, price 3s. 6d.

- KING** (*Mrs. Hamilton*)—THE DISCIPLES. Fifth Edition, with Portrait and Notes. Crown 8vo. price 5s.
- ASPROMONTE**, and other Poems. Second Edition. Fcp. 8vo. price 4s. 6d.
- LANG** (*A.*)—XXXII BALLADES IN BLUE CHINA. Elzevir 8vo. parchment, price 5s.
- LEIGH** (*Arran and Isla*)—BELLEROPHON. Small crown 8vo. cloth, price 5s.
- LEIGHTON** (*Robert*)—RECORDS AND OTHER POEMS. With Portrait. Small crown 8vo. cloth, price 7s. 6d.
- LESSING'S NATHAN THE WISE.** Translated by Eustace K. Corbett. Crown 8vo. cloth. 6s.
- LIVING ENGLISH POETS.** MDCCCLXXXII. With frontispiece by Walter Crane. Large crown 8vo. printed on handmade paper. Parchment, 12s.; vellum, 15s.
- LOCKER** (*F.*)—LONDON LYRICS. A New and Revised Edition, with Additions and a Portrait of the Author. Crown 8vo. cloth elegant, price 6s.  
\* \* \* Also a Cheaper Edition, price 2s. 6d.
- LOVE SONNETS OF PROTEUS.** With Frontispiece by the Author. Elzevir 8vo. cloth, price 5s.
- LOWNDES** (*Henry*)—POEMS AND TRANSLATIONS. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 6s.
- LUMSDEN** (*Lieut.-Col. H. W.*)—BEOWULF: an Old English Poem. Translated into Modern Rhymes. Small crown 8vo. cloth, price 5s.
- MACLEAN** (*Charles Donala*)—LATIN AND GREEK VERSE TRANSLATIONS. Small crown 8vo. cloth, 2s.
- MAGNUSSON** (*Eirikr*) *M.A.*, and **PALMER** (*E. H.*) *M.A.*—JOHAN LUDVIG RUNEBERG'S LYRICAL SONGS, IDYLLS, AND EPIGRAMS. Fcp. 8vo. cloth, price 5s.
- MDC.** Chronicles of Christopher Columbus. A Poem in Twelve Cantos. Small crown 8vo. cloth, 7s. 6d.
- MEREDITH** (*Owen*) [*The Earl of Lytton*] **LUCILE.** With 160 Illustrations. Crown 4to. cloth extra, gilt leaves, price 21s.
- MIDDLETON**, (*The Lady*)—BALLADS. Square 16mo. cloth, price 3s. 6d.
- MOORE** (*Mrs. Bloomfield*)—GONDALINE'S LESSON: The Warden's Tale, Stories for Children, and other Poems. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 5s.
- MORICE** (*Rev. F. D.*) *M.A.*—THE OLYMPIAN AND PYTHIAN ODES OF PINDAR. A New Translation in English Verse. Crown 8vo. price 7s. 6d.
- MORRIS** (*Lewis*)—POETICAL WORKS. Vol. I. contains Songs of Two Worlds. Vol. II. contains The Epic of Hades. Vol. III. contains Gwen and the Ode of Life. New and Cheaper Edition, with Portrait, complete in 3 vols. 5s. each.
- MORSHEAD** (*E. D. A.*)—THE HOUSE ARTEUS. Being the Agamemnon, Libation-Bearers, and Furies of Æschylus. Translated into English Verse. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 7s.
- NADEN** (*Constance W.*)—SONGS AND SONNETS OF SPRING TIME. Small crown 8vo. cloth, price 5s.
- NEWELL** (*E. J.*)—THE SORROW OF SIMONA and Lyrical Verses. Small crown 8vo. cloth, 3s. 6d.
- NICHOLSON** (*Edward B.*)—THE CHRIST CHILD, and other Poems. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 4s. 6d.
- NOAKE** (*Major R. Compton*)—THE BIVOUCAC; or, Martial Lyrist. With an Appendix: Advice to the Soldier. Fcp. 8vo. price 5s. 6d.
- NOEL** (*The How Rodem*)—A LITTLE CHILD'S MONUMENT. Second Edition. Small crown 8vo. cloth, 3s. 6d.
- NORRIS** (*Rev. Alfred*)—THE INNER AND OUTER LIFE POEMS. Fcp. 8vo. cloth, price 6s.
- ODE OF LIFE (THE).** By the Author of 'The Epic of Hades' &c. Fourth Edition. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 5s.
- O'HAGAN** (*John*)—THE SONG OF ROLAND. Translated into English Verse. Large post 8vo. parchment antique, price 10s. 6d.
- PAUL** (*C. Kegan*)—GOETHE'S FAUST. A New Translation in Rhyme. Crown 8vo. price 6s.

- PAYNE (John)**—SONGS OF LIFE AND DEATH. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 5s.
- PENNELL (H. Cholmondeley)**—PEGASUS RESADDLED. By the Author of 'Puck on Pegasus,' &c. &c. With Ten Full-page Illustrations by George Du Maurier. Second Edition. Fcp. 4to. cloth elegant, price 12s. 6d.
- PFEIFFER (Emily)**—GLAN ALARCH: His Silence and Song: a Poem. Second Edition. Crown 8vo. price 6s.
- GERARD'S MONUMENT** and other Poems. Second Edition. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 6s.
- QUARTERMAN'S GRACE**, and other Poems. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 5s.
- POEMS**. Second Edition. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 6s.
- SONNETS AND SONGS**. New Edition. 16mo. handsomely printed and bound in cloth, gilt edges, price 4s.
- UNDER THE ASPENS**: Lyrical and Dramatic. Crown 8vo. with Portrait cloth, price 6s.
- PIKE (Warburton)**—THE INFERNO OF DANTE ALIGHIERI. Demy 8vo. cloth, price 5s.
- RHOADES (James)**—THE GEORGICS OF VIRGIL. Translated into English Verse. Small crown 8vo. cloth, price 5s.
- ROBINSON (A. Mary F.)**—A HANDFUL OF HONEYSUCKLE. Fcp. 8vo. cloth, price 3s. 6d.
- THE CROWNED HIPPLYTUS**. Translated from Euripides. With New Poems. Small crown 8vo. cloth, price 5s.
- SAUNDERS (John)**—LOVE'S MARTYRDOM: a Play and Poem. Small crown 8vo. cloth, 5s.
- SCHILLER'S MARY STUART**. German Text with English Translation on opposite page. By Leedham White. Crown 8vo. cloth, 6s.
- SHAW (W. F.) M.A.**—JUVENAL, PERSIUS, MARTIAL, AND CATULLUS: an Experiment in Translation. Crown 8vo. cloth, 5s.
- SHELLEY (Percy Bysshe)**—POEMS SELECTED FROM. Dedicated to Lady Shelley. With Preface by Richard Garnett. Printed on hand-made paper, with miniature frontispiece, Elzevir 8vo. limp parchment antique, price 6s.; vellum, price 7s. 6d.
- SIX BALLADS ABOUT KING ARTHUR**. Crown 8vo. cloth extra, gilt edges, price 3s. 6d.
- SKINNER (James)**—CELESTIA. The Manual of St. Augustine. The Latin Text side by side with an English Interpretation in Thirty-six Odes with Notes, and a plea for the study of Mystical Theology. Large crown 8vo. cloth, 6s.
- SLADEN (Douglas B. W.)**—FRITHJOF AND INGEBJORG and other Poems. Small crown 8vo. cloth, 5s.
- SONGS OF TWO WORLDS**. By the Author of 'The Epic of Hades.' Seventh Edition. Complete in one Volume, with Portrait. Fcp. 8vo. cloth, price 7s. 6d.
- SONGS FOR MUSIC**. By Four Friends. Containing Songs by Reginald A. Gatty, Stephen H. Gatty, Greville J. Chester, and Juliana Ewing. Square crown 8vo. price 5s.
- STEDMAN (Edmund Clarence)**—LYRICS AND IDYLLS, with other Poems. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 7s. 6d.
- STEVENS (William)**—THE TRUCE OF GOD, and other Poems. Small crown 8vo. cloth, price 3s. 6d.
- SWEET SILVERY SAYINGS OF SHAKESPEARE**. Crown 8vo. cloth gilt, price 7s. 6d.
- TAYLOR (Sir H.)**—Works Complete in Five Volumes. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 30s.
- TENNYSON (Alfred)**—Works Complete:—
- THE IMPERIAL LIBRARY EDITION. Complete in 7 vols. Demy 8vo. price 10s. 6d. each; in Roxburgh binding, 12s. 6d. each.
- AUTHOR'S EDITION. In Seven Volumes. Post 8vo. cloth gilt, 43s. 6d.; or half-morocco, Roxburgh style, 52s. 6d.
- CABINET EDITION. 13 Volumes. Each with Frontispiece. Fcp. 8vo. price 2s. 6d. each.

TENNYSON (*Alfred*)—cont.

CABINET EDITION. 13 vols. Complete in handsome Ornamental Case, 35s.

THE ROYAL EDITION. In 1 vol. With 26 Illustrations and Portrait. Cloth extra, bevelled boards, gilt leaves, price 21s.

THE GUINEA EDITION. Complete in 13 vols. neatly bound and enclosed in box. Cloth, price 21s.; French morocco or parchment, price 31s. 6d.

SHILLING EDITION. In 13 vols. pocket size, 1s. each, sewed.

THE CROWN EDITION. Complete in 1 vol. strongly bound in cloth, price 6s.; cloth, extra gilt leaves, price 7s. 6d.; Roxburgh, half-morocco, price 8s. 6d.

\*.\* Can also be had in a variety of other bindings.

TENNYSON'S SONGS SET TO MUSIC by various Composers. Edited by W. J. Cusins. Dedicated, by express permission, to Her Majesty the Queen. Royal 4to. cloth extra, gilt leaves, price 21s.; or in half-morocco, price 25s.

Original Editions:—

POEMS. Small 8vo. price 6s.

MAUD, and other Poems. Small 8vo. price 3s. 6d.

THE PRINCESS. Small 8vo. price 3s. 6d.

IDYLLS OF THE KING. Small 8vo. price 5s.

IDYLLS OF THE KING. Complete. Small 8vo. price 6s.

THE HOLY GRAIL, and other Poems. Small 8vo. price 4s. 6d.

GARETH AND LYNETTE. Small 8vo. price 3s.

ENOCH ARDEN, &c. Small 8vo. price 3s. 6d.

IN MEMORIAM. Small 8vo. price 4s.

HAROLD: a Drama. New Edition. Crown 8vo. price 6s.

QUEEN MARY: a Drama. New Edition. Crown 8vo. price 6s.

THE LOVER'S TALE. Fcp. 8vo. cloth, 3s. 6d.

BALLADS, and other Poems. Small 8vo. cloth, price 5s.

TENNYSON (*Alfred*)—cont.

SELECTIONS FROM THE ABOVE WORKS. Super royal 16mo. price 3s. 6d.; cloth gilt extra, price 4s.

SONGS FROM THE ABOVE WORKS. 16mo. cloth, price 2s. 6d.; cloth extra, 3s. 6d.

IDYLLS OF THE KING, and other Poems. Illustrated by Julia Margaret Cameron. 2 vols. folio, half-bound morocco, cloth sides, price £6. 6s. each.

HORÆ TENNYSONIANÆ sive Eclogæ Tennysono Latine Redditæ Cura A. J. Church, A.M. Small crown 8vo. cloth, price 6s.

TENNYSON FOR THE YOUNG AND FOR RECITATION. Specially arranged. Fcp. 8vo. 1s. 6d.

THE TENNYSON BIRTHDAY BOOK. Edited by Emily Shakespear. 32mo. cloth limp, 2s.; cloth extra, 3s.

\*.\* A superior Edition, printed in red and black, on antique paper, specially prepared. Small crown 8vo. cloth, extra gilt leaves, price 5s.; and in various calf and morocco bindings.

THOMPSON (*Alice C.*)—PRELUDES: a Volume of Poems. Illustrated by Elizabeth Thompson (Painter of 'The Roll Call'). 8vo. price 7s. 6d.

TODHUNTER (*Dr. F.*)—LAURELLA, and other Poems. Crown 8vo. 6s. 6d.

FOREST SONGS. Small crown 8vo. cloth, price 3s. 6d.

THE TRUE TRAGEDY OF RIENZI: a Drama. Cloth, price 3s. 6d.

ALCESTIS: a Dramatic Poem. Extra fcp. 8vo. cloth, price 5s.

A STUDY OF SHELLEY. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 7s.

TRANSLATIONS FROM DANTE, PETRARCH, MICHAEL ANGELO, AND VITTORIA COLONNA. Fcp. 8vo. cloth, price 7s. 6d.

TURNER (*Rev. C. Tennyson*)—SONNETS, LYRICS, AND TRANSLATIONS. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 4s. 6d.

COLLECTED SONNETS, Old and New. With Prefatory Poem by ALFRED TENNYSON; also some Marginal Notes by S. T. COLERIDGE, and a Critical Essay by JAMES SPEDDING. Fcp. 8vo. cloth, price 7s. 6d.

- WALTERS** (*Sophia Lydia*)—THE BROOK: a Poem. Small crown 8vo. cloth, price 3s. 6d.
- A DREAMER'S SKETCH BOOK.** With 21 Illustrations by Percival Skelton, R. P. Leitch, W. H. J. BOOT, and T. R. PRITCHETT. Engraved by J. D. Cooper. Fcp. 4to. cloth, price 12s. 6d.
- WATERFIELD** (*W.*)—HYMNS FOR HOLY DAYS AND SEASONS. 32mo. cloth, price 1s. 6d.
- WAY** (*A. M. A.*)—THE ODES OF HORACE LITERALLY TRANSLATED IN METRE. Fcp. 8vo. price 2s.
- WEBSTER** (*Augusta*)—DISGUISES: a Drama. Small crown 8vo. cloth, price 5s.
- IN A DAY:** a Drama. Small crown 8vo. cloth, 2s. 6d.
- WRT DAYS.** By a Farmer. Small crown 8vo. cloth, price 6s.
- WILKINS** (*William*)—SONGS OF STUDY. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 6s.
- WILLOUGHBY** (*The Hon. Mrs.*)—ON THE NORTH WIND—THISTLEDOWN: a Volume of Poems. Elegantly bound, small crown 8vo. price 7s. 6d.
- WOODS** (*James Chapman*)—A CHILD OF THE PEOPLE, and other Poems. Small crown 8vo. cloth, price 5s.
- YOUNG** (*Wm.*)—GOTTLÖB, ETCETERA. Small crown 8vo. cloth, price 3s. 6d.
- YOUNGS** (*Ella Sharpe*)—PAPHUS, and other Poems. Small crown 8vo. cloth, price 3s. 6d.

## WORKS OF FICTION IN ONE VOLUME.

- BANKS** (*Mrs. G. L.*)—GOD'S PROVIDENCE HOUSE. New Edition. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 3s. 6d.
- BETHAM-EDWARDS** (*Miss M.*)—KITTY. With a Frontispiece. Crown 8vo. price 6s.
- BLUE ROSES;** or, Helen Malinofska's Marriage. By the Author of 'Véra.' New and Cheaper Edition. With Frontispiece. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 6s.
- FRISWELL** (*J. Hain*)—ONE OF TWO; or, The Left-Handed Bride. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 3s. 6d.
- GARRETT** (*E.*)—BY STILL WATERS: a Story for Quiet Hours. With Seven Illustrations. Crown 8vo. price 6s.
- HARDY** (*Thomas*)—A PAIR OF BLUE EYES. Author of 'Far from the Madding Crowd.' New Edition. Crown 8vo. price 6s.
- THE RETURN OF THE NATIVE.** New Edition. With Frontispiece. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 6s.
- HOOPER** (*Mrs. G.*)—THE HOUSE OF RABY. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 3s. 6d.
- INGELOW** (*Jean*)—OFF THE SKELIGGS: a Novel. With Frontispiece. Second Edition. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 6s.
- KING** (*Edward*)—THE GENTLE SAVAGE. Crown 8vo. cloth, 6s.
- MACDONALD** (*G.*)—MALCOLM. With Portrait of the Author engraved on Steel. Sixth Edition. Crown 8vo. price 6s.
- THE MARQUIS OF LOSSIE.** Fourth Edition. With Frontispiece. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 6s.
- ST. GEORGE AND ST. MICHAEL.** Third Edition. With Frontispiece. Crown 8vo. cloth, 6s.
- MASTERMAN** (*J.*)—HALF-A-DOZEN DAUGHTERS. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 3s. 6d.
- MEREDITH** (*George*)—ORDEAL OF RICHARD FEVEREL. New Edition. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 6s.
- THE EGOIST:** A Comedy in Narrative. New and Cheaper Edition, with Frontispiece. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 6s.

- PALGRAVE** (*W. Gifford*)—**HERMANN AGHA**: an Eastern Narrative. Third Edition. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 6s.
- PANDURANG HARI**; or, *Memoirs of a Hindoo*. With an Introductory Preface by Sir H. Bartle E. Frere, G.C.S.I., C.B. Crown 8vo. price 6s.
- PAUL** (*Margaret Agnes*)—**GENTLE AND SIMPLE**: A Story. New and Cheaper Edition, with Frontispiece. Crown 8vo. price 6s.
- SHAW** (*Flora L.*)—**CASTLE BLAIR**; a Story of Youthful Days. New and Cheaper Edition. Crown 8vo. price 3s. 6d.
- STRETTON** (*Hesba*)—**THROUGH A NEEDLE'S EYE**: a Story. New and Cheaper Edition, with Frontispiece. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 6s.
- TAYLOR** (*Col. Meadows*) *C.S.I., M.R.I.A.*  
**SEETA**: a Novel. New and Cheaper Edition. With Frontispiece. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 6s.
- TIPPOO SULTAUN**: a Tale of the Mysore War. New Edition, with Frontispiece. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 6s.
- RALPH DARNELL**. New and Cheaper Edition. With Frontispiece. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 6s.
- A NOBLE QUEEN**. New and Cheaper Edition. With Frontispiece. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 6s.
- THE CONFESSIONS OF A THUG**. Crown 8vo. price 6s.
- TARA**: a Mahratta Tale. Crown 8vo. price 6s.
- THOMAS** (*Moy*)—**A FIGHT FOR LIFE**. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 3s. 6d.
- WITHIN SOUND OF THE SEA**. New and Cheaper Edition, with Frontispiece. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 6s.

## BOOKS FOR THE YOUNG.

- AUNT MARY'S BRAN PIE**. By the Author of 'St. Olave's.' Illustrated. Price 3s. 6d.
- BARLEE** (*Ellen*)—**LOCKED OUT**: a Tale of the Strike. With a Frontispiece. Royal 16mo. price 1s. 6d.
- BONWICK** (*J.*) *F.R.G.S.*—**THE TASMANIAN LILY**. With Frontispiece. Crown 8vo. price 5s.
- MIKE HOWE**, the Bushranger of Van Diemen's Land. New and Cheaper Edition. With Frontispiece. Crown 8vo. price 3s. 6d.
- BRAVE MEN'S FOOTSTEPS**. A Book of Example and Anecdote for Young People. By the Editor of 'Men who have Risen.' With Four Illustrations by C. Doyle. Seventh Edition. Crown 8vo. price 3s. 6d.
- CHILDREN'S TOYS**, and some Elementary Lessons in General Knowledge which they teach. Illustrated. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 5s.
- COLERIDGE** (*Sara*)—**PRETTY LESSONS IN VERSK FOR GOOD CHILDREN**, with some Lessons in Latin, in Easy Rhyme. A New Edition. Illustrated. Fcp. 8vo. cloth, price 3s. 6d.
- D'ANVERS** (*N. R.*)—**LITTLE MINNIE'S TROUBLES**: an Every-day Chronicle. With 4 Illustrations by W. H. Hughes. Fcp. cloth, price 3s. 6d.
- PARTED**: a Tale of Clouds and Sunshine. With 4 Illustrations. Extra fcp. 8vo. cloth, price 3s. 6d.
- PIXIE'S ADVENTURES**; or, the Tale of a Terrier. With 21 Illustrations. 16mo. cloth, price 4s. 6d.
- NANNY'S ADVENTURES**: or, the Tale of a Goat. With 12 Illustrations. 16mo. cloth, price 4s. 6d.
- DAVIES** (*G. Christopher*)—**RAMBLE AND ADVENTURES OF OUR SCHOOL FIELD CLUB**. With Four Illustrations. New and Cheaper Edition. Crown 8vo. price 3s. 6d.

- DRUMMOND (Miss)**—TRIPP'S BUILDINGS. A Study from Life, with Frontispiece. Small crown 8vo. price 3s. 6d.
- EDMONDS (Herbert)**—WELL SPENT LIVES: a Series of Modern Biographies. New and Cheaper Edition. Crown 8vo. price 3s. 6d.
- EVANS (Mark)**—THE STORY OF OUR FATHER'S LOVE, told to Children; Fourth and Cheaper Edition of the Theology for Children. With Four Illustrations. Fcp. 8vo. price 1s. 6d.
- FARQUHARSON (M.)**
- I. **ELSIE DINSMORE.** Crown 8vo. price 3s. 6d.
  - II. **ELSIE'S GIRLHOOD.** Crown 8vo. price 3s. 6d.
  - III. **ELSIE'S HOLIDAYS AT ROSELANDS.** Crown 8vo. price 3s. 6d.
- HERFORD (Brooke)**—THE STORY OF RELIGION IN ENGLAND: a Book for Young Folk. Cr. 8vo. cloth, price 2s.
- INGELOW (Jean)**—THE LITTLE WONDER-HORN. With Fifteen Illustrations. Small 8vo. price 2s. 6d.
- JOHNSON (Virginia W.)**—THE CATSKILL FAIRIES. Illustrated by ALFRED FREDERICKS. Cloth, price 5s.
- KER (David)**—THE BOY SLAVE IN BOKHARA: a Tale of Central Asia. With Illustrations. New and Cheaper Edition. Crown 8vo. price 3s. 6d.
- THE WILD HORSEMAN OF THE PAMPAS.** Illustrated. New and Cheaper Edition. Crown 8vo. price 3s. 6d.
- LAMONT (Martha MacDonald)**—THE GLADIATOR: a Life under the Roman Empire in the beginning of the Third Century. With 4 Illustrations by H. M. Paget. Extra fcp. 8vo. cloth, price 3s. 6d.
- LEANDER (Richard)**—FANTASTIC STORIES. Translated from the German by Paulina B. Granville. With Eight Full-page Illustrations by M. E. Fraser-Tyler. Crown 8vo. price 5s.
- LEE (Holme)**—HER TITLE OF HONOUR. A Book for Girls. New Edition. With a Frontispiece. Crown 8vo. price 5s.
- LEWIS (Mary A.)**—A RAT WITH THREE TALES. New and Cheaper Edition. With Four Illustrations by Catherine F. Frere. Price 3s. 6d.
- MAC KENNA (S. J.)**—PLUCKY FELLOWS. A Book for Boys. With Six Illustrations. Fifth Edition. Crown 8vo. price 3s. 6d.
- AT SCHOOL WITH AN OLD DRAGOON.** With Six Illustrations. New and Cheaper Edition. Crown 8vo. price 3s. 6d.
- MALDEN (H. E.)**—PRINCES AND PRINCESSES: Two Fairy Tales. Illustrated. Small crown 8vo. price 2s. 6d.
- MASTER BOBBY.** By the Author of 'Christina North.' With Six Illustrations. Fcp. 8vo. cloth, price 3s. 6d.
- MC CLINTOCK (L.)**—SIR SPANGLE AND THE DINGY HEN. Illustrated. Square crown 8vo. price 2s. 6d.
- NAAKE (J. T.)**—SLAVONIC FAIRY TALES. From Russian, Servian, Polish, and Bohemian Sources. With 4 Illustrations. Crown 8vo. price 5s.
- PELLETAN (E.)**—THE DESERT PASTOR. JEAN JAROUSSEAU. Translated from the French. By Colonel E. P. De L'Hoste. With a Frontispiece. New Edition. Fcp. 8vo. price 3s. 6d.
- REANEY (Mrs. G. S.)**—WAKING AND WORKING; or, From Girlhood to Womanhood. New and Cheaper Edition. With a Frontispiece. Cr. 8vo. price 3s. 6d.
- BLESSING AND BLESSED:** a Sketch of Girl Life. New and Cheaper Edition. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 3s. 6d.
- ROSE GURNEY'S DISCOVERY.** A Book for Girls. Dedicated to their Mothers. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 3s. 6d.
- ENGLISH GIRLS: Their Place and Power.** With Preface by the Rev. R. W. Dale. Third Edition. Fcp. 8vo. cloth, price 2s. 6d.
- JUST ANYONE, and other Stories.** Three Illustrations. Royal 16mo. cloth, price 1s. 6d.
- SUNHEAM WILLIE, and other Stories.** Three Illustrations. Royal 16mo. price 1s. 6d.
- SUNSHINE JENNY and other Stories.** 3 Illustrations. Royal 16mo. cloth, price 1s. 6d.

- ROSS** (*Mrs. E.*), ('Nelsie Brook')—**DADDY'S PET.** A Sketch from Humble Life. With Six Illustrations. Royal 16mo. price 1s.
- SADLER** (*S. W.*) *R.N.*—**THE AFRICAN CRUISER:** a Midshipman's Adventures on the West Coast. With Three Illustrations. New and Cheaper Edition. Crown 8vo. price 2s. 6d.
- SEEKING HIS FORTUNE,** and other Stories. With Four Illustrations. New and Cheaper Edition. Crown 8vo. 2s. 6d.
- SEVEN AUTUMN LEAVES FROM FAIRY LAND.** Illustrated with Nine Etchings. Square crown 8vo. price 3s. 6d.
- STOCKTON** (*Frank B.*)—**A JOLLY FELLOWSHIP.** With 20 Illustrations. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 5s.
- STORR** (*Francis*) and **TURNER** (*Hawes*). **CANTERBURY CHIMES;** or, Chaucer Tales retold to Children. With Six Illustrations from the Ellesmere MS. Second Edition. Fcp. 8vo. cloth, price 3s. 6d.
- STRETTON** (*Hesba*)—**DAVID LLOYD'S LAST WILL.** With Four Illustrations. New Edition. Royal 16mo. price 2s. 6d.
- THE WONDERFUL LIFE.** Sixteenth Thousand. Fcp. 8vo. cloth, price 2s. 6d.
- SUNNYLAND STORIES.** By the Author of 'Aunt Mary's Bran Pie.' Illustrated. Second Edition. Small 8vo. price 3s. 6d.
- TALES FROM ARIOSTO RE-TOLD FOR CHILDREN.** By a Lady. With 3 Illustrations. Crown 8vo. cloth, price 4s. 6d.
- WHITAKER** (*Florence*)—**CHRISTY'S INHERITANCE.** A London Story. Illustrated. Royal 16mo. price 1s. 6d.
- ZIMMERN** (*H.*)—**STORIES IN PRECIOUS STONES.** With Six Illustrations. Third Edition. Crown 8vo. price 5s.